

# A NEW MIND !

7<sup>th</sup> Anniversary Edition, 3<sup>rd</sup> Revision, Year 5773  
(Roman Year 2013 - February)  
*de facto* Copyright 2002 - J. Parker, **NCOY**

## SPIRITUAL REVELATION

AS SET FORTH IN THE  
NATURAL ISRAELITE BIBLE  
ENGLISH VERSION

“SPECIAL 2012 RED LETTER EDITION”  
*de facto* Copyright 2002 - J. Parker, **NCOY**



THE NATURAL  
CONGREGATION OF YAHWEH  
[WWW.NATURALGOD.COM](http://WWW.NATURALGOD.COM)

## **Freedom of Conscience - at What Price?**

---

In Canada (*and in America*), the individual's rights to enjoy Freedom of Religion and Freedom of Conscience, are more than simply restricted by state-imposed regulation, they are effectively and absolutely denied.

---

On February 19, 2013, the *Government of Canada* officially opened its *Office of Religious Freedom*, and opened their new web-site with this introduction:

*"Canada is recognized globally for its leadership on human rights issues, and takes principled positions to promote Canadian values of pluralism and tolerance throughout the world".*

---

Perhaps this global perception of Canada's leadership regarding Human Rights issues in other nations is accurate. And perhaps there are some few people somewhere that can actually comprehend what they are inferring or implying with the words *"pluralism and tolerance throughout the world"*, but as far as our Religious Freedoms at home are concerned, we must strongly disagree that such even exists.

Freedom of conscience, and freedom of religion, and by extension, freedom of association, are practically one and the same with respect to an individual's alleged freedoms. We say "alleged" freedoms, because truthfully these should be spoken of as our inherent natural rights; rights that we are born with, not that are crafted on paper instruments by men.

Our conscience and our free will associated with it, was endowed within us by our Creator, long before our legislators came along to enact our right to exercise that free will. (*We appreciate some political legislators may have a big ego, but really.*)

Yet the hypocrisy of these legislators is beyond merely obvious to anyone willing to investigate. For example, if a human being does not wish to belong to any officially recognized religious body, or church, then one would suspect that he or she is not obligated to, and he or she should theoretically be free to practice his or her private religious beliefs, according to his or her own conscience.

Thus when this is fully appreciated, an individual's freedom of conscience, is virtually synonymous with his or her freedom of religion.

Yet this right is hardly acknowledged, let alone supported for Canadians in Canada (*or for Americans in America*). In fact if anyone in Canada (*or America*) claims a desire to be recognized as practicing their own private faith, according to their own conscience, and according to their alleged free will right to do so, they will effectively and absolutely be denied that right.

They will rather only be free to practice their religious beliefs, if they are found "voluntarily willing to consent" (*an oxymoronic phrase if ever there was one*) to being officially labelled as an unofficial, but practicing member of any one of the legally categorized, legally organized, and thus officially recognized, legally "registered", statutorily regulated, and duly state-licensed, religious corporate entities.

Which then leads automatically to freedom of association, which by definition, should mean voluntary association. And again, anyone that wishes to practice his or her private faith or religion according to his or her own conscience, is effectively and absolutely denied that fundamental right, unless and until he or she "voluntarily consents" to be associated with any one of the aforementioned legally categorized, legally organized, and thus officially recognized, legally "registered", statutorily regulated, and duly state-licensed

religious corporate entities. which by the way, all "have" a legally "registered name".

An "official religion" is required to "have", or to legally possess, as in ownership, a "registered name". Now if the individual refuses to consent to being labelled as a member of one of these licensed, registered names, or refuses to be labelled as practicing "as if" he were a member of one of these licensed, registered names, then the state automatically and arbitrarily labels that private individual as "having no traditional religious affiliations", which in strict "legal" terms, means that the individual is found by the state to be non-compliant with the existing laws of the land. *(This arbitrary labelling applies automatically to people of all commonwealth nations, US, and many other countries as well.)*

To further exasperate this hypocritical notion, the state will then by further arbitrary default, deem that man or woman to be a member of the category of "official religious associations", that also has an officially recognized and legally state-registered "name", that of being an "Atheist", even if he or she does not wish to be so labelled.

For further demonstration, all of our congregation members, as well as many others by free will association, refer to ourselves as "Israelites", a term originated by our Father and clearly set forth in the original Hebrew Bible *(and virtually all subsequent translations)*.

Now an Israelite, according to that same Bible, has absolutely nothing to do with being an Atheist, or with being "Jews", or with the "Jewish" religion, or even with the modern "Hebrew" religion, and certainly nothing to do with the modern nation or land mass of Israel

The religious practice of modern Jews, Jewish and Hebrew people, is typically consistent with the ancient Khazar faith mentioned in our Father's word, and includes all sorts of man-made additional rituals, and

ancient pagan traditions, by admission of the Jews and Hebrew people that practice it.

A citizen of modern Israel is an "Israeli"; a distinctly different name with a different meaning, than what is referred to in Hebrew Bibles, as the name of the faithful sons of Israel, or Israelites.

Israelites, according to our Father, are simply the physical descendants, and by spiritual adoption through faith, the spiritual descendants of the Patriarch Israel. They are those that honour the Father's written word, keep His laws, and maintain His commandments according to the Covenant, and call themselves Israelites, according to their Father's instructions, and according to their spiritual heritage.

But Canada does not recognize the "Israelite" faith as such *(neither does America)*, rather they attempt to force one that makes claim to being an Israelite according to the Biblical definition, into an acceptance, or "voluntary consent", of being labelled as practicing one of the many man-defined, legally recognized faiths, such as the "Jewish" faith, or the "Hebrew" faith, or the "Judeo-Christian" faith, or "Christian" faith, or "Non-Denominational Christian" faith, or one of the many registered, licensed variations of the foregoing, or in the last alternative, as an "Atheist", if none of those preceding labels are acceptable. But the state will NOT recognize the Biblically defined Israelite faith, as a "legitimate" religion!

The registered name component of this religious hypocrisy is also fascinating. Just like they can trip a human being into being recognized as any of thousands of fictional characters with man-made names, or *legal personas*, called, i.e.; a resident, a driver, a hunter, a fisherman, a citizen, an occupant, a subscriber, a defendant, an applicant, an agent, a king, a servant, etc., etc., they can

also recognize a human being as an artificial creation with a man-made name, or *legal persona*, called, i.e.; a Catholic, a Protestant, an Anglican, a Jew, a Christian, a Baptist, a non-denominational Christian, an Atheist, or any of thousands of other commercially registered name brands of statutorily regulated, and licensable religions.

But they refuse, and in fact they will not even try to recognize a natural human being as the faithful believer with a natural name called either a man or a woman, and most certainly will also not recognize that man or woman as an Israelite; the other natural name given by the Father to His faithful followers, that hold the faith to maintain their side of His natural Covenant.

The state has not, nor it seems will it, register, or license the use of the noun-name-modifier, "Israelite", as a style of "official" religion or as a legally recognized faith to be practiced according to one's free will.

The distinction between natural, or made by the Creator, and man-made legal-fiction (*artificial*), becomes clear. Even the lawmakers are not confused about pretending they can register what our Father has created. They just pretend they can ignore it.

The state does not officially recognize the Israelite heritage, the Israelite *per se*, nor the Israelite faith, because we believe, the state cannot register that which belongs to the Father.

Now the crux of the issue is this: Where then is this so-called freedom of religion, not to mention freedom of conscience, or freedom of association, regarding those of us that merely desire to be obedient Israelites, according to our Father's will?

Here in this so-called "land of the free", we find we cannot enjoy the freedom to be Israelites, because we are coerced into an involuntary acceptance, or we are pre-

emptively manipulated by the state, into being labelled according to their "legal" codes, which are officially restricted to recognizing us as; "having no traditional religious affiliations".

This effectively means we do not "legally comply" with the law of the land, until they "make" us comply, by arbitrarily re-labelling us according to their own statutes, not according to our own conscience.

As mentioned, this arbitrary re-labelling can encompass our being "named" as either being a practicing member of one of the state's many legally categorized, legally organized, and thus officially recognized, legally "registered", statutorily regulated, and duly state-licensed religious corporate entities, or alternatively, as an "Atheists", any of which, we are not.

We wonder how the 'state' has allowed its dictatorial thinking to evolve, or where the 'state' believes it obtained this alleged authority.

Why? Because the 'men' that comprise our 'state', clearly operate as if they have magically obtained some superior authority to command 'we the people', to abandon all obedience to our private faith, and rather pretend to practice that private faith according to the dictates of these other men.

And these same men clearly have another conscience; a conscience that allows them to boldly proclaim that we have the right to enjoy freedom of religion, and freedom of conscience, while they simply fail to say, "not today", and, "not here".

We are Israelites; our Father's servants, and we hope you experience the freedom to enjoy the fullness and the peace of this most wonderful day our Father has blessed us with!

## Non-Conformists - Living in the Messiah's Image!

Are you sure you want to be Messiah-like? If you think you are called as an Israelite to be part of a 'normal' ministry, think again!

Our Leader's behaviour shocked the religious establishment. The Messiah partied with crooks, drunks and prostitutes. A prostitute kissed his feet. He did things on the Sabbath he wasn't supposed to. He insulted dignitaries, calling them vipers, blind fools, whitewashed tombs and other names. Those closest to him usually had no idea what he was talking about - he's warning them about the Pharisees and they think he's complaining about leaving the bread behind - but to those outside his inner circle, the Messiah wasn't nearly so intelligible.

He was acknowledged by demons and rejected by theologians. He spoke to a fever, a tree, even a storm. Before long, Yah'shua's sanity was called into question and at one stage his family came to take charge of him. He was forever messing up funerals, wrecking beggars' only source of income - their infirmities - and outraging religious leaders. He made goo with spit and smeared it on a blind beggar's eyes. He stuck his fingers in a man's ears, spat, and grabbed the man's tongue.

How many *churches* would tolerate such ludicrous behaviour? He took a short-cut across the lake - without a boat. He sent two thousand swine hurtling to their death. He physically assaulted temple workers. No one - whether friends, family, admirers; devout, legalistic or lax - could agree with him for long.

Being the embodiment of divine perfection made our Messiah such an oddity that no one knew what to do with him. Yet our fallibility will not pave an easier road. The Messiah pledged us His Father's Spirit, and if we dare follow His orders we can expect to be regularly jarring people's sense of propriety

and intelligence, just as He did. That's the way it has always been.

The works and lives of Scripture's heroes are reverently read in pulpits across the land. But if the Bible's characters revisited this planet, would they be honoured in our Congregation? Even the Pharisees revered dead prophets. It's the live ones that make us squirm. There's Yah'shua, who drank, and the Nazarites who abstained even from grapes. Solomon wore extravagant finery. Equally holy men wore rags. Paul's dress would get even an apostle black-listed in most Congregations.

Some lived in palaces and some in caves. Some were free-thinkers in the realm of personal hygiene. Many were in public disgrace, some were even outlaws, yet they refused to conform. The apostle Peter fished naked. Saul stripped off his clothes and prophesied before Samuel. Isaiah walked naked and barefoot for three years. Whether they had ice in their veins or permafrost in their brains, you can decide, but they established new frontiers in outlandish behaviour.

You'd think Ezekiel was vying for the weirdest entry in the Guinness Book of Records, lying on just one side for more than a year, fuelling his fire with dung to cook needlessly-rationed food (*Yahweh wanted him to use human feces, but Ezekiel was too straight for that*). He dug through a wall, built make-believe siege works against a brick he called 'Jerusalem', and attacked shavings of his hair. Hosea got involved with a woman. Pious eyebrows must have shot through the roof! Yet these were not the hare-brained schemes of religious nuts. Men of Yahweh were obeying the holy leadings of the Almighty.

See Samson, flat on his face - tripped over his hair again. Nearby is a Nazarite, desperately trying to suppress his laughter (*laugh at Samson and you laugh all the way to hospital*). Under divine direction, the Nazarite

has shaved his entire head. Here we have two men led of His Holy Spirit. One we'd reject because his hair has never seen a razor, the other because his hair has seen a razor. Everyone knows saints must conform to our standards.

I could prattle on forever about the mad-cap antics of clowns like Samson, the long-haired lout who brought the house down - on top of himself; Jacob, who had an angel in a headlock; Daniel, who ended up on the lion's menu, not because he prayed but because he insisted on praying on his knees with the windows wide open. I could lampoon whole armies - like the one that snuck off to battle insisting that the choir go first, or Joshua's troops who waddled around in circles to the (*short-lived*) amusement of Jericho's inhabitants. (*How embarrassing to be in that dizzy army. The locals must have died laughing*). I'm telling you, you and I are the first sane Israelites that have ever lived!

But honestly, has Yahweh stopped prompting people to break with convention, or have we stopped heeding his prompting? Has Yahweh exhausted his creativity, or are we exhausting his patience? I am being neither radical nor dogmatic. I'm simply pleading for an army of Messiah-centered saints, dedicated to allowing the Spirit of Yahweh to express Himself through us in the way He chooses, rather than the way our tomato brains think He should move. If your life and ministry seems bland, that's fine, provided it's a calling, not a cop-out.

Virtually no one in our modern world seeks the Yahweh of all knowledge for truly innovative ways of portraying the nature and message of Yahweh. I am not talking about gimmicks, but of being channels of Yahweh's splendour; free, like the prophets of old, from the straight-jacket of human tradition; willing to carry obedience to the extreme of appearing

the greatest oddball since John penned Revelation. (*John, by the way, was locked up before he wrote his bizarre book. In our era, he'd be put away after he wrote it. It was non-Israelites who had him put away, but who would it be today?*)

Part of us recoils from a God so superior that His acts take us by surprise. It's unsettling to have a God so vibrant, so bursting with life and creativity and personality, that in comparison the most dynamic of us seem listless and boring. We'd much prefer Yahweh to be a machine; as coldly predictable as a lump of metal trapped by a simple law of physics. There's something reassuring about an idol. Within us lurks a desire to fashion a god in the image of a cuddly teddy bear that says 'I love you' when we press the right button and never disturbs us by doing or asking the unexpected.

From cover to cover, the Bible demonstrates that Yahweh's character is wonderfully predictable and his methods wondrously unpredictable. When Yah'shua healed, for instance, you could never be sure whether he would visit, heal from a distance, or initially ignore the person. You would never know whether he would address demons or the illness, speak of sin or faith, bless, ask questions, spit, lay hands, or tell the person to wash, or stretch, or pick up a bed, or see a priest.

Lest we try limiting Yahweh to the vast array of Yah'shua's earthly methods, the rest of Scripture shows the Most High healing by the use of shadows, handkerchiefs, oil, fig paste, a dead prophet's bones, an image of a snake, lying on the afflicted, dipping in the Jordan - and if you want a full list, you have still missed the point. For every impossibility, the Almighty has unlimited possibilities.

So let's not think that service must conform to our petty notions before it can

sparkle with divine greatness. Let's cut the ropes and let Yahweh express his boundless creativity through us. We are so tradition-bound as to confuse ministry with mimicry. Unless we are called to a musty, second-hand vocation, we conclude we're not called at all. Don't be a buzzard circling the corpse of a worn-out ministry when you could be an eagle soaring with His Holy Spirit to fresh expressions of the grandeur of Yahweh.

Every human mind is chained to established practice and custom. All that distinguishes any of us is the length of our leash. The implications haunt us all.

Like the Pharisees of old, we can be horrified at the actions of our spiritual forebears - adamant that we could not possibly be so blinded by religious prejudice as to oppose a work of Yahweh - and yet make grave misjudgements of the same magnitude that Yahweh-fearing people have been making for millennia.

We make no plea for blind tolerance. That's one of the fad heresies of our age, and even the bigoted Pharisees wrongly tolerated temple money-changers. But whether they erred on the side of acceptance or rejection, the Pharisees' error was always the same: they let the accepted norms of their group ring so loud in their ears that they couldn't hear the heartbeat of Yahweh. Like us, they were sure they would never make such a mistake. So though we don't preach mindless acceptance, we urge caution - especially since Yahweh's primary concern is to enlighten us concerning His leading of our life, not His personal leading for everyone else.

Yahweh is most elevated, not by a hundred imitations of 'Billy Graham', but by a hundred common folk, each being true to their unique calling. The result will much more accurately reflect the multi-faceted character of Yahweh. Our great Yahweh is a Humorist as

well as a Judge; a Musician as well as an Orator; a Servant and a King. Just look at creation: Yahweh is an Artist, an Engineer, an Inventor, a Gardener. He's a Bio-chemist, a Mid-wife, a Philosopher, a Labourer, an Architect - does the list ever end?

In the vastness of Yahweh's nature there must be a tiny element that you can portray better than anyone else ever has - if you accept the challenge of a truly Spirit-led life, instead of a pale imitation of someone else. Just as the life-styles of Yah'shua and John the Baptist differed enormously, there should be a rich diversity within the body of the Messiah's Congregation. Unfortunately, a warped view of holiness and/or submission often leads to drab conformity. In reality, this is carnality - the inability to love or appreciate anyone different from ourselves.

To reach the many different people and groups he encountered, Paul became 'all things to all men'. If Paul, as an individual, could contemplate this, imagine the breadth that should be evident within the Congregation as a whole. This is possible only if we allow His Holy Spirit to nurture our individuality.

Don't despise the unique blend of abilities bestowed on you by the keenest Mind in the universe. Stop envying the life of others and start clarifying your own call. If, to your thinking, that call seems insignificant, the thing to be ashamed of, is not your calling, but your thinking!

## Hope! A Renewed Way of Thinking.

Bribery, cheating, corruption, fraud, graft, larceny, financial failure, debt crisis, economic collapse - have you paid attention to the news lately? If so, you know these are the focal points of the majority of leading stories and headlines.

Consider these trend setters:

\* Hundreds of U.S. and other major banking institutions have gone bankrupt or are on the verge of collapse. No one knows (*or will admit*) the cost of rescuing depositor's funds. Heading the list of reasons as the cause of these failures - an uncontrolled lending binge that turned sour due largely to human greed and corruption. The conclusion in one sample study of 26 institutions was that fraud or insider abuse existed in every case. Estimates say such fraud accounts for over 80% of all banking failures.

\* Counterfeit, and often substandard parts have been found in nuclear plants, commercial airliners, missiles, trucks, bridges, hospitals, schools, buses and even the U.S. space shuttles.

\* A corrupt and shoddy Soviet construction industry was largely responsible for the huge death toll in the 1988 Armenian earthquake, the later Chernobyl nuclear disaster and others.

\* White collar crime is estimated at nearly US\$280 billion annually in North America - about US\$160 billion in West Germany. Many investment bankers, corporate executives, lawyers, politicians and securities firms have been convicted of criminal offences over the past few years, with many such cases still pending.

\* Insider trading scandals have reached every facet of ours, as well as the world's economic community - even forcing a recent Japanese Prime Minister and members of his cabinet to resign.

\* Hundreds of billions of U.S. weapons contracts have been tainted by corruption - these are only the ones we know of! Evidence has linked U.S. government agencies to being major profit-taking participants in huge international drug smuggling operations. Government employees of dozens of countries have passed along classified information to business acquaintances.

\* Bribery is a problem with no temporal or geographical bounds. America instituted the Foreign Corrupt Practices Act in 1977, as a result of the Senate being informed of over 300 bribes paid by American companies. After the Act was passed, widespread complaints of reduced business were waged! One U.S. aerospace firm defended itself against bribery charges, saying: "Such payments...are in keeping with business practices in many foreign countries" (*The Economist*).

\* Shoplifters cause over US\$135 billion in annual losses to North American retailers. British retailers put such losses at nearly US\$115 billion, with all shop crime losses at nearly US\$160 billion.

It's not just drug addicts, the impoverished, or professional thieves who steal. These groups, due to our woefully inadequate distribution of wealth, do comprise the majority of incidents and the majority of the criminally penalized, but they only account for less than 5% of thefts by dollar amounts! It seems, the "establishment", about 2% of our top executives and political leaders, that so efficiently manage to "direct" (*and keep*) over 96% of all the goods and services in our societies, exert considerable influence on these down-trodden "peasants", when they attempt to "steal" (*back*) a measly 5% of the wealth - especially for a purpose as trivial as survival!

The tragic profile for theft, is "nearly everybody"! To write in this chapter, all the known examples of theft, corruption and other

unethical business practices, would literally take a lifetime - and then it would only be a repeat of the "daily news" anyway. We pay dearly for this across-the-board dishonesty. The most obvious cost is financial.

But the consequences of dishonesty go far beyond the money. Money is, after all, merely dead trees with ink on it. Dishonesty saps the spirit and soul of a nation. Personal and national cynicism - decaying morals - fear - mistrust - insecurity - anger - hatred - revenge - these are the real and lasting tragedies.

In a dishonest society we are constantly looking over our shoulders. When honesty breaks down, when trust is violated, when morality no longer governs human action - everything and everyone becomes suspect. When we cannot trust our government, our neighbour, our colleague, our advisor, our boss, our employee - the very fabric of society has already begun to unravel!

Corruption and dishonesty in government and business - the so-called leaders of our communities, causes an increase in dishonesty throughout society. A type of pragmatic cynicism takes hold, and people reason, since everyone is cheating, they also have a right - a need to do likewise. It becomes a question of economic survival. In other words, disrespect for authority fosters a self-serving cynicism. "If it's alright for them - it's alright for me! After all, what have they done for me lately?"

People thus begin making moral decisions based on "situation ethics". They believe that no moral code can apply to everyone at all times and under all circumstances. It is only the "naive" who maintain a man or woman can be honest and succeed at the same time.

When cynicism says it is impossible to prosper without being "equally", or "competitively" dishonest as the next party - it

is also saying morality must be circumstantial. It is saying take advantage of immoral means, if necessary, then opportunity will present itself. Not fast enough to win the race? Use illegal drugs to enhance your normal abilities - the other runners do. Losing a hefty contract? Offer a bribe - the other companies are. Don't have the qualifications for the job? Lie about your credentials - other applicants do. Our entire global village has been polluted by this "sophisticated" thinking.

Visualize an ideal society in which everyone is honest. We would ALL benefit. Collective, across-the-board honesty would create trust and confidence in a world full of security and safety. This type of honesty must come from within. It begins in the hearts and minds of people.

No government can legislate this goodness, honesty, or integrity. Laws are only effective if the people are willing to obey them. Without individual support and participation, ethics or moral legislation does not work. To be honest is to love your neighbour as yourself. Yah'shua said that we should treat others as we would like them to treat us. The apostle Paul said it this way: "Let each of you look out not only for his own interests, but also for the interests of others" (*Phil. 2:4; New English Version*).

Following these principles would make honesty the dominant theme of our society. However, it would require change. It would require a fundamental acceptance of revealed truth. A prominent philosopher once said that revealed truth is first ridiculed, later resisted, and finally becomes self-evident. This insight does not seem so profound as we enter into the early years of this century.

Diplomats, historians, politicians, scientists and sociologists are all taking the pulse of the times. None likes what he sees - all say a new way of thinking is needed - but

somehow, as a society, we simply don't change.

What we need, is a "new mind", because the old way of thinking, the "old mind", is proving incapable of handling the world we have made for ourselves. The human mind is now "mismatched" for the world it has created.

This serious and dangerous mismatch occurs because civilization seems only to be threatened by its perception of changes that take place over years and decades. But changes required over short periods seem too difficult for us to perceive. We therefore do not allow ourselves to feel threatened in the short term. We are impressed with dramatic changes at the beginning and end of events, but become insensitive to what happens in between.

For example, the first atomic bombs that levelled Hiroshima and Nagasaki still shock the world. Yet they are trifling compared to the explosive power of what we continue to store. These stockpiled megaton warheads, although thousands of times as destructive, do not pose the same mental impact on us as the very first ones.

Our old mental system typically struggles and often fails to distinguish the relevant from the trivial, just as the ability to make such distinctions becomes crucial. The human mental system is failing to comprehend the modern world. The old mind is struggling to cope and it is realizing that the problems it used to tackle are now of a totally different nature.

We have allowed critical issues to go beyond human scale and individual human capacity. Today, it's not families that are starving, but nations. It's not patches of drought that are spreading, whole farming regions are suffering and deserts are growing. It's not furnaces that blow up, but nuclear reactors.

The predicaments we face are like weeds we have ignored in our lawn. We turn around and they have taken over. No longer is simply weeding sufficient - we have to totally destroy the old lawn and reseed. We do not just need a new mind because the old one can't adapt. We need a new way of thinking - a change - a new mind, because the old mindset has failed us. Look at our present situation - watch the news, it provides ample evidence.

Our environment is one excellent example of how the old mind makes crucial issues appear trivial. In the '50s, we dismissed cries to save the land, conserve the water or clean the air. In the '60s, we belittled and ignored them. In the '70s, we ridiculed what we resisted in the '80s, until finally, in the '90s, it had become self-evident that the environmental crisis was real, and that we must take action to address it!

The way our old mind works, we would like to stick our heads in the sand, and hope the problem would somehow go away. Or at best, we would like to throw the blame of degradation of the environment on others - preferably far away - like on overpopulated third world countries.

But studies prove that the biggest contributors to environmental degradation, measured by waste generation, come from countries where population growth has been stable, if not declining for some time. These countries (*like ours*), have primarily absorbed themselves in technology, armaments build-up and industrial development. Technology has twice the effect on the environment as population. War has been proven even more damaging.

According to one study conducted by the United Nations in an attempt to illustrate the "limited damaging effects" of war on the environment, it was established that during the brief period between 1955-75, war denuded

more than 2.5 million acres of forest, and rendered close to 6 million acres unproductive due to "Agent Orange" herbicides, pesticides and other chemicals.

No amount of deforestation in Brazil, desertification in the Sahel, or water pollution in the Nile can compare with the cumulative effects of our ongoing wars.

Today, more than two thirds of all people who have ever lived are alive. As conditions get more crowded, competition and greed will increase, and human conflicts will keep rising. Wars in many places in Europe, the Middle East and Africa have already seriously affected food production and critical water supplies.

None of us would talk in terms of a future catastrophe if our present family income was less than a dollar a day - if we lived with our family in a hut or shack without heat, water or electricity - if we were starving and lost every second child to malnutrition - if our surviving children were physically or mentally destroyed by deficiency diseases - if there were no medical help available. If this were the case, it would be obvious to us that we were living in a current state of catastrophe. THIS IS HOW OVER 80% OF HUMANITY LIVES TODAY - these people are not distant, small groups - they represent the vast majority of mankind right now!

For most of us reading this, it is difficult to perceive that in about five years, over 90% of the world's population will live in what we call developing countries. Then, the "world" will be "developing", not countries. Today, developing nations have accumulated a large share of the world's debt - many trillions of dollars, and about 120,000 children die before sunset each day. The old mind just has not registered these vast numbers.

Concerned, informed voices, are saying if we want a brand new cultural and ecological

standard, no longer can we delude ourselves by dividing the world into the rich and the poor, the east and the west, the haves and the have not's - because we will inevitably have to admit, that we - the "haves", are vastly outnumbered by them - the "have not's".

Nearly 7 billion people, of which nearly 6 billion are poor and starving, are living on this planet - temporarily segregated. Our old minds tell us we have a firm grip on life, based on our self-defined values, laws and ideas. Our world, we say, is stable despite our over-filled prisons, false contracts, drugged youths, failing families, government corruption, criminal banking schemes, and political scandals.

We are a world of people afraid to own up to ourselves. We all sense that the rules that we live by are no longer valid. That our laws, religions and customs are archaic - in no way suited to the present. We know exactly how many ounces of powder it takes to kill a man, but we don't know how to pray to Yahweh - or worse yet, we don't think we need to!

The old mind says that in the next few years, about 5% of the world (*us, in the so-called "developed nations"*), can look forward to talking toasters, hundreds of cable channels, interactive TV, computer shopping and maybe even environmentally friendly cars. The other 95% of the world (*them*), will continue to hope for tomorrows - for a ration of water barely equal to one flush of a toilet, for a speedy death to their starvation-tortured loved ones.

Fair or unfair, we have wrapped our old minds around this self-centered concept of "economic" thinking, that we have convinced ourselves is the basis of our "success"! The old way of thinking - the old mind, is obsolete and we don't want to face it. It is not simply time for a change. Change is essential for our very survival.

Our old way has been around since we gave ourselves the authority to determine truth

and error. Having not learned the truth, we were bound to err. Not wanting to be taught, we were bound to suffer. Not wanting to heed warning, we were doomed to fail. It was once said: "To whom can I speak and give warning? Who will listen to me? Their ears are closed so they cannot hear...But am I the one they are provoking?. Are they not rather harming themselves, to their own shame?" (*Jeremiah 6:10;7:19*). This was Yahweh warning us - teaching us to seek a new mind before it is too late.

At conferences concerning the future of our planet, we hear that we need a more culturally compatible world, we should maybe start instituting a new ecological ethos and new social standards, leading to a type of global interdependency. But these are not new ideas. They are ideas that stem from revealed truth, that for centuries have been ridiculed, then resisted, until finally, they are becoming self-evident.

Global interdependency, merely means working together. A new ecological ethos, merely means working within the laws of nature. The new social standards proposed, merely mean doing unto others as you would want them to do unto you.

So we see that we do not need new ideas, simply a "new mind" - to get around the old ideas, to re-think and re-evaluate what we have previously ridiculed and resisted.

Agronomists and farmers are realizing that in order to feed some 200 million more mouths every year as 24 billion tons of topsoil is blown and/or washed away, we had better start looking at the health of the land. Increasing world fertilizer consumption from 14 million tons in 1950 to nearly 200 million tons today, has proven to be a "new idea" that is not an effective answer. It does not work!

Leaving land fallow, or letting it rest every few years has long been ridiculed. It has

also been resisted until recently, when several progressive farming communities in North America have tried it out as a "new idea". After several experiments, the concept, "proved" that it worked, and it has since become another example of the many self-evident truths revealed in the Bible.

As we begin the 21st century, there is hope. The self-evident principles that work, are not old - they are timeless. They were merely first written down for our benefit about three and one half thousand years ago. They would have worked then, they will work now and they will work for all eternity - if we learn to stop ridiculing and resisting them long enough to recognize the revealed truths that are so self-evidently contained in them.

When Paul wrote his letter to the Ephesians, he was telling us: "This I say, therefore, and testify in Yahweh, that you should no longer walk as the rest...having their understanding darkened, being alienated from Yahweh...because of the ignorance that is in them...who, being past feeling, have given themselves over to licentiousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness...but you...put off concerning your former conduct, the old man which grows corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, and **BE RENEWED IN THE SPIRIT OF YOUR MIND**, and that you put on the new man which was created according to Yahweh" (*4:17-24*). And in Romans 12:2, we are instructed; "And do not be conformed to this world, but **BE TRANSFORMED BY THE RENEWING OF YOUR MIND**, that you may **PROVE** what is that good and acceptable and perfect Will of Yahweh".

So our hope then, is that we place our faith in the absolute - that we stop ridiculing and resisting the Bible - that we start believing - accepting the overwhelming self-evidence of the many simple but awesome truths revealed in it! **ALL KNOWLEDGE** needed for humans to

enjoy a happy, prosperous, healthy and wonderful world, has been carefully and thoroughly set forth in the Bible - FREELY GIVEN, for all of us to benefit from.

Answers to who and what is man, who and what is God, what is our relationship with Yahweh, what is man's purpose and potential, why man was given dominion over the earth with instructions to "dress and to keep it" - meaning to manage and preserve our environment, the history of life PRIOR to the account of Genesis - Genesis being the RE-CREATION of the earth for Yahweh's newly added human life, how to have successful marriages and great sex, happy families, friendly neighbours, honest governments, what is honourable employment, proper education, entertainment, food, exercise, sleep, waste management and much more.

Information for today's ever-doubtful, sceptical reader, on how to successfully and objectively reconcile the Bible with the many versions of modern Christianity, modern science, history, and archaeology is revealed. The theme of this book, which is the simple truth of how we come to understand the Bible, and how to SHARE this understanding with others, is revealed in Yahweh's WORD.

In keeping with the theme of this book, only a few details essential to explaining some obvious examples of revealed truth, are outlined. If you are honestly seeking answers to any important issue, including those listed above, you will find them by READING Yahweh's WORD AND FOLLOWING HIS INSTRUCTIONS.

Some Bible topics may at first seem obscure and difficult, but as you come to understand - as you are RENEWED IN THE SPIRIT OF YOUR MIND, you will see this as part of Yahweh's purpose, and you will marvel at the Bible's simplicity. By reading the Bible

with a NEW MIND, we can learn to SOLVE OUR GREATEST PROBLEMS - all of them!

## Is Anything Wrong Anymore?

Whatever happened to standards of right and wrong? Why do we need them?

A story in a major news magazine went like this: "Students were debating whether one student was right in returning \$200 she'd found in the hallway to its owner. They concluded that she'd done a dumb thing, and asked the counsellor's opinion.

"He replied; `Well, I think she did the right thing. But I'm not going to push my idea of right and wrong on you. After all, I'm your counsellor".

But what is a counsellor for, if not to steer people toward a right course of action? What good is a neutral stand like that? How can there even be a neutral position between right and wrong?

This counsellor, whoever he is, was correct not to want to push his ideas on his students - but what on earth made him think that his telling young people that it is wrong to steal, was his idea? And why was he prepared to concede for one second that the students might have a point, when they thought the finder was stupid to return the money?

Is stealing or not stealing just a "matter of opinion"? It's time we took a long hard look at what's been happening to our society's values of right and wrong over the last 100 years or so.

The world of the 1930's was a very different world from today. In some ways circumstances were much worse. During the years of the great depression many lived under conditions of great privation - lines of the unemployed stretched for blocks, and once proud bread-winners were forced to soup kitchens. People ate stale food, wore old clothing and struggled to survive. But in spite of that, there was still a popular understanding of the difference between right and wrong. People were not perfect, but there was no serious

question that it was wrong to lie, cheat, steal, commit adultery, or to treat others rudely.

But our attitudes have changed dramatically since then. Now, it's quite acceptable - even fashionable, to cheat on taxes, to have an affair, to have sex before marriage, or to adopt what we euphemistically call "alternative lifestyles", just so long as it "doesn't hurt anyone else"! It seems that as long as we're consenting adults, anything goes and nothing could be considered wrong.

Now that might be so, if there were no moral law, absolute in nature, governing human conduct. Today, it seems old fashioned to think that there might be such a timeless law. But why should it be? Let's look at it objectively. We live in a law-abiding universe with laws of gravity, chemistry, physics, motion and others. We did not make these laws, but over the centuries, we've learned to define, accept, and respect them - to understand them and to rely on them. Because we study the physical laws of the universe, and are willing to apply them, we are able to launch space probes from earth and have them rendezvous with distant planets years later. Because we accept the inevitability of physical laws, we can predict where planets will be - to the exact moment of time.

It would be arrogant and foolish to think we could ignore such laws. Rather, we spare no effort to get in step with them, and because we do, we succeed. So what makes us think we can disregard the laws governing morality - showing us the difference between what is right and wrong?

Every society has realized that it must have laws to live by. When laws are kept, society is stabilized. When they are broken, penalties are paid. If enough people break them often enough, then society collapses. In the western world, when we think of the highest law, we should think of the Ten

Commandments. They have been the basis of human concepts of right and wrong for centuries. Great lawmakers, such as King Alfred the Great of England and the men who drafted the Constitution of the United States, or the many other collaborators of the various founding Agreements of most English speaking democracies in the world, all held Yahweh's Law in high esteem.

Even what we might consider as primitive societies govern themselves with very similar codes of ethics. The Pygmies of the Central African Ituri forest have a body of moral law and practice, predating the coming of the Europeans to their continent. The Efe Pygmies of Zaire have an enlightened philosophy and laws regulating their relationships to one another, to their environment, and to a God they recognize as the Creator and Sustainer. Their moral laws forbid wars, killing, adultery, lying, theft, blasphemy, pre-marital sex, devil worship and sorcery, disrespect toward elders and other forms of inconsiderate behaviour. It is interesting to notice how many of their laws coincide with the Ten Commandments.

It seems that deep down, all men realize the need for some type of law, against stealing, adultery, murder and other basic principles. Even many animals are not able to live without some basic behavioural and "moral" laws in their social structures.

The difference is, our Creator made these laws contained in the Ten Commandments, and GAVE them to us FREELY, in order to give us an advantage. He made them concerning our interaction as humans, just as surely as He made the laws that govern the physical universe. Yet our "natural", carnal minds, like "brute beasts that are meant to be destroyed", would have us reject and attack these laws! That is the very reason why we have situations like the high school counsellor being reluctant to teach what

is right or wrong. It isn't his idea! "Thou shalt not steal", is our law, given to us by Yahweh! Why would there be any question about it? How quickly and "convenient" we forget the lessons of history. Biblical and secular history confirm unequivocally, the near total self-annihilation of many civilizations due solely to diseases resulting from their sexual promiscuity as an example, however, most people somehow believe that this "couldn't possibly still be the case"!

Paul wrote to the early Israelites in Colosse, saying; "Beware lest anyone cheat [*or deceive*] you through philosophy and empty deceit, according to the tradition of men, according to the basic principles of the world, and not according to the Messiah". Today, the influence of many of these philosophers has many people questioning our basic laws of morality.

There are several ideas that have dominated our time. They come directly or indirectly from the minds of men like Charles Darwin, Karl Marx and Sigmund Freud - three "great" minds of our recent times.

Darwin was one of the first proponents of the theory of evolution; Marx was the originator of the system known as atheistic communism; and Freud fathered modern psychiatry. These men's ideas have been greatly modified - and in some cases even discarded - by some of their most devoted disciples. Yet the notions of these men have come together with an incredible impact on our society. It is as if the effects of their thinking over 100 years ago, have finally reached critical mass.

A common starting point for each of these men was their mis-conception that the Bible, BECAUSE OF FALSE TEACHINGS OF TRADITIONAL RELIGION, does not provide the answer to life's fundamental questions.

Darwin gave expression to the notion that mankind is the outcome of a natural progression from lower life forms - originating from an unknown source. That idea is not new - Aristotle wondered about it as well. But Darwin brought together several isolated threads of human reasoning and produced his version of the origin of species, casting doubt on the belief that mankind is a special creation in the universe. In his autobiography he wrote this: "I gradually came to disbelieve in Christianity as a divine revelation..." But he also came to doubt the validity of his own theories: "I am conscious that I am in an utterly hopeless muddle. I cannot think that the world as we see it, is the result of chance".

Even with Darwin's own recanting, his theory has done massive damage on the 20th century and its thinking about Yahweh's authority.

Marx was also opposed to traditional religion. He dismissed it as "the opium of the people", and wrote: "The abolition of religion as the illusory happiness of men, is a demand for their real happiness". Marx developed his ideas in the early days of the Industrial Revolution - a time of great social upheaval in Europe. He rightly identified the abuses suffered by the working classes and campaigned against their exploitation. Persecuted on a charge of trying to overthrow the German government, he gave a speech in his own defence that shows his view of the law: "Society is not based on the law. That is legal fiction. Rather, law must be based on society. It must be the expression of society's common interests and needs...any attempted assertion of the eternal validity of laws clashes with present needs". For Marx the idea of absolute moral law was a fiction of man's imagination. He has changed the way many societies think. Whether we agree with him or not, Marx has played a major part in shaping our ideas about society.

Like Marx, Freud was of Jewish background, and he too was desirous of denying the religion of his forefathers. From case histories of his patients, he devised an elaborate road map of man's mental structure - purporting to explain the dark stirrings of the human heart, and of the unconscious mind with its attendant fantasies. The idea of the unconscious mind determining what we do was an invention of Freud's own mind - somehow he seemed to overlook what "un"conscious really means!

His ideas allowed modern man to believe that he can "free himself from the guilt and responsibility of his actions". Blame and guilt have become irrelevant and meaningless! But are we really just victims of our unconscious minds with all of their bizarre sexual conflicts? If that is true, we certainly can't be responsible for our actions in any meaningful way. Freud himself was quite prudish about sex, although his theories and speculations have been construed by many as justification for disregarding standards and ethics in their own sexual behaviour!

So instead of hearing about right and wrong, we hear about right and "oppressed (*or repressed*)", or right and not "mentally healthy", or right and "liberated". What used to be self-indulgence is now "self-fulfillment". What we used to call living in sin is now a "meaningful" relationship. What was once discipline is now "repression". Our "advanced" behaviour allows us to accept the platitude that we are "sexual beings". Frankly, we find this instant regression to mere animal status, a sad comment on society's view of itself!

Like it or not, thinkers like Darwin, Marx and Freud have had a massive effect on modern man's view of Yahweh. We react strongly against someone imposing his or her ideas of right and wrong on others. But that is exactly what these three men have done; and

what we continue to do when we support them! We have set up our own structures of morality on the shakiest of all foundations; human reasoning! All of us have to some extent, been influenced by these and other philosophers that, "knew better" than Yahweh.

Yahweh, time and again warned us of this: "Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; who put darkness for light, and light for darkness; who put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!" (Isaiah 5:20,21). He explained the reason for this moral confusion in verse 24: "Because they have rejected the law of Yahweh the Lord of Hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel".

Yahweh places the blame on false teachers, ministers, and philosophers who set themselves up as authorities to decide what is right and wrong. Those are positions of trust, and Yahweh does not take it lightly when that trust is abused. Yahweh, through Jeremiah's prophesy for our time, says about them: "And I have seen the folly of the prophets of Samaria: they have prophesied by Baal and caused my people to err. Also I have seen a horrible thing in the prophets of Jerusalem: they commit adultery and walk in lies; they also strengthen the hands of evildoers, so that no one turns back from his wickedness...Do not listen to the words of the prophets...they make you worthless; they speak a vision of their own heart, not from the mouth of Yahweh".

Can't we realize that this is not some ancient Biblical epic? This (*our current social crisis*) is always what happens when people drift away from the moral laws of Yahweh, and decide for themselves what is right and wrong. Yahweh says: "We grope for the wall like the blind, and we grope as if we had no eyes; we stumble at noonday as at twilight; we are as dead men in desolate places" (*Isaiah 59:10*).

And that's what we are like today. We want to be tolerant but we're at the point of tolerating things that society cannot put up with and stay healthy. We shy away from judging others, to the point of believing that all judgements are wrong - we're lost at sea without a compass.

Many of our young people are not being taught the difference between right and wrong. They're not immoral anymore - they're amoral - they don't even know the law, never mind the difference - confusion reigns!

We have the knowledge Yahweh gave us, but like the old adage says: "we don't have the sense Yahweh gave us" to use that knowledge! Never before has the Bible been so readily available, but read so little. There are more copies in the world than can be counted.

The Ten Commandments (*and others*) are listed in Exodus 20 and Deuteronomy 5.

But knowledge demands responsibility, and responsibility in turn, demands accountability. Like it or not, and despite Freud's theories, we are responsible for our actions. Times change - but the universal laws of Yahweh - and their universality, never change. The benefits of obeying them and the penalties for breaking them are as sure today as they were thousands of years ago - and will be thousands of years from now. They truly are timeless laws - just like gravity!

We see ourselves as religious, even Yahweh-fearing people. North Americans "say" they are strong believers in the Ten Commandments - and think they are more so than other western countries. Yet the judgement of Yahweh is hanging over our nations. Why?

A Gallup survey found that we, in overwhelming percentages, said the Ten Commandments "applied fully" to ourselves. Here is a sample:

You shall not kill - 93 percent said it applied personally;

You shall not steal - 93 percent said it applied to them;

Honour your parents - 90 percent think it applies;

You shall not bear false witness (*lie*) - 89 percent say, applies;

You shall not covet your neighbour's wife - 89 percent;

You shall not covet your neighbour's goods - 88 percent;

You shall not commit adultery - 87 percent said it applied.

You shall remember the Sabbath - 57 percent said it applied, although most (93%) did not know when it was.

Studies show 90 to 95 percent of Americans professed a belief in a God. 65 percent believe our God is a personal deity. 70 percent say they are church members and 60 percent claim they attend worship service at least once a month. 69 percent feel their important life decisions have been specifically guided by our God.

Chief executives of leading corporations claim even greater degrees of religious commitment. Forbes magazine found that most executives "called religion an important influence in their lives". College students say religion is very important (50 percent) or fairly important (33 percent) to them. American presidents Carter, Reagan, Bush, Clinton, and others claim to be strong believers in Bible, our God and morality!

So how can someone presume to say that Yahweh's judgement for national sin, evil and immorality, is hanging over our nations? We stand behind a commitment for human rights, fair laws, justice and equality for all. Bringing these principles to other nations has been a major, if not overriding objective of our nations' foreign policies.

Here is what former U.S. President Carter said: "In this outward and physical

ceremony we attest once again to the inner and spiritual strength of our nation...here before me is the Bible used in the inauguration of our first President in 1789...opened to a timeless admonition from the ancient prophet Micah: "He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth Yahweh require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God" (*Micah 6:8*). He continued: "Our commitment to human rights must be absolute...there can be no nobler nor more ambitious task for America to undertake on this day of a new beginning than to help shape a just and peaceful world that is truly humane".

With such noble national aims, how can our nations be suffering a crisis in morality? Even when excluding Yahweh and religion from ethical questions, secularists often come down hard on the side of morality. Let's look at the question of adultery. In the survey, respondents were asked whether they thought extramarital sex was wrong. 72 percent said it was always wrong, while 16 percent said it was almost always wrong. Only 2 percent said it was not wrong at all. (*65 percent of the same husbands admitted "cheating", while 68 percent of wives admit it!*)

In a recent issue, Time magazine published a short article distilling 46,000 letters it had received the year before. Here is how that magazine summarized its reader's thinking: "The temper of the TIME reader was gloomy and out of sorts...moral lapses, abuse of power, greed and hypocrisy were the themes that had readers indignant, anxious, furious and despairing...The letters often reflected a sense of moral backsliding, a kind of national falling from grace. Readers mourned a lack of direction".

There was so much interest in the moral condition of the nation that Time inaugurated its new "Ethics" section! And even "God" has a

private column in the magazine under "Religion". Responding to their cover story "Whatever Happened to Ethics", they continued: "...seemed to mirror the feeling of many readers that the nation needed an ethical corrective. In writing about America's diminished commitment to moral standards, one of the more than 700 correspondents noted, `You have started a debate that is good for the nation'".

Our American neighbours seem to be a nation, like ours, concerned with values - with a commitment to good triumphing over evil. Even the non-religious, who think in terms of morality and ethics rather than sin and righteousness, speak out for higher moral standards!

Our concern for things ethical is merely a veil hiding an underlying spiritual problem. Imagine yourself reading this chapter while at lunch in a restaurant. You watch the waiters scurry back and forth taking orders, chatting to customers and each other. People of various ages, race and size are eating, laughing and talking about the normal things. You say to yourself, these are just ordinary folks like myself. Hard working, decent, concerned with their families and friends, facing many of life's problems.

Then you reflect on this chapter and conclude: Yet this chapter is speaking of Yahweh's impending judgement hanging over these people - their nations - the world - because of the way they live their lives! Is this fair, you wonder? Humanly speaking, these people are wrestling with the same concerns as people the world over. Trying to make ends meet. Worrying about health. Feeling pangs of tension about the latest rounds of fighting in Europe and the Middle East. They, like people everywhere, know the world is a jungle, full of problems that could potentially lead to another world war.

They reflect nations of people ostensibly concerned with bringing a better life and human rights to the whole world. And like all humans, they are against fundamental injustices like poison gas, apartheid, terrorism, financial enslavement, and starving people. So what is this about some impending divine wrath to fall on these nice folks?

Sadly, there is another side to the face of our nations. It is not a pretty profile from Yahweh's point of view. That's the side that has Yahweh concerned and grieving - a side, in part, exposed to various national and international scandals. And in a greater part, the side that has adopted a spiritual indifference toward Yahweh's Way and Yahweh Himself.

What does Yahweh see? He sees people who strongly endorse the Ten Commandments - even use them as guidelines for judging their leaders. But they tend to be situation ethics! One Gallup survey found that 60 percent of us think there "can never be clear absolute guidelines about what is good and evil"! One writer commented: "We are a people strong on religion but weak on morality". The paradox is clear: Religious concerns are up; morality is down. George Gallup Jr. has said: "Religion is growing in importance among our people, but morality is losing ground". He should know - his organization has conducted numerous polls on morality over the years.

One poll found that over 65 percent of our population feel it is not wrong to have sexual relations outside of a committed relationship - marriage. It is considered a normal rite of passage. Yahweh is not pleased with that statistic or that horrendously stupid, and self-destructive attitude. That same poll found that out of every 100 parties:

24 admit to cheating on their tax returns;  
20 admit to lying once in a while to boss and colleagues;

22 admit to lying often to members of their family;

33 admit calling in sick when they are not;

18 admit to padding expense accounts;

22 feel justified in stealing from their employer.

These might be considered insignificant lapses of personal morality by some, but Yahweh is not pleased. And He certainly is very disturbed by our high incidences of murder, child abuse, illicit sex, graft, corporate and bank fraud, and injustice. But these offences are being ADMITTED to by the same people that claim to believe in the Ten Commandments!

Our nations consume about 65 percent of the world's illegal drugs. Some 95 percent of our teenage females report having sex before marriage. Each year about 2.5 million babies are born out of wedlock - resulting in about 900,000 abortions (murders), with most of the remaining children raised in single mother homes - leading to unsupervised children, to gangs, to violence, to drugs, to crime, to aimlessness - and immense public expense.

Not everyone is committing adultery but millions are - not everyone indulges in pre-marital sex but millions do - not everyone is divorcing but millions do - not everyone is a thief, a murderer, a rapist or a child abuser but millions are - not everyone cheats on income tax or in business deals - not everyone aspires to business deals based on greed but millions do.

Above all failings, our nations worship our God as they see fit - or they don't worship Him at all! Many so-called "New Age" thinkers, have regressed so far back in their beliefs, that they have deluded themselves into renewing many ancient pagan myths under the guise of "New Age Faith", such as the "Universal Force", "Universal Knowledge", or "Universal

Power". These are simply euphemisms for pagan faiths that have existed for centuries; excuses for people that do not want to acknowledge Yahweh's Word!

They acknowledge a "Universal Creative Force", or "Power", sometimes even calling it "God", but they refuse to accept that this same "God-Force", (*that they admit created the entire Universe*) could have, or would have caused a "Bible" to have been written which explains "ALL KNOWLEDGE" needed for man! The Bible (*which most of these people have obviously pre-judged, without having ever read*) clearly predicts this regressive thinking as just one more example of Satan's manipulations. Sadly, traditional Christianity has distorted the truth of Yahweh's Word, the Bible, to such a degree that they (*Christians*) have actually been the catalyst for much of this backward thinking!

Worse, these traditional Christians unwittingly WORSHIP Satan when they celebrate all of our national pagan "holi"days such as Easter, Christmas, Halloween, New Year's etc., even if they think they are worshipping the True God! (*See our article on Pagan Holidays for details.*)

"These people draw near Me with their lips, but have removed their hearts far from Me, and their fear toward Me is taught by the commandment of men" (*Isaiah 29:13*).

Even in the name of religion, our nations commonly condone that which Yahweh hates! Yahweh says "Learn not the way of the heathen...For the customs of the people are vain..." (*Jer. 10:2,3*). "From the least of them even to the greatest of them, everyone is given to covetousness" (*Jer. 6:13*).

Can we believe that these prophecies were meant for us! "Alas, sinful nation, people laden with iniquity, a brood of evildoers, children who are corrupters! They have forsaken Yahweh" (*Isaiah 1:4*).

"Will you steal and murder, commit adultery and perjury...follow other gods...and say, 'We are safe' - safe to do all these detestable things?" (*Jer. 7:9,10*). And the prophet Isaiah was certainly addressing our North American Nations when he wrote: "...who swear by the name of Yahweh, and make mention of the God of Israel, but not in truth or righteousness" (*48:1*). Today, our nations, above all others, universally swear by the name of Yahweh and talk of God - but without any substance to the talk.

The prophet Ezekiel sums up the current state of our nations rather eloquently: "In you they have made light of father and mother; in your midst they have oppressed the stranger ...mistreated the fatherless and the widow. You have despised My Holy things and profaned My Sabbaths [*substituting false holidays*]...In you are men who slander to cause bloodshed; in you ...one commits abominations with his neighbour's wife; another lewdly defiles his daughter-in-law; and another in you violates his sister, his father's daughter...they take bribes to shed blood; you take usury and increase; you have made profit from your neighbours by extortion, and have forgotten Me,...Behold, therefore, I beat My fists at the dishonest profit which you have made, and at the bloodshed which has been in your midst" (*Ezekiel 22:7-13*).

Yahweh is perfect justice, perfect righteousness, perfect character - Yahweh is perfect Love - all written out for us in very straight-forward, simple English - all we have to do is read His Word! Will anyone out there actually READ it? The answers to our seemingly insurmountable social problems are ever so obvious - and right before our very eyes! And "planted in our hearts" - have you never wondered how you "just know" what is right or wrong or good or bad - the answer is contained in your conscience that Yahweh has

so graciously given you - for Yahweh's sake use it!

Yahweh further says about us through Ezekiel, that if we continue to do evil our days are numbered. "Son of man, when a land sins against Me by persistent unfaithfulness, I will stretch out My hand against it..." (*14:13*). And if that nation turns from its evil, Yahweh will relent His punishment. "If that nation of whom I have spoken turns from its evil, I will relent of the disaster that I thought to bring upon it" (*Jer. 18:8*).

Yahweh's words of extended mercy given by Ezekiel are for our nations to HEAR TODAY: "As I live, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live. Turn, turn from your evil ways! For why should you die?" (*33:11*).

Yahweh is not eager to punish us - He is interested in a deep and lasting spiritual-ethical change in our moral landscape. Someone has to deliver the message about the choices Yahweh has given us.

Through the prophet Isaiah, Yahweh wrote: "Cry aloud, spare not; lift up your voice like a trumpet; tell My people their transgression" (*58:1*).

What about it, you people of America and the British Commonwealth - and you others around the world? Are you ready to start practicing what you preach? Are you willing to make serious, yet simple and enjoyable changes in your lives? The kind that will result in your actions bringing harmony, peace and HOPE to all around you - as humble examples of Yahweh's Laws to the world?

Are you who live in modern spiritual Israel ready and willing to assume responsibility for helping to save our great nations from certain destruction - or the responsibility of not helping?

Make a start. Get out your Bible and read it with a NEW MIND! It is a wonderful,

masterful work of literature - fascinating in its simple complexities. Most of all, it is THE MOST PRACTICAL BOOK YOU WILL EVER READ! GUARANTEED! Begin applying Yahweh's Law in your life, in your thinking and in your actions, and you will PROVE to yourself that it is a set of LIVING LAWS THAT WORK - just like gravity!

The Bible - Yahweh's Word, truly is man's only HOPE!

## Can Science be Reconciled to our Creator?

Science has historically mathematicized all theories, including the “Big Bang” theory that was first proposed by a Catholic Monk, Georges Lemaitre, in 1927. And of course, science has claimed this Big Bang theory as “theirs” ever since. Unfortunately for science however, their equations even today, have one serious deficiency that only Yahweh can answer. The exact moment of creation - time zero. Even today, scientists cannot grasp the initial moment of creation. Their equations explain the universe quite effectively, but as they move back in time, approaching time zero, suddenly all mathematics disintegrate, and everything about their math becomes meaningless, or so the scientists claim.....

Medicine, micro-chips, electronic communications, space travel, genetic manipulation; these are the miracles about which we now tell our children. These are the miracles we herald as proof that science will bring us answers. The ancient stories of immaculate conceptions, burning bushes, and parting seas are no longer relevant. Yahweh has become obsolete. Science has won the battle of common acceptance.

But science’s victory has cost every one of us deeply. Science may have alleviated the miseries of disease

and drudgery and provided an array of gadgetry for our entertainment and convenience, but it has left us in a world without wonder. Our sunsets have been reduced to wavelengths and frequencies. The complexities of the universe have been shredded into mathematical equations. Even our self worth as human beings has been destroyed. Science proclaims that planet earth and its inhabitants are a meaningless speck in the grand scheme. A cosmic accident - a basic mistake!

Even the technology that promises to unite us, divides us. Each of us is now electronically connected to the global population, yet we feel utterly alone. We are bombarded with violence, division, fracture, and betrayal. Scepticism has become a virtue. Cynicism and demand for proof have become enlightened thinking. Is it any wonder that humans now feel more depressed and defeated than they have at any point in human history? Does science hold anything sacred? Science looks for answers by probing our unborn fetuses. Science even presumes to rearrange our own DNA. It shatters Yahweh’s world into smaller and smaller pieces in quest of meaning, and all it finds are more questions.

The ancient war between science and religion is over. For the most part, the human race believes that science has won. But when we look objectively,

we see that they did not win fairly. They did not win by providing answers. They won by so radically reorienting our society that the truths we once saw as signposts, now seem inapplicable. Religion cannot keep up to exponential scientific growth. Science feeds on itself like a virus. Every new breakthrough opens doors for more new breakthroughs. Mankind took thousands of years to progress from the wheel to the car. Yet only decades from the car into space. Now we measure scientific progress in weeks - we are spinning out of control.

The rift between science and religion grows deeper and deeper, and as religion is left behind, people find themselves in a spiritual void. We cry out for meaning, for purpose. We envision UFO's, engage in channelling, spirit contacts, horoscopes, out of body experiences, mind quests - all these eccentric ideas with a scientific veneer, but they are unashamedly irrational. They are the desperate cry of the modern spirit; lonely and tormented, crippled by its own enlightenment and its inability to accept meaning in anything removed from "proven" technology.

Science, they say, will save us. Science, Yahweh says, will destroy us! Really, it has destroyed the greater part of us already. The efforts of religion to slow science have been relentless for centuries; sometimes misguided, but always with benevolent intentions.

Nonetheless, the temptations are too great for man to resist. The alluring promises of science have not been kept. Promises of efficiency and simplicity have bred nothing but pollution and chaos. We are a fractured and frantic species moving down a path of destruction.

Who is this "god" of science? Who is the god who offers his people such power but with no moral framework to tell you how to use that power? What kind of god gives a child fire but does not warn the child of its dangers? The language of science comes with no signposts about good or bad. Science texts tell us how to create a nuclear reaction, yet they contain no chapter asking us if it is a good or bad idea.

Religion has become exhausted in its efforts to be the signposts for science. So many divisions and fractures of the true religion have resulted that any further opposition from religion is now seen as a mere nuisance, offered by religious fanatics - with no "proof" to support their opposition. Science plows blindly on in its quest for smaller chips and larger profits. Wise men ask scientists not why they will not govern themselves, but how can they? Their world moves so fast that if they stop even for an instant to consider the implications of their actions, someone more efficient will whip past them in a blur.

So they move on. They proliferate weapons of mass destruction. They make technological breakthroughs, they clone living creatures, but it is religion that reminds them of their conscience and the moral implications of their actions. They encourage people to interact on phones, video screens, and computers, but Yahweh's people open their doors and remind them to commune in person as they were meant to do. They even murder unborn babies in the name of research that will save lives. Again, it is Yahweh's people who point out the obvious fallacy of such reasoning.

All the while, science proclaims that Yahweh's people are ignorant. But who is more ignorant? The man who cannot define lightning, or the man who does not respect its awesome power? Yahweh is reaching out to everyone - even to scientists. Yahweh's people are reaching out too. Yet the more we reach, the more we are pushed away. Show us proof that a God exists, they shout. We say, use your telescopes to look into the heavens and tell us how you can prove there is no God!

They ask what does your God look like? We say, where did such a question come from? The answers are one and the same. Did you not see Yahweh in your science? How can you miss Him? You proclaim that even the slightest change in the force of gravity or the weight of an atom would have rendered

our universe a lifeless mist rather than our magnificent sea of heavenly bodies, yet you fail to see Yahweh's hand in this? Is it really so much easier to believe that we simply chose the right card from a deck of billions? Have we become so spiritually bankrupt that we would rather believe in mathematical impossibilities than in a power greater than ourselves?

Whether or not science believes in Yahweh, we must all believe this. When we as a species abandon our trust in the Power greater than ourselves, we abandon our sense of accountability. Faith, all faiths, are admonitions that there is something we cannot understand, something to which we are accountable. With faith, we are at least accountable to each other. With faith we are accountable to ourselves and to a higher truth. Religion is flawed, but only because man is flawed. If the secular world, including science, could see the world as Yahweh's children do; looking beyond the rituals of religious services, they would see a modern miracle - a Brotherhood of imperfect people wanting only to be a voice of compassion in a world spinning out of control.

Is Yahweh obsolete? Are Yahweh's children obsolete? Does the world really need a voice for the poor, the weak, the oppressed, the unborn child? Do we really need people like this who, though imperfect, spend their lives imploring each of us to read the

signposts of morality and not lose our way? Or shall we simply trust in science?

None of us can truly afford to be apathetic. Whether we see this scientific evil as Satan's work, corruption, immorality, or even evil at all, the unguided works of science are alive and continue to grow out of control all around us.

Do not ignore it! Science, though mighty, is not invincible. Goodness can prevail. Listen to your hearts. Listen to Yahweh. Together we can step back from this scientific abyss and enjoy true progress.

It's not science that needs to be reconciled to Yahweh - it's people - real people just like you!

## Israelites - the Living Light of this World:

Yah'shua clearly explained what a real Israelite is like. As we consider what He said, we need to ask ourselves why the qualities He described seem to be so hard to find in *Christian* professing nations.

Take Yah'shua's teachings from the Sermon on the Mount, recorded in Luke 6. It says; "Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you". Some of the most bloody battles in history have been waged by *Christian* nations! "No nations are more warlike than those which profess *Christianity*", observed Pierre Bayle, a 17th-century French philosopher of *Christian* Europe. He could have written the same thing of the 21st century! Professing *Christians* have risen up in war against each other, (*and of course, so have other nations*), all the while praying to the same God for victory; the God who said "love your enemies"!

The English poet Shelley commented: "The same means that have supported every other popular belief have supported *Christianity*. War, imprisonment, assassination and falsehood; deeds of unexampled and incomparable atrocity have made it what it is". How can this be? The one who is supposed to be the founder of the *Christian* religion taught His followers to, "Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, bless them that curse

you, and pray for them which despitefully use you" (*Luke 6:27,28*).

This instruction of Yah'shua is hardly followed by *Christian* nations in times of war. But then how often is it followed in times of peace? Where is it put into practice in neighbourhoods, in social circles, among the people you know on a day-to-day basis?

Yah'shua also said: "And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise" (*verse 31*). That has been called the golden rule. It is thought of as a good slogan to hang on a wall, or to dangle from a charm bracelet, or to teach little children. But live by it? Yah'shua did not mean it as a suggestion. It was not His thought for the day. For Yah'shua, it was meant as a living law that He commanded his followers - Israelites, to apply in their daily lives!

"Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father (*Yahweh*) also is merciful, judge not and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven" (*verses 36,37*). How often does merciful kindness govern what is taking place? Think of the competition and greed in business - the cheating, the gouging; the primary emphasis in today's world is on getting the advantage over others, even if it is necessary to hurt them a little (*in some cases, a lot*) to do it.

Our political sphere resounds with name calling, cheating, propaganda,

condemnation, resentment, personal greed, and total deceit. Gossip and back-biting are ever-popular themes in private and public conversation. Movies, novels and television programs, including children's shows, dwell on ideas of getting even, seeking revenge, sexual promiscuity, and violence. All this in a Christian land!

Instances of genuine mercy from one human being to another in the media are remarkable and memorable because they are so uncommon. Yah'shua's teaching covered the great themes of life, and it reaches down to simple lacks of consideration such as being responsible for a blaring radio, a loud motorcycle, litter, damage to public facilities, graffiti and so on.

The Bible describes a society in our time when its religion is a mere form, not having the substance or power to change people's lives. It reads like the front page of many newspapers: "For men will be lovers of self, lovers of money, proud, arrogant, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, inhuman, implacable, slanderers, profligates, fierce, haters of good, treacherous, reckless, swollen with conceit, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of Yahweh, holding the form of religion but denying the power of it" (2 *Timothy* 3:2-5).

If this doesn't describe most modern western nations, nothing does!

Yah'shua knew that some would call him their "Lord", who would profess to belong to him, but who would not put His teachings into practice. Here is what Yah'shua said to his audience, then and now: "Why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?" (*Luke* 6:46). A "lord" is ruler, a master; one who is to be obeyed. In plain language, Yah'shua said: "If you won't obey me don't call me `Lord"! He further said, "ye are my friends if ye do whatsoever I command you" (*John* 14:15). Again; "If ye love me, keep my commandments" (*John* 14:15). Clearly, only a man or woman who does what Yah'shua said to do; who puts into practice the great principles He taught, has the right (*and the respective blessings*) of calling Him "Lord"!

True New Covenant Israelite faith involves faith and belief, but it is not merely a set of beliefs or casually joining a man-made "church", or being "born again" into some religion. It is not something to be practiced one day a week or at odd intervals. Early Israelites referred to it as "the Way of Yahweh" (*Acts* 18:25), and "the way of Yahweh" (*verse* 26). "I am the way, the truth, and the life", the Messiah declared (*John* 14:6). True New Covenant Israelite faith is the Israelite way of life. No one can follow what Yah'shua taught without a marked change in life and lifestyle. Notice how this fact is illustrated in the following example: A rich young man

once came to Yah'shua and asked, "Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life" (*Matt. 19:16*). This man knew following the Messiah involved DOING something! "And He (*Yah'shua*) said unto him...if thou wilt enter into life, KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS" (*verse 17*).

There was no doubt Yah'shua was talking about the commandments as set out in the Law of Moses. When the young man asked which ones, Yah'shua specifically named the ones having to do with showing love toward one's neighbour. To this, the young man replied that he had been keeping those and all the commandments since youth (*he had been reared a Jew*), but he wanted to become a follower of Yah'shua.

Yah'shua required in His followers, true depth of conversion. He knew the young man had a problem - keeping in their true intent, those commandments regarding SELFLESS LOVE; giving to one's neighbour. So Yah'shua bluntly told him that his wealth was an obstacle to him; that he needed to get rid of it. Only then he could become a true follower of Yah'shua. Of course, just because one is wealthy does not prevent one from being an Israelite. Abraham, Solomon and others of great wealth, were Biblical examples of character that was righteous before Yahweh. But human nature and one's attitude tend toward concentration on

self and one's own wealth instead of on the needs of others. Israelites must learn to properly balance both of these. Sadly, the young man departed, unwilling to change his attitude.

The Messiah has revealed principles that bear on every facet of life; every activity, every social situation, every endeavour, every goal and plan. We are even to let our innermost thoughts be ruled by the Lord Yah'shua, "bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of the Messiah", as Paul expressed it (*2 Corinthians 10:5*).

But these inspired instructions are seldom followed today. In the mass evangelistic campaigns of the *Christian* world people are encouraged to make a spur-of-the-moment "decision for the *Christ*", and to come forward in an "altar call", and to be pronounced "saved" or "born Again"! That is not how the Bible says we are to receive His Holy Spirit, which is the free gift GIVEN BY Yahweh, leading us to eternal life!

Here is where many people stumble. They begin to think they know what real New Covenant Israelite faith is all about and to look around at people they know. Or they think of individuals they have known in the past; friends, relatives perhaps, and they use them as standards of comparison. They say to themselves; "Uncle Henry and Aunt Ruth and my friend John did not obey Yah'shua' explicit instructions, but they weren't 'bad' people either. They lived

the way they thought was right. I'll take my chances along with them and with millions of other professing *Christians* who are just average good people. Surely Yahweh won't deny eternal life or salvation to them! Yahweh is merciful".

Yahweh is merciful, that's true. But then what did Yah'shua mean when He said keep all the commandments? He meant exactly what He said! Uncle Henry and Aunt Ruth and friend John and all the millions who have professed *Christianity* without ever understanding what it really is to become an Israelite, will eventually have their opportunity to understand. They too will learn that in order to have the mind of the Messiah in us, it is necessary to keep all the commandments!

If learning this doesn't happen in this life it will happen in a future period of judgement when Yahweh's government rules the earth. That period of time is described in Ezekiel 16:55 and 60-63, Matthew 11:20-24, Luke 10:12-14 and Revelation 20:11-12. This "GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT" occurs after the 1,000 years (*Rev. 20:2-4*), "But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished..." (*verse 5*).

This Judgement will provide these people a lifetime of new experience - like the judgement in this lifetime that is occurring on true Israelites (*the elect*) today (*1 Peter 4:17*)! "If ye know these

things", Yah'shua exclaimed; "happy are ye if ye do them" (*John 13:17*)!

John revealed how we can know who is, and who is not a real Israelite: "And hereby we do know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him" (*1 John 2:3-4*). To know Yahweh and His Messiah, and they are "one", in full harmony as Yah'shua said, we need to experience the kind of character they possess. And Yahweh's very character is directly expressed in His law, beginning in the Ten Commandments.

Those who say they are Israelites and do not keep Yahweh's commandments do not know by experience the character of Yahweh. What is Yahweh's character? "For Yahweh is love" (*1 John 4:8*). Again, "For this is the love of Yahweh, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not burdensome" (*1 John 5:3*).

So a true Israelite will "walk with Yahweh", and will live by Yahweh's law of love; by "every word that proceeds from the mouth of Yahweh". And by exercising this kind of Godly character, he will come to know Yahweh. At this point, some may be wondering how they can become "perfect". They have heard ministers say, "the law is spiritual, and you can't keep it". Both points are absolutely right! The law of Yahweh is

spiritual. And man, by himself, cut off from Yahweh, cannot keep that spiritual law perfectly.

First, Yahweh does not demand instant perfection. Rather, through His inspired Word, He tells us, "but grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Yah'shua the Messiah" (2 Peter 3:18). The true Israelite life is one of learning, overcoming and growing toward the Yahweh-like character that is our ideal. For Yah'shua said: "I have kept my Father's commandments" (John 15:10). And Paul wrote; "Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of the Messiah" (1 Corinthians 11:1).

Notice Paul's description of the problem: "The carnal [*natural*] mind is enmity against Yahweh: for it is not subject to the law of Yahweh, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please Yahweh" (Romans 8:7,8).

Paul is saying that what causes the normal (*carnal*) human being a problem with Yahweh, is that he is antagonistic to Yahweh's law and will not submit to it, but rather submits to the "natural" laws of the physical (*carnal*) senses. We all are certainly "in the flesh", in the sense that we are human, but Paul means: "But ye are not in the flesh, but in His Holy Spirit, if so be that His Spirit of Yahweh dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of the Messiah, he is none of His" (verse 9). Again, "For as many as are led by the

Spirit of Yahweh, these are sons of Yahweh" (verse 14).

This is the ultimate key to true New Covenant Israelite faith! If you have been deeply humbled and converted by your Creator; have surrendered, even though not yet perfectly, to allow Yahweh and His Messiah to live in you through the power of His Holy Spirit, then and only then are you truly an Israelite! Of course, you will still have human nature, the world around you and the invisible influence of Satan the devil to overcome.

You will grow in grace and in knowledge, studying the Bible for instruction with an open mind and heart, praying for understanding and for the spiritual strength to live Yahweh's way. Then Yahweh will be making you His child by putting His very Spiritual nature in you. Step by step, you will reflect in your daily life, the character and obedience of Yahweh the Father that Yah'shua demonstrated in His human life. Yahweh will become more and more real to you. You will demonstrably see that His laws are living laws, just like the physical law of gravity. They all work automatically, no matter whether you, or this or that theologian, believes in them or not.

Yah'shua quoted the prophet Isaiah in speaking of the religious leaders and people of His day: "...this people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me" (Mark 7:6).

Religion is often superficial. What is lacking is deeply sincere repentance. This is what distinguishes real New Covenant Israelite faith from the traditional. A dictionary definition of repentance is: "to feel self-reproach, compunction, or contrition for past conduct, to feel such sorrow for sin or fault as to be disposed to change one's life for the better".

Godly repentance means to stop sinning (*by first realizing that sin is the transgression of Yahweh's laws of love - 1 John 3:4*), and to turn and go the other way - to change your way of life! It's not always easy to say I'm sorry, but it's even harder to mean it. Godly repentance has to come from the heart and it involves a fundamental change of attitude and mind.

Speaking of a sinful people, Yahweh says; "And they have not cried unto me with their heart, when they howled upon their beds: ...they rebel against me...They return, but not to the most High" (*Hos. 7:14-16*). People have made an outward show of returning to Yahweh, but they haven't done it with their hearts. What the world calls repentance, is all too often, outward, superficial worldly repentance, with no real sincerity or deep feeling.

Any time you break or disobey any one of the holy, righteous commandments of Yahweh, you have sinned and you need to repent of that sin. No one is excluded. No man,

woman or child (*other than the Messiah*) has ever lived who has not disobeyed and broken Yahweh's law (*Romans 3:10,23*). Therefore, everyone must face the need to repent deeply, and sometimes bitterly. To become a genuine Israelite we each must ask the Father in heaven that the Messiah's shed blood cover our sins; that the sacrifice of His life be accepted in our stead so the penalty for our sins can be removed from us. Then we need to begin to obey Yahweh. We need to establish a new and different approach to life. We now begin to keep His commandments - all of them - with zeal!

Of course, we can't just drum up the deep feeling of abhorrence for our sins by ourselves. It has to come from Yahweh; for, "THE GOODNESS OF Yahweh LEADETH THEE TO REPENTANCE" (*Romans 2:4*). It is Yahweh who helps us to see our own shortcomings, and opens our minds and starts us on the way to repentance. The Bible names dozens of individuals who are going to be in the kingdom of Yahweh. David, Daniel and other servants found out how to reach the Creator of the universe. As soon as they realized Yahweh was displeased with them or their nation's ways, they set out to correct the situation.

Yahweh calls people to repentance through chastening. Often He allows financial problems, family problems, sickness, or other serious

situations to develop so that we can realize our need of Him. These trials are proof of the Father's love for each one whom He calls to repentance. Notice Hebrews 12:6,7; "for whom Yahweh loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, Yahweh dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?"

Instead of fighting these problems in our own strength, we need to learn the lesson Yahweh is teaching us. We need to begin to seek Him. He doesn't need us - we do need Him!

Have you tried to get others converted - "saved", as many traditional Christians express it? Have you started to "preach"? If you have you have probably started controversy, antagonism - lost a friend, or even a wife or husband. But if you haven't started - DON'T!

Like all unconverted people, you may have been self-centered, and selfish, but now instead of so much self-concern, you have an abundance of enthusiastic outgoing concern for others. Especially for your own family, relatives and friends. You want to share this wonderful truth. You want them to have the "firstfruits" benefits of Yahweh's plan of salvation. Yah'shua told us we are the light of the world and that we must let our light shine: "ye are the light of the world...let your light so shine before men, that they may SEE YOUR GOOD

WORKS". (*Matt. 5:14,16*). Notice carefully that He did not say "that they may HEAR your good arguments"! He said that they may see your good works.

A nearly universal mistake is committed by traditional *Christians* and by many newly converted, especially where a husband or wife yields to Yahweh's truth without the other. In very few, if any instances, has the unconverted mate (*or friend*) been talked into accepting it. Of all things evil and harmful you may do as a new Israelite, the very worst is to try and talk your spouse, friend or relative into your religion. If you love them, don't do it!

Remember these scriptures: "No man can come to me," Yah'shua said, "except the Father which hath sent me draw him" (*John 6:44,65*). Again Yah'shua speaks to Israelite women through the apostle Peter's letter, "Likewise, you wives, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the Word, they, WITHOUT A WORD, may be won by the conduct of their wives, when they OBSERVE your chaste conduct..." (*1 Peter 3:1,2*).

Yahweh made every human a free moral agent. Thank Yahweh! No one has power to force on you any unwanted religion. Every man or woman must make his or her own decision. A religious difference between husband and wife (*or relative, best friend*) is a serious handicap. But if such a difference already exists, do not make

matters worse by talking about your religion. Do all your talking to Yahweh in prayer. Let your mate (*or relative, friend*) SEE your happy, pleasant, cheerful, joyful, loving way of life - not hear your arguments or nagging! Never try to talk anyone into accepting Bible truths - it's not Yahweh's way!

Paul spoke to unconverted Jews: "Unto the Hebrews I became as a Hebrew" (*1 Corinthians 9:20,22*). He spoke to others from their point of view. He talked to Hebrews, from the Hebrew viewpoint, showing sympathy and understanding of their way of looking at New Covenant Israelite faith.

They were hostile to the idea of Yah'shua being the promised Messiah. Paul did not further arouse this hostility - he put it down. He got on the inside, so to speak, just as one of them, so that they were sympathetic toward his efforts. He became a Hebrew, "that I might gain the Hebrews". Even so he gained only a small minority, yet it was a large number.

One of the main principles of successful advertising is that to get results you must first learn the attitude of your audience toward your product or service. You must not antagonize those whom you expect to persuade. Approach your topic from their point of view. "FREELY YOU HAVE RECEIVED, FREELY GIVE"! In other words, SHARE your spiritually discerned, revealed understandings of Yahweh's Word, with

anyone who LISTENS OF THEIR OWN FREE WILL!

And remember to have faith in one absolute! If Yahweh decides the time is right for one of His children to be "called" into His Congregation, then Yahweh, and only Yahweh, through His Holy Spirit will surely do just that!

## **Israelites - Salt of the Earth:**

In His Sermon on the Mount, Yah'shua took His closest disciples to a secluded place where He personally taught them the way of life that leads to true happiness.

In the course of His teaching, Yah'shua told the disciples - and us today: "You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt loses its flavour, how shall it be seasoned? It is then good for nothing but to be thrown down and trampled under foot by men" (Matthew 5:13). What did Yah'shua mean, and how can salt teach us about the qualities of an Israelite?

Salt occurs commonly in nature. Various industries put salt to about 14,000 different uses. Only about 3 percent of the world's salt production is currently used in the home. Think of the small amount of salt used to season a meal - just a dash, a few grains makes a big difference.

In Yah'shua's day salt was not as readily available as it is now. It was once so valuable that it was used to pay the wages of Roman soldiers. We get the English word "salary" from this ancient practice of paying with salt. Salt was used as payment for buying and selling of Greek slaves. Sometimes today, people still ask whether someone is "worth his salt".

The disciples would have understood the value and rarity of salt. One meaning Yah'shua was illustrating was the rarity of committed Israelites. The people of Yahweh, in whom the Spirit of Yahweh resides (*Romans 8:9*), are sprinkled across the earth like you would sprinkle salt across food - sparingly. But what a difference they make!

Salt, besides being used sparingly, is pure. Germs or bacteria cannot live in it. The spiritual analogy should be clear - Israelites must be pure - free of sin - impurities. According to *Leviticus 2:13*, salt was to be a part of all grain offerings. The salt was needed to symbolize the purity of the sacrifice.

Israelites under the New Priesthood, are to present themselves to Yahweh as living sacrifices (*Romans 12:1*). We, as the "salt of the earth", are to be pure.

If we are pure, the work we do must be right (*Proverbs 21:8*); our hearts must be pure (*1 Timothy 1:5*); as should our conscience (*1 Timothy 3:9*); our thoughts (*Philippians 4:8*) and our religion (*James 1:27*). To be spiritually pure means to be unadulterated with the wrong ways of this world - with false religions, false philosophies, dishonest ways, selfish desires and vain thoughts.

Our most common contact with salt is as a condiment for our food. We know how salt, when used properly, can add taste, and thereby pleasure to a meal. The patriarch Job said: "Can flavourless food be eaten without salt? Or is there any taste in the white of an egg?" (*Job 6:6*).

Salt then is symbolic as a spice or flavouring. Israelite living should add flavour and spice to our own, as well as to other people's lives. Just as salt adds a wonderful dimension to food, the Israelite life should be filled with interest, zip, hope and excitement. Joy is, after all, one of the fruits of His Holy Spirit (*Galatians 5:22*).

It should be a joyful pleasure for others to be around Israelites. Yahweh's joy should be flowing through us to those around us. We, as the "salt of the earth", should be positive, turned-on people, helping to give zest to the lives of others through the power of His Holy Spirit.

As Israelites, we are to set a good example for the world around us. Just as salt produces physical thirst, our lifestyle should produce a spiritual thirst in those around us. People are to "see your good works and glorify your Father in heaven" (*Matthew 5:16*). By our example, we create a positive impression of Yahweh's way of life.

As an essential ingredient of diet, salt has historically symbolized hospitality and friendship. Israelites, as "the salt of the earth", should be the world's most hospitable people, spreading friendship everywhere. In ancient times, many friendships were sealed under a "covenant of salt", as were all important contracts and treaties. The Old Covenant uses this phrase several times, such as in 2 Chronicles 13:5, describing the "covenant of salt" as an unbreakable alliance between friends.

In the same sentence in which Yah'shua instructed the disciples that they were to be "the salt of the earth", He warned them that they should not lose their flavour (*Mathew 5:13*). Salt without flavour is indeed good for little. But how does salt lose its flavour?

Salt is an enduring mineral. The deposits in salt mines are thousands of years old, yet the salt is flavourful. Even refined salt can be stored for endless periods without it losing any flavour. It may grow hard and lumpy, but it cannot spoil or lose its flavour.

Dissolved in water, salt disappears, but its quality remains. Taste the water and the salt is still there. Likewise, evaporate the water, at any rate of speed, and all of the salt is still there. Even when returned to normal temperatures after heating to 801 degrees Celsius, the temperature at which salt melts, it still retains its particular chemical composition and flavour. Pure salt is literally indestructible, just as Yahweh's Word endures forever!

Only when salt is contaminated with some foreign substance, can the flavour of salt be compromised or destroyed. Can you see the implications for Israelites? Yah'shua said that though we must be in the world, we are not to be of the world (*John 17:15-16*).

Like salt, we can easily become contaminated, or "adulterated" by outside influences, and lose our spiritual "flavour".

Choked by the "cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the desires for other things entering in" (*Mark 4:19*), Israelites can become unfruitful. The effectiveness of Yahweh's Word, when adulterated by the contaminated doctrines of false traditional Christianity, can easily be obstructed. Faithful Israelites must not allow themselves to be contaminated by this world. We are the "salt of the earth", and must not lose our effectiveness; our "flavour".

As true Israelites, as "the salt of the earth", Yahweh has sanctified us - set us apart for His holy use and purpose. We, Yahweh's Elect, are living temples in whom the Spirit of Yahweh resides (*Romans 8:9*). We become "Holy" upon acceptance of Yahweh's Spirit.

"Do you not know that you are the temple of Yahweh and that the Spirit of Yahweh dwells in you? If anyone defiles the temple of Yahweh, Yahweh will destroy him. For the temple of Yahweh is Holy, which temple you are" (*1 Cor. 3:16,17*).

As Yahweh's Elect - as Yahweh's Holy temples, we must take care not to defile, that is, profane that which is Holy to Yahweh. In this context, Yah'shua's teaching us on how to be the "salt of the earth", is perhaps the most fascinating of His parables. Just as salt, in its simple, unadulterated, natural form, is useful as a preservative and for flavour, so it is symbolic of our physical bodies; in their simple, unadulterated, natural form, being useful as living temples - the "salt of the earth", to preserve the Word of Yahweh and to use it to add flavour to the lives of those around us.

Yahweh makes it perfectly clear in His Word, that only Yahweh can make anything Holy. Yahweh also takes care to warn us many times, not to profane or defile that which is Holy to Yahweh. Even things as basic as a stone altar, are important to Yahweh in this context. "And if you make Me an altar of stone, you

shall not build it of hewn stone; for if you use your tool on it [*Yahweh's stone*], you have profaned it" (*Exodus 20:25*). In other words, Yahweh is saying that what He has designed and created, is to be left in its most natural and unadulterated state. Man can do nothing to improve what Yahweh has designed and created.

As the "salt of the earth", this applies to our bodies - Yahweh's Holy temples as well. Many passages in the Bible speak of things related to maintaining the body in good health, through common sense, eating the right things and moderate exercise. But there are also many warnings in the Bible about physical vanity and self-esteem.

When speaking His warning of destruction to the vain people of our time, Jeremiah was inspired by Yahweh to write: "The whole land shall be desolate;...every city shall be forsaken, and not a man shall dwell in it...and...what will you do?...Though you enlarge your eyes with paint, in vain you will make yourself fair; your lovers will despise you; they will seek your life" (*Jer.4:27-30*).

In 2 Kings 9:22, a vain woman named Jezebel is described as a harlot who practiced witchcraft. Later, in verse 30, we are told: "Jezebel heard of it; and she put paint on her eyes and adorned her head..." A few verses later (*32-34*), we are told how she was thrown out of a window to a bloody death and trampled under foot by horses to the point where there was nothing left to bury!

When the apostle Peter wrote his first letter to the Israelites in Asia Minor, he was inspired by Yahweh to instruct the husbands and wives on proper behaviour. He said to the women: "Do not let your beauty be that outward adorning of arranging the hair, of wearing gold, or of putting on fine apparel; but let it be the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible ornament of a gentle and quiet

spirit, which is very precious in the sight of Yahweh" (*3:3,4*).

Yahweh naturally expects us to maintain proper decorum with respect to dress and personal hygiene, that is not the point of these verses. The point is that we are not to be overly, or vainly concerned with our outward "appearance", but rather, we are to look within ourselves, for the "substance" that leads to a healthy level of self-esteem.

Yahweh is in effect, saying that if His Spirit is dwelling within us, that we are indeed being perfected from the inside out - His Spirit within us is much more precious than any outward appearance.

Just as table salt, maintains an effective flavour in spite of its being pure, simple and undefiled in appearance, so we are simply meant, as "the salt of the earth", to maintain our physical bodies; our Holy, living temples, as pure, simple and undefiled in appearance, in order that the precious beauty of His Spirit within, will shine on those around us.

This is NOT to be construed as a lesson condemning the use of makeup or cosmetics. On the contrary, the Bible, in fact gives many examples of proper use of fragrant oils and even directs us to wash and anoint ourselves with fragrant oils so that we do not "appear to men to be fasting" as the hypocrites do (*Matt. 6:17*).

The purpose of these verses as they relate to vanity inherent in humans, is to teach humility. They are to be our guide to the better source of self-esteem - to His Spirit within us. They caution us to beware of the subtle but ever-present temptations we face as humans - of being vainly ensnared by the superficial trappings of this world.

Yah'shua' parable of "the salt of the earth", is perhaps, the most complex of His many simple and profound statements made to His disciples. Retrospectively, it may seem

simple and obvious. But the overwhelming significance of the messages within the message is evident.

We are THE SALT OF THE EARTH. We are sparingly present in this world - to make a difference! We are pure - washed from our impurities, our sins, by the blood of Yah'shua (*1 John 1:7-9*). We are living temples - Holy to Yahweh - unadulterated, uncontaminated by the world. We are examples of the Truth to be seen by all, adding spice to the lives of everyone. Our examples are to produce a spiritual thirst in others. We are to preserve the Word of Yahweh. And we are to do this in a spirit of humility for the glory of Yahweh.

We have been granted the privilege of considering both Yahweh our Father, and the Messiah as our friends. Our commitments to Yahweh our Father and to accepting Yah'shua the Messiah as our Saviour, are as "covenants of salt" - unbreakable between friends!

Yahweh demonstrated His compassion when He sacrificed His only begotten Son; that through Him, we might be saved. Yah'shua also proved to be quite a friend - "Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one's life for his friends" (*John 15:13*)!

## Human Suffering:

A little boy suffered from a congenital heart defect. Death hung over his every breath. It took his life before he had a chance to really understand what living was all about. He was only 3 years old.

Why? Why does Yahweh let little children like this die? Where is Yahweh when we need Him most?

In Europe, a coal mine explosion snuffed out the lives of 51 miners. They were hard working men. Many were loving fathers and husbands, dedicated to supporting and maintaining their families.

The pain and tragedy of it all was dramatically evidenced by scenes of weeping wives and family members, reeling and agonizing over the loss of their loved ones.

Where was Yahweh? Why does Yahweh allow such terrible disasters and suffering to occur, concerned people ask?

According to estimates, in World War I, more than 8 million military personnel were killed, and millions of civilians not in direct combat also died. Multiple millions of others suffered painful, debilitating, deforming injuries that would last for the rest of their lives.

World war II occurred in nearly the same area and for some of the same reasons. The loss of life and incident of mayhem and crippling injuries were staggeringly worse.

As the smoke was barely clearing from World War II, fighting and killing erupted in the Middle East. In other areas of the globe hundreds of local wars have since been fought. Why does Yahweh allow so much suffering? Why does He not prevent wars?

Droughts and floods afflict our globe. Crops can't grow - livestock can't survive. Famine looms over many regions. Why does Yahweh allow natural disasters to strike that cause famines and starvation, disease and death? Where is Yahweh?

Nineteenth century German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche claimed: "God is dead!" English mathematician and philosopher Bertrand Russell wrote a prodigious amount of verbiage in his "Unpopular Essays" trying to prove a God never existed; that there was not a "first cause", as he stated it.

But objective individuals know better. The intricately woven details of this earth's composition and life systems, let alone the rest of the universe, prove a First Cause.

Yahweh does exist - His creation proves it! "The fool has said in his heart, `There is no God'" (*Psalms 14:1*). "For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Divinity, so they are without excuse" (*Romans 1:20*). "By faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of Yahweh, so that the THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN WERE NOT MADE OF THINGS WHICH ARE VISIBLE" (*Hebrews 11:3*). (A fact recently PROVED by scientists - the smallest known particles of matter, when under extreme magnification, are nothing more than "organized energy patterns, giving the appearance of substance"!)

If Yahweh does exist - and He does - why must the world face devastating, heartrending problems? Why has there been so much suffering throughout human history?

There is a reason why humans find themselves engulfed in seemingly unsolvable problems, despite all of the marvellous technology and scientific understanding man has acquired.

To comprehend why this earth is in the plight it is in, and why humans have written so much blood and suffering into history, we must go back to our beginning. The only reliable source of available knowledge - the Bible - our very own personal "operator's manual" for the mortal, human race!

"In the beginning Yahweh created [re-created, re-fashioned from what Satan's rebellion destroyed, and Yahweh had previously created] the heavens and the earth" (*Gen. 1:1*). The great Yahweh from another dimension, out of another realm - other than the physical one which we are able to understand, did it all. No other explanation makes sense.

Much later, He began our human history on earth. "So Yahweh created man in His own image" (*Gen. 1:27*). Yahweh purposefully left out much of the history of the universe and life on earth prior to our being first introduced. Our "operator's manual" - the Bible, is written about, and refers only to the period of time that is relevant to us in this mortal lifetime. The extreme past as well as the extreme future (*our eternal life in the Kingdom*) has been left out for simplification - in order that we might be able to concentrate on the task at hand - getting this mortal life in order, and preparing for the future. Think of comparing it to the operator's manual of a new car. The car manufacturer includes only that information pertaining to the year and model of the car you purchased - even though you know the car manufacturer has produced many previous models, and may yet produce future models.

Our original parents were given a first simple rule and the free-will choice to follow it. Along with the choice, Yahweh warned them of the penalty for making the wrong choice.

"...Of every tree of the garden you may eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die" (*Gen. 2:16,17*). Yahweh was symbolically telling Adam that if he chose to determine on his own what was right and wrong - thereby rejecting the certain knowledge of what is right and wrong that Yahweh said He would freely provide, that Adam (*and his progeny*) would

surely make some errors, resulting in death. Yahweh had already learned of the problems inherent in allowing His created beings - the angels, to make this same choice - their rebellion and eternal punishment.

Our parents made the wrong choice. They were unable to resist the temptation of trying to do it "on their own". They turned down "the tree of life" - the symbolic representation of accepting Yahweh's definition of right and wrong - living Yahweh's way which leads to happiness, abundant living now - ultimately leading to eternal life.

Instead they chose what Yahweh had warned them not to. The way of hit and miss, some happiness at times, much sorrow and difficulty, and the way of living apart from Yahweh - as He had warned, that would lead to death.

That's why all the suffering, war and hardships of the past and why the same today! Just like our first parents, we have had, and still do have, the free-will choice of following Yahweh's defined ways of what is right and wrong. History, past and present, is witness to our stubborn continuance of this rejection. It is that simple!

The Bible clearly teaches us, that in THIS LIFE, "WE REAP WHAT WE SOW". An example: We celebrate our recent choices that resulted in our "sexual liberation". Over the past 30 years, the cases of sexually transmissible diseases have skyrocketed to the point where one in four men or women in North America has been infected at least once, with herpes, gonorrhoea, or syphilis. The World Health Organization admits that 100 percent of our population in North America could be infected with HIV (*AIDS virus*), by the year 2014, unless a cure or quarantine is introduced. And we still discuss sexual freedom as a "basic right between consenting adults"!

The words "consenting adult" are an obvious contradiction in terms; any one sufficiently informed to make an "adult" decision, would never willingly participate in "liberated" sexual encounters under these circumstances. But millions still do! Like animals - brute beasts, their brains do not function sufficiently to overcome the momentary satisfaction of relieving their sex organs! These so-called "liberated" men or women are contributing to a tragic loss of life, the pain and suffering of those infected as well as their friends and relatives, and the hundreds of billions of dollars this costs us all, as ample evidence that we "reap what we sow" in this lifetime!

Yahweh is aware of what takes place on this earth. He knows the suffering and heartache that is extant. But He does not desire that mankind shall live the WAY PEOPLE HAVE CHOSEN. "Behold, Yahweh's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; nor His ear heavy, that it cannot hear. But your iniquities have separated you from your God; and your sins have hidden His face from you, so that He will not hear" (*Isa. 59:1,2*).

Yahweh does not want humanity to suffer. Yet He knew that without suffering we would never learn the full meaning of the wrong choices we make - that we would never learn the full meaning of His Love - Yahweh is love (*1 John 4:16*). The love that He freely gave us in our hearts and in our minds - and in writing - in His Word. He is all compassionate, full of mercy, long-suffering and kindness - He cares about you and me!

At the same time Yahweh does not want to remove our free-will choices. He is not looking to create some mindless automatons. Rather, He is in the process of creating like-minded beings who are learning to discern, desire and choose His way of life. During this process we humans must learn that having our

own way, the "way of good and evil" that we choose, is the way that leads us to unhappiness and miseries. Yahweh is not to be blamed for our own greed, hypocrisy, lying, cheating, governmental corruption, false religions - over-inflated egos! But Yahweh is responsible for the discipline, the punishment - suffering - that we bring upon ourselves as a result of our wrong decisions.

Yahweh is watching developments on this earth. He is still keeping hands off and allowing men to make choices - to complete (*finish*) the experience of learning how really wrong some of our ways are, that seem so right to us.

Yahweh is waiting until sin reaches the full; until the time comes when, if He did not step in to intervene, mankind would bring (*and would know it*) an end to all life (*Matt. 24:22*). Then at the precise time, Yahweh will send Yah'shua the Messiah back to this earth to put an end to man's rule, and establish Yahweh's Kingdom.

For 1,000 years (*Rev. 20:4*) Yahweh's way of life will bring peace, health and prosperity. The "earth shall be full of the knowledge of Yahweh, as the waters of the sea" (*Isa. 11:9*).

War shall become a thing of the past: "They shall beat their swords into plow shares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more" (*Mic. 4:3*).

And then our vast undertaking of participating in the "creative management" of the entire creation - the universe, will begin!

## Myth of Hell:

Three Greek words have been erroneously translated in the King James version of the Bible (*and most others*), into the one word "HELL". In the NIBEV, we have corrected this.

1. "**HADES**" - used in the original Greek eleven times in the entire Bible, is the equivalent to the Old Covenant word "SHEOL", meaning "grave or pit", and may be "likened to a hole in the ground". The eleven times it is used in the Bible by the English translation of "Hell", it has nothing to do with fire.

2. "**TARTAROOS**" - is used only once in Scripture in 2 Peter 2:4, "For if Yahweh spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to Hell (*Tartaroos*), and delivered them into chains of darkness to be reserved unto judgement..." Following their rebellion to unseat Yahweh, or to "rise up as the most high", (*Isa. 14:12, Rev. 12:4*), Satan and his one third of the fallen angels were ejected from heaven (*Luke 10:18*) and cast down to Tartaroos, a place or condition of restraint. This Tartaroos, or English translation "Hell", is reserved only for evil, rebellious angels or demons. Nowhere in the Bible is there any mention of "men" being put there.

3. "**GEHENNA**" - is the original Greek word used in the Bible every time reference is made to the "everlasting or ever-burning inferno", by the same English word, "Hell". This word "Gehenna" is a Greek translation of the Hebrew "GAI HINNOM", meaning "valley of Hinnom". Hinnom is a deep, narrow ravine located at the southwest of Jerusalem. In Yah'shua's time, this "place", became the cesspool, or city dump of Jerusalem - a repository for sewage, refuse, bodies of dead animals and despised criminals, all of which were burned there along with the rubbish.

Revelation 19:20 says, "...and the beast was taken and with him the false prophet...that

these might be cast into a lake of fire burning with brimstone". This refers to a TEMPORARY "Hell", as set out in Isa. 30:33, "For Tophet [*in the valley of Hinnom*] is ordained of old, yea, for the King it is prepared, He hath made it deep and large, the pile thereof is fire and wood and the breath of Yahweh, like a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it". This "Hell" is yet to be created by Yahweh, in the valley of Hinnom at the Messiah's Second Coming.

One thousand years later, Satan will be cast into this "rekindled" fire lake where the Beast and False Prophet were cast - Rev. 20:10. In the sequence of Rev. 20:10-15, the wicked (*men*) are resurrected to be thrown into this same lake of fire, AFTER Satan has been cast there. (*Read it yourself.*) The Bible says nothing of these people suffering in flames for eternity - it DOES say that they will be burned up, destroyed, consumed as set out in several places: "For, behold, the DAY COMETH that shall burn as an oven, and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble, and THE DAY THAT COMETH SHALL BURN THEM UP" (*Malachi 4:1*). In verse 3, Yahweh says to the righteous that the wicked shall be "...ashes under the soles of your feet".

This is the punishment that the Bible says is "everlasting", meaning "irreversible", permanent and final. The Bible calls this the "second death", from which there is no possibility of a further resurrection (*see Rev. 20:14 and 21:8*). The Bible teaches eternal PUNISHMENT, not eternal punishing. In other words, a punishment that is finite for the wicked. The Bible says the wages of sin is DEATH - not eternal life in torture. Eternal life is the free gift of Yahweh reserved for the righteous.

"...and the sea gave up the DEAD which were in it; and death and HELL (*hades - grave or pit*) delivered up the DEAD which were in them: and they were judged according to their

works. And DEATH AND HELL were CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE. This is the SECOND DEATH. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire" (*Rev. 20:13-15*).

Notice the Bible says the wicked were cast into "the second death", not to eternal life and punishing, but rather, the second death, which is eternal punishment.

"...For yet a little while and the wicked SHALL NOT BE...But the wicked shall perish... they shall consume: into smoke they shall consume away (*Psalms 37:9,12,20,22,29*). Now notice Psalm 104:35, "Let the sinners be CONSUMED out of the earth and let the wicked BE NO MORE", and Isaiah 66:24; "And they shall go forth and look upon the carcasses of men that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring to all flesh". This does not mean burning forever and ever.

Try this test: put a piece of paper in a pan - light it and don't QUENCH it - don't put it out, that's what quench means. Very soon the paper will burn up, be consumed and become as ashes under the soles of your feet - exactly as the Bible clearly says the wicked shall be.

The Bible says Yah'shua went to Hell when He died! See Acts 2:31, "He [*David*] seeing this before spake of the resurrection of the Messiah, that his soul [*body*] was not left in Hell, neither his flesh did see corruption". The Hell where Yah'shua was for three days and three nights was the Greek word HADES, or grave or tomb.

"Their worm shall not die" - Yah'shua did not here mean that each worm continued to live forever! He was not teaching the immortality of worms! The Greek word inspired in this passage and translated into the English "worm", simply means a maggot or larvae. The Greek expression translated into "not die",

simply means it will not "cease to be", or "come to an end"; such as larvae that do not die, but pupate into flies, which instinctively lay eggs, providing a never-ending replenishment of the larvae, that never cease to be.

The Biblical story of Lazarus and the Rich Man illustrates this point well: "And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man died also, and was buried" (*Luke 16:22*). They both DIED! Yah'shua did not say the beggar went to heaven - he died - and went to Abraham's bosom. A dictionary definition of bosom, is "the breast of a human being, with the arms as an enclosure - a loving embrace as in an intimate relationship".

So Lazarus died and went into an intimate relationship with Abraham as in Galatians 3:29, "And if ye be the Messiah's, then are ye Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise". Through faith, we all become the "children of Abraham" - THAT is the intimate relationship with Abraham. Yahweh promised Abraham; "For all the land which thou seest, to thee I will give it, and to thy seed forever" (*Gen. 13:15*). An heir cannot receive his inheritance before his father does! The Bible says Abraham is STILL DEAD and HAS YET to be resurrected and to receive his promise.

Hebrews 11:8-11, "By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should AFTER receive for an inheritance...DIED in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them AFAR OFF".

In John 8:52, "Abraham is dead" - and he is still dead! He died, and he will inherit the promise at the resurrection of the just. "For Yahweh Himself shall descend from heaven...and the DEAD in the Messiah shall rise first" (*1 Thes. 4:16*). And Lazarus is in this DEAD man's (*Abraham's*) bosom, also dead -

and they, being "in the Messiah" will both (*along with countless others*) be resurrected (*carried by the angels*), unto eternal life - together - in Abraham's bosom.

Yah'shua said of the Rich Man: "The rich man also died, and was BURIED". He did not say the rich man went immediately to some eternally burning hell-fire - he was buried! Yah'shua said so! And in hell (*hades - pit or grave*) he (*rich man*) "lifted up his eyes" (*Luke 16:22,23*). His eyes had been closed in death, and would be opened at the resurrection. "And many of them that sleep [*their eyes closed*] in the dust of the earth [*their grave - hades*] shall awake [*lift up their eyes*], some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt" (*Dan. 12:2*).

The Greek words here translated to everlasting, are in the "present-continuous tense", and mean, forever irreversible. Yah'shua said in John 5:28:29, "The hour is coming in which ALL that are in the GRAVES shall hear His voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil [including the rich man] unto the resurrection of damnation".

Yah'shua clearly speaks of two of the separate resurrections. "...they that are the Messiah's at his coming" and then, "cometh the end", indicating the resurrection of the unjust later. In Revelation 20:5, "But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished". So the Bible clearly says Lazarus will be resurrected first, when Yah'shua returns, and the Rich Man will be resurrected 1,000 years later, after the millenium.

All the dead - just or unjust, ARE NOT CONSCIOUS until resurrected. "...for the living know that they shall die, but the DEAD KNOW NOT ANYTHING...for the memory of them is forgotten" (*Eccl. 9:5*). Job 14:21 says similar. Psalm 146:4 says about death: "His breath

goeth forth, he returneth to this earth, in that very day his thoughts PERISH".

In the story, the Rich Man awakes in his grave (*hades*) and sees Lazarus (*symbolically*) in Abraham's bosom - sees him living with the promised inheritance, and also sees the awful lake of fire (*valley of Hinnom*) which IS ABOUT to destroy him forever, and he is mortally terrified. Terror triggers a natural reaction in everyone - mouth goes dry, and tongue sticks to mouth and throat. He asks Abraham for a "couple drops", saying "send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water...to cool my tongue", because the flame was tormenting him. The Greek word translated into tormenting, is "odunomai", which means pain of mind, grief and distress - not physical pain.

The Rich Man symbolizes the great gulf between sinners and those that are in the Messiah. This gulf, mentioned by Abraham, prevents the wicked from escaping the second death by fire in the valley of Hinnom (*Hell*), and keeps the righteous from being burned up. This gulf is "immortality" - see Rev. 20:6. The Rich Man realizes he was doomed, and Yah'shua uses him as an illustrative example. He now comprehended the great gulf that existed between him and those made immortal. Abraham made clear, the utter impossibility of the Rich Man crossing that gulf. He had his chance during his mortal lifetime.

The Rich Man next thinks of his five brothers and begs Abraham to send Lazarus; Abraham replied that they (*the brothers*) had the writings of Moses and the Prophets - they did not need Lazarus. The Rich Man realized his brothers (like himself), would not "hear" the Scriptures, and screamed to Abraham: "Nay, father Abraham, but if one went unto them FROM THE DEAD, they will repent". Abraham replied: "If they hear not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose FROM THE DEAD". The Bible

makes it perfectly clear that all humans will die - be buried - remain in their graves (*hades or Hell*) - and be resurrected.

Yah'shua used common, everyday language that his simple followers were able to easily understand. The second death, like the valley of Hinnom (*Gai Hinnom - Hell*), would be something the people would want to avoid at all costs. His followers were well aware of what a foul place this "Gehenna" was, and would indeed be horrified at the thought of being burned up there.

We must always remember, that the great majority of translations of the Bible were originally conducted by, or on behalf of, or under some type of influence, stemming from Roman Catholic theology - the "Mother of Harlots". As it is clearly set out in the Bible, this organized Traditional Christianity has its power from Satan.

Although Yahweh's word has remained intact after various translations, this false church has used its great powers of deception to cause such ambiguous translations as "Hell", purportedly with one meaning, from the original three Greek words with three different meanings. Such efforts, have proved very effective over the years in the Catholic Church's (*and most traditional Christianity's*) propagation of its false, fear/money-driven doctrine of "heaven and hell".

The good news about death, is the fact that we are, "asleep"; that is while we are dead, WE ARE NOT CONSCIOUS. It will seem to us (*even though it does not happen until the Messiah returns*), that the resurrection will have happened at the VERY INSTANT of death - in "the blinking of an eye", we will be resurrected to our hope of salvation!

## Origins & History of Baptism:

**Baptism** is generally a religious ritualistic water purification, practiced in many of various religions including *Christianity*, *Mandaeism*, and *Sikhism*. The *Messiahian* form of the ritual specifically has its origins with the Hebrew *pre-Christian* ritual of *mikvah*.

The word *baptize* derives from the Greek word βάπτειν (*the infinitive; also listed as the 1st person singular present active indicative βαπτίζω*), which loosely means "to dip, bathe, or wash". To some groups it is a matter of religious conviction to assert that *baptism* is literally equivalent to, *to plunge something entirely into the water, so that the water closes over it*. To other groups, *baptism* is a symbolic term meaning "identification with" (e.g. *the Christian Church*) having no connection with earthly ritual.

*Baptism*, e.g., *mikvah*, was familiar as an entrance ritual into the Hebrew faith and Temple long before the *Messiahian* era. It remained familiar to the Hebrews and to the Gentiles of Yah'shua's day and also to non-practicing Hebrews.

The many mystery religions of the day also used *baptism* in this way, and some scholars believe that Gentile proselytes to Judaism were *baptized* into the faith as well. Hebrews of first century Palestine, on the other hand, would not have considered *baptism* an appropriate ritual for themselves, for they had already "crossed through" the waters of the Red Sea via their ethnic heritage and had no need to cross over again.

Thus, John's call for fellow Hebrews to be *baptized* was provocative and unexpected. That so many responded to this call signalled a great desire in many for a new way of life.

The synoptic Gospels differentiate between John's *baptism* and *baptism* in the name of Yah'shua. John's is emphasized as a *baptism* of repentance and preparation for the

complete, or Spiritual *baptism* done by the Messiah. Whereas John *baptized* with water, Yah'shua would come *baptizing* with His Holy Spirit and fire (*Matt. 3:11*).

Yah'shua Himself did not *baptize* with water (*John 4:2*). Rather His *baptism* denoted an inner experience, a coming of His Holy Spirit and fire, an experience that happened prior to the water ritual. The book of Acts contains the most clearly defined *Christian baptism* rituals. The Ethiopian eunuch (*Acts 8:26-40*), the jailer from Philippi (*Acts 16:16-34*), and the Roman centurion Cornelius (*Acts 10:1-48*) are examples of persons who expressed repentance and/or acted upon belief in Yah'shua, received His Holy Spirit and then later experienced *baptism*.

Today, water *baptism* is most readily identified with *Christianity*, where it superstitiously symbolizes the cleansing (*remission*) of sins, and the union of the believer with the Messiah in His death, burial and resurrection so that he becomes one of the Messiah's Faithful. Most *Christian* groups practice some form of literal water-based *baptism* and agree that it is important, yet strongly disagree with other groups regarding any or all of several aspects of *baptism*, such as:

- form of the *baptism*
- recipients of *baptism*
- meaning of the act of *baptism*

However, a few *Christian* groups acknowledge that water-based *baptism* has been erroneously retained in favour of the promised baptism by His Holy Spirit, and that water *baptism* was unnecessarily carried over from the early Jewish *pre-Christian* practice of *mikvah*. This assertion holds the only provable basis for the continuance of the *pre-Christian* ritual.

The term *baptism* is not used to describe the Hebrew or modern Jewish rituals, the purification rites, or *Mikvah* – the ritual bath

in Hebrew laws and tradition where the ritual of *baptism* can find its true origins. In the Tanakh, and other Hebrew texts, bathing for ritual purification was established for specified circumstances – in order to be restored to a condition of 'ritual purity'. For example, Hebrews who become ritually 'defiled' by contact with a corpse (*according to the Law of Moses*), had to use the *mikvah* before being allowed to participate in the Holy Temple. Immersion was required for converts to the Hebrew faith, and is still a requirement for converts to modern Judaism as part of their conversion. Through practices such as these, immersion in the *mikvah* symbolically represents purification and restoration, and qualification for full religious participation in the life of the Hebrew or Jewish community.

In modern times, the adherence and observance of the laws, rituals, and customs regarding the *mikvah* differ greatly among the Jewish denominations. Due to the destruction of the Holy Temple, immersion in a *mikvah* has no practical purpose these days, but many Orthodox and Haredi Jews do so anyway, in order to 'increase purity'. The only modern exception is that after menses, women need to immerse in a *mikvah* in order to be permitted to her husband.

The *Messianian* explanation of *baptism* as the definitive rite, by which the *baptized* person is indicated to be fully-qualified for participation in the life of the *Church*, begins with a misunderstanding of the career of John the Baptist, who was the cousin of Yah'shua. John rightly declared that repentance was necessary, prior to forgiveness. There must be a return to Yahweh. This implies that the stain of sin is not ineradicable, but can be removed or "washed away" by putting off polluting acts and returning to "the way of Yahweh", all of which was symbolized in his *baptism*.

John also taught that his *baptism* was not finally sufficient, and that repentance would not attain to its goal of separation from sin, apart from a greater *baptism* which was not in his power to give. According to the Gospel of Luke, John taught, "I *baptize* you with water; but One comes who is stronger than I, of Whom I am not worthy to untie the strap of His sandals; He will *baptize* you with His Holy Spirit and fire; His winnowing fork is in His hand to clean out His threshing floor and to gather the wheat into His storehouse, but the chaff He will burn with inextinguishable fire." (*Luke 3,16-17*) John's *baptism* shows that the effort to make oneself acceptable to Yahweh by repentance, would be superseded, or made complete by the coming of the Lamb of Yahweh that 'takes away', not 'covers over' sins.

According to the Gospel of John, after John *baptized* Yah'shua, he testified concerning Him: "I have seen the Spirit coming down as a dove from heaven, and it remained upon Him. And I had not known Him, but the One who sent me to *baptize* with water, that One said to me, On whomever you see the Spirit coming down and remaining upon Him, this is the One *baptizing* with His Holy Spirit. And I have seen, and I have testified that this is the Son of Yahweh." (*John 1,32-34*)

"Behold the Lamb of Yahweh, that takes away the sins of the world." This "taking away" of the sins of the world, means what it says. Thus, our faith in our Messiah's crucifixion and resurrection as the Firstborn Son of Yahweh is paramount. The Messiah has the authority to take away our sins and our sins no longer need to be symbolically rinsed away or covered over with water. If this ritualistic "work" of the former "works of the law" were still necessary, then our Messiah would not have the authority of Yahweh to "take away" our sins, and our faith in Him as our Saviour would be futile.

The ritual of *baptism* may be summed up in this: Inasmuch as the Messiah became the final wave sheaf offering, and inasmuch as the Messiah became the final and perfect sacrifice, His *baptism* by John finalized, or completed the ritual of the *mikvah*.

He participated in this rite of *baptism*, or more aptly, this final *mikvah*, not because it was necessary, but rather that He should not be seen to offend anyone.

At the time of His own baptism, the Messiah had not yet finalized the rite of *mikvah*, by replacing the ritualistic water bath, with the *baptism*, or bathing of, with and by His Holy Spirit, hence it might have been seen as an offence to the Hebrews or even to the gentile converts of the day, had He not willingly gone through with the then traditional process

## Myth of Baptism:

The Greek word used in the Bible for baptism, is “baptizo”. It literally means to “immerse, or plunge into”.

Paul was inspired to write: “Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Yah'shua the Messiah were baptized into his death?” (*Rom. 6:3-4*).

And Peter said: “Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Yah'shua the Messiah for the remission of sins” (*Acts 2:38*). And he clarified this in 3:19, “Repent therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out”.

And Mark wrote: “He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned” (*Mark 16:16*).

If we replace the Greek word baptism (*or baptized*) with immerse (or immersed) in the above quotes, we find that we are simply instructed to “immerse” ourselves in Yah'shua the Messiah and in the things concerning Him. This immersion then, results in us believing in and about the Gospel of Yah'shua the Messiah, and thus, being converted. This belief is the result of immersing ourselves in the Word (*Yah'shua the Messiah*); studying the Bible, to learn His truths.

This immersion (*studying*) results in faith, which in turn results in our understanding that our sins have been blotted out.

John the Baptist was inspired to baptize in water, in preparing the way for Yah'shua the Messiah. The ancient rite was symbolic of washing away the old man - the way of sin - and plunging or immersing into the new man - the way of life.

Prior to the gift of His Holy Spirit, this symbolic ritual was an integral part of the conversion process, for those that believed in the Messiah. John the Baptist, said himself, that, “I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me is

mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with His Holy Spirit and fire” (*Matt. 3:11*).

Here, John the Baptist is clearly pointing out that Yah'shua the Messiah will baptize us with His Holy Spirit - not with water! And Yah'shua the Messiah said of this John: “Among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John the Baptist...” (*Matt. 11:11*).

The Bible clearly teaches us that Yah'shua the Messiah did not baptize with water - ever (*see John 4:1,2*). He allowed His disciples to maintain the symbolic ritual of baptism, during His ministry and up to the time of His giving the gift of His Holy Spirit, on the Day of Pentecost, when the symbolic water baptism was made obsolete by virtue of His Holy Spirit. We are now baptized BY His Holy Spirit. In other words, we receive the gift of His Holy Spirit - we are immersed in His Holy Spirit - not water!

When Paul wrote to the Corinthians, he recognized that it was only his responsibility to preach the Gospel - and that when some “heard and believed”, they would then immediately be baptized by His Holy Spirit. “For the Messiah did not send me to baptize, but to preach the gospel, not with wisdom of words, lest the burden of the stake of the Messiah should be made of no effect” (*1 Cor. 1:17*).

There are numerous examples in the New Covenant writings setting out that we are indeed baptized BY His Holy Spirit - after believing. BELIEVING, is the key. IMMEDIATELY UPON BELIEF, we are given the gift - we are immersed in His Holy Spirit - we are baptized by it. “And many of the Corinthians hearing, BELIEVED and were baptized” (*Acts 18:8*).

There was no mention of “water” - because His Holy Spirit does not require water

to baptize - it simply baptizes - immerses us in itself!

Under the New Covenant Priesthood, Yah'shua the Messiah is our High Priest. His Holy Spirit is our Helper. It is Yah'shua the Messiah and His Gospel of the Kingdom of Yahweh that we must believe in - and upon our faith in the Messiah, His resurrection and Yahweh's plan of salvation, the power and strength of Yahweh's Holy Spirit will be GIVEN to us.

That is why we were commanded to "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing [*immersing*] them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of His Holy Spirit" (*Matt. 28:19*). And in verse 20, Yah'shua makes it clear what this means: "Teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you".

In other words, if we teach them all things that Yah'shua commanded - that is, all about the Kingdom of Yahweh - we would indeed be "immersing" them into everything concerning the Father, the Son and the power of Yahweh's Holy Spirit - which when they believed, would lead them to repentance - and then to receiving the FREE GIFT of His Holy Spirit - to being immersed (*baptized*) in the power and strength of His Holy Spirit, leading to an understanding of all things pertaining to the mysteries of the Kingdom.

When teaching on the gifts of the Spirit, Paul says: "But one and the same Spirit works all these things, distributing to each one individually as He [*Yahweh*] wills...For by one Spirit we were all baptized into one body - whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free - and have all been made to drink into one Spirit" (*1 Cor. 12:11-13*). We are all baptized BY ONE SPIRIT - not by having so-called "holy" water sprinkled on us, or by being dunked in water, especially the water of some false ministry's pool or Jacuzzi!

We are after all, seeking to become members of the True Congregation of believers that Yah'shua said He would build. Only the power of His Holy Spirit can cause us to become members of that Congregation - "the general assembly and Congregation of the firstborn who are REGISTERED IN HEAVEN" (*Heb. 12:23*). So we see, that "he who believes and is baptized will be saved" - when he is baptized into the True Congregation by His Holy Spirit! "But the Messiah came as High Priest of the...greater and more perfect tabernacle not made with hands, that is not of this creation...For the priesthood being changed, of necessity there is also a change of the law" (*Heb. 9:11; 7:12*).

The PROOF is offered by the very words of the Messiah Himself. After His resurrection from the dead, just prior to the Day of Pentecost, the Messiah appeared and instructed His disciples: "For John truly baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with His Holy Spirit not many days from now" (*Acts 1:5*).

"For you are all sons of Yahweh through faith in Yah'shua the Messiah. For as many of you as were baptized into the Messiah have put on the Messiah" (*Gal. 3:26,27*). We see again, then, that FAITH in the Messiah is what leads us to being immersed in the Messiah as a way of life - of being baptized (*plunged*) into, or "putting on" the Messiah.

In chapter 10 of Acts, we read how Peter received a vision from Yahweh concerning the Gentiles, and how the Gentile Cornelius also received a vision, and summoned Peter to Caesarea. When Peter arrived in Caesarea, Cornelius, together with many of his friends and all of his relatives, were waiting for him. After preliminary introductions, and sharing accounts of their respective visions (*that caused them to meet*), Peter began to teach them concerning the Word of Yahweh:

“that Word you know, which was proclaimed throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee AFTER the baptism which John preached” (Acts 10:37).

“While Peter was still speaking these words, His Holy Spirit FELL UPON ALL THOSE WHO HEARD THE WORD...And those of the circumcision who believed were ASTONISHED, as many as came with Peter, because the gift of His Holy Spirit had been poured out on the Gentiles also...Then Peter answered, ‘Can anyone forbid water, that these should not be baptized who have received His Holy Spirit just as we have?’” (vv.44-47).

This sounds like Peter thought these Gentiles should be baptized, even AFTER they had already received His Holy Spirit - because, as Peter himself said, it seemed fitting to do this to the Gentiles, “just as we have” had it done to ourselves. In fact, Peter commanded them to be baptized in water! (v.48).

But after a few days, when Peter returned to Jerusalem, the apostles and many brethren questioned him concerning the Gentiles. Peter then explained to them all the things concerning the visions from Yahweh and his trip to Caesarea (11:1-14). When Peter came to the point of explaining his teaching of the Word to the Gentiles, he said: “And AS I BEGAN TO SPEAK, His Holy Spirit fell upon them, as upon us at the beginning. THEN I REMEMBERED the Word of the Messiah, how He said, ‘John indeed baptized with water, but you SHALL BE BAPTIZED WITH His Holy Spirit’” (11:15,16).

So we see by Peter’s own words, that because of his (and his companions’) “astonishment” at the time the Gentiles were BAPTIZED BY His Holy Spirit, he had simply forgotten what Yah’shua the Messiah had previously said about being baptized “BY” or “WITH His Holy Spirit”! He even pointed out how he “remembered” this, to the apostles and

his fellow brethren, clarifying the matter once and for all, by reaffirming the Messiah’s own words.

### Addendum 1: The Baptism of John

There is an often overlooked significance to the meaning or purpose behind this Bible verse: Matthew 21:25: "The baptism of John, whence was it? From heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?"

In this dialogue recorded as having taken place between the Messiah and the "chief priests and the elders of the people" of Israel, the Messiah is being asked if John's baptism was inspired by Yahweh or by men, with the unwritten implication that "men" meant either from himself (*John the Baptist*) or from others without inspiration from Yahweh.

It is clear from many verses that John was indeed inspired by Yahweh to conduct his baptism ministry to fulfill that which was spoken by the prophets, particularly Isaiah 40:3: "The voice of one crying in the wilderness: 'Prepare the way of Yahweh, Make His paths straight'".

The Messiah further directly clarifies that John's baptism was inspired by Yahweh in Matthew 11:11 through 14: "Assuredly, I say to you, among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John the Baptist...For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John..."

The purpose in the Messiah having asked these chief priests and elders this question regarding whether or not they believed John's baptism was inspired, was further explained in the verses that immediately precede it, and in those that immediately follow the question, and that purpose was basically that the Messiah wished to entrap them into the place of having to admit to believing in John and consequently in Himself (*the Messiah*), or denying it, knowing however, that they had

already spoken against John to the multitudes and that they were not likely to admit any belief in Him due to their envy of His (*the Messiah's*) notoriety.

The dialogue begins with the priests and elders asking the Messiah by what authority He acts. The following question; the question quoted above, was Messiah's reply to the forgoing question posed to Him by the priests and elders. It is obvious to us reading these words now, and the Messiah knew that it should have been obvious to the priests and elders that both the authority of John and the authority of the Messiah came from Yahweh, but they were unwilling to concede this, hence the Messiah would not directly answer them.

Now as to continuing the baptism rites, there is much misunderstanding within traditional Christianity. Almost universally, there is the mistaken belief that some form of water baptism is still a requirement of the Congregation. We must look at the very words of the Messiah, and those of John the Baptist, of whom the Messiah proclaimed to be the greatest among the prophets, to find the truth.

Matthew 3:11: "I [*John*] indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, BUT HE WHO IS COMING AFTER ME IS MIGHTIER THAN I, WHOSE SANDALS I AM NOT WORTHY TO CARRY. HE WILL BAPTIZE YOU WITH His Holy Spirit AND FIRE". And also Mark 1:8: "I indeed baptize with water, BUT HE WILL BAPTIZE YOU WITH His Holy Spirit".

So we can see that John's baptism ministry led people to repentance and prepared them for the Messiah, who would preach a different message; that message was the Gospel of the Kingdom of Yahweh. Now the gift of Yahweh's Holy Spirit is given according to Yahweh's will and may be associated with repentance and faith or belief in that Gospel of the Messiah concerning the Kingdom of Yahweh. But in many cases, such as Paul for

example, Yahweh determined to give him His gift of His Holy Spirit before Paul repented.

Baptism in its own right will not aid in obtaining Yahweh's gift in any way, and if it is purely baptism for baptism's sake, it may not interfere with receiving Yahweh's gift either. It is simply not a "requirement", and like many ancient rites or rituals that are no longer requirements, it is not necessarily harmful if done in the proper context either.

Unfortunately, the proper context is lost to most of traditional Christianity. Typically the rite of baptism is wrongly proclaimed as a necessary requirement, and typically it entails being "registered" as a member of a man-made church organization, as opposed to acknowledging that our membership in the true Congregation is registered only "in heaven" and the true Congregation is a "spiritual organism", not a "statutory organization", which by definition, requires subservience to the state within a hierarchy of men, rather than subservience to Yahweh through the Messiah alone

Another interesting and important issue, is the question of whether or not John the Baptist was baptised, and if so, by who? This question poses a question within itself, and that is to do with what the word "baptised" means, and in what context it is being used.

As we know, the word "baptise" is the Greek equivalent to the English "immerse". Hence if we are asking who "immersed" John the Baptist in water, there are no passages in our Bibles to be cited confirming that John the Baptist was ever "baptised" by immersion in water.

However if we are asking who "immersed" John the Baptist in His Holy Spirit, thus "baptising" him in His Holy Spirit, then the answer may well be that Yahweh baptised John with His Holy Spirit while John was still in his mother's (*Elizabeth's*) womb, upon the

greeting of her blood relative, Mary, the mother of the Messiah: "And it happened, when Elizabeth heard the greeting of Mary, that the babe (*John*) leaped in her womb; and [as] Elizabeth was filled with His Holy Spirit" (*Luke 1:41*).

In fact, it is clear that John the Baptist had a Spiritual, or inner revelation of truth regarding his own need to be "baptised" or more thoroughly immersed in the knowledge and understanding of the things of Yahweh, for when he met the Messiah, he spoke thusly: "I have need to be baptised [*immersed*] in You, and you [*the Messiah*] are coming to me?" As this question was posed by John at a time when it was obvious that he had already been led by Yahweh's Holy Spirit to conduct his ministry of baptism to repentance, it is clear that at least John understood that he still required immersion in the things to do with the Messiah and the Messiah's ministry, which was to do with belief in and obedience to "the Kingdom of Yahweh".

That is also why when the Gospel writers refer to John the Baptist's ministry, it is always as a "baptism [*immersion*] of repentance for the remission of sins", and John himself describes the difference between his ministry and that ministry of the Messiah's as: "He [*Yahweh*] who sent me to baptise [*immerse*] with water said to me, 'Upon whom you see the Spirit descending, and remaining on Him, this is He [*the Messiah*] who baptizes [*immerses*] with His Holy Spirit" (*John 1:33*). Whereas also the Gospel writers always refer to the Messiah's ministry as that of the Messiah "preaching the gospel of the kingdom of Yahweh" (*Mark 1:14*).

And perhaps the most significant statement offered by the Messiah about three years after He was baptized in water by John: "I came to send fire on the earth....But I [*the Messiah*] have a baptism to be baptized with,

and how distressed I am till it is accomplished!" (*Luke 12:49-50*). The Messiah had indeed been symbolically baptized in water by John, yet he still had another baptism to accomplish!

In other words, the Messiah came and did precisely what He said He would do - complete, or fulfill the law. Just like the Messiah became the "final" wave sheaf offering, completing the need for the ritual, and just like He became the final Passover, changing or completing the Passover symbols, He symbolized the final water baptism, permanently completing the need for this ritual, which was symbolic of the baptism of fire and the baptism by His Holy Spirit which would replace it.

### **Addendum 2: Baptism, Generally**

The Messiah became the "Passover", and eliminated any further need of the ritualistic sacrifice, but by doing so, He did not eliminate the Passover Celebration.

The Messiah became the final "wave sheaf" offering and eliminated any further need of the ritualistic offering, but by doing so, He did not eliminate the celebration.

Likewise, the Messiah's water baptism, served to complete or fulfill all righteousness with respect to the ritual of water baptism, but it by no means eliminated our need to be baptized by or immersed in His Holy Spirit.

There are numerous accounts in the Bible of His Holy Spirit being given immediately upon and because of belief. There are no accounts of His Holy Spirit being given immediately upon and because of water baptism. In the specific instance below where we refer to Acts 19:6, the issue of "upon AND because" is more fully explained than in other instances, because of its association with speaking in other tongues.

There are three uniquely special occurrences of speaking in tongues mentioned in Acts, each giving miraculous evidence and

divine approval for three major developments in the Israelite Congregation. Speaking in tongues was a miracle that gave spectacular support and timely evidence to the apostles efforts to establish the Congregation of believers; fulfilling the words of Mark 16:15-16, which says that speaking in "new tongues" would be one of the signs that followed the apostles. *(This list of signs includes protection from poisonous snakes and poisonous drinks, and is a short sampling of the types of miracles Yahweh's disciples would experience. It does not mean every Israelite would experience every sign.)*

The first occurrence was the formation of the Congregation on the Day of Pentecost. Yahweh ensured that the miracle focused the attention of the crowd and permitted Peter, who was not a rabbi, to speak to them with authority. Shortly after the Messiah had risen, His disciples were gathered during the annual festival of Pentecost (*Acts 2:10*). A miraculous sound filled the building, and tongues as of fire appeared to sit on them (*vv. 2-3*). The disciples were "filled with His Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues" (*V. 4*). These other "tongues" were foreign languages readily understood by the people who were native to many other nations (*vv. 8-11*). There was no water baptism associated with this event.

About 10 years later, after Peter had preached to a group of Gentiles in the house of Cornelius, the "Holy Spirit fell upon all those who heard the word". The Bible records that the (Hebrew) Israelites then heard the gentiles "speak with tongues and magnify Yahweh" (*10:44-46*). This second occurrence announced the call of the Gentiles into the Congregation. Since the (Hebrews) Israelites had historically separated themselves from the Gentiles, these special signs were given to PROVE to the Hebrews that Yahweh had not only authorized Peter to speak, but that He had accepted the

Gentiles into the Congregation as His children (*Acts 15:7,8*).

Another decade after this account, Paul taught some disciples in Ephesus about His Holy Spirit, and "when Paul had laid hands on them, His Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spoke with tongues and prophesied" (*19:1-6*). This final example is used to validate those who had previously been led by John the Baptist and were now true followers of New Covenant Israelite faith (*Acts 19:1-6*). This was the final demonstration orchestrated by Yahweh, that proved that the water baptism of John was now obsolete and that those followers of John were now accepted into the Congregation as His children, along with the gentiles and everyone else.

In all three of these accounts, speaking in tongues was a miracle associated with His Holy Spirit, as related to three, very special developments in the early Congregation of believers. So the answer as to why Yahweh chose to have these converts wait to receive His Holy Spirit until after Paul laid on his hands in this instance, is simply because Yahweh wanted to provide His Divine demonstration that the former followers of John were now officially invited into His true Congregation of believers, as evidenced by His gift of His Holy Spirit - without water baptism.

*Acts, 19:1-7*, states very simply that although all of the disciples that were present at the time had been "baptized" or immersed into water, yet none of them had received His Holy Spirit. Indeed, when Paul arrived, he did not question whether or not they had received His Holy Spirit when they were, or as a result, of their being immersed in water, he questioned as follows: "Did you not receive His Holy Spirit when you BELIEVED?"

They answered effectively saying that it was not possible for them to have believed in what they had not yet heard of, hence His Holy

Spirit which enters upon belief, had not yet come upon them. They continued by explaining that they had been immersed, or instructed into a baptism of repentance, which simply means they were taught all about the need to repent of their sins and seek forgiveness of Yahweh, which is clearly what John's baptism was about.

Now the key phrase, follows, which is "When they HEARD this, they were baptized [or immersed in the things of His Holy Spirit] in the name of the Lord Yah'shua the Messiah." This means what it says - they were baptized WHEN THEY HEARD THIS, not later or earlier when they were immersed in water. Earlier, they were simply immersed in water, which was an incidental carry-over of the former ritual.

As to why Phillip performed a water baptism on the eunuch, the answer is perhaps not much different than why Peter immersed the members of Cornelius's family in water AFTER they had already received His Holy Spirit.

Peter clears this up when he later explains that he had simply forgotten, or not yet quite fully understood the word of the Messiah: "Then I remembered the word of the Messiah, how he said, 'John indeed baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with His Holy Spirit. If therefore Yahweh gave them the same gift [*of His Holy Spirit*] as He gave us WHEN WE BELIEVED...'"

## What is Divine Healing?

It is a fact of life that most people will be ill at least once in their lives. Experience proves this. So does the Bible. But why?

Could Yahweh not have designed the human body to remain healthy up till the last moment and then just quit without pain or warning? Certainly He could have, but He didn't!

He didn't for a number of reasons. One reason is so that we will be alarmed into spiritual action by our obvious mortality. For example, David was dismayed by the frailty of human life and was moved to seek Yahweh (*Ps. 103:13-22*). Solomon also saw life's tenuous balance and therefore counselled the wise to seek Yahweh and eternal life (*Eccl. 12:1*).

The main reason Yahweh made us subject to sickness is the same reason we are subject to any trial. It is so we may build righteous character as we struggle against the frailty of the flesh (*Rom. 8:18-23*).

Yahweh values perfect character more than perfect bodies (*1 Peter 1:6,7*). Trials build character. And He has provided, in the physical world itself, the seeds of trials that can build that character. Within this simple truth lie the simple and obvious answers to what illness is, and what causes it.

Illness; the interruption of physical, emotional or mental balances, can be caused by different factors. At times it is the direct result of violating one or more of the basic principles of good health. This is only common sense. Or it may be the result of the sin of breaking one of Yahweh's commands (*1 John 3:4*). Both venereal disease, caused by promiscuity, and liver damage, caused by excessive alcohol consumption, are good examples of illnesses resulting from sin.

Physical illness is an indirect, although perhaps inevitable, result of sin. It is not

caused directly by sin or spiritual things in the same way, say, as a virus or germ causes illness. Sin is not a virus or germ. Sin does bring the ultimate penalty of spiritual death, and in the here and now, it opens the doors to illnesses and suffering.

At other times, the illness or infirmity may be inherited (*John 9:1-3*), or the result of unintentional injury or accident (*Luke 13:1-5*). It is often not possible to tell whether or not sin caused a particular illness.

Yahweh knows that our bodies will break down, and has allowed for the probability of it - even though He desires the opposite (*3 John 2*). He has subjected us to this reality in the hope that character will result (*Rom. 8:19-23*). Sickness, should it occur, may build character - whether we like it or not.

The first thing to clarify, is that not everyone is healed every time, regardless of their faith or what some "faith healing" ministry might suggest. Jacob was blind at the last of his life (*Gen. 48:10*), so was Job (*2:1-8*), and Hezekiah (*2 Kings 20:1-7*), Timothy (*1 Tim. 5:23*) and others (*Phil. 2:25-27; 2 Tim. 4:20*).

Yah'shua fulfilled Isaiah's prophecy about taking our infirmities and bearing our sicknesses by personally using His power to heal all who were sick, as PROOF of the cleansing power of His forthcoming personal sacrifice. "When evening had come, they brought to Him many that were demon-possessed. And He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: 'He Himself took our infirmities and bore our sicknesses.'" (*Matt. 8:16,17*).

Now turn to Isaiah 53:4-6, (*verse 4 of which is quoted by Matthew above*). Verse 5 says "with His stripes we are healed". But the healing spoken of here is SPIRITUAL, not physical - it refers to our reconciliation to

Yahweh. "All like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way" (v. 6). Clearly the metaphor for our being "like sheep gone astray", is referring to our total spiritual condition.

Disease and healing are mentioned a few times in the Old Covenant. The examples of healing are not doctrinal dissertations, and this fact hints at the truth that healing is not a mysterious, highly complex subject - if it were, we would find much more detail on the subject.

One of the most beloved Bible stories is of the healing of Sarah's barren womb (*Gen. 17:17; 18:14*), and her subsequent joyous birth of Isaac in her old age, heralding the eventual spiritual healing of the world through Yah'shua the Messiah, a descendant of Isaac. Her example clearly teaches that Yahweh's healing may be delayed for quite some time. And that in certain cases, Yahweh has overriding purposes that go beyond the immediate physical - that in many cases may transcend the physical and the temporary.

Genesis 27:1 and 48:1,10 tell us respectively, that the patriarch Isaac was blind for many years, and that Jacob was "sick" at the time of his old age as well as blind. They were not healed of these afflictions - a fact surprising to those who equate righteousness to instant healing or excellent health. Clearly, the lessons to be learned by these handicaps must have been more important in Yahweh's master plan, than the physical health of the individuals.

Exodus 15:26 lists an important and much quoted promise of Yahweh: "If you diligently heed the voice of Yahweh your God and do what is right in His sight, give ear to His commandments and keep all His statutes, I will put none of the diseases on you which I have brought on the Egyptians". This is NOT a promise to heal, rather it is a CONDITIONAL promise not to afflict illness.

Chapter 13 to 15 of Leviticus are very informative. They discuss the plague of leprosy and give rules of quarantine - clearly refuting any notion that the children of Israel lived devoid of illness, or were instantly healed.

Deuteronomy 7:15 likewise says Yahweh, contingent again on obedience, would take away sickness. And in 32:39 Yahweh confirms that "I heal" in the spiritual context, and in 28:21,22; 60,61 Yahweh gives the converse of 32:39, proclaiming illness as a curse for disobedience.

In 1 Kings 17:17-24 and 2 Kings 4, Elijah is shown to have healed the dead son of a widow and performed another resurrection as a show of Yahweh's power and mercy.

Job's famous sickness-and-healing episodes teach that sickness may befall even a righteous man in order to learn more lessons or to be "tested" by the devil.

The Psalms contain numerous appeals by David for healing, as well as thanks for healing. Clearly, David did not enjoy perfect health nor instant healing every time he became sick (*Psalms 30:1-3; 38:1-22; 41:4-8*). The death of David's son, born of adultery with Bathsheba, is a powerful example of illness without healing. Yahweh decided the child would die - and no amount of prayer would change what Yahweh deemed best.

Elisha, a great servant of Yahweh - upon whom the Spirit of Yahweh dwelt in double portion - became sick and died from an illness! Whereas Hezekiah prayed in earnest and was healed of a sickness that Yahweh had previously said would kill him!

The vast majority of New Covenant healings are those of the Messiah, and they ring loudly with certain common traits. Although the Messiah at times healed simply out of His great compassion (*Matt. 20:34*), His ultimate purpose was much more universal. His healings were directly coupled with His

teaching of the Gospel message. Matthew 9:35 cites that the Messiah "went about all the cities and villages, teaching...preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people". Matthew 4:23 notes the same thing, and Luke 6:17 testifies of the large crowd that "came to HEAR Him, AND to be healed of their diseases".

It takes little imagination to understand one important purpose of the Messiah's public healings: Such healings would attract great attention and thus provide a large audience for His teaching of the Gospel message. But the healings had other effects much more profound than merely drawing listeners.

Dramatic healings lent PROOF that He was the Messiah. Thus Matthew pointed to the Isaiah prophecy predicting the Messiah's coming and His healing of the sick. Yah'shua Himself pointed to His healings as evidence of His Messiahship when speaking to the doubting disciples of John the Baptist, whom John sent to the Messiah when he was in prison (*Matt. 11:2-6*).

Yah'shua displayed such healing power not for its own sake, as some modern-day "faith healers", but for a far more transcendent purpose: By showing His power to heal, He showed His power to forgive sins. This is the whole point of the story of the paralytic man lowered through the roof as described in Matt. 9, Mark 2 and Luke 5.

Yah'shua' healings were of young people, old people, male, female, and were nearly always public, virtually all immediate or nearly so, and dramatic, but not in the nature of spectacles. No one doubted whether His healings had occurred (*Matt. 15:21-31*).

The apostles Peter and John report their healing of a lame man, with no mention of the man's faith. The man was not asking or expecting to be healed - he was begging for money (*Acts 3:1-16*). Peter performed

outstanding healings: "They brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some" (*Acts 5:15*). Peter also raised Tabitha from the dead (*Acts 9:36-42*).

Acts 19:11-12 shows how "handkerchiefs" or "aprons" sent from Paul worked great healings. Acts 20:7-12 describes Paul resurrecting a young man who fell from a balcony.

1 Corinthians 12:9-10, 28-30 lists the "gifts of healing" among the spiritual gifts of Israelites. The New Covenant record continues with examples showing that even some of the apostles, including Paul had health problems from time to time (*2 Cor. 12:7*). Then James gives one of the few doctrinal instructions on healing: He advises that the sick should seek the elders of the Church - the called out ones; not the elders of some man-made "church" or religious organization! (*5:14,15*).

This summary of Bible healing is not exhaustive, but one thing is undeniable - there is no one common set of circumstances nor special formula that runs through these cases which stamps illness or the process of healing as any different than any other kind of trial!

Some who were healed had faith - some did not. Some were righteous - some were not. Yahweh sometimes healed - sometimes He did not. Sometimes healings were instant - sometimes there were years of delay. Sometimes sickness was a punishment from Yahweh - sometimes it was as a result of sin - sometimes it was from a physical cause, accident, or injury - sometimes it was from an undisclosed cause. ALL Yahweh's servants eventually died - and many, if not most, died of an illness Yahweh did not heal!

Divine healing does not entail a spiritual process in any way different from that required for any other trial! Sickness sometimes results

from time and chance. The connection of the sacrifice of the Messiah with healing is IDENTICAL as with ALL miraculous interventions.

ALL ANSWERED PRAYER is linked to the Messiah's sacrifice and to our obedience to Yahweh. Answered prayer for healing is exactly the same as answered prayer for anything else - subject to the same conditions.

There are many Bible verses that sound like absolute promises to heal every man or woman every time - but none of them actually mean that. The Bible itself, proves that this expectation of being healed every time is not the case.

There are two obvious conditions to Yahweh's promise to heal. First is faith. "The prayer of faith shall save the sick" (*James 5:15*). Yahweh certainly will not heal someone who does not have faith to ask for the healing. The second is obedience, "And whatever we ask we receive from Him, because we keep His commandments and do those things that are pleasing in His sight" (*1 John 3:22*). No one would even suspect Yahweh has bound Himself to heal all unrepentant sinners!

There is another, less obvious condition to Yahweh answering ALL prayer, including prayer for healing. Yahweh heals (*or answers any prayer*) IMMEDIATELY UPON THE CONDITION THAT SUCH HEALING IS GOOD FOR YOU IN TERMS OF HIS OVERALL PLAN for your life. Yahweh's great purpose for you is to give you eternal life as His child in His great Kingdom. He will do nothing to you or for you that will in any way jeopardize that, or reduce your potential rewards in that Kingdom.

Remember, *1 John 5:14* states that Yahweh hears us whenever we ask anything in prayer "according to His Will". Sometimes there is an overriding purpose in our life that only Yahweh knows. To gain eternal life takes character - character, sometimes comes from

suffering illness or other difficulties. Yah'shua Himself suffered in excruciating pain and humiliation to become the firstborn among many brethren. As *Hebrews 2:9-10* makes it clear, He became "perfect through sufferings". This is why James advises us to "count it all joy when you fall into various trials, knowing that the testing of your faith produces patience. But let patience have its perfect work, that you may be perfect and complete, lacking nothing" (*1:2-4*).

Any statements in the Bible implying absolute healing must be read in context with the rest of the Bible - not in isolation. Although many verses taken on their own, appear to be written without qualification, they all sit amidst the rest of the Bible, and of course are qualified by it. In the case of healing, like many other prayer requests, it is an implied condition that the healing is in the best long term interest of the individual. It is an implied condition, but one nonetheless expressly stated by the Bible to apply to ALL PRAYER.

We can utterly trust Yahweh not to let us suffer more than we can bear and to give us salvation to eternal life - but only after we have "suffered a while" (*1 Pet. 5:10*) and endured. Faith in Yahweh means believing Yahweh will heal us or answer our prayers EVERY TIME according to His Will for us. It is more expansive and trusting than many realize. It is the faith to trust Yahweh even when He does not heal or directly answer us.

Further, if Yahweh healed every man or woman every time, He would be in effect removing all health problems from the list of trials which Israelites suffer - which is something He has not promised or chosen to do.

## Speaking in Tongues?

Some false churches emphasize this practice and teach that Israelites should hope and perhaps even pray for the experience of speaking in tongues. Others do not encourage it and some even forbid it. What does the Bible say?

There is no mention of speaking in other tongues in the Old Covenant.

Shortly after the Messiah had risen, His disciples were gathered during the annual festival of Pentecost (*Acts 2:10*). A miraculous sound filled the building, and tongues as of fire appeared to sit on them (*vv. 2-3*). The disciples were "filled with His Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues" (*V. 4*). These other "tongues" were foreign languages readily understood by the people who were native to many other nations (*vv. 8-11*).

About 10 years later, after Peter had preached to a group of Gentiles in the house of Cornelius, the "Holy Spirit fell upon all those who heard the word". The Bible records that the Jewish Israelites heard them "speak with tongues and magnify Yahweh" (*10:44-46*).

Another decade after this account, Paul taught some disciples in Ephesus about His Holy Spirit, and "when Paul had laid hands on them, His Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spoke with tongues and prophesied" (*19:1-6*).

In all three of these accounts, speaking in tongues was a miracle associated with His Holy Spirit, as related to three, very special developments in the early Congregation of believers.

Based on the events described, several questions are frequently asked:

1) Did every Israelite who received His Holy Spirit speak in tongues?

2) Does speaking in tongues prove His Holy Spirit is in a man or woman?

3) Are those who speak in tongues closer to Yahweh?

4) What role should tongue speaking have in our life or in Congregation?

Let's look at each of these questions:

1) The New Covenant does not indicate that every Israelite spoke in tongues. Yah'shua Himself did not "speak in tongues". On the Day of Pentecost for example, 3,000 people "continued steadfastly in the apostle's doctrine and fellowship, in the breaking of bread, and in prayers" (*Acts 2:42*). There is no mention of tongues of fire or the sound of rushing wind or of speaking in tongues.

After Peter and John were rebuked by the Jewish leaders, the apostles needed encouragement from Yahweh. "The place where they were assembled together was shaken; and they were all filled with His Holy Spirit, and they spoke the word of Yahweh with boldness" (*Acts 4:31*).

There is no mention of speaking in tongues even though those who spoke were filled with His Holy Spirit. Nor is there any mention of speaking with tongues when the Ethiopian eunuch was converted (*Acts 8:38*), when the apostle Paul was converted (*Acts 9:17,18*) or when Paul first preached in Asia (*Acts 13:48-52*).

The three uniquely special occurrences of speaking in tongues mentioned in Acts, give miraculous evidence and divine approval for three major developments in the Israelite Congregation of called out ones. The first occurrence was the formation of the Congregation on the Day of Pentecost.

Yahweh ensured that the miracle focused the attention of the crowd and permitted Peter, who was not a rabbi, to speak to them with authority. The second occurrence announced the call of the Gentiles into the Congregation. Since the Jewish Israelites had historically separated themselves from the

Gentiles, these special signs were given to PROVE to the Jews that Yahweh had authorized Peter to speak and He had accepted the Gentiles into the Congregation as His children (*Acts 15:7,8*). The final example is used to validate those who had previously been led by John the Baptist and were now followers of New Covenant Israelite faith (*Acts 19:1-6*).

Speaking in tongues was a miracle that gave spectacular support and timely evidence to the apostles' efforts to establish the Congregation of believers; the called out ones, fulfilling the words of Mark 16:15-16, which says that speaking in "new tongues" would be one of the signs that followed the apostles. This list of signs includes protection from poisonous snakes and poisonous drinks, and is a short sampling of the types of miracles Yahweh's disciples would experience. It does not mean every Israelite would experience every sign.

Paul listed speaking with tongues as one of the "gifts of His Spirit" (*1 Cor. 12:4-10*). Every Israelite does not receive every gift; Yahweh gives them as He wishes (*vv. 8-11*). This chapter explains that Yahweh appoints the members where He wishes and gives them abilities according to the needs of the congregation. Not all are prophets, not all are teachers, and not all speak in tongues (*vv. 28-30*).

None of the signs listed can be singled out as the one and only test or evidence of His Holy Spirit. In fact, the Bible warns that the "un" holy spirit; the devil, can cause any of these same "gifts" to be manifested in a man or woman - indicating that the "many", not the "few" would be deceived in this very way (*Matt. 24:10-24*).

2) Speaking in tongues is no assurance that a man or woman is being influenced by His Holy Spirit. Tongue speaking - influenced by

the devil, also occurs in many widely-practiced non-Christian heathen religions of today, as well as some ancient Greek religions. Speaking in tongues may be falsified or fabricated, it may originate with evil spirits, it may come from self-induced emotionally altered consciousness, or it may come from Yahweh.

In any event it should be tested to see that it is in harmony with Yahweh's Word and way of life (*1 John 4:1*). Scripture has greater priority as a test of truth than historical practice or one's experience.

3) Israelites who legitimately speak in tongues are not more spiritual than others and if they don't have love, they are useless noisemakers - though they may speak in human or angelic languages (*1 Cor. 13:1*). The gift of tongues, like all other gifts is given as Yahweh decides (*1 Cor. 12:11*). No one, no matter what gift he or she has, has any reason to be proud or to look down on others (*vv. 21-25*).

4) Paul states in 1 Corinthians 14 that love is much more important in our lives than speaking in tongues or having any of the gifts of His Spirit. When speaking in tongues became a regular occurrence at the Congregation gathering in Corinth, it also became a cause for division (*v. 2*).

Unlike the disciples on the Day of Pentecost, the Corinthian tongue speakers could not be understood. Paul points out that this does not help anyone - it was therefore not motivated by love - and he expressly told them not to do it unless someone could interpret (*v. 28*).

Paul instructed that tongue speaking, if it were to be permitted in Congregation meetings, should be organized. Even if someone could interpret, only one man or woman should speak at a time (*vv. 27,40*). Otherwise, confusion would result, which is ungodly (*v. 33*) and a poor witness to

unbelievers (v. 23). Tongue speaking, if it truly is from Yahweh, IS SUBJECT TO CONSCIOUS CONTROL (*Gal. 5:23*).

The apostle Paul further admonished that for the sake of order in Congregation meetings, tongue speaking is best kept private (*1 Cor. 4:28*).

It may, if genuine, have a private value in prayer, between the speaker and Yahweh (v. 28). If a man or woman believes he or she has the gift, that man or woman should pray for the gift of interpretation (v. 13).

ALL Spiritual gifts are to be used to help others, and only if the speaking can be understood and makes sense, can it help others.

## Unpardonable Sin?

The idea of an unpardonable sin comes from something Yah'shua said. This is a little odd, because He is the one who died so all of our sins can be forgiven.

Here is what He said: "Everyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man [Yah'shua] will be forgiven, but anyone who blasphemes against His Holy Spirit will not be forgiven" (*Luke 12:10*).

Matthew 12:31-32 and Mark 3:28-29 are parallel scriptures, saying that any sin will be forgiven except blasphemy against His Holy Spirit. This particular "eternal sin" is unique - unlike other sins, it will not be forgiven.

The historical situation helps us understand why Yah'shua mentioned blasphemy against His Holy Spirit: "He said this because they were saying, 'He has an evil spirit'" (*Mark 3:30*).

Some Jewish religious leaders had accused Yah'shua of being demon possessed (v. 22). They suggested that Yah'shua could only conduct His miracles and order demons around because He was working with the ruler of the demons (vv. 22-24).

Yah'shua showed that their claim was hypocritical and ridiculous in verses 25 to 27. But the Pharisees were refusing to accept the evidence, even though they had seen many of the miracles first-hand - and some of them even conceded that He was a teacher sent from Yahweh (*John 3:2*).

The Pharisees were jealous and did not want to admit they might be wrong. In self-imposed blindness, they were rejecting not only Yah'shua, but also the dramatic evidence they had seen - evidence of the miracle working power of Yahweh.

So Yah'shua warned them about the sin that would not be forgiven. If you reject an obvious miracle of His Holy Spirit, calling a

good miracle evil, then what could possibly change your mind? Perhaps nothing!

The Holy Spirit is the means by which Yahweh works in our hearts and minds to transform us and to lead us to salvation. But how could Yahweh help these Pharisees that were knowingly rejecting the very way that Yahweh works in them?

Yahweh loved the Pharisees, just like all human beings, without any favouritism (*Acts 10:34*). Yahweh is merciful and always willing to forgive (*Luke 6:36*).

Yahweh is able to forgive any sin, no matter how great. But He obviously cannot forgive a party who has sinned and does not want to be forgiven, or who refuses to admit he has done wrong.

Yahweh will not force anyone to live forever with Him in the Kingdom if that party does not want to do so. But few people ever reach that extreme place of knowing Yahweh and then fighting against Him.

Yah'shua was demonstrating the power of His Holy Spirit, not His own power to perform miracles - He admitted time and again that He was capable of doing nothing without the Father and His Holy Spirit.

The Pharisees were calling Him satanic - knowingly speaking against the miracles done by His Holy Spirit.

Yah'shua was warning them about how serious their accusations were - but it was a warning - not a condemnation. There was still hope. The Pharisees still had time to think about it and time to change their attitude.

Many of them did - some tried to help Yah'shua escape (*Luke 13:31*). Some helped bury Him (*Luke 23:50-53*). Some became His disciples after His resurrection (*Acts 15:5*).

"If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins" (*1 John 1:9*). Yahweh is able to forgive any and every sin (*Psalms 103:3*). Even the people who helped to

kill the Messiah could be forgiven their sins (*Luke 23:34; Acts 2:36-38*). Paul murdered and persecuted members of the Church before his conversion, and that also was forgiven (*1 Timothy 1:13*).

Any person can be forgiven for any sin. But Yahweh will not forgive people who refuse to admit sin and repent, when those people know better.

Few reach such extreme stubbornness. Few are so warped in their sense of good and evil that they can deliberately set themselves to oppose Yahweh and the work He does through His Holy Spirit - once they know Him.

Such people have grown to misunderstand Yahweh, to reject eternal life with Yahweh, resent what Yahweh has done, reject His offer of salvation and don't want or care about His forgiveness.

That brings us to an all-important point. If you are worried about the unpardonable sin, the mere fact that you are worried - thinking that you may have done it, proves you have not committed an unpardonable sin! The proof is in the fact that you care! You want to be right with Yahweh.

Because you care, there is hope for you, just as there was for the Pharisees, just as there was for those that killed the Messiah. All sins can be forgiven.

We can trust in Yahweh who accepted the Messiah's sinless life as sacrifice for every sin that humans have ever committed - past and future. Nothing can separate us from the love of Yahweh.

There is another sin that cannot be forgiven - a sin often misunderstood and rarely mentioned in discussions of the unpardonable sin.

Nonetheless, the Biblical terminology is almost the same: Yahweh will not forgive us if we fail to do one particularly important thing. The Biblical teaching is clear.

If we forgive others, Yahweh will forgive us. If we don't, Yahweh will not forgive us - if we hold a grudge, if we hold on to a desire for revenge, we are in danger! The teaching is repeated in *Matt. 6:14-15; 18:21-35; Mark 11:25 and Luke 6:37*.

Like blasphemy of His Holy Spirit, this is a sin that will not be forgiven, unless of course, we change our ways. Our relationships with others, in many ways reflect our relationship with Yahweh (*1 John 4:20*).

We must get them right! Our family relationships can, for example, interfere with our prayers (*1 Peter 3:7*) and provide evidence that we are "worse than an unbeliever" (*1 Timothy 5:8*).

In some ways, refusing to forgive someone else is the same as blaspheming His Holy Spirit. It is in fact, denying the power of Yahweh to transform that party by the power of His Holy Spirit. If we refuse to forgive someone, we are refusing to believe that Yahweh can take care of that party in the best possible way.

It is rejection of the fact that the Messiah died for all people, including that party. It is failing to realize what Israelite faith is all about.

If we understand this, and if we allow His Holy Spirit to transform our minds and hearts to become more and more like Yahweh, we will be gracious, merciful and forgiving, as our Father is.

"Do not grieve the Holy Spirit of Yahweh," Paul says in *Ephesians 4:30*. "Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger, brawling and slander, along with every form of malice. Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in the Messiah, Yahweh forgave you" (*vv. 31-32*).

Not one of us is perfect, but we all have tremendous hope. Yahweh can help us become more forgiving. He knows our weaknesses and our need for His help - as

long as we want that help. He is always able and available to help us. His mercy endures forever (*Psalm 136:1-26*).

We can freely approach Yahweh, through our High Priest Yah'shua the Messiah, assured that He will give us the strength of His Holy Spirit, not only to live better lives ourselves, but for the help we need to forgive others.

## **Praying with a Purpose:**

Whoever said, "prayer changes things", should have said, "prayer can change things". Whether or not it does, depends to a large extent on the prayer itself.

All prayers are not equal nor do they bring equal results. The more heartfelt a prayer is, the more meaning Yahweh sees in it, and therefore the more likely it is to be answered. The Bible clearly demonstrates this.

Through the prophet Hosea, Yahweh expressed concern about some whose prayers were ineffective. "They did not cry out to Me with their heart" (7:14). Isaiah lamented to Yahweh, "There is no one who calls on Your name, who stirs himself up to take hold of You" (64:7).

The purpose of prayer is to contact Yahweh, to have Him listen and to have Him respond appropriately. That purpose is not served by an approach that is unfeeling or indifferent. The "fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much" (*James 5:16*).

One day the disciples came to Yah'shua. "Lord, teach us to pray", they requested (*Luke 11:1*). Yah'shua answered by giving them a short example to illustrate what they could pray about (*vv. 2-4*). The entire *Christian* world knows this simple prayer as Yahweh's Prayer.

Yet when the Messiah spoke the words, He was not praying. Matthew's account of Yah'shua giving His prayer outline to the disciples records Yah'shua as saying: "In this manner, therefore, pray..." (6:9-13). Yah'shua went on (*in Luke 11*) to give an important principle concerning effective prayer. In the middle of the night, He said, a certain man needed to borrow three loaves of bread to feed unexpected company.

The man went to his friend's house and asked for the bread. His first effort got him nothing but a weak, negative reply. He did not

give up though. He continued to ask. The neighbour finally crawled out of bed and gave him the loaves he wanted.

Again, in Luke 18, Yah'shua stressed how we "always ought to pray and not lose heart" (*v. 1*). In this case He told about the widow and the unjust judge. The judge at first refused to grant the widow's request, but she prevailed "by her continual coming" (*v. 5*).

If an unjust judge would listen to a persistent widow, Yah'shua remarked, how much more surely will our heavenly Father, in whom is no injustice, listen to and respond to our needs? "Shall Yahweh not avenge His own elect who cry out day and night to Him, though He bears long with them? I tell you that He will avenge them speedily". (*vv. 7,8*).

In both these instances, Yahweh is portrayed as one who may be moved by prayers offered with feeling and persistence by righteous people. Importunity and persistence do not, of course, mean disrespect or nagging at Yahweh. They do mean perseverance reflected in sincere petitions about a logical subject matter. They mean praying with a sense of purpose.

While it may be necessary to pray about some matters repeatedly, we must not assume that we always have to make a request more than once. The Scriptures contain numerous examples of answers to prayer that came after only one short prayer - to righteous people who had built up a level of mutual respect in their relationship with Yahweh.

Sometimes Yahweh's answer is a prompt "yes", sometimes it is a "not yet" or even "no". Yahweh knows whether a request is in our best interest, and the best time to grant a request. And He is not always in as much of a rush as we are.

It is good to reason with Yahweh. In fact, Yahweh urges, "Come now, and let us reason together" (*Isaiah 1:18*). Abraham reasoned with

Yahweh concerning His plan to destroy Sodom - as a result, Yahweh promised that He would not destroy the city if He found only 10 righteous parties there (*Gen. 18:23-33*). Moses reasoned about the rebellious Israelites. Yahweh changed His mind on punishing them for their idolatry (*Ex. 32:9-14*).

Reasoning with Yahweh does not mean making excuses for what we are or what we have done. Nor does it mean trying to get Yahweh to change His laws. It means giving Him reasons for why we make particular prayer requests.

Jacob was blessed by Yahweh, because Jacob "wrestled with him" all night! Yahweh responded, "Your name shall no longer be called Jacob, but Israel; for you have struggled with Yahweh and with men, and prevailed" (*Genesis 32:22-29*).

The symbology is clear - if we really want something, and that something is good and right, then we will no doubt at times, find it necessary to wrestle with men and with Yahweh to gain His support. The message is, that if you know in your heart that you are doing a good thing - don't give up! Yahweh will help you!

Yahweh will in some matters be totally flexible and His decision may depend on how and why we make the requests we do. He wants to know our reasons for asking, just like any loving parent wants to know why a child asks for something.

He knows, that once we have accepted Him into our lives, that we are rightful heirs to His promises - including His promise to answer our prayers. therefore He must be careful to grant only those things that are truly in our best interest. Like it or not, sometimes He does know better!

When you receive bills you cannot pay; a notification that you lost your job, a frightening medical report or some other bad

news, do you ever think of taking the document to a private place, spreading it out and asking Yahweh to look at it? Is Yahweh that real to you?

King Hezekiah received a threatening letter that said the powerful Assyrian nation would attack his kingdom, and; "Hezekiah received the letter from the hand of the messengers and read it: and Hezekiah went...and spread it before Yahweh" (*Isaiah 37:14*).

Listen to how he prayed: "O Lord of Hosts, God of Israel, the One who dwells between the cherubim...incline your ear...open your eyes, O Yahweh, and see...Now therefore, O Yahweh our God, save us" (*vv. 16-20*). Hezekiah prayed with a sense of purpose - there was no more he could do, so he asked Yahweh for help. His faith resulted in Yahweh defeating the Assyrians.

The ease of one's communion with Yahweh is directly related to the degree of one's surrender to Yahweh. If, for example, a party is knowingly preoccupied with sinful activities, that party cannot in good conscience, ask Yahweh in faith to grant a prayer request.

Here is how the apostle John explains: "Beloved, if our heart does not condemn us, we have confidence toward Yahweh. And whatever we ask we receive from Him, because we keep His commandments and do those things that are pleasing in His sight" (*1 John 3:21-22*). Here is confirmation again that only the righteous "that keep His commandments", receive answers to their prayers. A sincere repentant attitude is the beginning of righteousness.

On one occasion Yah'shua began to pray: "Father, I thank You that You have heard Me. And I know that You always hear Me" (*John 8:29*). He knew that Yahweh always heard Him, and that He could speak to His Father on the spur of the moment, because He

always did the things that pleased the Father  
(*John 8:29*).

Yahweh says to those of us that seek to obey Him: "Because he has set his love upon Me, therefore I will deliver him...He shall call upon Me, and I will answer him" (*Psalms 91:14,15*).

Yahweh makes Himself accessible to us. In fact, "He is not far from each one of us" (*Acts 17:27*). It is so sad that so many today, have taken it upon themselves to think that they are above Yahweh - that they don't need or believe in Yahweh.

Their ideas of "self-enlightenment" have actually caused them to regress past the stages of our Biblical forefathers - to a time of ancient pagan myths!

Prayer is a dynamic contact with the Creator of the universe, not an empty ritual or form. "Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to Yahweh" (*Phil. 4:6*). This makes possible inner peace, "which surpasses all knowledge" (v. 7).

Put original thought in your prayers. You will find it well worth the effort - if your goal is to have Yahweh hear you. And when you hear Him - and you will - your life will truly change!

## What does "I Love You" Mean?:

There are three kinds of love referred to in the Greek: **agape**, or godly love. **Phileo**, or brotherly love and **eros**, or erotic love.

"Love is above law... Justice is fulfilled in love." Love is not merely an emotion, but a principle of life. The only qualification for victory required of love is that it should be able to endure its most shattering defeat and yet remain. The golden rule of individual and social mental balance is to "Love your neighbour as your self."

So, what does love really mean? Yah'shua said in John 13:34 and 35: "A new commandment I give you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another".

When asked by a lawyer, which was the greatest commandment, Yah'shua replied: "You shall love Yahweh your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment...And the second is like it: `You shall love your neighbour as yourself" (*Matt. 22:37-39*).

And James says in 2:8, "You shall love your neighbour as yourself...but if you show partiality, you commit sin, and are convicted by the law of transgression".

When teaching on this topic of partiality, Yah'shua commanded: "But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, and do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you" (*Matt. 5:44*). And further, "If you love Me, keep My commandments...He who has My commandments and keeps them, it is he who loves Me. And he who loves Me will be loved by My Father" (*John 14:15,21*).

Again, Yah'shua says: "This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you" (*John 15:12*).

Paul instructs the Ephesians: "Husbands, love your wives, just as the Messiah also loved the congregation [called out ones] and gave Himself for it [*us*]" (*5:25*). And to the Collosians: "Husbands, love your wives and do not be bitter toward them" (*3:19*). And when instructing Titus on how to teach the Israelite principles to young wives, Paul said: "Admonish the young women to love their husbands, [*and*] to love their children" (*2:4*).

When teaching the Corinthians of love, Paul said: "Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love NEVER fails...And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love" (*1 Cor. 13:4-8,13*).

"And this commandment we have from Him: That he who loves Yahweh MUST love his brother also...If we love one another, Yahweh abides in us, and His love has been perfected in us...For this is the love of Yahweh, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome" (*1 John 4:21,12; 5:3*).

"Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of Yahweh; and everyone who loves is born of Yahweh and knows Yahweh...for Yahweh IS LOVE" (*1 John 4:7,8*).

"If someone says, `I love Yahweh,' and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love Yahweh whom he has not seen?" (*1 John 4:20*).

The Biblical concept of "love", is far different than that of our modern society. We have, based on our own way of thinking, developed an infinite variety of ways to describe what "love" is in our culture. Ask 100

people to tell you what it means to "fall in love", and you will undoubtedly get 100 widely divergent responses.

The truth is, as the Bible clearly teaches us, that love is rather a simple concept. It is in fact, **ONE OF THE COMMANDMENTS!** It is never referred to as a suggestion, or something to do "if it feels right". We are not asked to love if, or when we want to. We are told quite categorically; we are **COMMANDED**, to love!

We are **COMMANDED TO LOVE** our spouses, our children, our friends, our relatives, our neighbours, our fellow Israelites, our enemies; literally, **EVERYONE ON THE PLANET - WITHOUT EXCEPTION!** Any partiality will be taken as transgression of the law; as sin!

Like most other Biblical doctrine, "love" has been totally twisted and perverted by our traditional religious teaching and resulting cultural values. The prevailing myth of "falling in love" has pervaded our culture to the point of being an integral theme in movies, television, literature, children's books, nursery rhymes, everyday conversations, and into our daily commerce in a variety of other ways.

We have completely lost sight of the fact that love, is simply a commandment. Like all of the other commandments, we are meant to obey it. And like all of the other commandments, it is not a burden! In other words, it is just as easy to keep, and as much of a joy to keep, as all the others!

We **DO NOT HAVE A CHOICE TO LOVE** - we are commanded to **MAKE A DECISION (AND TO KEEP OR MAINTAIN IT) TO LOVE EVERYONE.** Not just those we want to - everyone without partiality!

If we want to truthfully call ourselves Israelites, we **MUST** love everyone, not just some. Yahweh and the Messiah make it very clear. If we say we love Yahweh whom we cannot see, and do not love the people around

us that we can see, then in fact we are liars! And sinners! No exceptions!

Satan has craftily deceived us into mixing our free-will ability to make **DECISIONS**, (*the single factor required for us to love*), together with our family values, and with the personal character traits involved in friendships and sexual attractions, resulting in a mish-mash of ingredients, that we call "falling in love".

His strategy has been successful in getting millions of well-intentioned individuals, to break another of Yahweh's laws. This clever deception has caused millions to have their marriages fail, to suffer endless family strife, and to be unwitting participants in racial hatred, political injustice and wars.

Israelites must keep Yahweh's commandments. They must understand them in the simple and straightforward manner in which Yahweh has set them out in His Word. Not how our false religions and societies have depicted them!

First, we must remember that Yahweh is love - and that the love of Yahweh is living in each of us through His Holy Spirit. As Yahweh **IS** love, so are we! We **ARE** love! We don't "have love" or "feel love" when it is convenient. Like Yahweh does, we must learn to simply **BE** love. This means that without exception, we simply **DECIDE** to love everyone without partiality!

To love without partiality, we need to separate the single ingredient required to **BE** love, from all of the other ingredients that Satan has caused us to mix up in the same package. **ALL FEELINGS OF AFFECTION** related to family bonding, friendship and sexual attraction must be separated and treated as totally distinct from love.

Biblical love is the realization that as Israelites, we can make a simple decision, one resulting in our having compassion for all

humanity. It is a special caring, merciful, selfless concern for others - all others equally, including our own spouses, children, friends, relatives, neighbours and enemies.

We grow up in family environments where we experience certain "family bonds". This family bonding is something that we feel as a result of experiences between family members. Feelings on paternal, maternal and sibling levels develop automatically in families. These bonds between various family members are the result of being together as a family unit, usually without any choice in the matter. "Family bonds" then, are something we feel in ADDITION to our love for humanities, that make growing up in a family very special to us.

As we grow up, we each in various ways, determine those characteristics in others that we find appealing. Through learning family values at home, and through experiences with people outside of our home, we develop a sense of what particular character traits we admire and enjoy in others, and therefore like to see in our friends. The qualities that we like, determine to a large degree, who we choose as friends. The qualities of "friendships" then, are something else we feel in ADDITION to our love for humanities, that make interacting with friends in our community very special to us.

Physical and sexual attraction is a facet of our development that takes place largely due to our interacting in our community. Based on many factors, including observing certain aspects of our own parent's', and other couples' behaviour with each other, we form our own perceptions of what characteristics would be pleasing to us in a spouse. A "spouse", is someone very special in our lives, for many obvious reasons, not the least of which, is that they are the one person above all others in our relationships, that make it possible to perpetuate the above cycle.

We then use our experience in building strong family bonds, coupled with our experience in building strong friendships, together with our acceptance of what type of person we find sexually attractive, to determine the special combination of character and personality traits, we desire in a spouse.

So our "spouse" then, is someone that we have, in ADDITION to our feeling of love for humanities, found to be sexually attractive and that we relate to in a manner that includes developing a strong "friendship", and developing strong "family bonds". In other words, we have positive affection - WE LIKE THEM, in addition to finding them sexually attractive, and loving them, like we do all people!

Strong family bonds and friendships - qualities we like, plus sexual attractions then, are NOT aspects of, or parts of love that make a relationship with a spouse. Rather, they are wonderful aspects of our interaction with others that we ADD to our feelings of LOVE for our spouse, that make for a truly wonderful relationship.

When we say, "I love you", to our SPOUSE (*or potential spouse*), we are in effect saying, "I love you, I find you sexually attractive, and I appreciate the strength and depth of our friendship and family bonds".

Of course, we don't always say it all at once this way - but every spouse appreciates hearing each of these distinctly separate affirmations of SEXUAL ATTRACTION, FRIENDLY AFFECTION, AND LOVE, on a regular basis.

We are all unique in our creation, and likewise we are unique in our method of expression. Bible advice on marriage is given in many verses, which invariably point to the sound principles of thorough and effective communication between spouses. The first point; "live by every Word of Yahweh". Yahweh

is love personified. Yahweh authored love in His Word. Studying and living by that Word, is becoming love.

You are love. Love your friends, your families, your relatives, your enemies, strangers, your neighbours, the rich, the poor - and love your spouses. You can have absolute faith in the fact that Yahweh will bless this OBEDIENCE by giving you the patience and the wisdom necessary to build lasting friendships, strong family bonds - and of course, a wonderful marriage to the person you find sexually attractive.

If you are OBEDIENT to always love you cannot fail. If you always forgive, if you are always kind, always patient, always honest, always hopeful, never selfish, never envious, never rude, never provoked, never evil - friendships, family bonds and marriages will always survive! Love never fails!

In a society with so much emphasis on sex, it is fitting to outline how the Bible advises us to deal with this all-important issue. Principally, the Bible teaches chastity while single and fidelity while married. Typically, the question posed by teens is, "why wait?", while many adults ask, "why be faithful?"

There are many familiar Bible passages telling us to refrain from fornication (*sex prior to or outside of marriage*) and to avoid adultery. But there are also some very fascinating reasons explained in the Bible for following this timeless advice. Two verses, serve particularly well in this regard: "For this is the WILL OF Yahweh, YOUR SANCTIFICATION: that you should abstain from sexual immorality; that each of you should know how to possess his own vessel [*body*] in SANCTIFICATION AND HONOUR" (*1 Thess. 4:3-5*). And; "Marriage is honourable AMONG ALL, and the BED UNDEFILED" (*Hebrews 13:4*).

It is Yahweh's Will, that we ENJOY SEX TO THE FULLEST! Yahweh knows exactly

how we can expect to accomplish this. He has not given us a series of negative instructions to penalize or restrict our enjoyment - quite the contrary. Loving parents do not tell their children to touch the hot stovetop or to overindulge in candy! They rather instruct them negatively. They tell them to "not touch the stovetop" or to "not eat too much candy". Yahweh instructs us the same way. Each of His "negative" instructions ALWAYS contains at least two positive reasons - He wishes to PROTECT us and to PROVIDE for us!

Yahweh has provided us the greatest possible environment to enjoy sex to its fullest - the institution of marriage. Only by protecting our most important and powerful sex organ from becoming defiled, our MIND, can we experience sex to its fullest!

Yahweh desires us to refrain from sexual immorality that we might enjoy "sanctification" and that the institution of "marriage is honourable among all". Among ALL means all single people as well as all married people! Sanctification means that we are set apart as separate for Yahweh's holy use and purpose - the purpose obviously being that if we are obedient in this context, Yahweh will bless our marriages by rewarding us with the greatest possible degree of marital and sexual fulfilment. That's His PROMISE!

Sex is a physical act, while sanctification and honour are spiritual in context. We are free moral agents - free to make choices concerning our physical activities, including sex. But we have NO CHOICE when it comes to being under the spiritual authority of Yahweh's Law. We are under the authority of Yahweh's SPIRITUAL Law, whether we want to be or not - regardless of belief!

Life is largely about our relationships with our family, our friends and our spouse. Any GOOD relationship, whether family, friend or spouse, will always claim honesty and trust

as the central reason for its success. In marriage, trust is essential. The slightest suspicions can be devastating. Yahweh is telling us how to GUARANTEE a vitally important part of our marriage relationship - TRUST, by refraining from sexual immorality! Sex is so beautiful it must be protected, not abused, either before or during marriage.

How? Love is only love when it is totally selfless. When you enter into a marriage relationship you are committing to GIVE it your absolute best. If your marriage bed is to be "undefiled", you cannot take into it, mental images from experiences outside of it. That is why we must protect our most powerful sex organ - our MIND, from all sexual immorality. Strong memories, the result of experiences involving most of the five physical senses, are always readily recalled in the "theatre of our mind".

Our first sexual encounter is one such example. Any pre-marital sexual experiences, extra-marital affairs, or sexually pornographic material will ALWAYS damage the trust in our relationships, by programming the "theatre of our mind". How can anyone honestly be selflessly concerned with the sexual gratification of their spouse, when they are paying attention to their own needs or focusing on "reruns" from their mind's memories?

The truth is, no human being can be selflessly concerned with their spouse if they are at all concerned with "reruns" of their own past experiences or fantasies. Any spouse will sooner or later be able to tell whether your sexual concern is for them or yourself - whether you are BEING intimate, or ACTING intimate. Intimacy consummates honesty and trust - the essence of a successful marriage.

Some may be concerned that they have already "defiled" their mind - that because of past behaviour, a truly intimate relationship might no longer be possible. With "Yahweh all

things are possible" (*Matthew 19:26*). We are instructed in Ephesians 4:22-24 to, "put off concerning your former conduct, the old man which grows corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, and be RENEWED IN THE SPIRIT OF YOUR MIND". And likewise in Romans 12:2, we are instructed to "not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the RENEWING OF YOUR MIND, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect WILL OF Yahweh".

In other words, if your HOPE is to have a successful marriage, begin by developing a right relationship with Yahweh - study His Word. His Helper, His Holy Spirit, will help you develop a NEW MIND and lead you to a new-found faith "the substance of things HOPED for" (*Hebrews 11:1*).

Others may be concerned that the Bible teaches only what not to do, leaving them with no way to gain so-called "sexual experience". This concern only surfaces as a result of never having read the Bible with an open, or NEW MIND. First, it is important to note, that when any two married people, virgin or otherwise, engage themselves in a physically intimate manner, sincere and selfless in their concern to sexually fulfill their spouse, they can count on the PROMISE of Yahweh, that they possess ALL THE KNOWLEDGE necessary to overcome any lack of "experience".

Further, if we read the Song of Solomon, we will find a glorious account of the celebration of romantic love between a man and a woman. In this beautiful courting dialogue written about 960 B.C. by King Solomon and his beloved shepherd girl, love's greatest attributes are highlighted - in some ways leaving little to the imagination, while otherwise opening our minds to nearly limitless possibilities. The entire Song of Solomon should be read, preferably from a version of the Bible using a modern English translation, to

fully appreciate the wisdom applied to its sensual expression of romantic love. Here are a few select verses to spark your interest: (*NKJ Version*):

"Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth -  
For your love is better than wine...  
Lead me away!. If you do not know, O fairest of women...  
A bundle of myrrh is my beloved to me,  
That lies all night between my breasts...  
I sat down in his shade with great delight,  
And his fruit was sweet to my taste...  
His left hand is under my head,  
And his right hand embraces me...  
Rise up my love, my fair one, And come away...  
For your voice is sweet, And your countenance is lovely...  
By night on my bed I sought the one I love...  
I held him and would not let him go...  
Your lips are like a strand of scarlet,  
And your mouth is lovely...  
You have ravished my heart with one look of your eyes...  
How much better than wine is your love,  
And the scent of your perfumes than all spices,  
Your lips O my spouse, Drip as the honeycomb,  
Honey and milk are under your tongue...  
I have eaten my honeycomb with my honey,  
I have drunk my wine with my milk...  
It is the voice of my beloved,  
Open for me...my beloved...And my hands dripped with myrrh,  
I opened for my beloved...His hands are rods of gold...  
His mouth is most sweet...  
Turn your eyes from me, for they have overcome me...  
The curves of your thighs are like jewels...  
Your navel is a rounded goblet...  
Your two breasts are like two fawns...

How fair and how pleasant you are...  
The fragrance of your breath like apples,  
And the roof of your mouth like the best wine.  
The wine goes down smoothly... moving gently the lips...  
Let us see if the wine has budded,  
There I will give you my love...  
I would cause you to drink of spiced wine,  
Of the juice of my fruit...  
Then I became in his eyes as one who found peace".

So we see that Yahweh does not leave us uninformed. He has in fact instructed us on every facet of human interaction, giving special attention to this very important aspect of our romantic, sexual expression of love.

With a little COOPERATION and IMAGINATION, combined with His GIFT of NATURAL DESIRE, even the novice couple will find ample advice and stimulation leading to a lasting, TRUSTING relationship, by reading the Bible in the FAITH that Yahweh will help them to develop a NEW MIND - one programmed for true love, pleasure, thanksgiving and praise to Yahweh for every aspect of their most precious relationship!

Man's greatest hope is to truly enjoy ALL of his relationships; his marriage, his family and his friendships, in the manner in which Yahweh intended - with total loving trust!

If we HOPE to establish this intimacy, which consummates HONESTY AND TRUST, leading to SUCCESS in all of our relationships, we must begin by exhibiting TRUE LOVE - a totally selfless concern for others, allowing them to develop ABSOLUTE FAITH in us, "the substance of things hoped for"!

These are simply the PROMISES OF Yahweh, freely given in consideration of, and subject to our OBEDIENCE, TO HIS COMMAND TO LOVE!

## Introduction to Marriage:

We do not want to presume whether or not anyone reading this has "consummated" their relationship with sex. Thus, for what it is worth we will comment on the matter allowing for both possibilities.

In several places, the Bible shows us that marriage was considered a matter between the groom (*and his family*) and the bride (*and her family*). In every case, the marriage was considered consummated when the groom took the bride to his (*or his family's*) home to live with him.

After that, she belonged to him, and to him alone (*Genesis 24:67, Judges 15:1*). Sometimes a gift was required, and the groom giving a ring to the bride is the remaining manifestation of this custom when they have joined together to become one flesh; that is, when they have left father and mother in order to join with or cleave to (*have sex with*) their partner (*Genesis 2:24, Matthew 19:5, Mark 10:7, Ephesians 5:31*).

A man and woman are considered one flesh when they first have sex (*Genesis 29:23-25,28, Exodus 22:16-17, Deuteronomy 22:28*), even to a prostitute (*1 Corinthians 6:16*). The woman at Samaria told Yah'shua that she had no husband, but Yah'shua told her she had 5 husbands, because that's how many men she had sex with (*John 4:16-19*). The biblical phrase "to have a woman" always means "to marry" (*Matthew 14:4; 22:28, 1 Corinthians 5:1; 7:2,29*).

However, just because a man and woman have sex together, it does not necessarily mean they are married. For example, if a man has sex with an un-betrothed woman, they were commanded to marry each other (*Deuteronomy 22:28-29*). They were not considered married, but commanded to marry. But if the father refused to give his daughter to him, then they would not get married (*Exodus*

*22:16-17*). A man and woman cannot get married unless the parents of the woman give their permission. She was under the covering of her father, until he gives her away.

Scripture plainly says that Mary was Joseph's **wife** (*Matthew 1:20,24, Luke 2:5*). But at the same time, she was **betrothed** to him:

Matthew 1:18-19, "...Mary was **betrothed** to Joseph...Joseph...was minded to put her away."

The Greek word for "put her away" is 'aphiemi,' and is used by Paul to describe divorce in 1 Corinthians 7:11 and Matthew 1:18-19. In other words, a divorce was required to break off a betrothal, because she was his wife! Joseph thought that Mary had slept with another man (*because she was pregnant and had not slept with him*), and that's why he was thinking of divorcing her, but an angel showed Joseph that she was conceived by His Holy Spirit (*Matthew 1:20*).

Lest anyone question whether a betrothed girl is a wife:

Deuteronomy 20:7, "And what man is there that hath **betrothed a wife**, and hath **not taken her**? let him go and return unto his house, lest he die in the battle, and another man take her."

She was his wife, but he had not taken (lain with) her yet, he had not slept with her and become one flesh. Their marriage was not yet consummated. Deuteronomy 22:23-24 is another passage that defines a "**betrothed virgin**" (verse 23) as a "neighbour's wife" (verse 24).

Deuteronomy 22:23-24, "If a damsel that is a virgin be **betrothed** unto an husband, and a man find her in the city, and lie with he...ye shall stone them with stones that they die; the damsel, because she cried not, being in the city; and the man, because he hath humbled his **neighbour's wife**..."

So it seems that for many that consider themselves to be "dating", their current circumstances have caused a *de facto* marriage between them, whether or not they have had physical relations. Their obligations now are simply to have their respective fathers (*parents*) confirm their approval, make a formal announcement to their parents and to their friends (*their public*), and take up their own place of residence in the sight of Yahweh.

To make the matter "proper", is a matter of conscience between each of you and Yahweh. To make the matter "lawful", is simply to mutually agree to conduct yourselves according to Yahweh's will for you, and to make this commitment before one another and your personal witnesses if you wish and in the sight of Yahweh. This "covenant of marriage" is to made between "the two of you as making your lifelong vows to Yahweh", (*as it is Yahweh that joins you*), not between "the two of you making your lifelong vows to one another", and this is what makes it "lawful" in the sight of Yahweh!

When you have done these things you are effectively and formally married and committed to your marriage in the sight of Yahweh through your covenant with Him, even though if you have been formally "dating" or courting, there is Biblical support for your already being "married", or betrothed if you have not had sex, and subject to "divorce" in order to separate.

There is no need whatsoever for the "state" to be involved in this matter which is between the two of you and Yahweh. If you wish to have a certificate or license of marriage from the state, then do so as a secondary issue to the real marriage. Yahweh is not concerned with whether or not you have any piece of paper that says you are married, but He is concerned with what you have agreed in your hearts with Him.

We know many people that have conducted wonderful ceremonies in truth between the couple and Yahweh, and in front of very large audiences that were able to accept the matter according to their individual consciences. They had prepared their own private documents that they signed in front of witnesses and the audience was then able to conclude whatever they wanted or whatever the couples decided to advise them had happened.

That is to say, that for the sake of the consciences of your guests, some may be offended at a non-state/church ceremony while others that are Godly may be offended at a state/church ceremony, but there is no deception in letting those that agree with your understanding of Yahweh know the truth of your ceremony, while letting the others assume whatever their conscience dictates (*including for example, that the Godly friend you asked to help you with your ceremony is an ordained minister or justice of the peace*).

### **Marriage "Licenses" are Unlawful!**

Every year thousands of Christians amble down to their local county courthouse and obtain a marriage license from the State in order to marry their future spouse. They do this unquestioningly. They usually do it because their minister has told them to go get one, and besides, "everybody else gets one." This article attempts to answer the question - *why should we not get one?*

The legal definition of a "license" demands by all accounts, that we not obtain one to marry. Black's Law Dictionary defines "license" as, "The permission by competent authority to do an act which without such permission, would be illegal." We need to ask ourselves- why should it be illegal to marry without the State's permission? More importantly, why should we *need* the State's permission to participate in something which

Yahweh has ordained and commanded us to do (*Gen. 2:18-24*)? We do not need the State's permission to marry, nor should we grovel before state officials to seek it. What if you apply and the State says "no"? You must understand that the authority to license implies the power to prohibit. A license by definition "confers a right" to do something. The State cannot grant the right to marry. Marriage is a Yahweh-given freedom.

When you marry with a marriage license, you grant the State jurisdiction over your marriage. When you marry with a marriage license, your marriage is a creature of the State. It is a corporation of the State - "legal fiction" entity by definition!! Therefore, they have jurisdiction over your marriage including the *fruit* of your marriage. What is the fruit of your marriage? Your children and every piece of property you own. There is plenty of case law in America and elsewhere which proves this to be true.

In one example, parents, married by state license were upset because a test was being administered to their children in the government schools which was very invasive of the family's privacy. When these parents complained, they were shocked by the school bureaucrats who informed them that their children were required to take the test by law because they (*the government school*) had jurisdiction over their children. When these parents asked the bureaucrats what gave them this jurisdiction, the bureaucrats answered, "your marriage license and their birth certificates." Judicially, and in increasing fashion, practically, your state marriage license has far-reaching implications. Like the birth certificates, it effectively causes your children to become "legal chattel", or property of the state.

When you marry with a marriage license, you place yourself under and bind

yourself to a body of law which is immoral, or anti-Yahweh. By obtaining a marriage license, you place yourself under the jurisdiction of Family Court which is governed by unbiblical and immoral laws. *Under these artificial laws, you can divorce for any reason.* Often, the courts side with the spouse who is in rebellion to Yahweh, and castigates the spouse who remains faithful by ordering him or her not to speak about the Bible or other matters of faith when present with the children.

No minister of Yahweh can in good conscience perform a marriage which would place people under this immoral body of laws, let alone marry someone with a marriage license, because to do so the minister must act as an agent of the State in direct opposition to Yahweh!! The minister is required to sign the marriage license, and mail it into the State. Given the State's demand to usurp the place of Yahweh and family regarding marriage, and given it's unbiblical, immoral laws to govern marriage, this would be an act of disobedience to Yahweh akin to treason.

The marriage license invades and removes Yahweh's God-given parental authority. When you read the Bible, you see that Yahweh intended for children to have their father's blessing regarding whom they married. Daughters were to be *given* in marriage *by their fathers* (*Dt. 22:16; Ex. 22:17; I Cor. 7:38*). We have a vestige of this in our culture today in that the father takes his daughter to the front of the altar and the minister asks, "Who *gives* this woman to be married to this man?"

Historically, there was no requirement to obtain a marriage license in colonial America, or most countries for that matter. When you read the laws of the colonies and then the states, you see only two requirements for marriage. First, you had to obtain your parent's permission to marry, and second, you had to

post public notice of the marriage for 5-15 days before the ceremony.

Notice you had to obtain your *parent's permission*. Back then you saw godly government displayed in that the State recognized the parent's authority by demanding that the parent's permission be obtained. Today, the all-encompassing ungodly State demands that *their [state's]* permission be obtained to marry.

By issuing marriage licenses, the State is saying, "You don't need your parent's permission, you need *our* permission." If parents are opposed to their child's marrying a certain person and refuse to give their permission, the child can do an end-run around the parent's authority by obtaining the State's permission, and marry anyway. This is an invasion and removal of Yahweh-given parental authority by the State.

When you marry with a marriage license, you are like a polygamist. From the State's point of view, when you marry with a marriage license, you are not just marrying your spouse, but you are also marrying the State. Inasmuch as you have voluntarily conceded that the state's law supersedes Yahweh's law, and the state law says categorically that you have contracted with them!

A blatant declaration of this fact may be found in many state brochures across the nation where people go to obtain their marriage licenses. These are published by the various State Bar Associations. A common opening paragraph under the subtitle "Marriage Vows" states, "*Actually, when you repeat your marriage vows you enter into a legal contract. There are three parties to that contract. 1. You; 2. Your husband or wife, as the case may be; and 3. the State of ??????*"

See, the State and the lawyers know that when you marry with a marriage license,

you are not just marrying your spouse, you are marrying the State! You are like a polygamist! You are not just making a vow to your spouse, but you are making a *contractual* vow to the State *and* your spouse, instead of to your spouse and to Yahweh, regardless of what you actually say in your oral vows! You are also giving undue jurisdiction to the State.

When Does the State Have Jurisdiction Over a Marriage? Never! Yahweh intended His congregation to have jurisdiction over a marriage for two reasons - 1). in the case of divorce, and 2). when crimes are committed i.e., adultery, bigamy. etc. Unfortunately, the state incorporated churches now allow divorce for any reason, and they do not prosecute for adultery, nor does the state which has bound them so.

In either case, divorce or crime, a marriage license is *not* necessary for the congregation or courts to determine whether a marriage existed or not. What is needed are witnesses. This is why you have a best man and a maid of honour. They should sign the marriage certificate in your family Bible, and the wedding day guest book should be kept.

Marriage was instituted by Yahweh, therefore it is a Yahweh-given freedom. According to Scripture, it is to be governed by the family, and the congregation, not the state, and the congregation only has jurisdiction in the cases of divorce or crime.

History establishes that George Washington was married *without* a marriage license. Abraham Lincoln was married *without* a marriage license. So, how did we come to this place in America and other countries where marriage licenses are issued?

Historically, all the states in America for example, had laws outlawing the marriage of blacks with whites. In the mid-1800's, certain states began allowing interracial marriages or miscegenation as long as those marrying

received a license from the state. In other words they had to receive *permission to do an act which without such permission would have been illegal*.

Blacks Law Dictionary points to this historical fact when it defines "marriage license" as, "*A license or permission granted by public authority to persons who intend to intermarry.*" "Intermarry" is defined in Black's Law Dictionary as, "*Miscegenation; mixed or interracial marriages.*"

Not long after these licenses were first issued, some states began requiring *all* people who marry to obtain a marriage license, without regard to the true definition of the term. In 1923, the Federal Government established the Uniform Marriage and Marriage License Act (*they later established the Uniform Marriage and Divorce Act*).

By 1929, every state in the Union had adopted marriage license laws. Most British Commonwealth countries followed similar paths, ending with the same result. Many of these laws changed because of the influence of the United Nations. (People should also realize that a "*nation*" be legal definition, is a "*group of people that be law cannot own land*")

Israelite couples should not be marrying with State marriage licenses, nor should ministers be marrying people with State marriage licenses. Some may say to you, "If someone is married without a marriage license, then they aren't really married."

Given the fact that states may soon legalize same-sex marriages, we need to ask ourselves, "If a man and a man marry *with* a State marriage license, and a man and woman marry *without* a State marriage license - *who's really married?* Is it the two men *with* a marriage license, or the man and woman *without* a marriage license, but with their parent's approval and Yahweh's blessing? In reality, this contention that people are not really

married unless they obtain a marriage license simply reveals how brainwashed we are in our thinking. We need to think biblically.

We do not have to obtain a license from the State to marry someone anymore than we have to obtain a license from the State to be a parent, which some in academic and legislative circles are currently pushing to be made into law.

When a couple marry, they should always obtain their own private Family Bible which contains birth and death records, and a record of marriage vows [*certificate*] that they complete themselves. They then record the marriage in that Family Bible. What's recorded in a Family Bible will stand up as legal evidence in any court of law in any country including America.

### **Marriage and Divorce**

Why are we seeing such a high divorce rate within our nations? Recent statistics by Barner, show that the divorce rate within the "Christian" denominations is 7% higher than the denominations of the worldly. Some of the issues we can state as part of the problem are:

1. Dating/Boyfriend/Girlfriend: was not instituted till the 17th century. Dating encourages multiple relationships, if things don't work out after you're married, then let's try someone else.

2. Not taking Yahweh's Marriage Covenant, as a

Universal Law (*Gen. 2:22-24; Matt. 19:5,6; Eph. 5:31; Mal. 2:14-16*).

3. Reconciliation: We are to repent and ask forgiveness as Yahweh has left a door open for all broken marriages and that is "Reconciliation". But man is too stiff-necked to humble himself to receive the blessing.

I Cor. 7:11, "*But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.*"

Reconciled (#2644 Greek): To change mutually, to compound a difference.

Gen. 2:22-24, "...and brought her unto the man ... This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh." V. 24: states that because of the agreements to the covenant, they shall never be two again.

Cleave (Hebrew #4347): To glue adhere. To unite as to be united closely in interest or affection, to adhere with strong attachment. [Yahweh brought them together, forming the covenant between them. Here we have Adam accepting Eve and calling her his wife. This is the institution of the marriage covenant, between man and woman, husband and wife.] Mal. 2:14-16 (Ref. Deut. 24:1; Matt. 5:32; 19: 8), "Yet ye say, Wherefore? Because Yahweh hath been witness between thee and the wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy companion, and the wife of thy covenant. And did not he make one? ... And wherefore one? ... take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth."

Matt. 19:5,6 (Ref. Gen. 2:24, Eph. 5:31), "And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore Yahweh hath joined together, let not man put asunder." (Divorce see #3748 below.)

Asunder (#5563, Greek): to place, room between, i.e. part, to go away - depart, put asunder, separate.

Divorce (#3748 Hebrew) from 3772: a cutting (of the Matrimonial bond) i.e. divorce - divorcement) 3772, a prim. root; to cut (off, down or ASUNDER; by impl. To destroy or consume; spec, to covenant. [Here we have in

the concordance confirmation, that there is a matrimonial bond, and that divorce is putting the marriage vow asunder. It is man that is putting asunder the Marriage Covenant by divorcing and remarrying.] Divorce violates the covenant that Yahweh made between man and woman (Gen. 2:24, Matt. 19:5,6).

Bond (Hebrew, #632): an obligation, vow from #6731: to yoke or hitch.

In 1884 law textbook Parsons on Contracts with this quote from the chapter "marriage is a contract": "since the State married them the children were fruits of the State."

How did you delegate to your servants the authority (Government) from wife contrary to: Mark 10:9, "What therefore Yahweh hath joined together, let not man put asunder."

We know that we could not cancel our neighbours' vows to [Yahweh], so we know that divorce court could not cancel anyone's vows to [Yahweh].

How can you delegate the authority to bastardize your neighbours' children, when the authority does not originally reside within you?

It turns out that we did not delegate this authority. Apparently there are two meanings of the word 'marriage,' one meaning "holy matrimony" and the other refers to a status akin to corporate merger within the Government.

It should seem peculiar that people who have a right to get married would have to beg civil servants for permission (license = permission) to get married. We read in the 1877 U.S. Supreme Court decisions Meister v. Moore 96 US 80, that a marriage license was not required, nor do States confer the right to marry, and that marriage is based on contract.

This is consistent with the Bible, and it makes sense that the Supreme Court would confirm that this most sacred of family freedoms does not involve man-made

Government. Since your Constitution prohibits any State from impairing the obligation of contracts (*U.S. Constitution, article 1, section 10*) the sanctity of the family is safe from Government interference.

Then we read in the 1888 US Supreme Court decision in Maynard v. Hill 8 SCt 723 125 US 190, where the Maynard's had intermarried in the State of Vermont (*meaning they had a license*) and that marriage was NOT based on contract but upon a *status*, and the Government could do whatever it wanted to do with the marriage because a State created the *status* of marriage.

Asking permission to get married is a voluntary, albeit unwitting confession that you do not know that you have a right to get married. By applying for a marriage license, you've waived your actual right to get married.

When the law says that the State cannot recognize a common law marriage, it doesn't mean you're not married. It means the State cannot take your children nor divorce you. [Yahweh's] laws prevail. Your family is not part of their corporation. Your family does not have existence in the eyes of their laws.

Ignorance of the law is no excuse. You should have known (*as did the Supreme Court in Murdock v. Pennsylvania 319 US 105*) that "A state may not, through a license tax, impose a charge for the enjoyment of a right granted by the Federal Constitution." By paying for a marriage license, you confess that you did not have a right to get married. The power to tax is the power to destroy. What part of "let no man put asunder" do we not understand?"

How this comes about concerning the marriage license starts with being registered at birth, by a birth certificate making you a corporate entity by the Government.

Yahweh made the original marriage constitution of man as one pair, a male and female; as such by divine appointment; and to

the purpose of Yahweh, expressed by the sacred historian that in all time one man, one woman should by marriage become one flesh, so to continue as long as both are in the flesh.

This being [Yahweh's] constitution, let not man break it up by causeless divorces (*from Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary*). Divorce may be legal according to man-made laws which 'marry/incorporate' two fictional 'persons/corporate entities', but it is not right according to Yahweh's Law where marriage is an act between a man and his wife sanctioned by Yahweh.

Yahweh expects couples to practice commitment to each other and remain true to each other. Too many people view divorce as an easy way out, and do not take seriously their covenant vow of commitment to each other, or to Yahweh and Yah'shua.

1 Cor. 7:27, "Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed <sup>(27)</sup>. Art thou loosed <sup>(28)</sup> from a wife? seek not a wife."

Loosed <sup>(27)</sup>: Strong's #3089 luo-breakup, dissolve.

Loosed <sup>(28)</sup>: Strong's #3080 luis - a loosening, that is specifically divorce. (*From the Word of Yahweh, KJV*)

Marriage: Rendering of several word phrases in Hebrew and Greek means to be master; to take, that is a wife; to magnify and lift up, to contract. In all the Hebrew Scriptures there is no single word for the estate of marriage or to express the abstract idea of wedlock.

The Word that confirms the vow, covenant, you make with Yahweh and your mate: is "TO TAKE" OR "I TOOK" in Scripture:

Hosea 1:2,3, "...And Yahweh said to Hosea, Go, take unto thee a wife..."

Take: 3947: Prim. root: to take (*in the widest variety of application*); accept, bring,

buy, carry away, drawn, fetch, get, infold, mingle, place, receive (-ing), reserve,

Some examples of Biblical Scripture, "take or took" are the following: *Gen. 24:67; 25:1,20; 29:23; Ruth 9:13; 1 Kings 16:31; Hosea 1:2-3; Matt. 1:24.*

The past touches the tip of the marriage covenant, let's look at the views of the early assembly, as they were against re-marriage.

1. PATRISTIC VIEW: The early assembly fathers said if divorce occurs, marriage to a 2nd spouse is not permitted, regardless of the cause. This was from first century on. Adultery was not grounds for divorce.

2. THE AUGUSTINIAN VIEW: Marriage to a 2nd spouse is not permitted even when adultery is involved.

3. BLOOD-RELATED OR UNLAWFUL MARRIAGE VIEW: Unlawful marriages would be like two men, or a sister and a brother, or a son and a mother, those were unlawful marriages which Yahweh wouldn't recognize, even if they made vows.

Other than that, relatives and so forth, neither divorced nor married to a 2nd spouse is ever permitted, regardless of the circumstances.

4. BETROTHAL ENGAGEMENT VIEW: Matthew's Exception refers to the engagement position; "Betrothal", *[which was more binding than engagement and it was as if they were married. They were promised to each other, not given to each other.*

*Divorce was allowed due to fornication if the act was found out before the wedding night (not 5, or 10 years later), if she was not found a virgin on the wedding night she was stoned to death according to Deut. 22:13-21.]*

For the first 1500 years, this was the stand that the assembly knew and no other position was taught!

## HOW DID REMARRIAGE COME INTO THE ASSEMBLY?

1. ERASMIAN OR TRADITIONAL PROTESTANT VIEW: Erasmus introduced remarriage into the denominations in the 1500s, during the Protestant Re-formation. He tried to fellowship with John Calvin and Martin Luther, but they both would have nothing to do with him.

Erasmus lived during the time of King Henry VIII of England. Henry VIII wanted to get his marriage annulled, because his wife would not give him a male child, and the Roman denomination was having a battle with him. They wanted him to submit to them and he wouldn't do it. This was when divorce for immorality or adultery was accepted and the marriage to a 2nd spouse, especially the innocent party, was allowed. This was called the Matthew Pauline Exception Theory.

Dr. Frank Logston, who was behind the N.A.S.V. (*New American Standard Version*), did damage to the Word of Yahweh. His statement was, "*I'm afraid I'm in trouble with the Lord, I laid the ground work, I wrote the format, I helped interview some of the translators. I sat with the translators, I wrote the preface, I'm in trouble*".

The New Translations which use "sexual immorality" instead of fornication have totally perverted that Greek word.

In the Old Covenant, when was adultery ever grounds for divorce? It is not saying in Matthew chapters 5 and 19, that just sexual immorality, it is a specific type. It is fornication which is between singles.

Adultery is between married people. You don't find this word fornication in any other book, other than Matthew, because Matthew was written to the Hebrews. Yah'shua had to deal with the Hebrews in a particular situation, they had what was called, the "Betrothal

period". You can violate a Marriage Covenant, but according to Yahweh you can't destroy it.

### DOES YAHWEH RECOGNIZE THE UNBELIEVER'S MARRIAGE?

Gentile, Jew, or Israelite believer, whoever was the descendant of Adam, Yahweh established the universal law of marriage. Matt. 19:8,9, "He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, commiteth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."

First of all, it says the Pharisees came to tempt Yah'shua; to trick Him (v.3). Yah'shua stated from the beginning of time, it was not so. It was twisted by man to fulfill the desires of the flesh. The "trick", was the fact that a woman cannot be found in the act of adultery, unless a man is also found with her, and both are equally guilty! Thus Yah'shua knew all of her accusers were guilty of at least one sin, which was the false accusation.

When you make your vow and say, "I take" or "I took," you enter the marriage covenant. Yahweh makes you one flesh; believer or unbeliever, it doesn't matter.

Gen. 4:16,17 Yahweh recognized that Cain went out from His presence and he got married.

Gen. 20:1-18 Here was an unbeliever, Abimelech. Yahweh recognized Abimelech's marriage.

Gen. 39:7-9 Potiphar wasn't a believer yet Yahweh recognized his marriage.

Gen. 41:45 Joseph married an Egyptian, Asenath; she was not a believer. Yahweh recognized that marriage.

1 Kings 16:30,31; Daniel 6:24 Yahweh recognized these marriages.

Matt. 14:1-4 John told Herod that according to Yahweh (*the universal law of marriage*) he was not to have his brother Philip's wife. Yahweh recognized that marriage.

Matt. 27:19 The Spirit of Yahweh recognized that Pilate was married. If Yahweh doesn't recognize unbelievers' marriages than the believers are the only ones who can commit adultery. It really doesn't matter what any man's opinion is, the Scriptures are the final authority.

### WHAT ABOUT A FOOLISH COVENANT?

Gen. 25:29 Esau had come from the field, he was faint and asked Jacob for pottage. Jacob took advantage of the situation. V31: Jacob said to Esau, "*Sell me this day thy birthright*". Esau said, "I'm starving and your worried about my birthright?" V33:

Jacob said to Esau, "*Swear to me this day*" (literally saying vow to Yahweh it belongs to me.) Swear (Strong's # 7650): oath. Esau then makes an oath to Jacob to sell his birthright. V34, Esau sold his birthright. Many will say that was two brothers just fooling around, Yahweh is not going to hold them accountable.

Did Yahweh hold him accountable? Gen. 27:34-36; Heb. 12:16,17. He lost his blessing and birthright. There are quite a few people that make a vow to Yahweh before witnesses, of a covenant they make to each other on their Wedding Day and then say: "I really didn't love her", or "I was young and foolish", or "I did not realize what life was all about." "Yahweh will not hold me to that vow." Heb. 12:14-17, "*Follow peace with all men, and set apartness, without which no man shall see Yahweh.*" V16: "... lest there be any fornicator [doer of sexual sins], or profane person [one who is careless of what Yahweh says]."

Esau sold his birthright. Esau repented of his foolish vow; however, there was still a

consequence for his words. Yahweh could not change the covenant, as it would have violated His set-apartness, righteousness and judgment. Yahweh heard the words of Esau and Jacob and acted on it. Deut. 23:21-23, Eccl. 5:4-6, "Thou shalt not forswear thyself; (you will not violate your vow to Yahweh, but fulfill all of them) but shalt perform unto Yahweh thine oath." Matt. 5:37, "But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil."

This was stated after Yah'shua talked about divorce. Any covenant, whether borne out of a lie, foolish, flippant or in ignorance, is still a covenant in Yahweh's eyes. He will forgive your foolishness or ignorance, but that will not and does not affect or make void the covenant. It stands because it was a decision not a feeling. Yahweh does not demand that we marry the one we love, but He does command us to love the one we marry. "That is not a suggestion but a divine command."

When you translate "woman" and "man" to Hebrew you will see two divine elements. When you combine the two "Divine Elements" contained in both these Hebrew words you get y h (*yod, hei*). When you combine the Yod and the Hei it creates the name "YAH" which is the shortened, poetic form of our Father's Name, Yahweh...See Ps. 68:4.

So the combination of a man and woman into a "Covenantal Marriage" relationship, at least in the "beginning," (*the first marriage*) has the "Seal of Approval," by being stamped with the VERY NAME OF "YAH", being a Witness to your Marriage Covenant (Mal. 3:2).

What Yahweh has joined together let no man put asunder, after He seals His name on your marriage covenant, it cannot be destroyed. Notice what happens if Yahweh our Heavenly Father should lose His place among the married couple. If you remove the "Divine

Elements." of both Hebrew terms, the one for, "Man", [ c ( y ) a ] which is yod and the one for, "Woman", [ ( h ) c a ] which is hei. By removing the y (yod) from the man, and the h (*hei*) from the woman, in both instances it leaves you with c a.

The combination of these two Hebrew letters form the word for "FIRE". So, by removing Yahweh's presence (*signature*) in a marriage relationship you have destined that marriage to a "Fiery Destruction." The second relationship starts under a "Fiery Destruction."

NEVER FORGET, – YAHWEH FORGIVES SIN!

## **Compassion: Dealing with Crime & Punishment:**

News events inspire much discussion around criminal behaviour within our societies, as well as much "political" controversy over our approach to criminal punishment.

This chapter will take a look at how mankind, with a clear lack of compassion, has stubbornly rejected Yahweh's commandments involving implementation of swift and certain punishment for criminal behaviour.

The February 26th, 1994 issue of "The Economist", featured an article on our confused criminal justice system, which quite clearly "hit the nail on the head" - as far as it went: "The Menendez brothers, killers of their parents, make vague but theatrical claims of abuse, and their case ends in mistrial. The Bobbitts go to court, but she is acquitted of maliciously wounding him [*having endured years of humiliation*], and he is acquitted of harming her [*he has paid the price "up front"*].

A serial killer throws himself on the mercy of the court in Florida: yes, he killed five students, raping several and arranging the severed head of one tastefully on a bookshelf; but his father had abused him, and angels and demons torment him. Two blacks bash in the head of a white [*truck*] driver with a brick, dance a little jig of joy, and are acquitted; they have been unreasonably provoked by the court verdict in the Rodney King case. It will not be long, at this rate, before mandatory sentence for a crime of violence is a `HUG AND A GOOD CRY'!"

Sadly, that quotation is an accurate portrayal of our modern social justice system. Much debate has raged in recent years over the "death penalty", however, as so-called "progressive" nations, we have substituted indulgence for discipline, notwithstanding our concerns over the validity of "punishing" criminals, or of the actual death penalty itself.

The result is that our prisons are full to overflowing and our nations are inundated in violent crime. We have become too afraid to sternly PUNISH evildoers and we are vacillating in our determination to put into practice, our Yahweh-given instructions to CORRECT CRIME THROUGH DISCIPLINE!

The Bible clearly condemns murderers and other violent offenders to death, and sets out very stern punishment for a great number of other criminal offences.

Leviticus 24:17 tells us, "Whoever kills any man shall surely be put to death". Numbers 35:30 clearly states, "Whoever kills a person, the murderer shall be put to death on the testimony of witnesses; but one witness is not sufficient...for the death penalty". Similarly, Deuteronomy 19:11-13 states, "But if anyone hates his neighbor...and strikes him mortally, so that he dies... then...deliver him over to the avenger of blood, that he may die. YOUR EYE SHALL NOT PITY HIM, BUT YOU SHALL PUT AWAY THE GUILT OF INNOCENT BLOOD FROM ISRAEL, THAT IT MAY GO WELL WITH YOU".

Many people recognize the above verses, as well as many other verses of the Old Covenant that deal with what our societies perceive as "excessive" punishments for various crimes. They believe we are living in the "Christian" era, and that the grace of Yah'shua the Messiah has done away with the need for these stern corrective measures.

This misunderstanding comes as a result of forgetting the very vital fact that the Spirit that is in Yah'shua the Messiah WAS FROM THE AUTHOR OF THE ENTIRE OLD COVENANT! As clearly explained in your Bible, "God" of the Old Covenant was "Elohim", an expression referring to the multi-faceted Yahweh the Father and it was through His Spirit that He made Yah'shua the firstborn Son of Himself by the resurrection. Many New

Covenant verses such as Col. 1:12-13,15-17; Heb. 1:1-2, 2-20; John 1-18, 5-37; and 1 John 4:12, show that an aspect of Yah'shua the Messiah was with the God of the Old Covenant.

Hebrews 13:8 tells us that "Yah'shua the Messiah is the same yesterday, today, and forever"! By the authority of Yahweh the Father, who is the author and originator of the death penalty, He bolsters His words written in the Old Covenant with clear statements of support through Yah'shua in the New Covenant! Yah'shua said in Matt. 26:52, "for they that take the sword shall perish with the sword", and in Rev. 1:1, He inspired John to write: "He who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword".

"Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. FOR THERE IS NO AUTHORITY EXCEPT FROM Yahweh, and the authorities that exist [*speaking of man's governments and courts*] are APPOINTED BY Yahweh. [*Which unfortunately, does not mean they are always OBEDIENT to Yahweh!*] therefore whoever resists the ordinance of Yahweh [*including the Yahweh-appointed authorities*], and those who resist will bring judgement on themselves. For rulers are not [supposed to be] a terror to good works, but to evil...For he [a government or court official] is Yahweh's minister [*"servant" or "magistrate" in some translations*] to you for good. But if you do evil be afraid; for he is Yahweh's minister [servant or magistrate], an AVENGER TO EXECUTE WRATH ON HIM WHO PRACTICES EVIL" (*Rom. 13:1-4*).

Yahweh is a God of love (1 John 4:8) and yet this God of love tells us that for our own good, those who commit wrong MUST BE CORRECTED! When understood, punishment, meted out in the proper manner, and at the proper time, is one of the greatest BLESSINGS a human being - at any age - can receive!

Conversely, it is obviously the most COMPASSIONATE form of CORRECTION that can be expressed by Christians and Christian governments! It is the greatest act of LOVE there can be toward society and the criminal!

However, the self-defined "liberal" element of our societies, is constantly seeking means to indulge or explain away the criminal's evil deeds by reason of "mitigating circumstances", that supposedly justify a lesser or softer sentence. Criminologists, social scientists, psychologists and others, are continually trying to pin down such excuses as genetic pre-dispositions, poverty, abuse, emotional dysfunction, maleness and other equally spurious nonsense. This indulgent whining prevents deterrence of crime today!

We should not be trying to "understand" or indulge the criminal, we should be harshly punishing them with retribution so severe that they never want to commit crime again! And in the case of intentional murder, that severe punishment must be the death penalty! So says our great Yahweh who understands human nature and tells us in Jeremiah 17:9 that our nature (*without His help*) is deceitful and desperately wicked! Yahweh further tells us in Romans 6:23 that, "the wages of sin is death" - not separation from Yahweh - but physical DEATH which is merely the (*temporary*) absence of physical life.

There are "reasons" why people do things, but those reasons cannot be allowed to become excuses for which they are given leniency. Mankind continually makes excuses for his wrong behaviour, including his stubborn disregard for Yahweh's instructions in dealing with criminals.

In Proverbs 19:18 Yahweh gives us principles that apply to disobedient children, juvenile delinquents, or hardened criminals. We are told, "Chasten thy son while there is hope,

and let not thy soul spare for his crying". An undisciplined child will "run out of time" and then there will be no (*or very little*) hope of correcting the juvenile delinquent and hardened criminal which may result because the parents were too "soft", during the child's early years, when they had the greatest hope of correcting the child's self-centered and destructive ways.

"He who spares his rod hates his son, but he who loves him DISCIPLINES HIM PROMPTLY" (*Prov. 13:24*). For the benefit of society and the individual, swift, stern justice must be meted out when wrongs are brought to light. "BECAUSE THE SENTENCE AGAINST AN EVIL WORK IS NOT EXECUTED SPEEDILY, THEREFORE THE HEART OF THE SONS OF MEN IS FULLY SET IN THEM TO DO EVIL" (*Ecc. 8:11*). When wrong doing is not almost immediately punished, then all or almost all of the deterrent effect is lost.

"Whoever will not observe the law of your God and the law of the king, let judgement be executed SPEEDILY on him, whether it be death, or banishment, or confiscation of goods, or imprisonment" (*Ezra 7:6*). The criminal mind rarely respects authority. The only thing such a party respects is equal or greater FORCE! And when strong force is used immediately to severely punish an offender, it makes others "think twice" before acting likewise.

In the United States, where the death penalty has been re-instated, one District Judge reports that, "the public has lost confidence in the judicial system because of these seemingly endless delays [appeals]". Speaking further on the passage of vast amounts of time (*10 to 14 years*) between the offence and the final punishment, he went on, "it causes the heinous facts to be long since forgotten, and we are permitted to see only fleeting glimpses of a shackled condemned party, for whom there is an inevitable degree of

sympathy". Quite obviously, the liberal press and other death penalty opponents are playing on our sympathies while trying to abolish all thought of the death penalty!

No sane party wants to execute another party. Any right-thinking individual has a certain sympathy for another, even if that other party deserves to die! Stern penalties, especially the death penalty, are as irreversible as the original crime itself. Therefore great care must be taken to ensure fair and honest trials. But human justice, implemented by humans who refuse to follow the guidance of the Eternal Yahweh, will make mistakes (*Jer. 10:23*)!

We cannot however, allow ourselves to further compound our mistakes, by stopping the wheels of justice or removing the deterrent effect of the death penalty, simply because we are afraid to make mistakes! To do so is a far greater mistake! A swift death penalty (*and all punishments*) was intended by our Creator to deter or restrain additional people from committing the same offence. To stop or delay the penalty because the courts are afraid to make a mistake, is in direct disobedience to Yahweh's clear laws!

Further, the courts, if run according to Godly principles, would not make the great many miscarriages of justice that they do presently! The British and Canadian governments, for example, abolished the death penalty because of the hanging of innocent parties. In the United States, thousands of innocent parties are convicted and often imprisoned due to horrendous "plea bargaining" practices, where victims are cajoled into "accepting" guilty pleas on lesser charges, because prosecutors threaten extremely lengthy sentences if they fail to "cooperate".

This activity has tremendous impact on the prosecutors' "win-loss" ratio, and subsequent career promotions! In most

instances, these prosecutors are "elected" to their positions, and of course, the political machine is such that a good "win-loss" record is of top importance! I won't even get into the travesties that befall those many thousands of innocents found guilty by our nations' courts, simply because they could not afford "adequate" defence counsel! Why does the truth need a defence anyway?

Instead of following the Yahweh-given, simple instructions of seeking the truth from two or three corroborating witnesses, our nations make a childish "contest" out of justice! Prosecutors and defence lawyers put "winning" versus "losing" the case, far ahead of fairly seeking the truth! Both "sides" tend only to present that "evidence", or that version of the evidence, that supports their "winning" objective! In other words, the system is not designed to present only the truth - it is designed to offer each "side" an opportunity to see who can "present the best case", by "skilfully manipulating the facts" to their best advantage, which are merely euphemisms for who can lie the best!

It is absolutely shameful that grown men (and women) can behave in such a childish manner over something as important as meting out Yahweh's justice! In true justice, there is neither winner nor loser - there is simply the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth! No game-playing in terms of presenting "our" evidence and then "theirs", hoping to "sway" the jury to support one side versus the other! ALL EVIDENCE should be presented openly and in a totally unbiased fashion - only then will the truth be evident to a jury!

People can learn vicariously from the experience of others. "When the scorner is punished, the simple is made wise", and "Smite a scorner, and the simple will beware" (*Prov. 21:11; 19:25*).

If a party thinks he can get away with murder because his sentence will eventually be commuted to a life sentence, then why should he fear to kill? That is why Mikell Smith almost fatally wounded a prison guard in 1989 after being sentenced to death in 1987 for the 1985 shotgun slaying of a schoolteacher! He no longer feared to kill! And lo and behold, the courts, in a display of their judicial incompetence, handed this mad dog a 500 year sentence instead of immediately putting him to death!

Many a career criminal has already proven he cannot "make it" in normal society; and if he murders, rapes, robs, or commits general mayhem, so what! Why should he fear? Even if he has murdered, the liberals will see to it that HIS life is "spared" so that we taxpayers can support him in a prison environment where he is "somebody" - a "man among men" so to speak!

After 11 years of appeals, the convicted murderer Charles Coleman was finally executed in 1990. The deterrent effect of the death penalty was still clearly seen. Fellow condemned murderer, Howard Marquez was quoted: "I felt the fear. I felt fear FOR MY LIFE!" Another murderer said: "Several people here [in the prison] are saying, 'I don't have a chance. I'm going to be up there [in the death chamber] too. People here are scared to death'. Who says the death penalty has no deterrent effect! It even scares convicted murderers to death!"

Why would a God of love prescribe such harsh penalties including execution? The answer is plainly revealed in your Bible as the RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD. All unconverted sinners will be raised alive from the grave and THEN given a chance to learn and change - while the Messiah is ruling this earth! It is the knowledge of this resurrection that Yahweh has revealed to us, that gives us

understanding of Yahweh's mind about the death penalty.

The simple truth in your Bible is that there will be three resurrections (*Rev. 20:4-15*);. The first resurrection will be at the Messiah's Second Coming (*1 Cor. 15:23*) when He will resurrect to immortal spirit, those elect of Yahweh, who have been called and trained of Yahweh to be OBEDEIENT in THIS lifetime.

The second resurrection will occur 1,000 years later (*Rev. 20:11-12*). Those then resurrected, will be given human physical bodies once again, and for the first time, will be given the opportunity to understand Yahweh's precious truth and learn to become OBEDEIENT, so that they too, can be added to the immortal spirit-composed Family of Yahweh (*Eph. 3:14-15*). This second resurrection is the missing key to understanding how a God of love can be in favour of a death penalty.

The third and final resurrection will also be a resurrection to human physical life, but the end result will be eternal death - the "second death", because these few people, in their former physical life (*what we call THIS lifetime*), understood Yahweh's truth and ways, but wilfully rejected that truth through rebellion or weakness (*Heb. 10:26-27; Rev. 20:13-15; 21:8*).

Yahweh will then mercifully impose the eternal death penalty upon them to prevent the creation of another ever-living, wretchedly miserable murderer like Satan the devil (*John 8:44*). To understand how the death penalty can be a blessing, we must see Yahweh's perspective on human life. Human death means nothing to Yahweh, except a temporary sleep (*1 Cor. 15:51-55*)! Because Yahweh can (*and will*) resurrect all humans from the grave!

By imposing and carrying out harsh penalties such as the death penalty, we stop the examples of lawlessness in society which

can corrupt others. It also prevents the criminal from continuing in a downward spiral of ever-deepening rebellion against Yahweh's laws which will produce an even more twisted and corrupted human nature, with more deeply entrenched habits of evil which MUST BE CORRECTED when this party is resurrected in the second resurrection!

The all merciful Yahweh is even going to resurrect Attila the Hun and Adolf Hitler, along with every serial killer and mass murderer who has ever lived! Because most of these people did not receive the truth of Yahweh in their first lifetime, they will THEN have their minds opened, and will be given their first opportunity to learn Yahweh's truth and to become OBEDEIENT to it in their second life! One opportunity - one time - is what every human being gets; some "few" will avail themselves of the opportunity NOW, and enjoy the "firstfruits" benefits of being with the Messiah for the millennium, while the "many" will receive their opportunity at the second resurrection, "after the thousand years were finished".

This is why the death penalty is implemented in love and with compassion! It deters others in this life from committing offences worthy of death, and it prevents violent or career criminals from continuing in their wrong ways, worsening and more firmly establishing their bad habits, which must be CORRECTED by a loving Yahweh when He gives them their opportunity during their second lifetime!

How terrible it would be, if a party's life were to be forever "wasted", if their deeply entrenched bad habits prevented them from being corrected, simply because some over-indulgent "liberals" thought it best not to "punish" them in this lifetime!

How wonderfully compassionate is the pure and simple truth of the merciful Yahweh!

## **Origins of Christmas:**

What do evergreen trees, reindeer, mistletoe and yule logs have to do with the birth of Yah'shua the Messiah? And was He really born on Dec. 25? Discover the real history of Christmas!

Every year around the middle of November, the decorations are going up, the parties are being planned, the presents are being bought. People around the world will again be celebrating what they perceive to be "Christmas". More than any other religious holiday, Christmas is associated with the name of the Messiah. The word *Christmas* is short for "the Christ's mass," instituted by the Catholic Church and continued by many Protestant churches.

Yet, curiously, the Bible records nothing about the apostles or early Congregation observing Christmas. History shows that it wasn't celebrated until hundreds of years after Yah'shua the Messiah lived on earth, and long after the apostles had passed from the scene.

Even more curious are the surprising circumstances under which Christmas came to be observed, and the many aspects of today's Christmas celebrations-including the date, Dec. 25-that have nothing to do with Yah'shua's birth, but *do* have a lot to do with ancient pre-Christian religions. What does history show us about the origins of the world's most popular holiday? It's quite an eye-opening story!

### **New Catholic Encyclopedia on Christmas:**

The *New Catholic Encyclopedia*, in discussing the unlikelihood of a Dec. 25 date for Yah'shua the Messiah's birth and how that particular date was chosen, gives some insight into the holiday's origins:

"Why, then, were December 25 and January 6 chosen for the celebration of the Messiah's birth? Several theories are offered in explanation. Some actually believed December

25 was the birthday of the Messiah and tried to prove it by arguing from the conception of St. John the Baptist. Assuming, gratuitously, that Zachary was high priest and that the Day of Atonement fell on September 24, John would have been born on June 24 and the Messiah 6 months later, on December 25. *This theory is now considered completely untenable.*"

Continuing in the same source: "L. Duchesne" suggested that the date of Christmas was determined from March 25, the traditional date of the Crucifixion. If He died on March 25, He must also have been conceived on this date and thus have been born 9 months later on December 25. More recently H. Engberding has tried, unsuccessfully, to defend a comparable position.

"According to the hypothesis suggested by H. Usener, developed by B. Botte, and accepted by most scholars today, the birth of the Messiah *was assigned the date of the winter solstice*, because *on this day*, as the sun began its return to the northern skies, *the pagan devotees of Mithra celebrated the birthday of the invincible sun.*

"Christmas originated at a time when the cult of the sun was particularly strong at Rome. This theory finds support in some of the Church Fathers' contrasting the birth of the Messiah and the winter solstice. Though the substitution of Christmas for the pagan festival cannot be proved with certainty, *it remains the most plausible explanation for the dating of Christmas*" (1967, Vol. 3, p. 656, *emphasis added throughout*).

This encyclopedia admits that arguments for a Dec. 25 birth of Yah'shua the Messiah simply aren't credible (see "Biblical Evidence Shows Yah'shua the Messiah Wasn't Born on Dec. 25 - below). It acknowledges that this date was chosen because of popular existing festivities honouring the ancient sun god Mithra and celebrating the winter solstice.

### **Ancient origins of Christmas:**

*Man, Myth & Magic* is an illustrated encyclopedia of mythology and religion. In its article on Christmas, we uncover a treasure trove of research material on this holiday's origins and history.

"Christmas has its origin in *two ancient pagan festivals*, the great *Yule-feast of the Norsemen* and *the Roman Saturnalia*. Extending from Advent, which begins on 30 November or the Sunday nearest to it, to Candlemas Day on 2 February, it was close enough to the winter solstice to acquire many of the associations of the Norse ceremony: the Yule-log, the evergreen decorations in houses and churches, even the Christmas feast itself. *These elements were combined with the Saturnalia of the Romans to provide the basis for the early Christian festival.*

"During the Saturnalia, gifts were made by the wealthy to the poor in honour of the golden age of liberty when Saturn ruled the known world, and slaves were allowed to change places and clothing with their masters. They even elected their own mock king who, for the period of the festival, ruled as a despot. The Saturnalia involved the wildest debauchery, and was a festival worthy of Pan himself.

"Naturally it came under heavy censure from the early Congregation and despite the fact that Yah'shua the Messiah and the saints gradually replaced the pagan deities *it was long considered completely out of character with the Christian ideal*. However, *the festival was far too strongly entrenched in popular favour to be abolished*, and the [Catholic] Church finally granted the necessary recognition, believing that *if Christmas could not be suppressed it should be preserved in honour of the Christian God*" (1995, Vol. 3, p. 418).

Do you grasp what this is telling us? We saw earlier that the Dec. 25 date for Christmas came from ancient pre-Christian festivals. Here we see that the same ancient pagan celebrations honouring other gods were continued, with the Catholic Church simply relabeling the festivities and customs as Christian!

### **Christmas banned for its paganism:**

The *Man, Myth & Magic* encyclopedia reveals more of the strange story of Christmas as it continued after the ancient celebrations were adopted by the Catholic Church:

"Once given a Christian basis the festival became fully established in Europe *with many of its pagan elements undisturbed*. It was only in the 4th century that 25 December was officially decreed to be the birthday of the Messiah, and it was another 500 years before the term Midwinter Feast was abandoned in favour of the word Christmas.

"Even then on the Continent the festival continued to show many features inherited from the Saturnalia. In particular, the Feast of Fools was a wild debauch reminiscent of the pagan past. The Normans when they invaded England in 1066, introduced a Master of Ceremonies into the English Christmas. Known as the Lord of Misrule, his counterpart in Scotland was called the Abbot of Unreason.

". . . The *undisguised pagan element in Christmas* had often provoked criticism from extreme Protestants but the festival was not really affected by their beliefs until the Puritans came to power in the 17th century. Christmas was attacked as 'the old heathens' feasting day to Saturn their god' and carols were forbidden. Finally, 25 December was proclaimed a fast day in 1644. The new rule was enforced by the army, which spent much of its time pulling down the greenery that festive 'pagans' had attached to their doors.

"In Scotland the prohibition was enforced with great rigor. This anti-Christmas attitude spread to Puritan territories in America. The Church established special services for Christmas in Boston during the 1690s, but many civil authorities strongly opposed this move. And it was not until some 150 years later that Christmas first became a legal holiday in the United States, in Alabama in 1836" (pp. 418-419).

Of course, Christmas has long been accepted throughout much of the world. Now it's so popular-not to mention commercially important-that it's almost inconceivable to realize that at one time it was outlawed for its pagan associations and practices!

### **An ancient nativity celebration**

#### **reborn:**

The noted British anthropologist and scholar Sir James Frazer wrote a classic work on ancient myths and religious practices titled *The Golden Bough*. His findings on the ancient origins of our Christmas practices and customs are revealing:

". . . There can be no doubt that the Mithraic religion [*the worship of Mithra, the Persian sun god, popular in the Roman Empire*] proved a formidable rival to Christianity, combining as it did a solemn ritual with aspirations after moral purity and a hope of immortality. Indeed the issue of the conflict between the two faiths appears for a time to have hung in the balance. An instructive relic of the long struggle *is preserved in our festival of Christmas, which the [Catholic] Church seems to have borrowed directly from its heathen rival.*

"In the Julian calendar the twenty-fifth of December was reckoned the winter solstice, and it was regarded as the Nativity of the Sun, because the day begins to lengthen and the power of the sun to increase from that turning-point of the year. The ritual of the nativity, as it

appears to have been celebrated in Syria and Egypt, was remarkable. The celebrants retired into certain inner shrines, from which at midnight they issued with a loud cry, 'The Virgin has brought forth! The light is waxing!'

"The Egyptians even represented the new-born sun by the image of an infant which on his birthday, the winter solstice, they brought forth and exhibited to his worshippers. No doubt the Virgin who thus conceived and bore a son on the twenty-fifth of December was the great Oriental [i.e., Middle Eastern] goddess whom the Semites called the Heavenly Virgin or simply the Heavenly Goddess; in Semitic lands she was a form of Astarte [*also known as Easter*].

"Now Mithra was regularly identified by his worshippers with the Sun, the Unconquered Sun, as they called him; hence his nativity also fell on the twenty-fifth of December. *The Gospels say nothing as to the day of the Messiah's birth, and accordingly the early Congregation did not celebrate it.*

"In time, however, the Christians of Egypt came to regard the sixth of January as the date of the Nativity, and the custom of commemorating the birth of the Saviour on that day gradually spread until by the fourth century it was universally established in the East.

"But at the end of the third or the beginning of the fourth century the Western [Catholic] Church, which had never recognized the sixth of January as the day of the Nativity, adopted the twenty-fifth of December as the true date, and in time its decision was accepted also by the Eastern Church. At Antioch the change was not introduced till about the year 375 A.D." (1993, p. 358).

Sir James Frazer studied the thread of Christmas customs and practices through ancient times and reached an inescapable conclusion: Christmas is but a relic of the worship of the pagan god known by the

Persians and Romans as Mithra or Mithras, relabelled with a Christian name.

### **A pagan festival relabeled:**

Why did the early Catholic Church adopt and relabelled this ancient pagan celebration? Frazer explains:

"What considerations led the ecclesiastical authorities to institute the festival of Christmas? The motives for the innovation are stated with great frankness by a Syrian writer, himself a Christian. 'The reason,' he tells us, 'why the fathers transferred the celebration of the sixth of January to the twenty-fifth of December was this. *It was a custom of the heathen to celebrate on the same twenty-fifth of December the birthday of the Sun, at which they kindled lights in token of festivity.*

"In these solemnities and festivities the Christians also took part. Accordingly when the doctors of the [Catholic] Church perceived that the Christians had a leaning to this festival, they took counsel and resolved that the true Nativity should be solemnized on that day and the festival of the Epiphany on the sixth of January. Accordingly, along with this custom, the practice has prevailed of kindling fires till the sixth.'

*"The heathen origin of Christmas is plainly hinted at, if not tacitly admitted, by Augustine when he exhorts his Christian brethren not to celebrate that solemn day like the heathen on account of the sun, but on account of him who made the sun. In like manner [Pope] Leo the Great rebuked the pestilent belief that Christmas was solemnized because of the birth of the new sun, as it was called, and not because of the nativity of the Messiah.*

"Thus it appears that the Christian [Catholic] Church chose to celebrate the birthday of its Founder on the twenty-fifth of December *in order to transfer the devotion of the heathen from the Sun to him who was*

*called the Sun of Righteousness" (1993, pp. 358-359).*

The truth about Christmas's origins is simple: One of the ancient world's most popular celebrations—a festival that originated in sun worship and honouring pagan gods—was renamed and reborn as traditional Christianity's most popular celebration.

### **What would Yah'shua say?**

Today, would Yah'shua the Messiah recognize the religion that professes to follow Him? Think about it: If you lived in the Holy Land in the time of Yah'shua and you observed Christmas, *you would be alone*, for no true Israelite ever kept Christmas during Yah'shua's life on earth. Further, if you saw Yah'shua or the apostles walking through the narrow passageways of Old Jerusalem or the dusty roads of Judea and you invited them to join in your Christmas celebration, what would they say?

Since Yah'shua the Messiah is the same yesterday, today and forever (*Hebrews 13:8*), and all Scripture is inspired by Yahweh (*2 Timothy 3:16*), they might remind you of what Yahweh's Word says about incorporating pagan customs into your worship:

". . . Do not inquire after their gods, saying, 'How did these nations serve their gods? I also will do likewise.' *You shall not worship Yahweh your God in that way; for every abomination to Yahweh which He hates they have done to their gods . . . Whatever I command you, be careful to observe it; you shall not add to it nor take away from it" (Deuteronomy 12:30-32).*

Yah'shua Himself might repeat to you what He said to the Pharisees, who considered their traditions and customs more important than obeying Yahweh's Word: "These people draw near to Me with their mouth, and honour Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. *And in vain they worship Me, teaching as*

doctrines the commandments of men" (*Matthew 15:8-9*). Christmas, mentioned nowhere in the Bible, is a "commandment" of men.

The apostle Paul might remind you of the words he wrote to Congregation members in Corinth, a city steeped in pagan religious practices: ". . . What fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness? And what accord has the Messiah with Belial? Or what part has a believer with an unbeliever?

"And what agreement has the temple of Yahweh with idols? For you are the temple of the living God . . . Therefore 'Come out from among them and be separate, says Yahweh. Do not touch what is unclean, and I will receive you.' . . . Therefore, having these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of Yahweh" (*2 Corinthians 6:14-17;7:1*).

### **Does it really matter?**

Sadly, for the bulk of modern Christianity these scriptures-which help define what true New Covenant Israelite faith is and is not-mean very little. Most of the 2.5 billion professing Christians on earth today observe Christmas and other extra biblical holidays without ever giving them a second thought.

Most will never take the time to look into their beliefs to learn their true origins, though information such as that found in this article can be found in virtually any modern library or on the Internet. Though the basic facts about the origins of Christmas are spelled out in almost any reputable encyclopedia, most people will not look long and hard at their traditions and customs to see if they square with the Bible.

It's especially ironic to see the articles that appear in many newspapers each year - often written by well-intentioned but misguided

clergymen-who recite the pagan origins of Christmas and its trappings but conclude that it doesn't matter because it's now celebrated for a good cause. We have to wonder how they can reconcile that view with the clear scriptures quoted above.

What about your beliefs? Yah'shua the Messiah says that those who worship Yahweh "must worship [Him] in spirit and truth" (*John 4:24*). Are your beliefs and worship firmly grounded in biblical truth, or in ancient fables?

### **Biblical Evidence Shows Yah'shua the Messiah Wasn't Born on Dec. 25:**

History convincingly shows that Dec. 25 was popularized as the date for Christmas, not because the Messiah was born on that day but because it was already popular in pagan religious celebrations as the birthday of the sun.

But is it possible that Dec. 25 could be the day of the Messiah's birth?

"Lacking any scriptural pointers to Yah'shua's birthday, early Christian teachers suggested dates all over the calendar. Clement. . . picked November 18. Hippolytus . . . figured the Messiah must have been born on a Wednesday . . . An anonymous document[,] believed to have been written in North Africa around A.D. 243, placed Yah'shua's birth on March 28" (*Jeffery Sheler, U.S. News & World Report, "In Search of Christmas," Dec. 23, 1996, p. 58*).

A careful analysis of Scripture, however, clearly indicates that Dec. 25 is an unlikely date for the Messiah's birth. Here are two primary reasons: First, we know that shepherds were in the fields watching their flocks at the time of Yah'shua's birth (*Luke 2:7-8*). Shepherds were not in the fields during December. According to *Celebrations: The Complete Book of American Holidays*, Luke's account "suggests that Yah'shua may have been born in summer or early fall. Since December is cold and rainy in

Judea, it is likely the shepherds would have sought shelter for their flocks at night" (p. 309).

Similarly, *The Interpreter's One-Volume Commentary* says this passage argues "against the birth [of the Messiah] occurring on Dec. 25 since the weather would not have permitted" shepherds watching over their flocks in the fields at night.

Second, Yah'shua's parents came to Bethlehem to register in a Roman census (*Luke 2:1-4*). Such censuses were not taken in winter, when temperatures dropped below freezing and roads were in poor condition. Taking a census under such conditions would have been self-defeating.

Given the difficulties and the desire to bring pagans into Christianity, "the important fact then . . . to get clearly into your head is that the fixing of the date as December 25th was a compromise with paganism" (*William Walsh, The Story of Santa Klaus, 1970, p. 62*).

If Yah'shua the Messiah wasn't born on Dec. 25, does the Bible indicate when He was born? The biblical accounts point to the fall of the year as the most likely time of Yah'shua's birth, based on the conception and birth of John the Baptist.

Since Elizabeth (*John's mother*) was in her sixth month of pregnancy when Yah'shua was conceived (*Luke 1:24-36*), we can determine the approximate time of year Yah'shua was born if we know when John was born. John's father, Zacharias, was a priest serving in the Jerusalem temple during the course of Abijah (*Luke 1:5*).

Historical calculations indicate this course of service corresponded to June 13-19 in that year (*The Companion Bible, 1974, Appendix 179, p. 200*).

It was during this time of temple service that Zacharias learned that he and his wife Elizabeth would have a child (*Luke 1:8-13*).

After he completed his service and traveled home, Elizabeth conceived (*verses 23-24*).

Assuming John's conception took place near the end of June, adding nine months brings us to the end of March as the most likely time for John's birth. Adding another six months (*the difference in ages between John and Yah'shua*) brings us to the end of September as the likely time of Yah'shua's birth.

## Yahweh's Holy Days:

Christians generally, accept and celebrate the "Good Friday" - "Easter Sunday" concept of the Messiah's crucifixion and resurrection. Was it really a Friday - Sunday event? What about 3 days and 3 nights? Does it Matter to Yahweh?

The Bible says "prove all things", and just as every other part of the Bible is alive and meaningful in our daily lives, so is the phrase "prove all things". The Bible provides all of the necessary resources to prove all things, to help motivate us to search the Scriptures diligently, and to meditate on them. In other words Yahweh really does want us to know the truth, not to simply "accept" what is palmed off as the truth by others - even (*and especially*) so-called "religious experts" and the "tradition of men" promoters, that call themselves "Christians"!

Yah'shua was asked point blank by the doubting Pharisees for a sign - proof of his Messiahship. Yah'shua answered, "An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah: for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of Man be THREE DAYS AND THREE NIGHTS in the heart of the earth". (*Matt. 12:39-40*)

Yah'shua's statement has tremendous import - the significance is overwhelming. He declared that THE ONLY SIGN He would give to prove He was the Messiah was that He would spend "three days and three nights in the heart of the earth". The Pharisees demanded proof - Yah'shua offered but one evidence, which was not the fact of the resurrection itself, but the length of time He would remain in His grave, before being resurrected. Yah'shua staked His claim to being your Saviour and mine upon remaining exactly three days and three nights in a tomb. If He failed in this sign, He must be rejected as

an impostor! No wonder Satan has caused unbelievers to scoff at the story of Jonah and the "whale" and set up a tradition that denies Yah'shua as the Messiah.

This one and only supernatural proof ever given by Yah'shua for His Messiahship greatly bothers "traditional" Christians. Any attempt to explain away this sole proof for the Messiah's divinity - deity - are ludicrous in the extreme, but explain them away they must, or their "sacred Good Friday - Easter Sunday" tradition collapses. Yah'shua does not lie - He said clearly there shall be no other sign for this proof, "but the sign of the prophet Jonah". And that's all that is really needed, because when read into context with all other scripture on the matter, it convincingly "proves all things" as it should.

Some "experts", according to various encyclopedia etc, imply that Yah'shua was only in the tomb half as long as He expected - or that three days and three nights really only means three "periods" of day or night - or that being placed in the tomb "Friday" at sunset and rising "Sunday" morning, is 2 nights and 1 day, but that's what Yah'shua really meant! The Bible proves that Yah'shua knew exactly how long a "day" was and exactly how long He would spend in the grave. In John 11:9-10, Yah'shua said; "are there not 12 hours in a day - but if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth", and in Genesis 1:4, Yahweh, "divided the light from the darkness, and Yahweh called the light day and the darkness he called night. And the evening [darkness] and the morning [light] were the first day...and the evening and the morning were the second day...and the evening and the morning were the third day". The Bible defines the time required to fulfill "the third day". It ought to be conclusive - to anyone who actually READS the Bible!

How then do so-called wise and prudent "theologians" know that Yah'shua was crucified

on "Good Friday" and rose "Easter Sunday"? They don't! Because it is not true. It is merely tradition, which we have been taught from childhood and excused throughout our adult years as something that's okay and really doesn't make any difference as long as we celebrate the "event" not the date. What poor Israelites we are when we have to "excuse" our Christian traditions. Yah'shua clearly and simply warned against "making the word of Yahweh of no effect through your traditions" in Mark 7:13.

Friday to Sunday just does not make 3 days. 3 days must be important or Yah'shua would not have said so. In Mark 8:31, Yah'shua, "began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things ...and be killed, and AFTER 3 days rise again". And in Mark 9:31; "they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day". And in Matthew 27:63 "After 3 days I will rise again". And in John 2:19-21; "destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up".

The Crucifixion day was called "the preparation" or day before the Sabbath. This day ended at sunset according to Bible reckoning - Lev. 23:32. Yah'shua cried out soon after the "ninth hour" or 3 o'clock in the afternoon on the preparation day - Matt. 27:46-50, Mark 15:34-37, Luke 23:44-46. Yah'shua was laid in the tomb just before this same day ended - just before sunset - Matt. 27:57-60. And John 19:42 adds, "There laid they Yah'shua Therefore because of the Jew's preparation day". The Jewish custom was all dead bodies had to be buried before the beginning of a new day, and, according to the Bible He was - just barely before sunset as the scriptures prove.

This leads to an intriguing conclusion. Three full nights and three full days after that preparation day sunset, brings us to sunset. Which means the resurrection occurred at

sunset not sunrise! If Yah'shua rose at any other time of day He could not have been 3 days and 3 nights in the grave and He would have failed to prove by the sign He gave, His Messiahship. The "preparation day" for the Sabbath is defined by John 19:14,31: "...for that Sabbath day was a high day...It was the preparation of the Passover".

Any Jew can tell you what a "high day" is. There are seven each year - all called Sabbaths, and each year they fall on different days of the week. (*Leviticus 16:31, 23:24, 26-32 and 39 refers to all these annual holy days as Sabbaths.*) Matthew 26:2; "Ye know that after 2 days is the feast of the Passover and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified".

All Bible texts say Yah'shua was crucified on the Passover. The Bible in Num. 28:16-17, defines the Passover; "And in the 14th day of the first month [*called Abib*] is the Passover of Yahweh. And in the fifteenth day of the month is the Feast". The Hebrew calendar shows that in A.D. 31, the year Yah'shua was crucified, the 14th of ABIB which was the Passover, which is always the preparation day for the annual high day Sabbath, was on Wednesday, and the High Sabbath was on Thursday.

There were 2 Sabbaths that week - the annual high Sabbath, and the weekly Sabbath which was the day of the resurrection. (*Saturday using standard weekly Roman traditions.*)

Yah'shua rose from the dead as He said He would in John 2:19, 3 days and 3 nights later, at or near sunset on the 2nd Sabbath of that week - to bring light into darkness. It was Saturday night, not Sunday morning. I Corinthians 15:3-4; "For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that the Messiah died for our sins according to the scriptures; and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day

according to the scriptures". If we look at a calendar for that year, it is quite easy to figure out that the preparation day; the crucifixion day was on Wednesday, and that 3 days and 3 nights after that, was near sunset on Saturday.

It is also significant that as Daniel's prophecy in 9:24-27 says, Yah'shua was to be cut off "in the midst of the week". This prophecy uses the day for a year symbolism so that the "70 weeks" became a literal 7 years, with the Messiah being "cut off in the midst", (*after only 3 1/2 years of teaching*) and also in the middle day of a literal week. There is one more final proof in the Bible. In Mark 16:1, Mary Magdalene and her companions did not buy their spices to anoint Yah'shua until after the Sabbath was past. They could not prepare them until after this, yet after preparing the spices they rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment (*Luke 23:56*).

These scriptures seem to contradict themselves unless you accept the only possible explanation: After the annual high Sabbath, which was Thursday, the women purchased and prepared the spices on Friday, and then they rested on Saturday - the weekly Sabbath.

The fact is that Yah'shua was crucified on a Wednesday (*14th of ABIB, A.D. 31*) and was resurrected on a Saturday (*17th of ABIB, A.D. 31*), placed in the tomb near sunset, and rose out of the tomb near sunset. "Good Friday" and "Easter Sunday" are pagan myths; traditions of men, adopted by the early Roman Christian church and accepted as "okay" by almost all Christians today.

Centuries' old documents exist that evidence the Wednesday crucifixion and Saturday resurrection. A document entitled the "*Didascalia Apostolorum*", dating from around the year 200 A.D., mentions the last Passover Supper of Yah'shua and His disciples was on a Tuesday evening. It should be noted that the

timing mentioned in the document also corresponds with the Biblical method of reckoning the week as starting with Sunday as the first day with the days beginning at sunset. The document states: "*For when we had eaten the Passover on the third day of the week at even [Tuesday evening], we went forth to the Mount of Olives; and in the night they seized our Lord Yah'shua. And the next day, which was the fourth [day] of the week [Wednesday], He remained in the house [arrest] of Caiaphas the high priest*". Clearly He was crucified that following Passover day of Wednesday.

"Easter", from the ancient Assyrian and Babylonian goddess "Ishtar" is from old Teutonic mythology where it is known as "Ostern". The Phoenician name of the goddess was "Astarte", consort of Baal, the sun god, whose worship is strictly forbidden and denounced by the Almighty Yahweh of the Bible as the most abominable of all pagan idolatry. Yahweh condemned Solomon and took away the kingdom of Israel from his son for offering sacrifice to Molech - also Baal, the sun god.

Yahweh commanded His people to observe Passover forever in Exodus 12:24. This was commanded to the Israelites prior to the Old Covenant Law of Moses, when they were still in Egypt. Yah'shua did not abolish Passover, He merely changed the symbolism used from the Passover lamb whose blood was shed, to unleavened bread and wine.

It is now a memorial to the Messiah's sacrifice, reaffirming year after year on its anniversary, the 14th of ABIB thru 17th of ABIB, the TRUE Israelite's faith in the broken body of the Messiah for our physical healing, and His blood for the remission of sins.

Satan has deceived all western nations into discarding Yahweh's forever ordained festival to commemorate the death of the true Saviour of our sins, and substituting it with the

pagan counterfeit Easter! Scores of millions are deceived into observing this heathen idolatry under the delusion they are somehow honouring the Messiah, the Son of Yahweh. Like blind sheep they observe the traditions and customs of men. Yahweh says in Acts 17:30; "the times of this ignorance Yahweh winked at; but now commandeth all men everywhere to repent". The Bible accurately predicts this in II Thess. 2:7; "The mystery of iniquity doth already work". And that was only 20 years after the Congregation began!

Yah'shua kept the Passover, Yah'shua taught the Passover, and Paul said in I Cor. 5:7-8; "The Messiah our Passover is sacrificed for us; Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven... but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth". Even Yah'shua commanded; "this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me". We are to do it in remembrance of Yah'shua's death as a memorial. The Apostles all kept the Passover and documented it long after the Messiah had risen.

Does Yahweh care? Can we use ancient pagan festivals to honour the Messiah? Let Yahweh, as He has in the Bible answer the questions.

Deut. 12:30-31: "Take heed...that thou enquire not after their gods, saying; 'How did these nations serve their gods? even so will I do likewise'. Thou shalt not do so unto Yahweh thy God; for every abomination to Yahweh, which he hateth, they have done unto their gods".

In other words, Yahweh calls these customs abominations because they commemorate false ideas. Can you worship the Messiah or Yahweh in vain? The very words of the Messiah: "Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of Yahweh, ye hold the tradition

of men...Ye reject the commandment of Yahweh that ye may keep your own tradition" (*Mark 7:7-9*).

Assembling for worship of Yahweh under the guise of "Good Friday" and "Easter Sunday" is nothing but the tradition of men - and pagan tradition which Yahweh hates at that. Those who do so, disobey Yahweh's commandment to "worship Him in spirit and in truth" and such worship is utterly in vain - Yah'shua said so!

Yah'shua's New Covenant did not in any way, imply to do away with the Old Covenant Commandments. Yah'shua reassured that we all should keep the Commandments - all of them. Yah'shua did do away with all of the old rituals and traditions in favour of faith - but all of the commandments remain. Yahweh commanded His people to keep His 7 annual high Sabbaths forever. Years later He gave His people (*us*) the 10 commandments, one of which reaffirmed the keeping of the Sabbath; the weekly Sabbath and the annual high Sabbaths, including the Passover - not Easter.

Christmas: The words "Christ Mass" gravitated into the Congregation in the fourth century in the form of ordinances from the Roman Catholic church, copying former pagan rituals under the new name. The Catholic Encyclopedia says: "Christmas was not among the earliest festivals of the Congregation...the first evidence of the feast is from Egypt. Pagan customs, ancient, centering around the January calends gravitated to Christmas". The Roman church ordered it to be celebrated as an official Christian festival in the fifth century.

The exact date of Yah'shua's birth is unknown, as all authorities acknowledge. Though there are many scriptural inferences suggesting sometime in the early fall, probably September. Encyclopedia Britannica says: "certain Latins may have transferred the birthday of the unconquered Sun from January

6th to December 25th which was then a Mithraic feast. This feast of Sun worship and idolatry is what the Latins [*Romans*] claimed was invented by disciples of Cerinthus".

Today, we have gotten Christmas from the Romans as set out above. They got it from paganism, originating in ancient Egypt in the days of King Osiris and Queen Isis, about 3000 B.C. After the death of King Osiris, his wife propagated the evil doctrine of the survival of Osiris as a spirit being. She claimed a full grown ever-green tree sprang up overnight from a dead tree stump, which to her symbolized the springing forth of new life from the dead Osiris. On each anniversary of his birth, which was December 25th, she claimed that the dead king would visit the evergreen tree and leave gifts on it. Yahweh warns us in Jeremiah 10:2-5; "Do not learn the way of the Gentiles; For the customs of the people are futile; For one cuts a tree from the forest...they decorate it with silver and gold; they fasten it...so that it will not topple".

The queen, through her scheming, became "Queen of heaven" and Osiris became "divine son of Heaven". Through the generations Osiris became known as the "divine sun" and later the SUN GOD of Baal. The Phoenicians referred to them as the "Mother and Child" (Isis and Osiris) as chief objects of worship. The worship of this "Mother and Child" as Baal the sun god spread to many countries and languages.

The Roman Catholic church carried many of these old pagan customs and beliefs along with them into the new "Christianity", as the people were reluctant to give up their pagan traditions. Even the song "Silent Night, Holy Night" with its "Mother and Child" theme, stems in part from this era. Yahweh commands his faithful ministers; "Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and show my people their transgression"!

Among ancient pagans mistletoe was used at this festival of the winter solstice because it was considered sacred to the sun, due to its "miraculous" healing power. The pagan custom of kissing under the mistletoe was an early step in the night of revelry and drunken debauchery, celebrating the death of the "old sun" and the birth of the new at the winter solstice (*shortest day of the year*).

Holly berries were also considered sacred to the sun god. The yule log is in reality the "sun log". "Yule" means "wheel" - the pagan symbol for the sun. Even the lighting of candles and fires as a Christian ceremony is merely the continuation of the pagan custom of encouraging the waning sun god as he reached the lowest place in the southern sky.

St. Nicholas, a Roman Catholic Bishop was a legend for his surreptitious bestowal of dowries on the three daughters of an impoverished citizen, secretly on the "Eve of St. Nicholas" December 6th, subsequently transferred to Christmas day as "Santa Claus", the English phonetic sounding equivalent to "Saint Nicholas". From the Adam Clarke Commentary, volume 5, "The people of the east never approached the presence of kings and great personages without a present in hand. The custom is often noticed in the Old Covenant and still prevails in the east...as a continuance of the ancient pagan customs". The custom of giving presents invariably retards Yahweh's work, often setting it back at the Christmas season every year, rather than honouring the Messiah. If you want to honour someone, would you lavishly buy gifts for everyone else, trading back and forth, while not providing any gift for the honoured one?

But even though the exact date of Yah'shua's birth is unknown, should we not select some date and celebrate His birthday? Absolutely NOT! The celebration of birthdays is another pagan custom celebrated by sinners!

The Catholic Encyclopedia: "In the scriptures, no one is recorded to have kept a feast or held a great banquet on his birthday. It is only sinners like Pharaoh and Herod who make great rejoicings over the day in which they were born into this world".

Many modern Christians still reason that, even though Christmas and all its trimmings are pagan customs, honouring the false sun-god, we don't observe it to honour the false god - we observe it to honour the Messiah.

But Yahweh answers in His Word; "Take heed to thyself that thou be not snared by following them *[the pagans in their customs]*...that thou enquire not after their gods. Saying, 'how did these nations serve their gods? Even so I will do likewise', thou shalt not do so unto Yahweh thy God: for every abomination to Yahweh, which he hateth, have they done unto their gods" (*Deut. 12:30-31*). And Yah'shua says plainly this form of worship is utterly in vain (*serves no purpose*).

## **Passover: Celebrating the Events & Chronology of the Crucifixion & Resurrection:**

### **i) Summary Chronology of the Messiah's Crucifixion and Resurrection**

- 1. The Sign of the Prophet Jonah**
- 2. The Passover Pilgrimage**
- 3. First Century Hebrew Traditions**
- 4. The Time of the Resurrection**
- 5. Two Key Days**
- 6. Chronology: Friday through Sunday**
- 7. Chronology: Monday and Tuesday**
- 8. Chronology: Wednesday and Thursday**
- 9. Chronology: Friday through Sunday**

**i. Tuesday:** Yah'shua the Messiah ate an early-evening Passover meal with His disciples at the beginning of Nisan 14, Hebrew reckoning, and instituted the New Covenant symbols (*Matthew 26:26-28*). Yah'shua was then betrayed by Judas, arrested and during the night brought before the high priest.

**Wednesday:** Yah'shua the Messiah was crucified and died around 3 p.m. (*Matthew 27:46-50*). This was the preparation day for the annual, not weekly, Sabbath, which began that evening (*Mark 15:42; Luke 23:54; John 19:31*). The Messiah's body was placed in the tomb at twilight (*Matthew 27:57-60*).

**Thursday:** This was the high-day Sabbath, the first day of Unleavened Bread (*John 19:31; Leviticus 23:4-7*). It is described as the day after the Day of Preparation (*Matthew 27:62*).

**Friday:** The high-day Sabbath now past, the women bought and prepared spices for anointing Yah'shua's body before resting on the weekly Sabbath day, which began at sunset (*end of Friday*) (*Mark 16:1; Luke 23:56*).

**Saturday:** The women rested on the weekly Sabbath, according to the Fourth Commandment (*Luke 23:56; Exodus 20:8-11*), which included what we typically think of as Friday evening in Roman terms. Yah'shua rose around sunset, exactly three days and three nights (*72 hours*) after burial, fulfilling the sign of Jonah and authenticating His Messiahship.

**Sunday:** The women brought the prepared spices early in the morning while it was still dark (*Luke 24:1; John 20:1*). Yah'shua had already risen (*Matthew 28:1-6; Mark 16:2-6; Luke 24:2-3; John 20:1*). He did not rise on Sunday morning, but at sunset the day before.

### **1. The Sign of the Prophet Jonah**

There are several preliminary details that we need to consider before we actually begin to set forth the chronology of the crucifixion week. Although they may seem unrelated on the surface of things, as the study progresses, we will see their importance and relevance.

#### **The Prophecy of Jonah**

"Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth." Matt. 12:38-40.

Repeatedly the scribes and the Pharisees refused to accept the Messianic claims of Yah'shau. His words were not good enough for them. They wanted something more. They demanded an unmistakable sign. The Hebrews walked by sight, not by faith.

Yah'shau responded to their demand by quoting Jonah 1:17, which says that the

prophet Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the great fish. Then He clearly applied this passage to His own coming experience, saying that He would be "three days and three nights in the heart of the earth." Yah'shau said that three full days would pass between the time of His entombment and the hour He arose from the dead. The Hebrews did not question the literalness of Jonah's three days and three nights in the great fish, and there is no reason to believe that our Messiah did not mean that His own entombment would not be literally fulfilled.

### **The Typology of Jonah**

Jonah's captivity in the great fish and his subsequent deliverance is a type of the death and resurrection of Yah'shua . The death and bodily resurrection of the Messiah after three days in the tomb is the sign that Yahweh is now using to authenticate the Gospel message. That's why the Apostle Paul wrote, "For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that the Messiah died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures." I Cor. 15:3-4.

Jonah was the only Old Covenant prophet who was ever sent away from Israel as a missionary to the Gentiles. He was sent to that great and wicked city of Nineveh. After passing through a death-illustrating experience and being restored to his commission, Yahweh used him to bring repentance to the Ninevites.

At the time our Messiah gave the sign of Jonah to the Hebrews, He was about to depart from Israel. The religious leaders had rejected His Messianic claims and had persuaded most of the people to do the same. But before the Gospel of our Messiah would be carried to the Gentiles, it was necessary for Him to be crucified, buried for three days and three nights as Jonah was and resurrected to newness of life and commission.

The importance of the sign of Jonah is that if Yah'shau did not spend exactly three days and three nights in the tomb, then the Gospel message is not being authenticated; Yah'shua's words are in error and the Bible is not true. No wonder Satan is so eager to perpetuate the "Good Friday" crucifixion and the Sunday morning resurrection. For in so doing he is attacking Yah'shua, the Bible, and the Gospel at the same time.

### **2. The Passover Pilgrimage**

The appropriate point to begin our detailed consideration of the crucifixion week is with an incident that occurred at Jericho. The healing of blind Bartimaeus stands at the beginning of the end of our Messiah's life on this earth.

#### **The Jericho Road**

"And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people, blind Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, sat by the highway side begging. And when he heard that it was Yah'shua of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Yah'shua, thou son of David, have mercy on me. And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercy on me." Mark 10:46-48.

There is a significant point in Mark's record that we should not overlook. Bartimaeus called Yah'shua the "Son of David." This is the only place in Mark's Gospel that this title appears. Elsewhere Yah'shua is referred to as the "Son of man." But Bartimaeus called Him the "Son of David," and he was healed of his blindness.

The spiritual blindness of the nation Israel, Yahweh's chosen people, is pictured by Bartimaeus' physical blindness. The Son of David, the Anointed One of Yahweh, had come to give sight to that spiritually blind nation. And in Jericho the Son of David once more showed

His gracious power as Bartimaeus, who is a type of the remnant that will someday recognize Yah'shua of Nazareth as David's greater Son, had his vision restored.

The Passover Feast was, by far, the greatest crowd gatherer of all Israel's annual feasts. The pilgrims were young and old. The aged who were unable to walk the entire distance rode upon the backs of donkeys. The crowded road and the plodding asses made for slow progress along the road.

It is approximately 17 miles from Jericho to Bethany. Seventeen miles seems quite a short distance to us today because of our modern roads and means of transportation. But to the pilgrims of Yah'shua's day the distance was not short and the journey was not a minor undertaking. The road was wild, rough and a continuous upgrade.

### **The Outskirts of Jerusalem**

When the pilgrim crowds reached the vicinity of Jerusalem, it was necessary that a camp be made before the sun went down and darkness settled over the land. Historical records indicate that on the eve of the Passover there were vast numbers of pilgrims in and around Jerusalem. Some estimates run as high as a million. The city of Jerusalem certainly did not have accommodations to handle so many people; therefore, it was necessary for the people to camp wherever they could find room. The campsites had to be prepared and the booths (or tents) erected, which served as temporary shelters, after the destination was reached. It would frequently require several hours for a family to find a suitable campsite and to get properly settled down for the night.

The purpose in considering the details of the journey from Jericho to Jerusalem is to help us understand today that it would have been next to impossible for a group of traveling pilgrims to leave Jericho in the morning and

arrive in Jerusalem on the same day. It took a minimum of two days to make the trip. And this fact has an important bearing on establishing the day of the week as well as the day of the month on which our Messiah's last journey to Jerusalem was made.

### **Messianic Expectations**

When our Messiah began His journey to Jerusalem to keep the Feast of the Passover as the true Paschal Lamb, a relatively small company followed Him. By the time He reached Jericho, the band of disciples had been joined by other religious pilgrims who also were headed for Jerusalem to keep the Passover. Having seen and heard of the miracles performed by Yah'shua, many in this assorted company expected Yah'shua to openly declare Himself as the Messiah when He reached Jerusalem. They anticipated the Roman yoke being thrown off by a force of arms, aided by a display of supernatural miracles from the Messiah Himself. Thus by the time the group reached Jerusalem, Messianic hopes were running high, and the stage was set for a triumphal march into the city.

### **Entry into Jerusalem "On the Next Day"**

The Apostle John tells us of our Messiah's arrival at Bethany after His long journey along the Jericho road. Leaving most of the traveling party at the outskirts of Jerusalem, Yah'shua and His disciples went to nearby Bethany.

"Then Yah'shua six days before the Passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him." John 12:1-2.

The last eight miles on the Jericho road were the steepest part of the uphill grade; so

we can be sure that our Messiah and His party were quite weary when they arrived at the home of Mary, Martha and Lazarus. They certainly must have appreciated the supper that was prepared as a token of their great love.

Notice, however, John 12:12-15, which reads: "On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Yah'shua was coming to Jerusalem, Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of Yah'shua. And Yah'shua, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written, Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt."

The basis for what is known by traditional "Christians" as Palm Sunday is found in this passage. It is generally, but erroneously taught that the triumphal entry occurred on the first day of the week, and that by observing Palm Sunday, Christians are commemorating the first significant event in the crucifixion week.

Verse 12 definitely states that the so-called triumphal entry took place "on the next day", after our Messiah's arrival in Bethany. If this occurred on the first day of the week, then the preceding day was the seventh day of the week. In other words, Yah'shua completed His journey from Jericho on the Sabbath.

One thing that was deeply ingrained in the consciences of the Hebrews of that day was the Sabbath. The Rabbinical laws of the Sabbath had been worked out to the minutest detail, one of which pertained to the "Sabbath day's journey."

The Sabbath day's journey is mentioned only in Acts 1:12, where we read, "Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a Sabbath day's journey." Davis' Dictionary of the

Bible states that the distance between Mount Olivet and Jerusalem, measured as the crow flies, is about 2,250 feet. The regulation of the Sabbath day's journey had its origin in Yahweh's injunction found in Exodus 16:29, which states that the Israelites on the wilderness journey were not to leave the boundaries of the camp on the Sabbath day. These were reckoned to be about 2,000 cubits, or just under 3/4 of a mile.

We know from secular records that some flexibility was allowed in the length of the Sabbath day's journey to permit Passover pilgrims encamped on the outskirts to come into Jerusalem. The walls of Jerusalem were considered as extended to encircle the encamped pilgrims during this season. The man-made regulation always permitted travel to any point within the city wall, since the Sabbath day's journey was considered to end at the city gate.

Bethany is fifteen furlongs (*about 1 7/8 miles*) from the actual walls of Jerusalem. John 11:18. Though this would have been slightly longer than a Sabbath day's journey, travel from Bethany to Jerusalem was permissible on the Sabbath, due to the "extended walls" of the Passover season.

But, a long eight-mile journey toward Jerusalem along the Jericho road by Yah'shua and all who were with Him would have been a clear violation of the Sabbath laws as most Hebrews understood them. Furthermore, the supper that Martha and Mary had prepared for Yah'shua on the day of His journey (*if that day was a Sabbath day*) would have placed them in violation of the Sabbath. The penalty for Sabbath violation was stoning to death by command of the religious authorities.

These facts lead to only one valid conclusion: the journey from Jericho was not made on a Sabbath day. Therefore, the triumphal entry could not have been made on a

Sunday!

### **3. First Century Hebrew Traditions**

The observance of the Passover recalls Israel's deliverance from Egypt and the beginning of her national life. But in a much deeper sense, the Passover foreshadowed the sacrifice of that true, spotless Lamb of Yahweh, slain on Calvary's tree for the sins of the world.

#### **The Law of the Passover**

Yahweh's law of the Passover is considered in three books of the Pentateuch: Exodus, Leviticus and Numbers. Three specific days are mentioned in conjunction with the observance of the Passover Feast. The first date of importance is the tenth of Nisan, the first month of the Hebrew year, which in Moses' day was known as Abib. This is the date on which the Israelites were to select their Paschal lamb. "In the tenth day of this month they shall take to them every man a lamb." Exodus 12:3.

The next important date is the fourteenth of Nisan. Exodus 12:6 has these instructions: "And ye shall keep it (*that is, the Paschal Lamb*) up until the fourteenth day of the same month: and the whole assembly of the congregation of Israel shall kill it in the evening."

The Passover lamb was to be slain on the fourteenth. However, God's instructions permitted some tolerance as to the exact time of the slaying of the sacrifice, and this is extremely significant. The literal translation of the last clause of verse 6 is "between the evenings," not "in the evening."

According to Hebrew reckoning, a day begins at sunset. So the fourteenth of Nisan begins at 6 PM on the day we would call the thirteenth. And the fourteenth ends and the fifteenth begins at 6 PM on the following day, the day we would consider as the fourteenth. Therefore, the Passover extends from sunset on the thirteenth to sunset on the fourteenth as Romans reckon it.

In the observance of the first Passover, Yahweh specifically instructed Moses that the lamb was to be slain in the evening of the fourteenth, which was the evening that ushered in the day of the fourteenth. The Hebrew custom down through the centuries, therefore, was to slay the lamb early in the evening of the fourteenth of Nisan (*which actually was done late in the afternoon of the thirteenth*) and partake of it at the Paschal supper, which was on the evening preceding the day of Nisan fourteenth. Thus Yahweh made provision for His Son, the true Paschal Lamb, to partake of the symbolic Paschal lamb on the evening of the fourteenth and still offer Himself as an acceptable sacrifice before the setting of the sun on the day of Nisan fourteenth. Yahweh's way is perfect just as His Word is perfect.

Immediately upon the setting of the sun upon the day of the fourteenth of Nisan, the fifteenth of Nisan began. And according to Leviticus 23:6-7 and Numbers 28:18, this was the day that initiated the Feast of Unleavened Bread. In it, the assembly of Israel was to "have an holy convocation" and to "do no servile work therein." Don't miss this point, the day of Nisan fifteenth was always a "High" Sabbath day! It made absolutely no difference on which day of the week it fell.

The nation of Israel was given a number of Sabbath days, among which the seventh-day Sabbath was only one type. The other Sabbaths, such as the fifteenth of Nisan, were considered to be "high" days; that is, they had even more significance than the regular seventh-day Sabbaths.

One of the main reasons the Christian church holds to a Friday crucifixion is because the crucifixion day was followed by a Sabbath. Early church leaders jumped to the conclusion that this was a seventh-day Sabbath without carefully consulting the Scriptures. The Old Covenant clearly teaches that every Nisan

fifteenth was a Sabbath--and a high Sabbath at that. But John 19:31 tells us "that Sabbath day was an high day." Therefore, the day of our Messiah's crucifixion did not necessarily occur on Friday. It could have occurred on any day of the week.

### **Modifications to the Passover**

When Israel was finally settled in Palestine, there was a modification in the manner the Passover Feast was observed. For instance, in our Messiah's day the Passover was no longer eaten in a standing position. Instead, it was eaten in a reclining position just as the regular meals.

In the days of our Messiah, it had become customary to kill the Passover lambs on the afternoon of the thirteenth of Nisan rather than on the evening of the fourteenth. Josephus, the Hebrew historian, tells us that there were sometimes as many as 250,000 lambs slain on the occasion of the Passover. It was necessary that the lambs be slain by the priests in the temple. We can imagine the momentous traffic jam that resulted from this and we can well appreciate that several hours of time would be required to sacrifice all these lambs.

So the killing of the Passover lambs began about two or three o'clock in the afternoon of Nisan thirteenth. Then by five to five-thirty in the afternoon, all the lambs were slain. Josephus confirms that in the years just before the time of Titus's destruction of Jerusalem, in 70 A.D., it was customary to slay the lambs between the ninth and eleventh hour (that is, between 3:00 PM and 5:00 PM).

At sundown on the thirteenth of Nisan, the fourteenth began. The lamb had been prepared, and when the roasting was complete, the participants gathered around the table and ate the Passover supper. Yahweh's law of the Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread calls the fourteenth of the month Nisan

"the Passover." However, by the time of our Messiah, the Hebrews had come to call this day the "Preparation day." To them the major feast day, the "high" day, was the fifteenth of Nisan, the day the Scriptures designate as the first day of Unleavened Bread.

So at the time of our Messiah's crucifixion, the fourteenth of Nisan, the day on which the Passover lamb was eaten, was called the day of "Preparation." The following day (*the high Sabbath day, the fifteenth of Nisan*) was called the "Passover day," although this was actually the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

This modification is confirmed by Matthew 26:17-19. Notice particularly verse 17: "Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread the disciples came to Yah'shua, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the Passover?" If this passage were to be interpreted in strict accordance with the law of Moses, it would not make any sense.

"The Passover" was the fourteenth of Nisan and the Paschal lamb was to be eaten on that day. "The first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread" was Nisan the fifteenth. So we can conclude that the terms associated with the observance of the Passover Feast which appear in the New Covenant are used in accordance with popular usage in that day and not strictly according to the definition of the law of Moses.

### **4. The Time of the Resurrection**

In developing the chronology of the crucifixion week, there is one event that we can definitely associate with a particular day of the week. That event is the resurrection of our Messiah .

### **He is Risen**

"And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him. And very

early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulcher at the rising of the sun. And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulcher? And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great. And entering into the sepulcher, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted. And he said unto them, Be not affrighted: Ye seek Yah'shua of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him." Mark 16:1-6.

This passage records the discovery of our Messiah's resurrection and tells us the time of this discovery. More literally translated, this passage reads as follows: "And the Sabbath being past, Mary Magdalene, Mary the (*mother*) of James, and Salome brought aromatics, that having come, they might anoint him. And very early on the first (day) of the week, they come upon the tomb, the sun having risen." This account shows that this visit came very early on a Sunday morning.

The same incident is recorded in Luke 24:1-3. "Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulcher, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them. And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulcher. And they entered in, and found not the body of Yah'shua." So Luke also recorded that the discovery of the empty tomb came very early on a Sunday morning.

"The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulcher, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulcher. Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Yah'shua loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away Yah'shua out of

the sepulcher, and we know not where they have laid him." John 20:1-2.

Note carefully that none of these Gospel reports describe our Messiah's resurrection. These passages tell of the discovery of the empty tomb when the women came to anoint Yah'shua's body very early on a Sunday morning. The resurrection had already taken place sometime prior to this event. The idea that the resurrection took place at sunrise on a Sunday morning is not Scriptural. All three Gospels positively state that as early as the time was--even while it was "yet dark"--Yah'shua had already risen.

### **The Sabbath is Ended**

We could know for certain when the resurrection of our Messiah happened if we had just one definite witness to the exact hour of its occurrence. Well, Yahweh has seen fit to give us this witness in the Gospel of Matthew.

"In the end of the Sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulcher. And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of Yah'shua descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it." Matt. 28:1-2.

Matthew described an event that seems to have occurred very closely in conjunction with the actual resurrection. This is the earthquake that took place when the angel descended from heaven to roll back the stone from the door of the tomb.

Matthew's emphasis here is upon the descent of the angel and the accompanying earthquake. The time of this event is set by the opening phrase "in the end of the Sabbath." This designates a specific time of the day.

The word translated "began to dawn" in Matthew 28:1 is the Greek "epiphoskousa," which literally means "the coming of the light." Dr. H. A. Griesemer, a Greek scholar, has

made the following remarks concerning this word. "The word 'dawn' is very misleading. We speak of the dawn as the opening of the day, the light that comes with the rising of the sun. We always associate the dawn with the sunlight, but the Greek word here is 'epiphoskousa,' which means the shining of the sun or the moon.

You will observe that the Passover feast always occurred at the time of the full moon. Just as the sun was setting, the moon would be rising."

Dr. George R. Berry in his Interlinear Greek-English New Covenant translates the opening part of Matthew 28:1 as follows. "Now late on the Sabbath, as it was getting dusk toward the first day of the week..."

We can establish the time referred to by Matthew as the time of the setting of the sun on the seventh-day Sabbath. So, just as the sun had set at the beginning of the Hebrew first day of the week (*remember, the Hebrew day always began with the evening at the setting of the sun*); there was an earthquake, the angel of Yah'shua descended, and he rolled away the stone and sat on it.

The resurrection occurred at the "end of the Sabbath," just as the first day of the week was beginning, which according to Hebrew reckoning would have been sunset on Saturday, or around 6 PM.

Certainly the stone would not have been rolled away from the tomb before our Messiah arose from the dead. Furthermore, Matthew 27:51 tells us that there was an earthquake at the time of our Messiah's death.

So it seems reasonable that the second earthquake would have occurred at the moment of our Messiah's resurrection. Therefore, Matthew supplies the definite witness to our Messiah's resurrection at sunset on Saturday afternoon, 72 hours after His burial.

## Prophetic Requirements

The requirements of prophecy also help us to pinpoint some of the key events of the crucifixion week. Yah'shua Himself prophesied that He would be resurrected on the third day. Matthew 16:21 says, "From that time forth began Yah'shua to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day."

According to Hebrew reckoning, the setting of the sun marked the end of the day, but that point in time, sunset, was also a part of that day. However, sunset also marked the beginning of the next day and was part of that day also! So the Messiah was also resurrected on the first day of the week, without this making any conflict with Scripture.

There is another prophecy that required Yah'shua to be resurrected on the first day of the week. The Apostle Paul wrote in I Corinthians 15:20, "But now is the Messiah risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept." In His resurrection fulfilled the law of the firstfruits. Leviticus 23:9-11 contains Yahweh's instructions concerning this law: "And Yahweh spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye be come into the land which I give unto you, and shall reap the harvest thereof, then ye shall bring a sheaf of the firstfruits of your harvest unto the priest: And he shall wave the sheaf before Yahweh, to be accepted for you: on the morrow after the Sabbath this priest shall wave it." The offering of the firstfruits, which typified the resurrection of our Messiah, was to be waved before Yahweh "on the morrow after the Sabbath"--on the first day of the week!

The evidence that our Messiah was resurrected at sunset at the end of Saturday and the beginning of Sunday is overwhelming.

Only this exact point in time permits our Messiah's resurrection to literally fulfill the prophecy for three seemingly incompatible situations: (1) resurrection after "three days and three nights in the heart of the earth," (2) resurrection "on the third day," and (3) resurrection on the first day of the week--"the morrow after the Sabbath."

### **5. Two Key Days**

The most important day in conjunction with the crucifixion week is obviously the day of resurrection, which we have seen is the end of Saturday and the beginning of Sunday (Nisan 18). However, there are two other key days that we need to investigate from a Scriptural position before we can unfold the chronology of the crucifixion week.

#### **"Good Wednesday"**

"Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulcher, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them. And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulcher. And they entered in, and found not the body of Yah'shua." Luke 24:1-3.

Since it has been shown from the Word of Yahweh that the resurrection took place at sundown on the day that we would call Saturday, the traditional "Good Friday" myth can be dispelled once and for all. All arguments supporting a Friday crucifixion evaporate when we come to this realization. Furthermore, we can unreservedly apply the prophetic typology of Jonah, who was (*according to our Messiah's words*) in the belly of the great fish for "three days and three nights." And this definitely fixes Wednesday as the day our Messiah was crucified and buried.

Yah'shua died about three o'clock in the afternoon. Matthew 27:46-50. He was placed in the sepulcher at sunset. Yah'shua was crucified "between the evenings" on Nisan fourteenth in order to literally fulfill the Levitical

law of the Passover. Therefore, Nisan the fourteenth began at sunset Tuesday, and that day extended to sunset on Wednesday. Yah'shua partook of the Paschal supper on the evening of Nisan fourteenth end of Tuesday, and He died as the true Paschal Lamb on the day of Nisan fourteenth, on the Passover. So both the type and antitype were fulfilled. Both were slain "between the evenings" as required by Yahweh's law.

Thursday was Nisan fifteenth, the "high Sabbath" of the Passover. Levitical law called this day "the first day of Unleavened Bread." Friday was Nisan sixteenth, Saturday was Nisan seventeenth, and Sunday (*the first day of the week and the day on which the offering of the firstfruits was to be brought*) was the eighteenth of Nisan.

#### **"Palm Saturday"**

Now, let's count backward from Wednesday, Nisan fourteenth, and see where other significant events of the crucifixion week fit into the chronology. First, we need to recall Yahweh's detailed instructions for the selection of the Paschal lamb. These are given in Exodus 12:1-3.

"And Yahweh spake unto Moses and Aaron in the land of Egypt, saying, this month shall be unto you the beginning of months: it shall be the first month of the year to you. Speak ye unto all the congregation of Israel, saying, In the tenth day of this month they shall take to them every man a lamb, according to the house of their fathers, a lamb for an house."

The Paschal lamb was to be selected and set apart from the other members of the flock on the tenth day of Nisan. Now, if Wednesday was Nisan fourteenth, then Tuesday would have been Nisan thirteenth; Monday, Nisan twelfth; Sunday, Nisan eleventh; and Saturday, therefore, would have

been Nisan tenth. The tenth day of Nisan occurred on a regular seventh-day Sabbath.

Many prophecies and types were fulfilled during the crucifixion week; so it only seems natural to wonder what event of the crucifixion week fulfilled the selection of the Paschal lamb on Nisan tenth. Certainly if Yah'shua is the true Paschal Lamb, there must be some event that pointed to His selection and acceptance during the week. The answer seems obvious. Let's notice the words of Mark 11:7-9.

"And they brought the colt to Yah'shua, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him. And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way. And they that went before, and they that followed cried, saying, Hosanna; Blessed is he that cometh in the name of Yahweh."

Hosanna means "Save now!" The triumphal entry was the fulfillment of the prophetic type represented in the law of the selection of the Paschal lamb. It was on this day that the multitude turned out to greet our Messiah and to recognize Him both as the King of Israel and as the Chosen or Anointed One who had come to bring physical salvation from Roman oppression. The nationalistic fervor that had arisen on the Jericho road pilgrimage reached its peak with the entrance of Yah'shua into Jerusalem.

The triumphal entry into Jerusalem by our Messiah not only fulfilled the type of the selection of the Paschal lamb, it also fulfilled several Old Covenant prophecies. Some 450 years prior to this event, the prophet Zechariah had written, "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass." Zech. 9:9.

Zechariah's prophecy is quoted in Matthew 21:5 and John 12:15.

But this is not the only prophecy that was fulfilled on that day. About a century earlier than Zechariah's prophecy, the prophet Daniel was chosen of Yahweh to give us the great time prophecy found in Daniel 9:25-26. "Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. And after threescore and two weeks shall the Messiah be cut off, but not for himself."

Daniel prophesied that Messiah the Prince would be cut off after 69 "weeks of years," which is 483 years (*in 360-day prophetic years exactly 173,880 days*), after "the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem." Sir Robert Anderson, in his book *The Coming Prince*, has done a remarkable job of showing that this prophecy terminated on the very day of the triumphal entry.

There is one further piece of evidence that shows that the triumphal entry took place on a Saturday rather than a Sunday. This comes from noticing what our Messiah did after He arrived in Jerusalem on that day. Mark 11:11 says, "And Yah'shua entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve." So ended the events of that day.

The focal point of the activity of the next day comes in Mark 11:15-16, where we read, "And they come to Jerusalem: and Yah'shua went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves; And

would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple."

On the day of the triumphal entry, Yah'shua entered into the temple, He looked around, and He left. On the following day, He entered into the temple and drove out the money-changers. Why did He not do this on the first day?

The answer is obvious. Yah'shua did not cleanse the temple on the first day because it was the quiet Hebrew Sabbath. There was no merchandising on that day! Yah'shua would not have hesitated to cleanse the temple on the first day if the business activities were in progress. And He did not need 24 hours to decide what to do about the disgraceful situation there. This passage is powerful circumstantial evidence that the triumphal entry did indeed occur on the seventh-day Hebrew Sabbath.

#### **6. Chronology: Friday Through Sunday**

"Then Yah'shua six days before the Passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him. Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Yah'shua, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with odour of the ointment." John 12:1-3.

We are now ready to consider the details of the chronology of the crucifixion week. We have developed a number of time-points, and the basic structure of the events during this week has emerged. But now it's time for us to begin at the day that our Messiah made the final part of His journey to Bethany from Jericho and step-by-step carefully go through the details of the Scriptural record that will take us event-by-event to that early Sunday morning when the empty tomb was discovered.

#### **Friday, the Ninth of Nisan**

Our starting point is John 12:1-3. You'll recall that there had been several changes in the observance of the Passover since Yahweh had given this feast through Moses at the time of the Exodus.

Originally, Scripture referred to the fourteenth of Nisan as the "Passover" and the seven days of Nisan fifteenth through the twenty-first as the "Feast of Unleavened Bread." However, in the days of our Messiah, the Hebrews referred to the entire eight-day celebration as both the "Passover" and the "Feast of Unleavened Bread", or "The Unleaveneds", interchangeably. The high point in the celebration was the Passover Sabbath, which was then observed on Nisan fifteenth. To the Hebrews of our Messiah's day, like modern "Jews", this was the focal point of the entire celebration, and it was incorrectly referred to as the "Passover." And the day previous, Nisan fourteenth, which is Yahweh's Passover, was incorrectly referred to as the Preparation day.

Therefore, when John wrote that "Yah'shua six days before the Passover came to Bethany," he was using the term "Passover" as it was used at that time. He had in view the high Sabbath of the Passover celebration, which was Nisan fifteenth. So we can identify the day on which our Messiah arrived in Bethany. That was Friday, Nisan the ninth. It was on this day that our Messiah arrived at the home of Martha, Mary and Lazarus, in the little village of Bethany, which was fifteen furlongs (*1 7/8 miles*) from Jerusalem.

Yah'shua arrived in Bethany sufficiently early on Friday afternoon to permit Martha and Mary to prepare a supper for Him. We can be sure that the preparation of the food was finished before sunset, which would be the beginning of the weekly Sabbath. However, the supper was not eaten until after the sun had set and a new day – the weekly Sabbath, had

"dawned". When Mary took the pound of ointment of spikenard and poured it on Yah'shua's feet and then wiped them with her hair, the evening of the tenth of Nisan, a seventh-day Sabbath, had already begun. This act of Mary's was the first phase of the selection of the Paschal Lamb, which Yahweh's law said must be done on the tenth day of the month.

Scripture does not tell us whether or not our Messiah spent that entire evening in the home of Martha and Mary. The inference is that He did. It is significant that after our Messiah's arrival in the vicinity of Jerusalem to keep His appointment with the stake, He never spent a night in the city of Jerusalem. In Scripture Jerusalem represents the fold of the Old Covenant Israelites, the housing place of the sheep of that nation. After our Messiah's selection as the true Paschal Lamb who was to die, not only for the lost sheep of the house of Israel, but for all peoples, it was necessary for Him to remain separate. The law required that the selected Paschal lamb be set apart from the rest of the sheep. Bethany represents the position of separation "outside the camp."

#### **Saturday, the Tenth of Nisan**

"On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Yah'shua was coming to Jerusalem, Took branches of palm trees and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of Yahweh." John 12:12-13. This was the next day, the day following that evening on which our Messiah was anointed by Mary for His burial. It was Saturday, Nisan tenth, a seventh-day Sabbath, and the day on which Yahweh's law said that the acceptable "lamb without blemish" must be selected and set apart. The Messiah began the day by presenting Himself to Israel as her King. He was recognized as such. But

then He was rejected, and the people of Israel selected Him as a Lamb for slaughter instead.

And what did Yah'shua, Lord of the Sabbath do when He reached the temple? Mark tells us that "Yah'shua entered into Jerusalem and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve." Mark 11:11.

It was the Sabbath. All was quiet. There were no money-changers or merchants at work in the temple. Yah'shua, Yahweh's agent in the flesh, simply inspected His Father's house. "He looked round about on all things."

Herod's temple was a beautiful structure. But despite the beauty of this magnificent edifice, our Messiah saw a great deal of ugliness, too. The evidence of a sinful and disobedient people was all around. But on this particular day, Nisan the tenth, the temple area was quiet, for it was a Sabbath. Thus our Messiah simply inspected His Father's house and then withdrew Himself to Bethany as the sun began to sink in the west, closing the day on which the true Passover Lamb had been selected.

#### **Sunday, the Eleventh of Nisan**

"And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry: And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet. And Yah'shua answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it." Mark 11:12-14.

This day was Sunday, Nisan the eleventh, the first day of the week. It was just one week prior to that time when our Messiah would come forth from the tomb in resurrection life, "the firstfruits of them that slept." It is most appropriate that the incident of the cursing of the fig tree took place on this day. This incident

is a living parable which predicts the setting aside of the nation Israel during the present inter-advent age. The fig tree is a figure used in Judges 9, in Jothan's "parable of the four trees," but it has continued throughout the Old Covenant record.

On the first day of the week, Sunday, the temple area was a beehive of activity once again. Only two days remained until the fourteenth of Nisan which ushered in the eight-day celebration that the Hebrews referred to interchangeably as the "Feast of Passover" and the "Feast of Unleavened Bread", or the "Unleaveneds".

To the temple merchants, Nisan fourteenth was a time of business--big business. There were many thousands of pilgrims present in Jerusalem. They had come from all over the Roman Empire. Many of them had only Roman money or money from their homeland, and this money had to be exchanged for the "shekels" of the temple in order to be useful for the buying of sacrifices and for giving in offerings. Those who had traveled far were unable to bring animals for sacrifice; so these had to be purchased.

This was like "Christmas" for the temple merchants. The business that they did during the Passover season often determined whether their fiscal years were successes or failures. In the same way, many businesses of our day have to depend on their volume of business at Christmas for financial "success."

So on this first day of the week, the money-changers and merchants were in their booths early. No doubt they were calling out to the pilgrims who passed into the temple courts, hawking their merchandise and services. It is no wonder that Yah'shua, in righteous anger, said to them, "Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves." Mark 11:17. And in this we see the fulfillment of the

prophecy of Malachi 3:1. "And the Messiah, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith Yahweh of hosts." And as we have seen, this occurred on Sunday, Nisan the eleventh.

### **7. Chronology: Monday and Tuesday Monday, the Twelfth of Nisan**

When the disciples saw the withered fig tree, Peter, who remembered the incident of the previous morning, called Yah'shua's attention to it.

"And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots. And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away. And Yah'shua answering saith unto them, Have faith in Yahweh." Mark 11:20-22.

Our Messiah used this object lesson of the withered fig tree to deliver a great dissertation on faith and prayer.

This occurred on the second day of the week, Monday, Nisan twelfth. We have no way of knowing whether the dawning of this Monday was the proverbial cloudless one or not. But we can know that it was a fateful day. It was the last day that Yah'shua of Nazareth, the Son of Yahweh, would offer Himself to Yahweh's chosen people, Israel, as their King and Messiah. This was a day full of dramatic incidents. It was a tiring day and from the viewpoint of those unable to see Yahweh's divine plan, it was a day that ended in failure.

Yah'shua and His disciples entered again into Jerusalem, and went into the temple court. Here there were a long series of encounters with those who sought to discredit our Messiah's testimony. The chief priests and the scribes attacked Him in an effort to entrap Him in His own words. They first asked Him on the source of His authority to do "these things." And by this, they doubtlessly referred to His

cleansing of the temple the day before. Immediately Yah'shua brought out clearly His source of authority when He asked, "The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me." Mark 11:30.

That ended that line of questioning, but it did not end the encounter. Yah'shua then related the parable of the hedged vineyard and the wicked husbandmen, in which the chief priests and scribes clearly saw themselves portrayed in the roles of the wicked husbandmen. They were humiliated in front of the people, and they were put into confusion. "And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way." Mark 12:12.

Next it was the Pharisees' turn, and they joined forces with their old enemies, the Herodians--which was a strange combination indeed. They concocted a brilliant scheme to place Yah'shua at odds with the Roman authorities and thus remove Him from the scene. But the little coin with Caesar's image on it sent them crashing down in defeat. Then the Sadducees came and tried their hand. The result was the same. The day finally drew on toward sunset after all had their turn to try to entrap the Messiah. All comers had been silenced. But their hatred had now crystallized. Yah'shua's hour was approaching. Things were moving rapidly toward that rendezvous with the Stake.

Evening, the closing of that fateful Monday and the dawning of Tuesday, was rapidly drawing near. It was probably with reluctance that Yah'shua, with the twelve, left the temple courts and passed beyond the walls of the city to the slopes of the Mount of Olives. The evening sun was sinking low over toward the west side of the city, and it would soon be lost to view behind the hills. "And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith

unto him, Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here!" Mark 13:1. This enthusiastic remark, probably made with the intent of cheering up Yah'shua after that trying day, set the stage for that great prophetic revelation that Bible scholars call the "Olivet Discourse." This discourse came at the close of the day on Monday, the twelfth of Nisan.

Now, let's turn our attention to a passage of Scripture that allows us to check our chronology. The passage is found in the opening verse of Mark 14. Here Mark wrote, "After two days was the feast of the Passover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death."

This verse not only gives us a time mark to check our chronology, but it also verifies the records that have come down through secular channels concerning the terminology used by the Hebrews in our Messiah's time. Although Yahweh's Word designates the fourteenth of Nisan as the Passover and the fifteenth of Nisan as the first day of Unleavened Bread, the Hebrews used these terms interchangeably. The fifteenth of Nisan, the high Sabbath of Passover, had become the focal point of the entire celebration; and it was the day commonly, but nonetheless mistakenly called "the Passover", as many modern Jews still do. Mark identified the day of Nisan fifteenth when he used the combination expression "the Passover, and of unleavened bread" to refer to a single day.

### **Tuesday, the Thirteenth of Nisan**

Yah'shua and the twelve had climbed the slopes of the Mount of Olives at the close of Monday, Nisan twelfth. While they were there, the Master had delivered His discourse, which included the prophecy of the coming destruction of the temple and the city. The sun had set on Nisan twelfth, and the evening of the thirteenth day of Nisan had just dawned.

And apparently, after the discourse, they went back to Bethany for the night. At this point Mark wrote, "After two days was the Passover, and of unleavened bread." Mark 14:1. The evening was Nisan thirteenth, and the next day was to be Tuesday, Nisan thirteenth. Two days later would be Thursday, Nisan fifteenth, the day that Mark designated as "the feast of the Passover, and of unleavened bread."

"And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar of the people." Mark 14:1-2. Notice that the word "feast" is not used in Mark 14:1. The verse literally says, "After two days was the Passover, and of unleavened bread." The King James Version inserts the words "the feast of" in italics, but there is nothing in the Greek text corresponding to these words. The expression in Mark 14:1 refers to Nisan fifteenth. And the expression "on the feast day" in Mark 14:2 apparently refers to the same day, that is, the high day of the Passover celebration, Nisan fifteenth.

So the plot began to take form. Yah'shua was to be apprehended and slain before Nisan fifteenth. Yahweh used the modifications of the Hebrews – their "traditions", to take Yah'shua to the cross on Nisan fourteenth, Yahweh's true Passover.

It was on the evening of the thirteenth of Nisan, a Tuesday, after our Messiah had delivered the Olivet Discourse, that Yah'shua and His disciples came down off the mountain and once again headed toward Bethany. This time they went to the house of Simon the leper.

Many Bible teachers have tried to establish that the evening meal in the house of Simon the leper was the same meal as that with Martha, Mary and Lazarus, reported by John in the opening verses of chapter 12. The reason for this is that the incident of the

anointing of Yah'shua by the woman, described both in Mark 14:3-9 and in Matthew 26:6-13, does have many similarities to the incident of the anointing by Mary described in John 12:3-8. But careful reading also shows a great many differences. Mary anointed Yah'shua's feet (*John 12:3*), but the woman in the house of Simon the leper anointed His head. Mark 14:3; Matthew 26:7. The Scripture seems clear that the incident mentioned by Matthew and Mark occurred on a different day and in a different house and that the anointing was performed by a different woman from that in the incident mentioned by John. This second anointing of our Messiah occurred on Tuesday evening, after the setting of the sun and the closing of Nisan twelfth.

"And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the Passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the Passover?" Mark 14:12. This brings us to the day of Tuesday, Nisan thirteenth. This was our Messiah's last day of freedom before His arrest and crucifixion. It is confusing because Mark prefixed this record with "And the first day of unleavened bread." But we should keep in mind that the Gospel writers, and most certainly the early translators used terms according to the contemporary usage in their day, not strictly according to the definition of Mosaic law. Josephus recorded that in those days the Hebrews celebrated "eight days of Unleavened Bread." They included the fourteenth of Nisan, the day that Moses designated as the "Passover," in the feast of Unleavened Bread (*which was only seven days long*).

Josephus also said that it was customary to kill the lambs between three o'clock and five o'clock in the afternoon before the Passover Supper, which then were roasted and eaten in the evening. The Hebrews of

Mark's day still ate the Passover on the evening of Nisan fourteenth, but they often referred to this meal as the "first Chagigah." Alfred Edersheim in his book, *The Temple--Its Ministry and Services*, tells us that "the Chagigah which was strictly a peace offering might be twofold. The first Chagigah was offered on the fourteenth of Nisan, the day of the Paschal sacrifice, and formed afterwards part of the Paschal Supper. The second Chagigah was offered on the fifteenth of Nisan, or the first day of the feast of Unleavened Bread." It is this second Chagigah which the Hebrews were afraid they might be unable to eat, if they contracted defilement in the judgment hall of Pilate. John 18:28.

Yah'shua ate the "first Chagigah," which was the true Passover Supper, with His disciples. Since the Hebrews included the fourteenth of Nisan in their designation "the Feast of Unleavened Bread," and since they allowed the hours after three o'clock in the afternoon on Nisan thirteenth to be considered as a part of Nisan fourteenth for the purpose of the slaying of the lamb, then it seems that Mark was designating the late afternoon of Nisan thirteenth in his prefix to this exchange between our Messiah and His disciples.

So it was on Tuesday, Nisan thirteenth, that the disciples asked Yah'shua where He wished to eat the Passover. Evidently Judas was present when this question was put to Yah'shua; and since Yah'shua knew of Judas' plot to betray Him, He replied in a guarded way. Instead of naming the place, Yah'shua sent Peter and John to find and follow the man bearing a pitcher of water. (*By the way, this instruction was not so ambiguous as it might seem to us because men normally did not carry water in those days - it was considered 'women's work'.*) This was evidently a clever method of delaying the betrayal by Judas until after the Paschal Supper. Judas would not

know until the time of the supper itself where it was to take place. This arrangement assured an uninterrupted evening following Tuesday, Nisan thirteenth. This brings us to the evening of Nisan fourteenth, the Wednesday on which our Messiah would die.

#### **8. Chronology: Wednesday and**

#### **Thursday:**

#### **Wednesday, the Fourteenth of Nisan**

Immediately after sundown on Tuesday afternoon, the fourteenth of Nisan began. The lamb had been slain and roasted and was now ready in the upper room. Yah'shua and His disciples arrived early after sunset and partook together of the Passover Feast. "And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of Yahweh." Luke 22:14-16. It was on the occasion of this evening that the disciples' feet were washed, Yah'shua's Supper was instituted, and that wonderful discourse of our Messiah was given beginning with the words "Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in Yahweh, believe also in me." John 14:1.

Yah'shua knew that Judas was anxious to bring the soldiers to arrest Him. So when the supper had progressed to a certain point, Yah'shua said to him, "That thou doest, do quickly." John 13:27. This gave the betrayer an opportunity to get away and carry out his unholy purpose.

It is not the intent of this study to go into the details of those events of the crucifixion day. The point that is important to our study of the chronology of the crucifixion week is that the crucifixion took place on Wednesday, Nisan fourteenth. Yah'shua's body was placed in the tomb just as the sun was setting on that day. And with the placing of His body in the tomb, the fulfillment of Yah'shua's own prophecy that

He would be "three days and three nights in the heart of the earth" was begun. Three days later, again at sunset, He would come forth in resurrection to His eternal life.

"The Hebrews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the Sabbath day, (*for that Sabbath day was an high day,*) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away." John 19:31. This verse establishes that the day following (*or beginning the sunset of*) our Messiah's crucifixion was a "high day." That in turn established that it was Nisan fifteenth, the great Passover Sabbath, the day that Yahweh had designated as "the first day of unleavened bread." The Passover Sabbath was the greatest Hebrew Sabbath of the year. It was not only a day of rest and worship like Saturday, the seventh-day Sabbath; but, unlike that day, this Thursday Passover Sabbath was a "high day." The fifteenth of Nisan fell on a different day each year, and that particular year it fell on Thursday as the Scriptural "time-points" clearly affirm.

#### **Thursday, the Fifteenth of Nisan**

What happened on this particular day? Scripture provides us with a record of only one specific event. And this record is found in Matthew 27:62-66. "Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation (true Passover), the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. Command therefore that the sepulcher be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make it as sure as ye can. So they

went, and made the sepulcher sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch."

One thing of significance should be noted here. The chief priests and Pharisees said, "After three days." They were perhaps the very ones who were present when Yah'shua had spoken of the sign of the Prophet Jonah. And they remembered well what He had said.

It is quite likely that these events (*which transpired on the day of Thursday, Nisan fifteenth*) were in the minds of the two disciples on the road to Emmaus when they said, "And beside all this, today is the third day since these things were done." Luke 24:21. To those looking on, the sealing of the tomb and the placing of the Roman guard were very much events that were to be included in the burial of Yah'shua. Since these words were spoken on Sunday, and since the final steps of the putting away of Yah'shua took place on Thursday, the two disciples were absolutely correct in their statement of time.

#### **9. Chronology: Friday Through Sunday**

To conclude this study of the chronology of the crucifixion week, let's direct our attention to a passage from the Gospel of Mark. In his description of these events, Mark provides final verification of the chronology that we have established:

"And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulcher which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulcher. And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses beheld where he was laid. And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him. And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulcher at the rising of the sun. And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away

the stone from the door of the sepulcher? And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great." Mark 15:46-16:4.

Our Messiah was placed in the sepulcher, but it was necessary that those looking on hasten home because the High Passover Sabbath had arrived. Mark 15:47 tells us; "And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joseph beheld where he was laid." This verse refers to the events that took place late in the afternoon of Wednesday, Nisan fourteenth. The wording of this verse seems to infer that the women observed Yah'shua's body being placed on the shelf in Joseph's new tomb, but that they did not remain on the scene as the heavy stone was rolled in place.

Now the very next verse in Mark's Gospel, Mark 16:1, says, "And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him." The word "Sabbath" as used in this verse is singular. The reference is to the High Passover Sabbath, which occurred on Thursday, Nisan fifteenth.

The bringing of the sweet spices, described in Mark 16:1, was a separate visit from the coming of the women to the tomb--that visit which took place early on the first day of the week, as described in Mark 16:2. Mark 16:1 describes an event that took place on Friday, Nisan sixteenth.

**Friday, the Sixteenth of Nisan** "And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joseph beheld where he was laid." Mark 15:47. Again, the inference of this statement is that the women saw Yah'shua's body placed in the sepulcher but that they left before the stone was rolled in place to seal the door. Therefore, it is possible that they did not realize the impossibility of gaining access to Yah'shua's body without outside help.

The Roman seal and the Roman guard were established on Thursday morning. The seal and the guard were to insure that the tomb was not opened until the three days were definitely past. It is entirely possible that the women were not aware of the Thursday development.

After the High Sabbath, the women (*on Friday, Nisan sixteenth*) "bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him." But on arriving at the tomb they found the heavy stone in place, the official Roman seal on it, and the Roman guard posted to make sure that no one touched that seal until after the third day had passed. So the women found it necessary to return to their homes to await the passing of three full days (*which included the seventh-day Sabbath*) before they could again attempt to anoint Yah'shua's body.

The Gospel of Luke also confirms that there were two visits to the tomb by those faithful women. The two visits are seen in the passage contained in Luke 23:55-56. "And the women also, which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulcher, and how his body was laid. And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment."

The statement of verse 55 indicates that the women did observe the body of our Messiah placed in the tomb at sundown on the day of His crucifixion. Then verse 56 says, "And they returned and prepared spices and ointments..." This speaks of that first visit to the tomb on Friday, Nisan sixteenth. The women were unable to anoint Yah'shua's body because of the stone with its affixed seal and the Roman guard that had been set by Pilate. Unable to complete the task that they had attempted on that Friday, Luke says that they "rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment."

### **Saturday, the Seventeenth of Nisan**

Notice that the statement of Luke 23:56, that they "prepared spices and ointments," comes before the statement of the same verse that they "rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment." The spices and ointments were prepared on Friday, Nisan sixteenth, but they were not used that day.

The statement about the Sabbath day refers to the seventh-day Sabbath, which occurred on Saturday, Nisan seventeenth. The second visit, as recorded in Luke 23:1, occurred on Sunday, Nisan eighteenth, the first day of the week.

Recall that Matthew 28:1-2 tells us that "in the end of the Sabbaths, as it was dawning toward the first day of the week," came the angel and the earthquake. The word "Sabbaths" here is plural, and by using this plural form Matthew indicated that both the High Sabbath of Nisan fifteenth and the seventh-day Sabbath of Nisan seventeenth had passed. Yah'shua broke the bonds of death and came forth from the tomb. All prophecy concerning His death, burial and resurrection was literally and precisely fulfilled!

### **Sunday, the Eighteenth of Nisan**

Mark 16:2-3 tells us of that second visit of the women to the tomb, which Mark asserted was early in the morning on the first day of the week. "And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulcher at the rising of the sun. And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulcher?"

This passage definitely indicates that the women had knowledge of the presence of the stone before they arrived at the tomb early on Sunday morning. And it also infers that the time limit set by Pilate as to how long the tomb must be sealed and guarded by Roman soldiers (three full days) had passed.

The women felt sure of access to the tomb if only they could find someone with adequate physical strength to roll away the stone.

The record of the second visit to the tomb by the women is confirmed by the opening verses of Luke 24. The evangelist wrote, "Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulcher, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them. And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulcher, And they entered in, and found not the body of Yah'shua."

But the absence of His body was not loss. The answer of the angelic beings has been the victorious cry of His true Israelite followers ever since:

"He is not here, but is risen!"

## **Yahweh Reveals Plan for Mankind** **with His Annual Holy Days:**

Is it possible to know what the future holds for us? The Creator of mankind does have a plan for us, and He reveals it to us through an annual cycle of festivals described in the Scriptures. It is an astounding plan offering an incredible future to every man, woman, and child who has ever lived. This article will help you understand the incredible truth about what lies ahead for all humanity.

Every nation observes patriotic or public holidays. These special days are reminders of important events in a country's history. They provide continuity between a nation's past and the present.

Usually citizens can understand and explain at least some of the significance of these celebrations. Yet, paradoxically, those same citizens seldom understand much about the days on which they worship and honour Yahweh. The non-biblical roots of these religious practices are quietly ignored in their celebrations.

As a result, people usually assume that popular observances such as Easter and Christmas serve as true representations of the themes of the Bible. Yet the Bible nowhere commands their observance, nor does the Bible record their observance by the early New Covenant Congregation. However, Yahweh does command other, rarely noticed, festivals.

Some people realize that the Bible mentions specific days for religious celebration. But only a few can name any of them or explain their significance.

Those aware of these festivals generally believe they were meant only for ancient Israel and ceased after Yah'shua the Messiah's crucifixion. They assume these days simply pointed toward the Messiah, and they think that, since He lived on earth 2,000 years ago, their importance has long since passed. Most

people consider these biblical festivals as nothing more than relics of history with no relevance to the modern world.

Believe it or not, the Bible itself contradicts these commonly held views. An objective look at the biblical record reveals that both Christmas and Easter—the two main observances on the Christian calendar—are nowhere to be found, except where Passover is mistranslated to Easter in Acts 12:4 in the King James Version. Surprising to many, the New Covenant shows Yah'shua the Messiah observing Yahweh's Holy Days, with Yah'shua the Messiah's disciples and His natural Congregation members following His example many decades and centuries after His death, burial and resurrection.

The teaching of the apostles in the years of the first century after the resurrection also differs from most people's assumptions. The apostles' instructions reveal a God who intended for all Israelites to observe the biblical Holy Days—for a remarkable reason.

### **What these Holy Days reveal**

Why does Yahweh want us to observe the Holy Days? Because Yahweh wants us to know about our future, He reveals to us His great purpose for humanity.

He explains why He puts us on earth, reveals our ultimate destiny and tells us how we can attain it! The observance of Yahweh's Holy Days provides the key to understanding that elusive sense or purpose of human existence. The observance of these days reveals Yahweh's great plan for the future of mankind.

The biblical Holy Days, or festivals, fall during three seasons of the year—the early-spring harvest, late-spring harvest and early-autumn harvest in the land of biblical Israel. The themes these days portray reflect Yahweh's spiritual harvest of mankind to eternal life spoken of by Yah'shua the Messiah.

These observances serve as timeless reminders of how Yahweh's plan gives eternal life to mortal man. Our Creator will bring His plan to fruition in spite of man's choices and actions, which have consistently led to separation from Yahweh, suffering and death (*Proverbs 14:12; 16:25; Isaiah 59:1-8; Jeremiah 10:23*). These festivals reveal the unfolding of Yahweh's plan for humanity and how He will establish His Kingdom on earth. This is the good news, or gospel, Yah'shua the Messiah preached (*Mark 1:14-15*).

Yahweh's design to grant humanity eternal life has existed since "the foundation of the world" (*Matthew 25:34*). The Holy Days teach humanity about that remarkable plan. The apostle Paul beautifully summed up its essence in his letter to the Ephesians: "He has made known to us his secret purpose, in accordance with the plan which he determined beforehand in the Messiah, to be put into effect when the time was ripe: namely, that the universe, everything in heaven and earth, might be brought into unity in the Messiah. In the Messiah indeed we have been given our share in this heritage, as was decreed in his design whose purpose is everywhere at work" (*Ephesians 1:9-11, Revised English Bible*).

The Holy Days help us comprehend the master plan—the very purpose for mankind, how we truly become Yahweh's people. Notice this description of our destiny: "Behold, the tabernacle of Yahweh is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people. Yahweh Himself will be with them and be their God" (*Revelation 21:3*). Step by step, the Holy Days show us how this beautiful picture will become a reality.

In Leviticus 23 we find a listing of the Holy Days. After discussing the weekly Sabbath, the text describes special observances with unusual names such as the Feast of Unleavened Bread, the Feast of

Weeks and the Feast of Tabernacles. In giving these Holy Days, Yahweh instructed Moses to make it clear that "These are the Feasts of Yahweh" (*verses 4, 37, emphasis added throughout*).

The Bible teaches that eventually Yahweh will teach everyone to observe these days (*Zechariah 14:16*). In the pages of this article you will learn the fascinating purpose of each of Yahweh's Holy Days, along with their promise of hope for mankind.

### **Are Yahweh's Holy Days Relevant Today?**

When Yahweh begins something in this present age of mankind, He nearly always starts small. In Matthew 13:33 Yah'shua the Messiah compared Yahweh's Kingdom to both a mustard seed and leaven. Both analogies start with something small that expands into something much larger. Similarly, Yahweh called only a relatively few people in Old Covenant times who were willing to follow His ways.

The biblical record shows that, early in the account spoken of in the Bible, only a few people decided to obey Yahweh. However, early patriarchs including Abel, Enoch and Noah did respond to the revelation of Yahweh's plan of salvation (*Matthew 23:35*). After the great flood of Noah's time, Yahweh found He could work with Abraham and his wife, Sarah. Of Yahweh's obedient people of those times, Hebrews 11:13 says they "all died in faith" with the sure knowledge that they would gain eternal life (*verse 40*).

We should note that the plan for providing eternal life was already at work in the lives of these early people of Yahweh. The plan did not start with a covenant Yahweh made with ancient Israel; nor did it start with Yah'shua's earthly ministry.

Yahweh loved the world so much "that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever

believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life" (*John 3:16*). Yahweh's love in giving His Son continued His plan of salvation from the foundation of the world (*Matthew 25:34; Revelation 13:8*). The blueprint of the Holy Days would reveal in due time the plan Yahweh had designed from the very beginning. These festival observances were not just a cosmic afterthought.

With Abraham's family we see Yahweh beginning to reveal the good news about His plan of salvation (*Galatians 3:8*). Genesis 26:3-4 identifies specific blessings Yahweh promised to Abraham and Abraham's descendants. The Creator pledged to bestow them "because Abraham obeyed My voice and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes, and My laws" (*verse 5*). Perhaps this is why the Bible calls Abraham "the friend of Yahweh" and "the father of all those who believe" (*James 2:23; Romans 4:11; Genesis 18:17-19*).

### **A nation singled out**

Abraham's descendants grew into a mighty nation (*Genesis 18:18*). They were named after Jacob, the grandson of Abraham whose name was changed to Israel (*Genesis 32:28*). After settling in Egypt, before long they became slaves (*Exodus 1*). The story of Yahweh's deliverance from their bondage and His delivering of people today is part of the intricately woven fabric of Yahweh's festivals.

In due time the Creator set in motion a series of events that illustrated for the Israelites His plan as depicted in the Holy Day observances and led to their freedom from slavery in Egypt. When Moses and Aaron appeared before Pharaoh, they told the Egyptian ruler that the God of Israel commanded him to "let My people go, that they may hold a feast to Me in the wilderness" (*Exodus 5:1*).

Moses and Aaron had earlier called for the elders of Israel to assemble and had explained to them Yahweh's plan to deliver them (*Exodus 3:16-18*). Then Moses and his brother, Aaron, performed a series of Yahweh-directed miracles in sight of the people (*Exodus 4:29-30*). As a result, the Israelites (*although they later faltered*) believed Yahweh would deliver them and fulfill His covenant with Abraham, as He had promised (*Exodus 4:31; 6:4-8*).

What followed was ancient Israel's first Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread. Much later the New Covenant Congregation kept these same days as a reminder of Israelites' deliverance through Yah'shua the Messiah. For instance, Paul told members of the Congregation at Corinth—both Jews and gentiles—that they should be "unleavened," or without sin, because "the Messiah, our Passover, was sacrificed for us" (*1 Corinthians 5:7*). In the next verse Paul said, "Therefore let us keep the feast," referring to the same festival Yahweh had instituted in ancient Israel many centuries before.

### **The Holy Days in the New Covenant**

From Yah'shua's earliest childhood years, He observed the Holy Days with His parents. "His parents went to Jerusalem every year at the Feast of the Passover," Luke 2:41 tells us. The following verses describe Yah'shua, at age 12, engaging the theologians of His day in a spirited discussion during this festival season (*verses 42-48*). Clearly, He astonished these religious leaders with His understanding and insight. John writes of Yah'shua continuing to observe the annual Holy Days as an adult during His ministry (*John 2:23; 4:45*).

In one of the most instructive examples, Yah'shua risked His personal safety to attend two of the festivals, the annual Feast of Tabernacles and the Last Great Day (*John 7:1-*

2, 7-10, 14). "On the last day, that great day of the feast, Yah'shua stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning His Spirit, [which] those believing in Him would receive; for His Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Yah'shua was not yet glorified" (John 7:37-39).

Many false churches believe that the apostle Paul fundamentally changed the way Israelites are to worship. This notion assumes Paul taught gentiles that observance of the Holy Days was unnecessary. Although some of his writings were difficult to understand, even by his contemporaries (2 Peter 3:15-16), Paul's explicit statements and actions contradict any notion that he annulled or abolished Holy Day observance.

In 1 Corinthians 11:1-2, for example, Paul told his followers to "imitate me, just as I also imitate the Messiah," and "keep the traditions as I delivered them to you." A few verses later he explained: "For I received from Yahweh that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Yah'shua on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread; and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, 'Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me'" (verses 23-24).

If Paul's practice had not been to observe the Holy Days, his comments to the Jews and gentiles in Corinth would have been meaningless. Clearly, evidence is lacking that Paul ever discouraged anyone from keeping the annual festivals; such a notion would have been for him unthinkable (Acts 24:12-14; 25:7-8; 28:17).

On the contrary, the biblical record of Paul's ministry repeatedly depicts the Holy Days as important observances, milestones in his life. For example, he told the Ephesians

that "I must by all means keep this coming feast in Jerusalem" (Acts 18:21). In Acts 20:16 and 1 Corinthians 16:8 we find Paul arranging his travel schedule to accommodate the Feast of Pentecost. In Acts 27:9 Luke, Paul's companion in his travels, referred to the time of year as after "the Fast," a reference to the Day of Atonement.

The Expositor's Bible Commentary, in a reference to Acts 20:6, notes that Paul, unable to arrive at Jerusalem for the Passover, "remained at Philippi to celebrate it and the week-long Feast of Unleavened Bread ..." (Richard N. Longenecker, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, 1981, Vol. 9, p. 507). Regarding Acts 20:16, the same commentary notes that Paul "wanted, if at all possible, to get to Jerusalem for Pentecost on the fiftieth day after Passover ..." (p. 510).

Paul's ministry included observing the Holy Days with the Congregation. In defending the gospel he preached, Paul said he brought the same message the other apostles taught: "Therefore, whether it was I or they, so we preach and so you believed" (1 Corinthians 15:11).

Paul and all the apostles taught a consistent message of the Israelite's obligation to follow the example of Yah'shua the Messiah in all matters. The apostle John, who wrote near the close of the first century, summed up this message: "He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked" (1 John 2:6).

Jewish believers continued to uphold the Holy Days, as did gentile Israelites ("Colossians 2:16 Shows Gentile Israelites Kept the Holy Days"). From all these references we can conclude only that the practice of the early Congregation was to continue the observance of these Yahweh-given festivals, the first of which is the Passover.

## **The Passover: Why Did Yah'shua the Messiah Have to Die?**

Most of us have heard that Yah'shua the Messiah died for our sins, but what does that really mean? Why was His death necessary? What part does the Messiah's sacrifice play in Yahweh's plan for mankind? How is Yah'shua the Messiah's death reflected in Yahweh's holy festivals? This chapter on the New Covenant Passover will address these important questions.

Yah'shua's sacrifice is the pivotal event in Yahweh's plan to save humanity. Speaking of His certain death, the Messiah said He, referring to Himself as the Son of Man, must be "lifted up" (*crucified*) even as "Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness," so that "whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life. For Yahweh so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life" (*John 3:14-16*).

We see here that Yah'shua's sacrifice, the central message of the Passover, was a supreme act of love for humanity. This important event laid the foundation for the remaining annual Holy Days and festivals. It is the most momentous step in Yahweh's plan.

Just before the Passover feast that would see His execution, Yah'shua said that "for this purpose I came to this hour ... And I, if I am lifted up from the earth, will draw all peoples to Myself" (*John 12:27, 32*).

The day on which this profound event, the crucifixion, transpired was the 14th day of the first month of Yahweh's calendar, the same day on which the Passover lambs were to be killed (*Leviticus 23:5*). Paul later wrote the congregation at Corinth that "the Messiah, our Passover, was sacrificed for us" (*1 Corinthians 5:7*).

Now let's look back through the Bible for the instructions and meaning Yahweh gave

concerning this day. Doing this will help us understand why Yahweh expects us to continue observing the Passover.

### **Yahweh's Passover instruction**

Yahweh, through Moses, told Pharaoh to "let My people go, that they may hold a feast to Me in the wilderness" (*Exodus 5:1*). Through a series of plagues, Yahweh displayed His great power and delivered the Israelites from slavery in Egypt. After nine plagues He gave Israel specific instructions about the imminent 10th in the series of terrifying calamities and the steps each Israelite family should take to escape it.

Yahweh said that, on the 10th day of the first month, each Israelite was to select a lamb or goat large enough to feed each household (*Exodus 12:3*). It was to be a yearling male, without any sort of defect. On the 14th day of that month at evening, the Israelites were to kill the animals and place some of their blood on the doorposts of their homes. The animals were then to be roasted and eaten along with unleavened bread and bitter herbs. The Israelites hurriedly ate this meal.

The Creator further instructed the Israelites that on this evening He would kill all the firstborn of Egypt to convince Pharaoh to release the Israelites from slavery. The firstborn of each Israelite family would be protected if the sign of the blood were on the entrance of their homes. Yahweh would "pass over" their homes—thus the meaning of the name of this observance (*verse 13*).

Yahweh said this day would be to the Israelites a memorial, "and you shall keep it as a feast to Yahweh throughout your generations. You shall keep it as a feast by an everlasting ordinance" (*verse 14*). Bible writers later explained that the annual Passover observance symbolized the Messiah. Paul referred to the Messiah as "our Passover" (*1 Corinthians 5:7*), and John recorded that John

the Baptist recognized the Messiah as "the Lamb of Yahweh who takes away the sin of the world!" (*John 1:29*).

The unblemished male animal represented Yah'shua the Messiah as the perfect, sinless sacrifice for our sins. Hebrews 9:11-12 tells us that "the Messiah came as High Priest of the good things to come ... not with the blood of goats and calves, but with His own blood He entered the Most Holy Place once for all, having obtained eternal redemption." Yah'shua the Messiah bought us with His blood, pouring out His life as our Passover lamb to become our High Priest, our mediator so that through Him Yahweh could forgive our sins.

The Bible tells us that sin is the violation of Yahweh's law of love (*1 John 3:4*). We have all sinned and fallen short of the glory of Yahweh (*Romans 3:23*). We have each earned the death penalty for our disobedience (*Romans 5:12; 6:23*).

Paul illustrated the profound love of Yah'shua the Messiah in giving up His life on our behalf (*Romans 5:6-8*). All would be doomed eternally had not somehow the penalty for our sins been paid. The Messiah, who lived a perfect life as the unblemished Lamb of Yahweh, substituted His death in the flesh for ours. In fact, His death was the only possible substitution for ours. His sacrifice became the payment for our sins. He died on our behalf so we could share life with Him forever. We can no longer live according to our own desires. We become Yahweh's redeemed, or bought and paid-for, possession (*1 Corinthians 6:19-20*).

Both Yah'shua and the apostle Paul made it clear that the Passover is to continue as an Israelite observance. Yah'shua Himself instituted new Passover symbols and practices to teach Israelites important truths about

Himself and Yahweh's continuing plan of salvation.

The Passover in the Old Covenant foreshadowed the Messiah's crucifixion. The New Covenant Passover is a memorial of that crucifixion. By observing it, we "proclaim the Messiah's death till He comes" (*1 Corinthians 11:26*). Now let's examine the Messiah's specific instructions concerning the Passover ceremony and the lessons we should learn from it.

### **A lesson in humility and service**

The apostle John described the events of Yah'shua the Messiah's last evening with His disciples: "Now before the feast of the Passover, when Yah'shua knew that His hour had come that He should depart from this world to the Father, having loved His own who were in the world, He loved them to the end." During the meal Yah'shua "rose from supper and laid aside His garments, took a towel and girded Himself. After that, He poured water into a basin and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel with which He was girded" (*John 13:1-5*).

Washing guests' feet was normally the job of the lowliest household servant. In the first century it was an act of hospitality. Rather than ask a servant to perform this function for His guests, Yah'shua humbly chose to carry it out Himself to teach an important spiritual lesson. The account continues: "So when He had washed their feet, taken His garments, and sat down again, He said to them, 'Do you know what I have done to you? You call me Teacher and Lord, and you say well, for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Teacher, have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's feet'" (*verses 12-14*).

Yah'shua left His disciples with a lasting reminder of the importance of humble service to others. This reinforced an earlier lesson He had given them that is recorded in Matthew

20:25-28, where He warned His disciples about presuming to rule over their brethren: "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and those who are great exercise authority over them. Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among you, let him be your servant. And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave—just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many."

This simple example of washing the feet of others teaches us a vital lesson intimately associated with the Passover. He concluded: "I have given you an example, that you should do as I have done to you" (*John 13:15*). How many Christians today obey this simple instruction to humbly offer their services to others, and exemplify that attitude in their lives? As the redeemed possession of Yahweh through the Messiah's sacrifice, our lives should be devoted to the service of Yahweh and our fellowman.

### **The bread: symbol of the Messiah's body**

Later, while the disciples were eating, Yah'shua explained that one of them would soon betray Him (*Matthew 26:21-25*). But notice verse 26: "And as they were eating, Yah'shua took bread, blessed it and broke it, and gave it to the disciples and said, 'Take, eat; this is My body.'"

The Messiah's body was to become a sacrificial offering for sin, for indeed "we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Yah'shua the Messiah once for all. And every priest stands ministering daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins. But this man ... offered one sacrifice for sins forever ... For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified" (*Hebrews 10:10-14*). Yahweh forgives us through Yah'shua the

Messiah's sacrifice, and He "sanctifies" us—sets us apart—for the holy purpose of obedience to Him.

Our decision to eat the Passover bread means we understand that Yah'shua the Messiah has "put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself" (*Hebrews 9:26*). He willingly consented to suffer an excruciating death for us. The Messiah bore in His body mental and physical suffering brought on by sin.

Yah'shua's sacrifice is also intricately associated with our spiritual healing. Peter wrote of the Messiah's suffering that He "bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness-by whose stripes you were healed" (*1 Peter 2:24*).

Isaiah prophesied of Yah'shua's suffering on our behalf: "Surely He has borne our grief and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed Him stricken, smitten by Yahweh, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and by His stripes we are healed" (*Isaiah 53:4-5*).

Matthew 8:16-17 depicts incidents of healing in Yah'shua's ministry. Yah'shua helped "many who were demon-possessed. And He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: 'He Himself took our infirmities and bore our sicknesses.'"

Yah'shua the Messiah showed that He was the promised Messiah by miraculous healings. But, besides demonstrating His compassion, such healings showed that the Messiah possessed the power to forgive sin (*Matthew 9:2-6*). Sin brings suffering! The ultimate spiritual healing made possible by the Messiah's complete sacrifice includes the whole person, alleviating and eliminating the

mental, emotional and physical sufferings that result from our sins.

Through the opportunity for the forgiveness of our sins, the Messiah also made possible our receiving eternal life. "I am the bread of life," He said. "Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that one may eat of it and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world" (*John 6:48-51*).

### **A relationship leading to a new way of life**

The Passover bread reminds us of the close relationship Israelites have with Yah'shua the Messiah. In Romans 6:1-6 Paul shows that, once we are symbolically united with the Messiah in death through baptism, "we should no longer be slaves of sin" but "should walk in newness of life." Eating the bread demonstrates our commitment to allow the Messiah to live in us.

The apostle Paul describes this uniting with the Messiah in Galatians 2:20: "I have been crucified with the Messiah; it is no longer I who live, but the Messiah lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of Yahweh, who loved me and gave Himself for me." Paul understood that pursuing his own ways was no longer his life's focus. His relationship with Yah'shua the Messiah became supremely important to him.

The apostle John tells us what the Messiah expects of us in our relationship with Him: "Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments ... He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked" (*1 John 2:3-6*).

The Passover bread reinforces our understanding that Yah'shua the Messiah, the

true "bread of life," must live within us, enabling us to live an entirely new life. Yahweh forgives our sins to sanctify us—to continue to set us apart for a holy purpose, to redeem us (*that is, purchase us for a price*). We now belong to Yahweh so He can fulfill His purpose in us.

### **The meaning of the Passover wine**

Why did Yah'shua command His disciples to drink wine as a symbol of His blood during the Passover service? What does this symbolize?

Notice Matthew's account: "Then He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, 'Drink from it, all of you. For this is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say unto you, I will not drink of this fruit of the vine from now on until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father's kingdom'" (*Matthew 26:27-29*).

What are we to learn from this symbol? First, the Messiah knew that drinking wine as a symbol of His shed blood would impress deeply on our minds that His death was for the opportunity for us to access Yahweh's forgiveness of our sins. "This do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me" (*1 Corinthians 11:25*). Yah'shua "loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood" (*Revelation 1:5*). Yahweh forgives our sins through our faith in Yah'shua's shed blood – when we repent and ask for that forgiveness. (*1 John 1:7*).

Many people normally understand this tenet—that Yahweh forgives our sins through Yah'shua the Messiah's blood—but not everyone realizes how it occurs. Paul explained that "according to the Law ... all things are cleansed with blood, and without shedding of blood there is no forgiveness [*of sin*]" (*Hebrews 9:22, New American Standard Bible*).

The Old Covenant records Yahweh instructing the priesthood to perform certain duties that included a system of cleansing and purification using the blood of sacrificed animals, thus foreshadowing the shedding of the Messiah's blood, the ultimate sacrifice for sin. He commanded the nation of Israel to follow this temporary system of the ritualistic cleansing of sin (*Hebrews 9:9-10*). Animal sacrifices served as a type of the one and only real and future sacrifice, Yah'shua the Messiah, who would pay the penalty for everyone's sins once and for all. Our only obligations are to believe, repent and ask!

The Bible teaches that one's life is in his blood (*Genesis 9:4*). When a person loses sufficient blood, he or she dies. Therefore blood, when poured out, makes the atonement for sin, which produces death (*Leviticus 17:11*). Yah'shua lost His blood when He was crucified (*Luke 22:20; Isaiah 53:12*). He poured out His blood, dying for the sins of humanity.

In partaking of the wine at the Passover service, we should carefully consider its meaning. That small portion of wine represents the very life blood that flowed from Yah'shua the Messiah's dying body for the remission of our sins (*Ephesians 1:7*). With this forgiveness comes freedom from the eternal, or second death.

Not only does Yah'shua the Messiah's blood completely cover our sins upon our belief, repentance and asking, but it makes possible the removal of our guilt. *Hebrews 9:13-14* compares the physical sacrifice of an animal with the blood of the Messiah: "For if the blood of bulls and goats and the ashes of a heifer, sprinkling the unclean, sanctifies for the purifying of the flesh, how much more shall the blood of the Messiah, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to Yahweh, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living Yahweh?"

The word conscience comes from the Latin word *conscire*, meaning "to be conscious of guilt." Our conscience is our awareness of right and wrong.

Our taking wine in the New Covenant Passover ceremony is an expression of faith that Yahweh really will forgive us. We are free from sin and guilt (*John 3:17-18*), and our hearts are "made free from the sense of sin" (*Hebrews 10:22, Bible in Basic English*). We live in newness of life with a clear conscience (*Romans 6:14*).

Some people, however, feel guilty even after they have repented. Although our consciences should readily convict us when we sin again, we should not continue to condemn ourselves because of sins Yahweh has already forgiven. Instead, we should be fully confident in our Yahweh-given freedom from such guilt (*1 John 1:9; 3:19-20*).

### **Access to the Father**

The Messiah's shed blood also makes possible our access to the very throne of Yahweh the Father. Under the Old Covenant only the high priest could enter the area of the tabernacle known as the Holiest of All (*Hebrews 9:6-10*). The "mercy seat" positioned there represented God's throne. *Leviticus 16* describes the ceremony that took place each year on another Holy Day, the Day of Atonement. At that time the high priest took the blood of a goat, representing the future sacrifice of Yah'shua the Messiah, and sprinkled it on the mercy seat so the Israelites could be symbolically cleansed of all their sins (*verses 15-16*).

Because the blood of Yah'shua the Messiah effectively removes sin, making us potentially pure before Yahweh, we can conditionally enjoy direct access to the Father (*Hebrews 9:24*). Yah'shua, as our High Priest, entered into the Most Holy Place through His own blood (*Hebrews 9:11-12*). We can now

approach Yahweh the Father through the Messiah as our High Priest, without hesitation or fear of rejection, but with confidence and assurance (*Hebrews 10:19-22*).

Hebrews 4:16 speaks of the confidence we can have when we approach Yahweh: "Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need." Yah'shua the Messiah makes it possible for us to experience this intimate relationship with our Father.

### **Our covenant with Yahweh**

The blood of the Messiah also signifies that He has entered into a covenant, or agreement. When Yah'shua instituted wine for the New Covenant Passover, He said drink it because "this is My blood of the new covenant" (*Matthew 26:27-28*).

Why is this wine called the "blood of the new covenant"? The writer of the book of Hebrews explains that, after Yahweh enjoined the Old Covenant on ancient Israel, and after the Israelites' response of obedient commitment, the covenant was ratified by the ceremony of the sprinkling of blood. The Bible writers called this the "blood of the covenant" (*Hebrews 9:18-20; 13:20; Exodus 24:3-8*).

We must understand that belief, repentance, and the acceptance of the sacrifice of Yah'shua the Messiah—along with belief in Yahweh's promise to forgive our sin—constitutes a covenant with Yahweh. Through this covenant, which we gratefully accept and can completely rely on (*Hebrews 6:17-20*), Yahweh grants us eternal life. By accepting the sacrifice of the Messiah for the remission of our sin, we enter into a covenant relationship with the God of the universe. The terms of this covenant are absolute, because it was sealed with the shed blood of Yah'shua the Messiah (*Hebrews 9:11-12, 15*). This covenant is renewed every year when we partake of the Passover.

What are the terms of this covenant relationship? "This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says Yahweh: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them," then He adds, "Their sins and lawless deeds I will remember no more" (*Hebrews 10:16-17*).

Ancient Israel did not have the heart to faithfully keep Yahweh's commandments (*Deuteronomy 5:29*). Under the New Covenant, however, Yahweh writes His law in our hearts and minds. His laws are not those of physical purification contained in the system of sacrifices, washings and service in the tabernacle. Instead, they are the holy and righteous laws that define right behaviour toward Yahweh and neighbour (*Romans 7:12*) and lead to eternal life (*Matthew 19:17*). The Passover wine is symbolic of this covenant relationship that is ratified by the blood of Yah'shua the Messiah.

### **Annual observance in the early Congregation**

The New Covenant pictures Israelites continuing to observe the annual festivals at the times commanded by Yahweh. As a youth, the Messiah kept the Passover annually on the specified day (*Luke 2:41*), and He continued the practice with His disciples. The early Congregation as well continued to observe the other Holy Days at their specified times. For example, Acts records that Yah'shua's followers met to observe the Feast of Pentecost: "Now when the Day of Pentecost had fully come, they were all with one accord in one place" (*Acts 2:1*).

Scripture gives no hint of the early Congregation adding to or changing the dates Yahweh ordained for His festivals. The phrase in 1 Corinthians 11:26—"for as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup"—simply points out that, by observing the Passover each year on the appropriate day, members of the

Congregation were proclaiming "the Messiah's death till He comes."

The Bible specifies the yearly observance of the Passover, and history records its annual celebration as the natural practice of the early Congregation. Passover, as a memorial of Yah'shua's death, is to be observed annually rather than whenever or however often one chooses, just as all of the other annual festivals are to be kept once a year. Neither Yah'shua the Messiah nor the apostles indicated that we should change when or how often we observe any of Yahweh's festivals.

Following their example, today we should observe the Passover at the beginning of the evening of the 14th day of the first month (*Abib, or Nisan*) of the Hebrew calendar.

During His last Passover with His disciples, Yah'shua explained that this celebration has significant implications for the future as well. In Matthew 26:29 He told them, "I will not drink of this fruit of the vine from now on until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father's kingdom."

Keeping the Passover each year reminds us that Yahweh is the forgiver of sin who grants us eternal life in His Kingdom through the sacrifice of Yah'shua the Messiah, our Passover. This observance is a memorial of our Creator's continuing role in humanity's salvation.

### **The Feast of Unleavened Bread: The Lesson of Leaving Sin**

Immediately after the Passover comes a festival that depicts the next step in the fulfillment of Yahweh's master plan. After Yahweh, through our faith in the Messiah's sacrifice, has forgiven us of our sins, how do we continue to avoid sin, since we must go on living in newness of life? How do we live as Yahweh's redeemed people? We find the

answer in the remarkable symbolism of the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

When Yahweh freed Israel from slavery in Egypt, He told His people that for "seven days you shall eat unleavened bread" (*Exodus 12:15*). Verse 39 further explains: "And they baked unleavened cakes of the dough which they had brought out of Egypt; for it was not leavened, because they were driven out of Egypt and could not wait, nor had they prepared provisions for themselves."

The leavening process, which makes bread rise, takes time. The Israelites had no time to spare when they left Egypt, so they baked and ate flat bread. What started out as a necessity continued for a week. Yahweh appropriately named this time the Feast of Unleavened Bread (*Leviticus 23:6*), or Days of Unleavened Bread (*Acts 12:3*).

When Yah'shua came to earth as a human, He observed this seven-day festival—sometimes called the Feast of Passover by the Jews because of the proximity of the Passover to the Days of Unleavened Bread. Yah'shua kept it as a child and later as an adult (*Luke 2:41; Matthew 26:17*). The early natural Congregation, imitating the Messiah in His actions, kept it as well.

### **Earliest instructions and the Messiah's teachings**

Yahweh gave His earliest instructions concerning this festival to the Israelites as they prepared to leave Egypt. "This is a day you are to commemorate; for the generations to come you shall celebrate it as a festival to Yahweh—a lasting ordinance. For seven days you are to eat bread made without yeast. On the first day remove the yeast from your houses, for whoever eats anything with yeast in it from the first day through the seventh must be cut off from Israel. On the first day hold a sacred assembly, and another one on the seventh day. Do no work at all on these days, except to

prepare food for everyone to eat—that is all you may do" (*Exodus 12:14-16, New International Version*).

Each year as the Israelites observed this feast, it reminded them of Yahweh's deliverance of their forefathers from Egypt. The Creator instructed, "Celebrate the Feast of Unleavened Bread, because it was on this very day that I brought your divisions out of Egypt" (*verse 17, NIV*). The exodus from Egypt remains as a foundational reason for observing this feast today. Just as Yahweh delivered ancient Israel, He delivers us from our sins and difficulties.

Now notice Yah'shua the Messiah's teaching about leaven, which expands the meaning of this feast. During the Messiah's ministry He performed two miracles in which a few fish and loaves of bread fed thousands of people. After one of these incidents, when His disciples had gone around the Sea of Galilee, they forgot to bring bread with them. So Yah'shua told them, "Watch out and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees."

The disciples thought Yah'shua was referring to their lack of bread. However, He was using the occasion to teach them by calling on the symbolism of leaven. The Messiah asked them, "How is it that you do not understand that I did not speak to you concerning bread? But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." Then the disciples "understood that He did not say to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees" (*Matthew 16:5-12, NASB*).

Some of the members of the religious establishment of the Messiah's day appeared to be righteous, yet they secretly practiced sinful behavior. Yah'shua let them know He knew their hearts. They may have appeared righteous to other people, "but inside you are

full of hypocrisy and lawlessness" (*Matthew 23:28*).

The Days of Unleavened Bread remind us that with Yahweh's help we must remove and avoid all types of sin—symbolized by leaven—in all areas of our life.

### **Continued importance of these days**

During the Feast of Unleavened Bread, the apostle Paul taught the same spiritual lessons as had Yah'shua the Messiah, invoking the comparison of sin to leaven. In the context of reprimanding the Corinthian congregation for its divisions, jealousies and tolerance of sexual misconduct, Paul wrote: "Your glorying is not good. Do you not know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump? Therefore purge out the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, since you truly are unleavened. For indeed the Messiah, our Passover, was sacrificed for us. Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth" (*1 Corinthians 5:6-8*).

Yahweh's natural Congregation at Corinth was obviously and unmistakably keeping the Feast of Unleavened Bread, to which Paul repeatedly alluded. However, Paul used the Corinthians' faithful obedience in keeping the feast physically (removing leaven from their homes) as a basis to encourage them to celebrate this feast with proper understanding of its spiritual intent.

Today removing leaven from our homes for seven days reminds us that we, too, through prayer and Yahweh's help and understanding, must recognize, expel and avoid sin. The Feast of Unleavened Bread is thus a time of personal reflection. We should meditate on our attitudes and conduct and ask Yahweh to help us recognize and overcome our shortcomings.

Paul spoke of this much-needed self-reflection in 2 Corinthians 13:5 when he told

the Corinthian assembly of His natural Congregation: "Examine yourselves as to whether you are in the faith. Test yourselves. Do you not know yourselves, that Yah'shua the Messiah is in you?—unless indeed you are disqualified."

Paul explained the significance of the phrase "Yah'shua the Messiah is in you" in Galatians 2:20: "I have been crucified with the Messiah; it is no longer I who live, but the Messiah lives in me; and the life I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of Yahweh, who loved me and gave Himself for me."

These seven days of self-examination prove invaluable in helping us to devote our lives to Yahweh and Yah'shua the Messiah. This week-long period also pictures our eventual triumph over sin. As Yahweh delivered the ancient Israelites from enslavement to Egypt, so He delivers us from our enslavement to sin (*Romans 6:12-18*).

#### **Applying the spiritual lessons**

We learn by doing. We learn spiritual lessons by doing physical things. Performing the task of de-leavening our homes reminds us to vigilantly watch for sinful thoughts and actions so we can avoid them. Yahweh knows that, in spite of our good intentions, we all sin.

Many years after his conversion, Paul described the powerful human tendency to sin. "I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good. For I delight in the law of Yahweh according to the inward man. But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? I thank Yahweh-through Yah'shua the Messiah our Lord! So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of Yahweh, but with the flesh the law of sin" (*Romans 7:21-25*).

Paul knew life itself is a battle with sin. The Bible speaks of "the sin which so easily ensnares us" (*Hebrews 12:1*). We have our own part to play in struggling to overcome sin. Yet, paradoxically, we must rely on Yahweh to help us. Paul explained this to the Philippians by telling them to "work out your own salvation with fear and trembling, for it is Yahweh who works in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure" (*Philippians 2:12-13, King James Version*).

Our observance of the Days of Unleavened Bread helps us realize our need for our faith in Yah'shua the Messiah's ability to intercede for us, thereby strengthening our resolve as a help in overcoming our weaknesses. Yet this feast is certainly a time for rejoicing because the Messiah freely gives us the help we need. Yah'shua, the Lamb of Yahweh, was sacrificed for the forgiveness of our sins, thus unleavening, or cleansing, our lives. He continues to help us live obediently through Yahweh's Spirit dwelling in us—which brings us to the subject of the next chapter.

#### **The Feast of Pentecost: The Firstfruits of Yahweh's Harvest**

In the process of revealing His plan of salvation for mankind, Yahweh established His annual Holy Days around the harvest seasons in the Middle East (*Leviticus 23:9-16; Exodus 23:14-16*). Just as His people harvested their crops around these three festival seasons, Yahweh's Holy Days show us how He is harvesting people for eternal life in His Kingdom.

The Holy Days have meanings that build upon each other. Together they progressively reveal how Yahweh works with humanity. Earlier we saw Passover symbolizing the Messiah's giving of Himself for us so our sins could be forgiven. We also learned how the Days of Unleavened Bread teach us that we must remove and avoid sin, whether in actions

or attitudes. The next Holy Day, Pentecost, builds on this important foundation.

This festival is known by several names, which derive from its meaning and timing. Also known as the Feast of Harvest (*Exodus 23:16*), it represents the firstfruits (*Numbers 28:26*) gathered as the result of the labor of those who completed the spring grain harvests in ancient Israel (*Exodus 23:16*).

It is also called the Feast of Weeks (*Exodus 34:22*), with this name coming from the seven weeks plus one day (*50 days in all*) that are counted to determine when to celebrate this festival (*Leviticus 23:16*). Similarly, in the New Covenant, which was written in Greek, this festival is known as Pentecost (*Pentekostos in the original*), which means "fiftieth" (*Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary of Old and New Covenant Words, "Pentecost"*).

Among Jews the most popular name for this festival is the Feast of Weeks, or shavuot, in Hebrew. When celebrating this festival, many Jewish people recall one of the greatest events in history; Yahweh's revealing of the law at Mount Sinai.

But Pentecost doesn't just picture the giving of the law; it also shows—through a great miracle that occurred on the first Pentecost in the early Congregation—how to keep the spiritual intent of Yahweh's laws.

### **The gift of Pentecost: His Holy Spirit**

Yahweh chose the first Pentecost after Yah'shua the Messiah's resurrection to pour out His Holy Spirit on 120 believers (*Acts 1:15*). "Now when the Day of Pentecost had fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from the sky, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. Then there appeared to them divided tongues, as of fire, and one sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with His Holy Spirit and

began to speak with other tongues [languages], as His Spirit gave them utterance" (*Acts 2:1-4*).

The speaking in various languages occurred as a crowd of people gathered in Jerusalem, with each visitor hearing the speech of the disciples in his own native tongue (*verses 6-11*). These astounding events demonstrated the presence of His Holy Spirit.

At first the people of Jerusalem who witnessed this miraculous phenomenon were astonished, with some attributing the actions of the Israelites to drunkenness (*Acts 2:12-13*). The apostle Peter, now filled with His Holy Spirit, boldly explained the event to the crowd as a fulfillment of Joel's prophecy: "And it shall come to pass in the last days, says Yahweh, that I will pour out of My Spirit on all flesh" (*Acts 2:17; Joel 2:28*).

Peter explained how his listeners could also receive this Spirit: "Repent, and let every one of you be immersed [baptized] in the name of Yah'shua the Messiah for the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of His Holy Spirit. For the promise is to you and to your children, and to all who are afar off, as many as Yahweh our God will call" (*Acts 2:38-39*).

Yahweh used these miracles and Peter's preaching to add 3,000 people to His Congregation in one day. These converts were all baptized by His Holy Spirit (*verses 40-41*). From this pivotal point, Yahweh's Spirit has been available to all who believe and truly repent and are then properly baptized, or immersed in His Holy Spirit. The Day of Pentecost is an annual reminder that Yahweh poured out His Spirit to establish His Congregation; the group of believers who are led by His Spirit to this very day!

### **Why we need Yahweh's Spirit**

Humanly speaking, no matter how hard we try not to, we still sin (*1 Kings 8:46; Romans 3:23*). Acknowledging this inherent weakness of humanity, Yahweh lamented in

Deuteronomy 5:29, "Oh, that they had such a heart in them that they would fear Me and always keep all My commandments that it might be well with them and with their children forever!"

Here Yahweh explains that humankind has a heart problem. Academic knowledge of the law does not enable us to think like Yahweh. Becoming godly in our thoughts, attitudes and actions is beyond the comprehension and ability of men and women without an additional ingredient: Yahweh's Spirit or "will".

Yahweh's way of thinking produces peace, happiness and concern for others. Yah'shua complimented a lawyer who correctly quoted the essence of Yahweh's law: "You shall love Yahweh your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your strength, and with all your mind" and "[love] your neighbor as yourself" (*Luke 10:27*). This man cited Deuteronomy 6:5 and Leviticus 19:18, from two books of the Pentateuch. Yah'shua here confirmed that the Old Covenant scriptures are based on these two great principles of love (*Matthew 22:40*).

The essence of Yahweh's law is love (*Romans 13:8-10; 1 Thessalonians 4:9*). Yahweh gave His commandments because He loves us. Writing to brethren who had Yahweh's Spirit, John said, "By this we know that we love the children of Yahweh, when we love Yahweh and keep His commandments. For this is the love of Yahweh, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome" (*1 John 5:2-3*).

Because Yahweh's Spirit was now residing in the Congregation, its members could express genuine love. "A new commandment I give to you," Yah'shua had said, "that you love one another; as I have loved you ... By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another"

(*John 13:34-35*). Yahweh's gift of His Holy Spirit on Pentecost made it possible for the Congregation to fully express Yahweh's commandments of love.

### **Yah'shua the Messiah: the firstfruits of eternal life**

Firstfruits are the first agricultural products to mature and ripen. Throughout the Bible, Yahweh uses the analogy of the harvest—and, particularly on Pentecost, firstfruits—to illustrate aspects of His plan of salvation. Israel observed this day in the late spring after the barley and wheat harvests. A special offering of the first ripe grain during the Days of Unleavened Bread, called the wave-sheaf offering, marked the beginning of these harvests, which continued during the next 50 days and led up to Pentecost (*Leviticus 23:11*). This spring harvest was the firstfruits of the yearly agricultural cycle.

One of the first harvest lessons of the New Covenant is that Yah'shua the Messiah "is risen from the dead, and has become the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep" (*1 Corinthians 15:20*). The wave-sheaf offering represented Yah'shua the Messiah, who was the "firstborn over all creation" and the "firstborn from the dead" (*Colossians 1:15, 18*). He presented Himself to Yahweh the Father as a type, or example, of firstfruits on the Sunday after His resurrection, the same day during the Days of Unleavened Bread on which the first sheaf of grain of the spring harvest was waved before Yahweh.

Early on the first day of the week (*Sunday morning*), while it was still dark and Yah'shua had already been resurrected (*John 20:1*), Mary Magdalene came to the tomb and discovered that the rock in front of it had already been rolled away. She ran to notify Peter and John that Yah'shua was no longer in His grave. The two men hurried to the tomb and verified that Yah'shua was gone (*John*

20:2-10). After Peter and John left for their homes, Mary Magdalene stood outside Yah'shua's place of interment (*verse 11*). As she wept, Yah'shua appeared to her but would not allow her to touch Him because He had "not yet ascended" to the Father (*John 20:17*).

The wave-sheaf ceremony Yahweh gave to ancient Israel thus represents Yah'shua the Messiah's acceptance by His Father as "the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep" (*1 Corinthians 15:20*).

### **The Messiah's Natural Congregation as firstfruits**

Romans 8:29 speaks of Yah'shua the Messiah as "the firstborn of many brethren." Yet the New Covenant Congregation in its natural form as founded by the Messiah, is also considered to be firstfruits. In speaking of the Father, James said, "Of His own will He brought us forth by the word of truth, that we might be a kind of firstfruits of His creatures" (*James 1:18*).

Yahweh's Spirit within us identifies us and sanctifies us-sets us apart as Israelites. "If anyone does not have the Spirit of the Messiah," wrote Paul, "he is not His," and "as many as are led by the Spirit of Yahweh, these are sons of Yahweh" (*Romans 8:9, 14*).

Paul also referred to the brethren as those "who have the firstfruits of His Spirit" (*verse 23*). He alluded to several first-century Israelites as the firstfruits of Yahweh's calling (*Romans 16:5; 1 Corinthians 16:15*).

The significance of the Bible writers calling these people of Yahweh firstfruits becomes evident when we consider John 14:6. Here Yah'shua said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me."

How many, throughout the centuries, have really accepted and practiced the way of life Yah'shua taught? Even today many people have simply never heard much, if anything,

about Yah'shua the Messiah. How will Yahweh offer them salvation?

Few people understand that Yahweh follows a systematic plan, symbolized by His Holy Days, to save all humanity by offering all people eternal life in His Kingdom. In this world we are simply at the beginning of the harvest for the Kingdom of Yahweh.

The apostle Paul understood this: "But now the Messiah is risen from the dead, and has become the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep ... For as in Adam all die, even so in the Messiah all shall be made alive. But each one in his own order: the Messiah the firstfruits, afterward those who are the Messiah's at His coming" (*1 Corinthians 15:20, 22-23*). Anyone who is now called and chosen by Yahweh is included with the Messiah as Yahweh's firstfruits (*James 1:18*).

The Bible teaches us that Yahweh must call people (*John 6:44; 6:63*). Our Creator, therefore, controls the timing of His harvest. When Yahweh founded His Congregation by imparting His Spirit to certain believers on the Day of Pentecost in A.D. 31, He was expanding His spiritual harvest. It was the beginning of what Joel prophesied, that Yahweh will ultimately pour out His Spirit on "all flesh" (*Joel 2:28-29; Acts 2:14-17*).

### **His Holy Spirit at work**

The giving of His Holy Spirit dramatically changed the lives of these early Israelites. The book of Acts is filled with accounts of the early Congregation's remarkable spiritual impact on the surrounding society. A transformation was so evident that nonbelievers accused the Israelites of "turning the world upside down" (*Acts 17:6*). Such was the dynamic, miraculous power of His Holy Spirit.

To fully grasp how Yahweh's Spirit can work with us, we must comprehend what His Holy Spirit is. It is not a person who, along with Yahweh the Father and Yah'shua the Son,

forms a "Holy Trinity." In Scripture His Holy Spirit is described as the power of Yahweh at work in our lives (*Acts 1:8; Romans 15:13, 19*), the same power that was at work in the ministry of Yah'shua the Messiah (*Luke 4:14; Acts 10:38*).

This divine power allows us to be "led by the Spirit of Yahweh" (*Romans 8:14*). It was this same power that transformed the lives of the early Israelites and is the power working in the natural Congregation today. Paul told Timothy that Yahweh's Spirit is a "spirit of ... power and of love and of a sound mind" (*2 Timothy 1:7*).

Pentecost serves as an annual reminder that our Creator still works miracles, granting His Spirit to the firstfruits of His spiritual harvest, empowering them to carry out His work in this world.

### **The Feast of Trumpets: A Turning Point in History**

The Feast of Trumpets introduces the autumn festivals—representing the culmination of the present age of man and the beginning of an incredible time during which Yahweh will play a much more direct part in world events. The previous festivals constitute personal responses to the workings of Yahweh in the people He calls and chooses. But the Day of Trumpets heralds the intervention of Yahweh in the affairs of humanity on a global basis. This Holy Day represents a dramatic turning point in world history.

This particular festival also marks the beginning of the third and final feast season (*Exodus 23:14; Deuteronomy 16:16*), which includes the final four Holy Days of the year.

### **The return of Yah'shua the Messiah!**

The Feast of Trumpets depicts nothing less than the return of Yah'shua the Messiah to this earth to establish the Kingdom of Yahweh! The book of Revelation reveals a sequence of earth-shaking events depicted by angels

sounding a series of seven trumpet blasts. The seventh angel's sounding of the last trumpet signifies that "the kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Messiah" (*Revelation 11:15*). The return of Yah'shua the Messiah stands as the final and most significant event associated with the blowing of the prophetic trumpets. Of all the prophecies in the Bible, this one surely heralds the most exciting news possible for this weary, sin-filled world!

The Feast of Trumpets also marks the future fulfillment of the many Old Covenant prophecies that speak of a Messiah coming as a king who will rule with power and authority. The concept of a conquering Messiah was on the minds of the apostles immediately after Yah'shua's resurrection. When He appeared to them in those early days, they asked questions such as: "Lord, will You at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?" (*Acts 1:6*).

Even in His earthly ministry, Yah'shua had spoken of distinctions between His first and second coming. When Pontius Pilate, the governor of Judea, questioned Yah'shua just before the crucifixion, Yah'shua stated clearly that He had not come to rule at that time.

"My kingdom is not of this world," Yah'shua told the government official. "If My kingdom were of this world, My servants would fight, so that I should not be delivered to the Jews; but now My kingdom is not from here." Then Pilate asked Him, "Are You a king then?" Yah'shua answered in the affirmative: "You say rightly that I am a king. For this cause I was born, and for this cause I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth" (*John 18:36-37*).

After the Messiah's resurrection, the apostles excitedly anticipated the fulfillment of Yah'shua's promises. They were aware of messianic prophecies such as Isaiah's that describe a time during which "the government

will be upon His shoulder" and "of the increase of His government and peace there will be no end" (*Isaiah 9:6-7*).

In answer to the apostles' question when they asked Him if He would soon establish the Kingdom, Yah'shua told them they were not to know "times or seasons which the Father has put in His own authority" (*Acts 1:7*). Instead, the Messiah told them to focus on spreading the gospel—the good news—throughout the world. Later, in due time, the apostles realized that the Messiah's second coming was not necessarily imminent. Numerous scriptures describe the saints as eagerly looking forward to the Messiah's return. Why the symbolism of Trumpets?

The excitement of this Holy Day, picturing these monumental events, is captured in the symbolism of this festival. Ancient Israel celebrated it with "a sacred assembly commemorated with trumpet blasts" (*Leviticus 23:24, NIV*).

What is the significance of the dramatic sounds accompanying the observance of this day? To help us understand the symbol of trumpets, let's take a brief look at the use of that musical instrument in the Bible.

Yahweh instructed ancient Israel in the appropriate use of trumpets to communicate important messages. The sounding of one trumpet meant a meeting of the leaders of Israel. Two trumpets sounded to call a gathering of all of the people (*Numbers 10:3-4*). Yahweh also used a trumpet to herald His meeting with Israel when He descended upon Mount Sinai (*Exodus 19:16*).

Trumpets could also sound a warning. *Numbers 10:9* states, "When you go to war in your land against the enemy who oppresses you, then you shall sound an alarm with the trumpets." In this case the trumpets resounded a warning of impending danger and imminent warfare.

Trumpets could also furnish a festive sound: "Also in the day of your gladness, in your appointed feasts, and at the beginning of your months, you shall blow the trumpets ... and they shall be a memorial for you before your God" (*Numbers 10:10*).

With their ability to transmit sound over great distances, trumpets were excellent instruments for attracting people's attention. In connection with this Feast Day, *Psalm 81:3* exhorts: "Blow the trumpet at the time of the New Moon, at the full moon, on our solemn feast day."

### **Amplification of trumpets' meaning**

The writers of the New Covenant revealed additional understanding of the significance of the blowing of trumpets. Notice Paul's description of the return of Yah'shua the Messiah: "For Yah'shua Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of Yahweh. And the dead in the Messiah will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Messiah in the air" (*1 Thessalonians 4:16-17*).

Paul also spoke of the day when the firstfruits pictured by Pentecost will be resurrected to immortal life. In *1 Corinthians 15:52* he says this will happen "in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

The apostle John associated the blowing of a trumpet with the Messiah's return when he wrote, "Then the seventh angel sounded: And there were loud voices in heaven, saying, 'The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Messiah, and He shall reign forever and ever!'" (*Revelation 11:15*). These passages dramatically attest to the significance of the Feast of Trumpets.

Although the Trumpets festival isn't mentioned by name in the New Covenant, we have no valid reason for assuming that this Holy Day should not be kept. On the contrary, the early Congregation used the Hebrew scriptures as their foundation for doctrine (2 *Timothy 3:16*).

Like the Ten Commandments (*James 2:10-11*), each of Yahweh's festivals is intimately and intricately related to the others and they were all commanded as "everlasting ordinances". By keeping all of them, we can understand Yahweh's remarkable plan for humanity as it unfolds.

### **Yah'shua's prophetic teaching**

Near the end of the Messiah's physical ministry, the apostles asked Him about the end of the present era. Notice Matthew 24:3: "Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, 'Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?'"

Earlier, Daniel had prophesied about the establishment of the Kingdom of Yahweh and how the saints, or Yahweh's people, would inherit that kingdom (*Daniel 2:44; 7:18*). Like the disciples, however, Daniel did not understand when the Kingdom would come.

Nonetheless, Yah'shua began to explain the events that would lead up to His return. Yah'shua explained a prophecy that had been "closed up and sealed" since Daniel's day (*Daniel 12:9*). In Matthew 24 Yah'shua the Messiah described to His disciples religious deception, wars, famines, disease, earthquakes and other calamities (*verses 4-13*).

He characterized the time of His return as an era of hatred and lawlessness. In this setting Yah'shua said, "this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come" (*verse 14*).

### **More details in the book of Revelation**

Later Yah'shua the Messiah revealed many more details about this pivotal time. The book of Revelation is described as "the Revelation of Yah'shua the Messiah, which Yahweh gave Him to show His servants—things which must shortly take place" (*Revelation 1:1*).

Here the Messiah repeated through the apostle John the same events He had described to His disciples decades earlier. Now, however, Yah'shua used the symbolism of a series of seals He would open one by one (*Revelation 6*).

After this, at the beginning of Yahweh's wrath against the disobedient nations, Yah'shua prophesied seven plagues to be poured out upon a sinning world, with a trumpet blast announcing each (*Revelation 8-9*). Finally Yahweh will send two "witnesses," or "prophets," to proclaim His truth to a rebellious world (*Revelation 11*). Tragically, this godless society will reject witnesses of Yahweh and kill them (*verses 7-10*).

These dramatic events set the stage for the seventh angel's trumpet sounding and Yah'shua the Messiah's return to assume rulership over the governments of the earth (*Revelation 11:15*).

*Of this same scenario, Matthew 24 says that "immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the the skies will be shaken. Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory. And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other" (verses 29-31).*

## **Unprecedented events at the Messiah's return**

Incredibly, when Yah'shua the Messiah returns to the Mount of Olives in Jerusalem, the nations of the earth will gather to fight against Him (*Zechariah 14:1-4*). Revelation 19:19 describes this impending battle: "And I saw the beast, the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him [Yah'shua the Messiah] who sat on the horse and against His army." Why would anyone want to fight the Messiah? The armies will try to destroy the Messiah because Satan has deceived the whole world (*Revelation 12:9*). The devil's influence will inspire the nations to fight against the Messiah when He returns.

The Feast of Trumpets also signals a resurrection of the dead. The apostle Paul spoke of this event: "For since by man came death, by Man also came the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in the Messiah all shall be made alive. But each one in his own order: the Messiah the firstfruits, afterward those who are the Messiah's at His coming" (*1 Corinthians 15:21-23*).

Paul further explained: "For Yahweh Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of Yahweh. And the dead in the Messiah will rise first" (*1 Thessalonians 4:16*), immediately followed by the people of Yahweh who are alive at that time (*verse 17*). Revelation 20:5 describes this as the "first resurrection." This change to immortal life was the hope of early Israelites and remains the fervent hope of those who understand Yahweh's plan.

In the book of Romans, Paul describes this resurrection as a glorious deliverance from bondage: "For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing of the sons of Yahweh ... because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of

corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of Yahweh ... And not only they, but we also who have the firstfruits of His Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body" (*Romans 8:19, 21, 23*).

We see that, even though tragic events lie ahead, the good news is that Yahweh will intervene to save humanity and guide mankind into His way of life. Yah'shua the Messiah will return to establish Yahweh's millennial rule, bringing His perfect government to earth. This is the wonderful, inspiring meaning of the Feast of Trumpets. The Messiah taught us to pray "thy kingdom come" (*Matthew 6:10, KJV*). How urgently we need the answer to that prayer!

### **The Day of Atonement: Removal of Sin and Reconciliation to Yahweh**

We have already seen—through the symbolism involved in the Passover—that the Messiah's shed blood provides atonement for our past sins. In fact, atonement means reconciliation. The Day of Atonement symbolizes the reconciliation of Yahweh and all humanity.

If we are reconciled to Yahweh through the Messiah's sacrifice, why do we need another Holy Day to teach us about reconciliation? If we are already reconciled, why do we need to fast, as commanded on the Day of Atonement? (*Leviticus 23:27; Acts 27:9*). What is this day's specific significance in Yahweh's master plan for the salvation of mankind?

The Day of Atonement and Passover both teach us about the forgiveness of sin and our reconciliation with Yahweh through the Messiah's sacrifice. However, although the Passover is personally and (for the time being) individually applied to Israelites whom Yahweh has called in this age, Atonement carries immediate universal implications.

Moreover, the Day of Atonement pictures an essential additional step in Yahweh's salvation plan not to be found in the symbolism of the Passover. This step must take place before humanity can experience true peace on earth. All people suffer the tragic consequences of sin. But sin doesn't happen without a cause, and Yahweh makes this cause clear in the symbolism associated with the Day of Atonement.

### **Satan the author of sin**

The Day of Atonement involves not only the forgiveness of sin; it pictures the removal of the primary cause of sin—Satan and his demons. Until Yahweh removes the original instigator of sin, mankind will simply continue to fall back into disobedience and suffering. Although our human nature has a part to play in our sins, Satan the devil bears great responsibility for influencing mankind to disobey Yahweh.

Even though many people doubt the existence of a devil, the Bible reveals Satan as a powerful, invisible being who can sway all mankind. Revelation 12:9 tells us that his influence is so great that he "deceives the whole world."

The devil blinds people to the understanding of Yahweh's truth. The apostle Paul explained this to the Corinthians: If "our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, whose minds the god of this age has blinded, who do not believe, lest the light of the gospel of the glory of the Messiah, who is the image of Yahweh, should shine on them" (2 *Corinthians* 4:3-4).

Paul also teaches us that Satan has influenced every human to walk in the ways of disobedience. He notes that those called into Yahweh's congregation "once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit

who now works in the sons of disobedience" (*Ephesians* 2:2).

Paul warned the Corinthians that Satan can present himself as righteous, "For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness, whose end will be according to their works" (2 *Corinthians* 11:14-15).

Yah'shua the Messiah plainly stated that Satan introduced sin and rebellion into the world. In John 8:44 the Messiah made this plain to those who were antagonistic to His teaching: "You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it."

Tying these scriptures together lets us see the power and the influence of Satan. Paul warned us to beware of the deceitful methods of the devil: "But I am afraid that just as Eve was deceived by the serpent's cunning, your minds may somehow be led astray from your sincere and pure devotion to the Messiah" (2 *Corinthians* 11:3, *NIV*).

Israelites who struggle to resist Satan and stop sinning fight a spiritual battle against the devil and his demons. Paul explains: "For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places" (*Ephesians* 6:12, *NASB*).

Paul further explains here that Yah'shua the Messiah will deliver us from the influence of the devil (verses 13-18). Of course, Yahweh is much more powerful than Satan, but we must do our part by actively resisting the devil and the pulls of the flesh. The Day of Atonement

looks forward to the time during which Satan's deception will be removed and he will no longer be free to influence and deceive mankind (*Revelation 20:1-3*).

### **Old Covenant symbolism**

Leviticus 16 describes Yahweh instructing ancient Israel to observe the Day of Atonement. Although, since the sacrifice of the Messiah, no need remains for animal sacrifices, this chapter adds significantly to our understanding of Yahweh's plan.

Notice that the priest was to select two goats for a sin offering for the people, and he was to present them before Yahweh (*verses 5, 7*). Aaron, the high priest, was to cast lots to select one "for Yahweh"; which he was to offer as a sacrifice (*verses 8-9*). This goat represented Yah'shua the Messiah, who would be slain to pay the penalty for our sins.

The other goat served a completely different purpose: "But the goat on which the lot fell to be the scapegoat shall be presented alive before Yahweh, to make atonement upon it, and to let it go as the scapegoat into the wilderness" (*verse 10*). Notice that this goat was not to be killed. The high priest was to "lay both hands on the head of the live goat and confess over it all the wickedness and rebellion of the Israelites—all their sins—and put them on the goat's head. He shall send the goat away into the desert in the care of a man appointed for the task. The goat will carry on itself all their sins to a solitary place; and the man shall release it in the desert" (*verses 21, 22, NIV*).

The priest chose by lot the "scapegoat," or Azazel, as the word appears in the original Hebrew. Many scholars identify Azazel as the name of a demon inhabiting the wilderness (*Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, Vol. 1, p. 326*). The Azazel goat represents Satan, who bears the responsibility for the sins of humanity

(*verse 22*) because of the deception he has foisted upon mankind.

The high priest laid hands on this goat and confessed over it the wickedness, rebellion and sins of the people. Why did he do that? As present ruler of the world, the devil bears responsibility for his perversity in beguiling and coercing humanity to sin. "The sending of the sin-laden goat ... signified the complete removal of the sins of the people and the handing them over, as it were, to the evil spirit to whom they belonged" (*The One Volume Bible Commentary, p. 95*).

A scapegoat, in modern usage, is someone unfairly held responsible for the mistakes of others. However, the modern English word scapegoat cannot properly be applied to Satan; the devil is not a scapegoat in the modern sense of the term. (*Although some Bible versions use the word "scapegoat," Green's Literal Translation more accurately calls it the "goat of departure."*) Rather than unfairly bearing the blame for sin, Satan will be held justly accountable for his own deliberate actions by which he has led humanity into sin for thousands of years.

The symbolism of the live goat parallels the fate of Satan and his demons, whom Yahweh will remove before Yah'shua the Messiah's millennial rule is established. The book of Revelation describes this event: "Then I saw an angel coming down from the sky, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished ..." (*Revelation 20:1-3*).

Thus the devil and his demons, who for thousands of years have led mankind into every evil deed imaginable, will be removed to

a place of restraint (verse 4). Complete global reconciliation to Yahweh cannot occur until the source of so much sin and suffering—Satan—is removed.

### **The modern application of this festival**

Now notice specific instructions on when and how we are to keep this festival. "Also the tenth day of this seventh month shall be the Day of Atonement," Yahweh says. "It shall be a holy convocation for you; you shall afflict your souls ..." (*Leviticus 23:27*).

How do you "afflict your soul" on this day? Afflict comes from the Hebrew *anah*, which means "to be afflicted, be bowed down, be humbled, be meek" (*Vine's Complete Expository Dictionary of Old and New Covenant Words, "To Be Humbled, Afflicted"*). The same word is used in connection with fasting in Psalm 35:13 and Ezra 8:21. Fasting means abstaining from food and drink (*Esther 4:16*).

Why does Yahweh tell us to fast during this specific 24 hours? Fasting expresses our humble desire to draw closer to Yahweh. The Day of Atonement represents a coming time of reconciliation during which, with Satan banished and the world having been devastated by the horrific events leading up to this time, a humbled and repentant humanity will at last be reconciled to Yahweh.

Few understand the proper reasons for fasting. Fasting is not to bend Yahweh to our will. We don't fast to receive anything from Yahweh except to show our appreciation for His abundant mercy and forgiveness of our human weaknesses. Fasting helps us remember how temporary our physical existence is. Without food and water, we would soon perish. Fasting helps us realize just how much we need Yahweh as the giver and sustainer of life.

We should always fast on the Day of Atonement in a repentant frame of mind. Notice Daniel's exemplary attitude while fasting: "Then I set my face toward Yahweh my God to make request by prayer and supplications, with fasting, sackcloth, and ashes. And I prayed to Yahweh my God, and made confession" (*Daniel 9:3-4*).

The early Congregation naturally kept the Day of Atonement. More than 30 years after the Messiah's death, Luke still referred to the time and seasons by mentioning this day, stating that "sailing was now dangerous because the Fast was already over" (*Acts 27:9*). Almost all Bible commentaries and dictionaries acknowledge that "the Fast" refers to the Day of Atonement.

Yet another important lesson comes to us through the Day of Atonement. We have already seen that the slain goat represented the sacrifice in our place of Yah'shua the Messiah, who took on Himself the death penalty we have earned by sinning. But Yah'shua the Messiah did not stay dead; He came back to life. What does the Day of Atonement teach us about the Messiah's role after His resurrection?

Leviticus 16:15-19 describes a solemn ceremony that was carried out only once each year, on the Day of Atonement. The high priest was to take the blood of the slain goat into the Holy Place—the most sacred part of the tabernacle—and to the mercy seat. The mercy seat was symbolic of the very throne of Almighty Yahweh. The high priest acted out the function the Messiah performs for repentant Israelites. Having ascended to the very throne of Yahweh by the blood of His sacrifice, the Messiah intercedes for us—as He has since His resurrection—as our High Priest.

The book of Hebrews makes this symbolism clear. "But the Messiah came as High Priest of the good things to come, with the

greater and more perfect tabernacle not made with hands, that is, not of this [physical] creation. Not with the blood of goats and calves, but with His own blood He entered the Most Holy Place once for all, having obtained eternal redemption" (*Hebrews 9:11-12*).

Because of the Messiah's sacrifice, we enjoy direct access to the true mercy seat-the throne of our merciful, loving Creator. This was dramatically and miraculously demonstrated at the moment of the Messiah's death, when "the veil of the temple," covering the entrance to the Holy Place, "was torn in two from top to bottom" (*Matthew 27:51; Mark 15:38*). This massive curtain over the entrance to the Holy Place was torn asunder in a dramatic testimony to the access we now have to Yahweh's throne through the Messiah.

Many verses in Hebrews mention the Messiah's role as our High Priest and intercessor. Because of His sacrifice for us, we can "come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need" (*Hebrews 4:16*). The Day of Atonement thus pictures the loving reconciliation we have with Yahweh, made possible through the Messiah's sacrifice. It also shows the remarkable truth that Satan, the author of sin, will eventually be removed so that humanity can at last attain reconciliation with Yahweh on a universal and unconditional basis.

The Day of Atonement serves as a vital preparatory step in anticipation of the next milestone in Yahweh's glorious Holy Day plan, beautifully depicted by the Feast of Tabernacles.

### **The Feast of Tabernacles: Yah'shua the Messiah Reigns Over the Earth**

In his first inspired sermon after receiving His Holy Spirit on Pentecost, the apostle Peter summed up Yahweh's instruction for mankind: "Repent therefore and be

converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of Yahweh, and that He may send Yah'shua the Messiah, who was preached to you before, whom heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things, which Yahweh has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began" (*Acts 3:19-21*).

What are these "times of refreshing" and "times of restoration" of which Peter spoke? Yahweh's plan for mankind involves restoration. The Feast of Tabernacles symbolizes the restoration process, which will start with the return of Yah'shua the Messiah, pictured by the Feast of Trumpets, and the banishment of Satan, depicted by the Day of Atonement. Once these events have taken place, as represented by the previous Holy Days, the foundation is in place for the restoration of the creation to peace and harmony with Yahweh.

The seven-day Feast of Tabernacles (*Leviticus 23:27, 34*) pictures the 1,000-year reign of Yah'shua the Messiah over the earth after His second coming (*Revelation 20:4*). This period is often called the Millennium, which simply means "1,000 years."

This Feast also reflects the "rest" symbolized by the weekly Sabbath (*Hebrews 4:1-11*) that celebrates the great harvest of humanity when all living people will learn Yahweh's ways. Humanity will at last be restored to a right relationship with Yahweh (*Isaiah 11:9-10*).

In the beginning, Yahweh created mankind to cooperate with Him in a beautiful relationship characterized by love, peace and obedience to His laws. At the completion of His creation, "Yahweh saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good" (*Genesis 1:31*).

This time of peace and harmony abruptly ended because of Satan's deception and man's disobedience (*Genesis 3:1-6*). Disobedience cut mankind off from Yahweh's way (*Genesis 3:21-24*). *Genesis 6:5* describes the tragic result: "Then Yahweh saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually."

This broken relationship between Yahweh and man has continued through history to our time. Paul reflected upon this state: "... Through one man [Adam] sin entered the world, and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men, because all sinned ..." (*Romans 5:12*). Paul knew that Yah'shua the Messiah would heal the breach created by man's disobedience: "For since by man [Adam] came death, by Man [the Messiah] also came the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in the Messiah all shall be made alive" (*1 Corinthians 15:21-22*).

### **Isaiah prophesied the restoration of the world**

Yahweh used the prophet Isaiah to reveal parts of His magnificent plan for restoring the world. Written at a time during which Israel faced punishment for continued disobedience, the book of Isaiah was inspired by Yahweh to give the nation encouragement through the promise of a better world ahead.

Yah'shua the Messiah, after reading in the synagogue one of Isaiah's prophecies, acknowledged the special understanding given Isaiah: "These things Isaiah said when he saw His glory and spoke of Him" (*John 12:41*). Isaiah not only prophesied of the Messiah's earthly ministry; he wrote of the Messiah's return in power and glory (*Isaiah 66:15-16*).

The basis for the messianic rule of Yah'shua will be Yahweh's law. Again, as Isaiah foretold, "it shall come to pass in the latter days that the mountain of Yahweh's

house shall be established on the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow to it. Many people shall come and say, 'Come, and let us go up to the mountain of Yahweh, to the house of the God of Jacob; He will teach us His ways, and we shall walk in His paths.' For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of Yahweh from Jerusalem" (*Isaiah 2:2-3*).

### **A world of peace and abundance**

After the Messiah's return, He will bring the creation in its entirety into harmony with Yahweh, and peace will no longer be the exception. King David said, "Great peace have those who love Your law" (*Psalms 119:165*). Imagine what the world will be like when everyone knows Yahweh's law and lives by it!

More than just knowledge is needed to bring about this amazing transformation. A spiritual change will take place among people. Yahweh, speaking through the prophet Ezekiel, describes how it will happen: "I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh. I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do them" (*Ezekiel 36:26-27*).

The Spirit of Yahweh will influence people to willingly and enthusiastically obey Yahweh from their hearts. People will begin to place the interests of others before their own. They will start thinking of others as "better than themselves" (*Philippians 2:3, KJV*). Instead of exclusive self-concern, their goal will be to help their fellow human beings. Theft will cease. Disregard for others' property and feelings will be eliminated. Because the world will finally be at peace, countries will "beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war anymore" (*Isaiah 2:4; Micah 4:3*).

During this 1,000-year period, Yahweh will change even the nature of wild animals, reflecting the peace that will descend upon society. Describing this idyllic time, Isaiah 11:7-9 says: "The cow and the bear shall graze; their young ones shall lie down together; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. The nursing child shall play by the cobra's hole, and the weaned child shall put his hand in the viper's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain ..."

### **Reversing the effects of sin**

Yahweh will heal physical infirmities. Isaiah 35:5-6 prophesies of this time during which "the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then the lame shall leap like a deer, and the tongue of the dumb sing ..."

Of even greater importance will be the spiritual healing that will take place. Isaiah prophesied that Yah'shua the Messiah will complete the healing He began during His ministry on earth: "The Spirit of Yahweh my GOD is upon Me, because Yahweh has anointed Me to preach good tidings to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to those who are bound; to proclaim the acceptable year of Yahweh, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all who mourn, to console those who mourn in Zion ..." (*Isaiah 61:1-3; Luke 4:18-19*). The accumulated results of generations of humans following Satan's sinful ways will begin to be reversed.

The Feast of Tabernacles is also called the Feast of Ingathering (*Exodus 23:16*). This name signified the completion of Israel's annual harvest. In this setting, Yahweh said, "you shall rejoice before Yahweh your God" (*Deuteronomy 12:12, 18; 14:26*). The Feast is a time of celebration for the abundance Yahweh has given.

This same bountiful harvest theme continues in the future fulfillment of this festival. Through Isaiah, Yahweh spoke of the desert becoming productive land, "for waters shall burst forth in the wilderness, and streams in the desert. The parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water" (*Isaiah 35:6-7*).

At that time the earth will produce bountiful harvests. "Behold, the days are coming," Yahweh says, "when the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him who sows seed; the mountains shall drip with sweet wine, and all the hills shall flow" (*Amos 9:13*).

### **The significance of tabernacles**

The name of the Feast of Tabernacles derives from Yahweh's command to ancient Israel to build temporary "tabernacles," sometimes called "booths," [*or tents or huts*] to live in during the festival. The Israelites left their houses and built temporary dwelling places (*Hebrew succah, meaning "hut of woven boughs"*) to live in while rejoicing before Yahweh. These reminded them of their release from slavery and their dwelling in booths when Yahweh brought them out of Egypt (*Leviticus 23:34, 41-43*). In stark contrast to the hardship of slavery, this festival emphasizes rest, peace and prosperity as it meets the needs of all people, including strangers, widows and the poor.

The Bible emphasizes that, as with these temporary dwellings, our physical life is transitory. The apostle Paul's writings reflect this theme: "For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of Yahweh, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven" (*2 Corinthians 5:1-2, KJV*).

Hebrews 11 recounts the examples of many of Yahweh's faithful servants down through the centuries. It then concludes that "these all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them, embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth" (*verse 13*).

The Feast of Tabernacles is an annual reminder of our temporary state and that we also "seek a homeland" (*verse 14*). This lesson is reinforced when we travel to a site of the Feast of Tabernacles and stay in temporary dwellings such as hotels and campgrounds. This festival reminds us that, in spite of our material possessions, we are still mortals in need of a literal transformation so we may possess eternal life (*1 Corinthians 15:50-54*).

In the accounts of the vision that has come to be called the "transfiguration," Yah'shua gave a glimpse of the Kingdom of Yahweh to Peter, James and John. The Messiah appeared to be talking with Moses and Elijah. Peter's immediate response was to suggest that they quickly construct three tabernacles. He seemed to understand the important connection between tabernacles and our quest for eternal life in Yahweh's Kingdom (*see Matthew 17:1-9; Luke 9:27-36*).

### **The role of the resurrected saints in the Millennium**

The judgment of the inhabitants of the earth who live during the 1,000 years as pictured by the Feast of Tabernacles (*Isaiah 2:4; 51:4-5*) begins in earnest as the Messiah brings "many sons to glory" (*Hebrews 2:10*). These scriptures show that this judgment is a time of universal opportunity for salvation.

For this purpose Yahweh has allocated 1,000 years during which the resurrected saints, the firstfruits of Yahweh's harvest, will reign with the Messiah on earth as kings and

priests so many others can enter Yahweh's Kingdom (*Revelation 5:10; 20:6*).

Yah'shua promised that "he who overcomes, and keeps My works until the end, to him I will give power over the nations" (*Revelation 2:26*). People whom Yahweh resurrects at the Messiah's return will experience the unparalleled opportunity to work with Him to help all nations build a relationship with Yahweh.

The foundation for this relationship begins with instruction on Yahweh's law and these very Holy Days. Notice Zechariah's words: "And it shall come to pass that everyone who is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship Yahweh, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles" (*Zechariah 14:16*).

Other prophets described the time as an era of Yahweh's law covering the earth "as the waters cover the sea" (*Isaiah 11:9; Habakkuk 2:14*).

Many will assist Yah'shua the Messiah in this universal educational program of helping others understand Yahweh's way. Speaking of this time, Isaiah says teachers "will not be moved into a corner anymore, but your eyes shall see your teachers. Your ears shall hear a word behind you, saying, 'This is the way, walk in it,' whenever you turn to the right hand or whenever you turn to the left" (*Isaiah 30:20-21*).

The chance to help others understand and be reconciled to Yahweh is a wonderful calling. Each who serves in this way will be called "the Repairer of the Breach, The Restorer of Streets to Dwell In" (*Isaiah 58:12*).

Yahweh calls people out of the world at this time to become His chosen people, sanctified and redeemed by Him (*2 Corinthians 6:16-7:1*). They are to live exemplary lives as Yahweh prepares them for service during the

Messiah's millennial reign and beyond. "Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul," the apostle Peter wrote, "having your conduct honourable among the Gentiles, that when they speak against you as evildoers, they may, by your good works which they observe, glorify Yahweh in the day of visitation" (*1 Peter 2:11-12*).

### **One final conflict**

All through Yahweh's plan for saving humanity, He never forces anyone to obey Him. Every person is free to choose what he or she will do and whether to accept or reject Yahweh's way of life.

After the 1,000 years, Yahweh will allow Satan to test the spiritual convictions of the earth's inhabitants. Revelation 20:7-10 describes this time. Yahweh will loose the devil from his place of restraint and allow him to deceive those who are not convicted of the perfect righteousness of Yahweh's way.

Yahweh will destroy by fire those who follow Satan in this rebellion. Satan's futile efforts will be thwarted.

This final, tragic rebellion against Yahweh will come to nothing, and Satan's destructive, deceitful influence over humanity will finally draw to a close.

The stage is now set for the events depicted by yet one more Holy Day. The Feast of Tabernacles offers a marvellous opportunity for salvation to those left alive at the Messiah's return, as well as their physical descendants during the Millennium.

But what about the thousands of millions of people of past generations who have lived and died without ever understanding—or even hearing—Yahweh's truth? And what about those who will die in the cataclysmic upheaval preceding the Messiah's return? How will Yahweh offer them salvation?

### **The Last Great Day: Eternal Life Offered to All**

The Bible makes abundantly clear in Acts 4:12 that "there is no other name under heaven" than that of Yah'shua the Messiah by which human beings can be saved.

This particular passage raises troubling questions for anyone who believes that Yahweh is desperately trying to save the whole world in this age. If this is the only time for salvation, we must conclude that the Messiah's mission to save humanity has largely failed. After all, billions of people have lived and died without once hearing the name of Yah'shua the Messiah. Thousands die every day never having heard or fully known of the Messiah.

In spite of the missionary zeal of so many over the centuries, far more human souls have been "lost" than "saved." If Yahweh is truly all powerful, why have so many not even heard the gospel of salvation? The traditional portrayal of conflict between Yahweh and Satan over mankind leaves Yahweh on the losing side of the struggle.

What is the fate of these people? What does Yahweh have in mind for those who have never believed in the Messiah or understood any of Yahweh's truth? How does the Creator provide for them in His plan? Are they lost forever without any hope of salvation?

We should not doubt Yahweh's saving power! Let's examine some common assumptions and come to an understanding of our Creator's marvelous solution.

### **Resolving the dilemma**

Paul tells us that Yahweh "desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth" (*1 Timothy 2:4*). Peter adds that Yahweh is "not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance" (*2 Peter 3:9*). This is Yahweh's overriding goal in dealing with mankind: He desires as many as

possible to repent, come to the knowledge of the truth and receive His gift of salvation!

Yah'shua explained how this will come to pass. John 7:1-14 describes how Yah'shua went to Jerusalem for the Feast of Tabernacles. He appeared publicly and stood in the midst of the people. "If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (*John 7:37-38*).

The Messiah's message recorded here most likely was given on the seventh day of the Feast of Tabernacles. Scholars vary on whether this was the seventh day or the day following, but the weight of evidence and the series of events indicate that John 7 describes incidents on the seventh day while the setting moves to the eighth day in John 8 and 9.

It is also possible that the Messiah's teaching recorded in John 7:37-38 came at the end of the seventh day or the very beginning of the eighth day (Yahweh's Holy Days begin with sunset and end at the following sunset), as the chapter concludes with people returning to their homes after sundown for the night. The theme of the Messiah's teaching then continues in chapter 8 (*which is clearly the next morning, verse 2*) and includes the offer of salvation to all mankind.

In Leviticus 23:39, we see that this day immediately follows the Feast of Tabernacles but is a separate festival with its own distinct meaning. Based on the Messiah's words and the theme of offering salvation to all mankind, we refer to this festival as "the Last Great Day," although the Bible simply calls it "the eighth day."

### **Symbolism of the Messiah's teaching**

What was the significance of the Messiah's teaching about "living water"? In the Messiah's time, according to tradition, during the Feast of Tabernacles the priests would bring golden vessels of water from the stream

of Siloam that had flowed from the temple hill and pour it over the altar. Joyous celebration along with the sounding of trumpets marked this ceremony as the people sang the words of Isaiah: "... With joy you will draw water from the wells of salvation" (*Isaiah 12:3*).

Yah'shua stood where all could hear Him and drew a lesson from the water, revealing that all who were thirsty could come to Him and be refreshed-forever. In the Messiah's analogy, the water represented Yahweh's Holy Spirit, which those who believed in Yah'shua would receive (John 7:39). He showed that the basic wants of spiritual thirst and hunger could be satisfied only by Him as "the bread of life" (*John 6:48*) and the source of living water.

But when would this happen? Within six months the Messiah's own countrymen pressured the Roman authorities to execute Him. Less than 40 years later the temple and all its ceremonies, including those described above, were brought to an end at the hands of the Roman legions.

Humanity still hungers and thirsts for the message the Messiah brought. Yahweh's promise to "pour out My Spirit on all flesh" (*Joel 2:28*) has not yet fully taken place. Thousands of millions have died with their deepest spiritual needs unrealized. When will they be refreshed by the life-giving power of Yahweh's Spirit?

### **A physical resurrection to a first opportunity for salvation**

To find the answer, we must consider a question the disciples put to the Messiah just before He ascended to heaven: "Lord, will You at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?" (*Acts 1:6*). When the disciples spoke of this restoration, they understood it in the context of the many prophecies of a reunited nation of Israel.

One such prophecy is in Ezekiel 37:3-6. This passage describes Ezekiel's vision of a

valley full of bones. Yahweh asks, "Son of man, can these bones live?" To which the prophet replies: "O Lord Yahweh, You know." Yahweh then says to the bones, "Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am Yahweh."

In this vision a physical resurrection took place. The account acknowledges the hopeless situation in which these people had found themselves: "Our bones are dry, our hope is lost, and we ourselves are cut off!" (*verse 11*).

Their Creator, however, offers them the hope of a resurrection and the gift of His Holy Spirit in the setting of a reunited nation. In this dramatic vision, ancient Israel serves as the model for other peoples that Yahweh will resurrect to physical life. Yahweh said: "Behold, O My people, I will open your graves and cause you to come up from your graves ... I will put My Spirit in you, and you shall live" (*verses 12, 14*). At this future time Yahweh will make freely available the life-giving spiritual water of His Holy Spirit.

Yahweh will "make a covenant of peace with them, and it shall be an everlasting covenant with them ... My tabernacle also shall be with them; indeed I will be their God, and they shall be My people" (*verses 26-27*).

The apostle Paul also referred to this yet-future event: "I say then, has Yahweh cast away His people? Certainly not! For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. Yahweh has not cast away His people whom He foreknew" (*Romans 11:1-2*). As Paul wrote, "all Israel will be saved" (*verse 26*).

Not only Israel, but all who have never had a chance to drink from the living waters of Yahweh's Word and His Holy Spirit will at last be able to do so (*Romans 9:22-26*). Yahweh

will freely offer them the opportunity for eternal life during a second, mortal lifetime.

### **The Great White Throne Judgment**

In Revelation 20:5 John writes that "the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished." Here John makes a clear distinction between the first resurrection, which occurs at the Messiah's second coming (*verses 4, 6*), and the second resurrection, which takes place at the end of the Messiah's millennial reign. Remember that the first resurrection is to eternal life. By contrast, Yahweh raises those in the second resurrection to a physical, flesh-and-blood existence.

John discusses this same second resurrection to physical life that Ezekiel wrote about: "Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before Yahweh, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works" (*verses 11-13*).

The dead who stand before their Creator are all those who died never knowing the true God. Like Ezekiel's vision of dry bones coming back to life, these people emerge from their graves and begin to know their God. The books (*biblia in Greek, from which we get the word Bible*) are the Scriptures, the only source of the knowledge of eternal life. Finally all will have an opportunity to fully understand Yahweh's plan of salvation.

This physical resurrection is not a second chance for salvation. For these people it is a first opportunity to really know the

Creator. The resurrected are "judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books" (*verse 12*). This judgment will involve a period during which they will enjoy the opportunity to hear, understand and grow in Yahweh's way of life, having their names inscribed in the book of life (*verse 15*). During this time thousands of millions of people will gain access to eternal life for their first time.

This final festival of the year shows how deep and far reaching are the merciful judgments of Yahweh. Yah'shua the Messiah spoke of the wonderful truth depicted by this day when He compared three cities that failed to respond to His miraculous works with three cities of the ancient world: "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I say to you, it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment than for you. And you, Capernaum, who are exalted to the sky, will be brought down to Hades; for if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say to you that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for you" (*Matthew 11:21-24*).

The inhabitants of ancient Tyre, Sidon and Sodom—cities that had incurred the wrath of Yahweh for their depravities—will receive mercy in the day of judgment. Unlike Chorazin, Bethsaida and Capernaum, these cities of old had little opportunity to know Yahweh. Yahweh will resurrect these people and include them in the time of judgment that is beyond the 1,000-year reign of the Messiah, when even those who lived in bygone ages will be reconciled to Yahweh.

It will be a time of universal knowledge of Yahweh. From the least to the greatest, all will know Him (*Hebrews 8:11*). The citizens of

these cities, and countless more like them, will experience their opportunity for salvation.

This final period of judgment completes Yahweh's plan of salvation for the world. It will be a time of love, deep mercy and the unsearchable judgment of Yahweh. The chance to drink of the life-giving waters of His Holy Spirit will indeed quench the deepest thirsts of men and women. This time of righteous judgment will bring back to life those long forgotten by humanity, but never forgotten by Yahweh.

What is the fate of those who die with no real knowledge of the Son of Yahweh? What hope is there for the millions who have lived and died without knowledge of Yahweh's purpose? The Scriptures show that these are not cut off without hope. Yahweh will bring them back to life and give them their opportunity for eternal salvation. This is the astounding truth depicted by the Last Great Day, the last of Yahweh's festivals.

Yahweh will see His plan through and bring many sons to glory (*Hebrews 2:10*). Yahweh's promise to "pour out My Spirit on all flesh" (*Joel 2:28*) will find its fullest manifestation. The thirst-quenching waters of His Holy Spirit will be available to all in the time depicted by "that great day of the feast." What a marvelous plan these biblical festivals portray. How great would be our lack of understanding without them!

### **How to Observe Yahweh's Holy Days**

After we come to realize that the Holy Days are vitally important to mankind and eminently applicable to our modern world, we naturally want to learn more about how to observe them.

Where should we celebrate them? Should we keep them at home or in some kind of religious service? What should we do on these days? Does Yahweh mind if we do our normal work on these days, or should we

reserve them for other purposes? How will the observance of these days affect our families and jobs?

These are all important questions we must consider upon learning about Yahweh's festivals. Let's examine some biblical principles we should consider in dealing with these real-life issues.

Some of these festivals have designated methods of observance that set them apart from the others. For example, only the Passover involves partaking of bread and wine as symbols of the Messiah's death. The Days of Unleavened Bread are the only feast days during which Yahweh tells us to remove leaven from our homes. The Day of Atonement also stands alone as the one Holy Day observed by fasting. Proper observance of these days includes acknowledging their distinctions, which are designed to teach us spiritual lessons.

Taken as a whole, however, there are principles applicable to observing all of Yahweh's Holy Days. First, we must remember that these days are Holy to Yahweh. They are "the feasts of Yahweh, which you shall proclaim to be Holy convocations," says Yahweh (*Leviticus 23:2*).

Yahweh is the only one who can make anything Holy. Yahweh places these days on a plane higher than all humanly devised or artificial celebrations. Men and women can dedicate time to Yahweh for a special purpose, but Yahweh alone can set time aside as His Holy time (*Genesis 2:3; Exodus 20:8, 11*). When we exercise proper respect and appreciation for these special annual occasions, we also honour Yahweh Himself by acknowledging His authority over our lives. Understanding this principle is important to worshiping Yahweh properly.

Our Creator desires that people willingly and in faith follow all of His instructions (Isaiah

66:2). A cooperative, humble attitude stands in contrast to the frame of mind of those who want only to do as little as possible to get by. The heart of the matter is whether we really believe and love Yahweh. The apostle John illustrated the attitude Yahweh desires when he wrote: "For this is the love of Yahweh, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome" (*1 John 5:3*).

### **Yahweh commands annual assemblies**

But how does Yahweh want us to conduct ourselves on these days? Consider His basic instruction: "These are Yahweh's appointed feasts, the sacred assemblies you are to proclaim at their appointed times ..." (*Leviticus 23:4, NIV*). Other versions of the Bible, such as the King James and New King James, use the phrase "holy convocations," but the meaning is the same. These are annual occasions on which we should gather with other believers. As with the weekly Sabbath, Yahweh commands special sacred assemblies on each of the Holy Days.

Yahweh revealed to the early Israelites the principle of meeting with others of like mind on the Sabbaths and Holy Days: "Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering, for He who promised is faithful. And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and good works, not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the manner of some, but exhorting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching" (*Hebrews 10:23-25*). What better time to encourage and exhort each other than on the days that depict Yahweh's great plan of salvation!

When we assemble at the times of these annual festivals, we allow ourselves a wonderful opportunity to learn more about Yahweh's plan of salvation. Nehemiah 8

records a striking instance of Yahweh's people gathering to observe the Feast of Trumpets (*verse 2*). During their religious service, the leaders "helped the people to understand the Law ... So they read distinctly from the book, in the Law of Yahweh; and they gave the sense, and helped them to understand the reading" (*verses 7-8*). The early Congregation continued to keep these yearly feast days according to these same principles, but with much greater spiritual understanding (*Acts 2; 1 Corinthians 5:6-8*).

In Nehemiah's day, because the people had neglected Yahweh's festivals, they needed encouragement. "And Nehemiah, who was the governor, Ezra the priest and scribe, and the Levites who taught the people said to all the people, 'This day is holy to Yahweh your God; do not mourn nor weep.' For all the people wept, when they heard the words of the Law. Then he said to them, 'Go your way, eat the fat, drink the sweet, and send portions to those for whom nothing is prepared; for this day is holy to our LORD. Do not sorrow, for the joy of Yahweh is your strength'" (*Nehemiah 8:9-10*). Then, after they were taught Yahweh's law, "all the people went their way to eat and drink, to send portions and rejoice greatly, because they understood the words that were declared to them" (*verse 12*).

These special days are meant to be enjoyed by the whole family, friends, the poor and entire neighbourhoods—everyone who attends! Especially at the Feast of Tabernacles, sufficient time is available for proper family and community activities and recreation as well as rejoicing over the knowledge Yahweh reveals.

To properly rejoice on Yahweh's days of celebration, we are not to do our customary work (*Leviticus 23:3, 7-8, 21, 25, 35-36*). Notice that, even though preparing food for the Holy Days does entail work, Yahweh says that this

kind of effort is entirely appropriate. However, on the Day of Atonement we are to forgo all regular work including, of course, food preparation (*verses 28, 30-31*).

We also demonstrate our obedience and commitment to Yahweh by arranging time off from our jobs so we can observe the Holy Days. With proper planning and respectful communication with employers, most people can work out the details required to be able to take these days off. It is our responsibility to use wisdom and patience when informing family members, friends, neighbours and employers of our decision to observe the festivals.

### **Living by faith**

Responding to Yahweh's instruction is a matter of faith. As Paul said in 2 Corinthians 5:7: "For we walk by faith, not by sight." It is, therefore, important for us to start keeping the Holy Days when we learn about them. Even though we may not understand everything at first, we will learn a great deal more as we actually begin observing them.

In summary, the Feast days of Yahweh are a time of happiness, not just because of their meaning for us, but because of the wonderful hope they promise for all mankind. Observing the Holy Days reminds us of Yahweh's great love for humanity. Worshiping Yahweh in this way is a joy and pleasure. These festivals truly are Yahweh's gifts to His people!

If you would like to learn more about observing the annual festivals, please feel free to contact us at your convenience.

## Annual Festivals and Holy Days of Yahweh

<b>Passover*</b>	<b>Roman Year:</b>	<b>Roman Dates:</b>	<b>Hebrew Year:</b>	<b>Hebrew Dates:</b>
John 13: 1-5, 14, 15	2012	Fri. April 6th	5772	Nisan 14 <sup>th</sup>
1 Cor. 5:7	2013	Mon. March 25th	5773	Nisan 14 <sup>th</sup>
Leviticus 23:5	2014	Mon. April 14 <sup>th</sup>	5774	Nisan 14 <sup>th</sup>
Luke 22:14-20	2015	Fri. April 3rd	5775	Nisan 14 <sup>th</sup>
*Observe previous evening	2016	Fri. April 22nd	5776	Nisan 14 <sup>th</sup>

### **Feast of Unleavened Bread**

1 Cor. 5:8	2012	April 7th to April 13th	5772	Nisan 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
Leviticus 23:6-8	2013	March 26th to April 1st	5773	Nisan 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
Romans 6:4	2014	April 15 <sup>th</sup> to April 21st	5774	Nisan 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
	2015	April 4 <sup>th</sup> to April 10 <sup>th</sup>	5775	Nisan 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
	2016	April 23rd to April 29 <sup>th</sup>	5776	Nisan 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>

### **Pentecost (Feast of Weeks)**

Romans 8:23	2012	Sun. May 27 <sup>th</sup>	5772	Sivan 6th
Leviticus 23:15-22	2013	Sun. May 12th	5773	Sivan 3rd
Acts 2:1-4	2014	Sun. June 1 <sup>st</sup>	5774	Sivan 3rd
	2015	Sun. May 24th	5775	Sivan 6 <sup>th</sup>
	2016	Sun. June 12 <sup>th</sup>	5776	Sivan 6 <sup>th</sup>

### **First Day of Sacred Year**

	2012	September 16 <sup>th</sup>	5773	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
	2013	September 5 <sup>th</sup>	5774	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
	2014	September 25th	5775	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
	2015	September 14 <sup>th</sup>	5776	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
	2016	October 3rd	5777	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>

### **Feast of Trumpets**

1 Thess. 4:16,17	2012	Sun September 16 <sup>th</sup>	5773	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
Revelation 11:15	2013	Thur. September 5 <sup>th</sup>	5774	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
Leviticus 23:23-25	2014	Thur. September 25 <sup>th</sup>	5775	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
Matthew 24:30,31	2015	Mon. September 14 <sup>th</sup>	5776	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>
	2016	Mon. October 3rd	5777	Tishri 1 <sup>st</sup>

### **Day of Atonement**

Leviticus 23:26-32	2012	Wed. September 26th	5773	Tishri 10 <sup>th</sup>
Revelation 20:1-3	2013	Sab. September 14 <sup>th</sup>	5774	Tishri 10 <sup>th</sup>
	2014	Sab. October 4th	5775	Tishri 10 <sup>th</sup>
	2015	Wed. September 23rd	5776	Tishri 10 <sup>th</sup>
	2016	Wed. October 12 <sup>th</sup>	5777	Tishri 10 <sup>th</sup>

### **Feast of Tabernacles**

Leviticus 23:33-43	2012	October 1st to October 7th	5773	Tishri 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
Revelation 20:4-6	2013	Sept. 19 <sup>th</sup> to Sept. 25th	5774	Tishri 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
	2014	October 9th to October 15 <sup>th</sup>	5775	Tishri 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
	2015	Sept. 28th to October 4th	5776	Tishri 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>
	2016	October 17 <sup>th</sup> to Oct. 23rd	5777	Tishri 15 <sup>th</sup> to 21 <sup>st</sup>

### **Last Great Day**

Revelation 20:5, 11, 12	2012	Mon. October 8th	5773	Tishri 22 <sup>nd</sup>
Leviticus 23:36	2013	Thur. September 26th	5774	Tishri 22 <sup>nd</sup>
Matthew 12:41-42	2014	Thur. October 16 <sup>th</sup>	5775	Tishri 22 <sup>nd</sup>
	2015	Mon. October 5th	5776	Tishri 22 <sup>nd</sup>
	2016	Thur. October 20 <sup>th</sup>	5777	Tishri 22 <sup>nd</sup>

## Celebrating Hanukkah:



Most of the world considers Hanukkah (*HA-noo-ka*) to be a “Jewish” holiday, however it is properly a Holy “Event”, celebrated in commemorative manner by people of the Hebrew faith, which coincidentally includes “Jews” (Jews are NOT descendants of the tribe of Judah). Hanukkah is not specifically set forth in the Bible by name or as a Yahweh-appointed Holy Day, but the events that are celebrated at Hanukkah are indeed “Holy”, inasmuch as they are directly related to Bible prophecy.

It is celebrated in late November or early December. The exact date is determined according to the Hebrew calendar. Hanukkah falls on the 25th day of the Hebrew month of Kislev. Hanukkah celebrates the victory of the Hebrew people over King Antiochus Epiphanes, a pagan tyrant from Greece, who tried to destroy the Hebrew faith in 165 BC. It also celebrates the rededication of the Hebrew Temple in Jerusalem. To understand Hanukkah, you must be familiar with the history behind it.

Prior to the reign of Antiochus, the Hebrews lived in relative peace under various rulers and kings. Though their rulers changed, their lives were generally unaffected. One tradition that was particularly significant to their culture involved going to their Temple in Jerusalem. They called their Temple “The

House of Yahweh” and it was considered a very sacred place. It was decorated with many precious objects. Among those precious items was a lamp that burned continuously, symbolizing the enduring Hebrew faith.

However, when Antiochus came to power, he placed many burdens upon the Hebrews. They had to pay high taxes and he tried to force them to replace their Biblical laws and traditions with Greek ones. He even forced the Hebrews to take a new high priest, Menelaus. The new high priest began to steal from the Temple and send precious gold and silver to Antiochus. This made the Hebrews angry. While Antiochus was fighting a war in Egypt, a small army of Hebrew soldiers surrounded the temple to force Menelaus out.

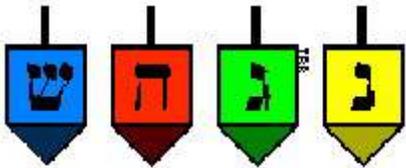
Fearing that the Hebrews were rising up against him, when Antiochus returned, he caused his army to storm the Temple. They tore down the city walls and stripped the Temple of anything they could carry. The soldiers placed a Greek idol upon the golden altar and allowed pigs to run within the sacred grounds. Hebrews were threatened with death if they refused to worship the new idols. The soldiers drank the holy water and set fire to books containing holy writings. Amongst all the chaos, the oil in the lamp was spilled and the light in the Temple went out.

Because Antiochus had his army storm the Temple on the Sabbath, the Hebrews wouldn't fight back. Thousands were either killed or carried off and sold as slaves. However, later, a man named Matthias refused to obey the king's men. He took his five sons and others who would follow him into the mountains where they planned how they might regain their right to worship as they pleased. King Antiochus sent an army after them, but they were unsuccessful in defeating Matthias and his men. Under the direction of Matthias and then later his son, Judah, ordinary farmers

and shepherds learned to fight like brave soldiers. Judah was nicknamed Maccabee, meaning "the hammer" because of the way he fought King Antiochus' men.

Finally, after many battles, the king's army was beaten by Judah's men. Hebrew people, including modern Jews consider this to be the first miracle of Hanukkah.

The Maccabees, another name for Judah's army, returned to Jerusalem where they found their Temple abandoned and defiled. The sight made them very sad, but they immediately set forth to cleanse and rebuild the Temple. When it came time for its rededication, Judah and his men looked for oil to re-light the lamp, but they could only find enough for the lamp to burn for one day. However, the lamp continued to burn for eight days and nights until more oil was made. They considered this to be the second miracle of Hanukkah. The Hebrew people as well as those that call themselves Jews have continued to celebrate Hanukkah ever since.



Symbols that are associated with the celebration of Hanukkah include the menorah (*meh NOAR-uh*), dreidels (*DRAY-dels*), potato latkes, and gelt. The menorah is a special candelabrum that holds nine candles. The

middle candle is called the shammash (*SHAHM-mahs*) or server candle because it is used to light the other candles. It usually stands a little bit higher than the others. Candles are lit after sundown on each of the eight nights of Hanukkah. On the first night the server candle is lit as well as the first candle on the far right. On the seven succeeding nights another candle is added from right to left until all eight candles are lit. The family member who lights the Hanukkah candles recites traditional blessings. The menorah represents the miracle of the lamp burning for eight days on barely enough oil for one.

A dreidel is a small top with four sides. Each side is marked with a Hebrew letter (*nun, gimel, hey, and shin*). The letters stand for "A Great Miracle Happened There," referring to the two miracles of Hanukkah. There are many variations of this game that children enjoy playing as they celebrate Hanukkah.

Potato latkes, similar to pancakes, are a traditional food eaten around Hanukkah time. They are generally made by combining grated potatoes, eggs, onions, flour, and salt. Then they are deep-fried in oil to symbolize the lamp that burned for eight days when it only had enough oil for one.

Gelt is Hanukkah money. In many homes, children are given gifts and Hanukkah gelt, which may be used in dreidel games.

### **"My Father's House"**

When Solomon completed the building of the original Temple of Yahweh in Jerusalem, he made a simple statement that clearly summed up what that Temple was, and what that Temple was not, and exactly where Yahweh was in relation to it: "Behold, heaven and the highest heaven cannot contain Thee; how much less this house which I have built ... hearken Thou to the supplications of Thy servant and of Thy people Israel, when they pray toward this place; yea, hear Thou from

heaven Thy dwelling place." (2 Chronicles 6:18,21 RSV)

**A Place of Worship, "Consecrated For My Name":**

The original Temple was consecrated for Yahweh's Name, and called a Temple of Yahweh, or House of Yahweh, even though Yahweh remained in heaven e.g. "Yahweh is in His Holy Temple, Yahweh's throne is in heaven." (*Psalms 11:4*). It could perhaps be compared to the principle of a country opening (or closing, temporarily or permanently, whenever a decision is made to do so) an embassy in a foreign land, that is to be treated with the utmost respect and never to be violated, where official diplomatic business is conducted. The Temple of Yahweh was meant in a possessive sense, even though the "Head of State" remained at home.

**Regarding the original Temple:**

"I have heard your prayer and your supplication, which you have made before Me; I have consecrated this house which you have built, and put My Name there for ever; My eyes and My heart will be there for all time." (*1 Kings 9:3 RSV*) "But if you turn aside from following Me, you or your children, and do not keep My commandments and My statutes which I have set before you, but go and serve other gods and worship them, then I will cut off Israel from the land which I have given them; and the house which I have consecrated for My Name I will cast out of My sight." (*1 Kings 9:6-7 RSV*)

The original Temple of Yahweh was destroyed, that is, Yahweh had it destroyed, not because He turned His back on the Israelites, but because they turned their back on Him. Later however, at the appointed time, the Hebrews returned from the Babylonian captivity because Yahweh had a Persian king release them and allow them to return to Jerusalem to rebuild the Temple of Yahweh as a sacred place of worship. It was Yahweh's

command to rebuild that Temple (or sacred "embassy," if you wish), not something that the Hebrews took it upon themselves to do: "In the first year of Cyrus king of Persia that The Word of Yahweh by the mouth of Jeremiah might be accomplished, Yahweh stirred up the spirit of Cyrus king of Persia so that he made a proclamation throughout all his kingdom and also put it in writing: "Thus says Cyrus king of Persia: Yahweh, the God of heaven, has given me all the kingdoms of the earth, and He has charged me to build Him a house at Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Whoever is among you of all His people, may Yahweh be with him, and let him go up to Jerusalem, which is in Judah, and rebuild the house of Yahweh, the God of Israel - He is the God Who is in Jerusalem." (*Ezra 1:2 RSV*)

**"My Father's House":**

From a Israelite point of view the term Temple takes on a much greater meaning: "for through Him we both have access in one Spirit to The Father. So then you are no longer strangers and sojourners, but you are fellow citizens with the saints and members of the household of Yahweh, built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Yah'shua the Messiah Himself being the cornerstone, in Whom the whole structure is joined together and grows into a holy Temple in Yahweh; in Whom you also are built into it for a dwelling place of Yahweh in His Holy Spirit." (*Ephesians 2:18-22 RSV*) "Do you not know that you are Yahweh's Temple and that Yahweh's Spirit dwells in you? If any one destroys Yahweh's Temple, Yahweh will destroy him. For Yahweh's Temple is holy, and that Temple you are." (*1 Corinthians 3:16-17 RSV*)

Nevertheless, Yah'shua the Messiah, Who we may be absolutely certain knew what He was talking about, had no problem calling that re-built physical Temple in Jerusalem "My

Father's House," or Yahweh's House, a sacred place, not because Yahweh lived there, since Yah'shua the Messiah plainly always prayed to The Father in heaven, but because Yahweh was worshiped there. He used the term Temple in a possessive sense. "Did you not know that I must be in My Father's House?" (*Luke 2:49 RSV*) "You shall not make My Father's House a house of trade." (*John 2:16 RSV*)

#### **An End-Time Israelite Temple:**

There are a number of groups working toward the construction of an end-time Temple - a physical, Hebrew Temple in Jerusalem. Their preparations are genuine, professional, and well financed. They would begin building today if the political situation permitted it. But will it happen?

Many Christian-professing people reject the thought of any such possibility, or deny Yah'shua the Messiah's own words and say that such a Temple could not be called a Temple of Yahweh, because their own perspective of Temple is now purely spiritual. But unconverted Jews aren't Israelites, who nevertheless worship and are subject to the true and only God. Jews have a religious perspective of their own, and since 1948, the Jewish state of the former (proper) Israel has been a reality.

Israelites and Jews worship the same God; Yahweh the true God, but differently, at different stages of understanding and fulfillment. Is the Hebrew religion now to be considered irrelevant? Most certainly not, according to the Israelite apostle Paul: "Then what advantage has the Hebrew? ... Much in every way. To begin with, the Hebrews are entrusted with the oracles [*words*] of Yahweh." (*Romans 3:1-2*)

A great many other Israelites, including this writer, believe that the Hebrew people will indeed construct another Temple of Yahweh (the exact form that it will take is yet to be

seen) that will be a focal point of many Israelite prophecies. These Scriptures of Bible Prophecy, among others, can only mean an actual physical Temple, in Jerusalem, just prior to The Return Of Yah'shua the Messiah.

#### **A Physical Measurement Of A Physical Temple:**

"Then I was given a measuring rod like a staff, and I was told: "Rise and measure the Temple of Yahweh and the altar and those who worship there, but do not measure the court outside the Temple; leave that out, for it is given over to the nations, and they will trample over the holy city for forty-two months. And I will grant My two witnesses power to prophesy for one thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth." (*Revelation 11:1-3 RSV*)

#### **Abomination Of A Physical Temple:**

"Forces from him shall appear and profane the Temple and fortress, and shall take away the continual burnt offering. And they shall set up the abomination that makes desolate." (*Daniel 11:31 RSV*)

#### **No Physical Human Can Enter Yahweh's Spiritual Temple:**

"Let no one deceive you in any way; for that day will not come, unless the rebellion comes first, and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself against every so-called god or object of worship, so that he takes his seat in the Temple of Yahweh, proclaiming himself to be Yahweh." (*2 Thessalonians 2:3-4 RSV*)

#### **Yah'shua' Specific Warning About A Physical Temple In Judea:**

"So when you see the desolating sacrilege spoken of by the prophet Daniel, standing in the Holy Place, let the reader understand, then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains." (*Matthew 24:15-16 RSV*)

## Yahweh - the proper name of the One and only God-Almighty



### Hebrew "YHWH" = English "Yahweh":

Most people today would probably regard the Name of our Creator God as something irrelevant and tell you that it was sufficient to simply call Him "God" or "Lord". A typical retort might be: "We all worship the same God but call Him (*or Her*) by different names." Others would reply: "Knowing the Name is not important but knowing who He is, is important."

If you were to ask people who believed in the existence of our Creator God, what His Name was, the vast majority would likely shake their head and tell you they did not know. If you asked the Jehovah's Witnesses they would instantly reply "Jehovah". Many Mormons would tell you that His Name is "Elohim"; the United Pentecostals would reply, "Jesus" and others would probably say "Father" or "Heavenly Father". Jews call Him "Adonai". Ask a Muslim and he will tell you that his our God's Name is "Allah"; a Hindu and he would offer one of many names such as "Brahma", "Vishnu" or "Kali". A Free Mason would (*if you were a suitably ranked fellow free mason*) tell you that our God was called "Jabulon" or (if you were not so ranked), "the Great Architect". Many occultist groups would say it was "Lucifer", "Maitrea", "Gaia", Satan, or many others. Take a survey of every religious group in the world and you would end up with hundreds of totally different names.

Your name is important. If your name was John Smith, would you object if someone

called you "man" or "him" or "that guy" or "the man"? Equally, if your name was Mary Jones, you would not wish to be called Florence Nightingale. As individuals, Mary and Florence are unique.

Many have had experiences with various "nicknames". I knew a young teenager that had several unfortunate car accidents in a short period of time, and his friends "nick-named" him "crash". But only "Jonathon" (*or its abbreviation "Jon"*) was his true temporal, or earthly name, and it is the only one by which he can be positively identified. He could not for example, sign anything as "crash", nor be held accountable for anything as "crash", or even "John", for that matter.

We read in the Gospels how John the Baptist received his name directly through revelation from an angel of Yahweh (*Lk.1:11ff*) "John" (*or more properly in the English equivalent of the original Hebrew, Yochanan*) was not a name used by their relatives (*v.61*) and thus Elizabeth was breaking with tradition when she named him John. When John's father, Zechariah, who had been struck dumb earlier, confirmed that his son's name was John, his power of speech was instantly restored to him and he praised Yahweh (*vv.62ff*). Thus in the eyes of Yahweh the name "John" was very IMPORTANT. Any other name would have been contrary to the will of Yahweh.

There are numerous accounts in the Scriptures of Yahweh giving His servants new names -- Abram was renamed Abraham, Sarai was renamed Sarah, Jacob was renamed Israel, and so on. Within each Divinely appointed name was a revelation and commission from Yahweh. It was therefore sacred. Had Zechariah refused to name his son John and given him another name like Eli, for example, not only would he have remained dumb, but it is likely that a far worse fate would

have befallen him. WE ARE NOT TO TAMPER WITH DIVINELY-ORDAINED NAMES.

For centuries, Jewish superstition did not allow the word "Yahweh" to be spoken aloud! The early Romans took great advantage of this by using it as their excuse to change His name in their translation of the Vulgate, to the generic titles of LORD, Lord, GOD and God. They have never provided any genuine rationale for this change, nor for the variations of the form these titles are expressed in, aside from it was done by "the Divine authority of God" - which God, we may never know!

Thus the true Name of our God became concealed and subsequently lost to many. Unlike modern languages such as English, French, or German, the original written form of the Hebrew language did not contain vowels. The words consisted of only consonants, and were joined together into one long string. Thus the English equivalent to the sentence, "My name is John Smith" would have appeared as: M NM S JHN SMTH or MNMSJHNSMTH. Familiarity with the ancient Hebrew language allows one to mentally insert what others would tend to think of as the "missing" vowels in the written or spoken form. This also contributed to the Romans erroneous excuses for the otherwise deliberate tampering with Yahweh's word.

Later Hebrew scholars added the vowels into the Hebrew text (called "pointing") so that it would be more readable for non-Hebrews. However, the missing vowels of the Divine Name Yahweh were not re-inserted -- instead, the vowels from the Hebrew ADONAI (*meaning "Lord"*) were inserted in their place by 15th century translators, which led to the false transliteration, JEHOVAH. Unfortunately and despite the fact that most scholars recognize this erroneous propagation of the Divine Name, many Bibles acknowledge or use it.

Most others either substitute "LORD" or "Lord" or "GOD" or "God" for Yahweh's name if they don't erroneously insert "JEHOVAH". "Lord" is not proper a name at all, rather it is merely a title used historically by many humans in the stead of "master". "God" is also not a name, but a title, which could be compared with the military examples of titles like, sergeant, private, general, etc. "LORD" or "GOD" are not only not proper names, they are not even proper words to represent titles in English. English form and style reserves Capital letters solely and strictly by definition, for the first letter of a proper name, or for abbreviations. Thus "GOD" by proper definition, must stand for some unknown, three abbreviated words.

Most uses of the fabricated name "JEHOVAH", are of the all capital version, making it purely nonsense from a proper English language perspective. Even "Jehovah" spelled in proper upper and lower case letters is not only an erroneous transliteration, but it is blasphemous, for literally translated, it means "Y-H is mischievous". The Hebrew, "hovah" is the transliteral equivalent to, "mischievous", or "ruin", or "disaster", or "perverse", which fairly well explains why we are not surprised that one of the most infamous pseudo-Christian cults in the history of Christianity, uses this false name.

Does it matter whether we get the Name of the Holy One wrong? If we use a wrong name in ignorance then are we, not guilty? Perhaps this could be admirably argued, but once we do come to the true knowledge, we not only become accountable, we come obligated to be respectful. If you were introduced to someone as Bruce, would you then proceed to address him as "man", or "him" or "the man" or "that man", "guy" or some other form of title as opposed to his proper name? This is precisely what virtually all copy-righted Bibles have done with Yahweh's name, and by

extension what these Bibles have been teaching us to do as well!

We should understand that the legalities of copy-rights are very specific. Unless a written work can be proven to be significantly different than the original writing, it does not qualify to be copy-written! There are some several thousand incidents of Yahweh's name in the original writings, and equally as many erroneous changes to the copy-written Bibles, to make them sufficiently significantly different than the original writing, simply by removing Yahweh's name and substituting the various titles or other spurious names in each case. This contempt changes the content to qualify for copy-rights, but it also changes the meaning very significantly in many instances. For example, much confusion exists within traditional Christian organizations over the words "LORD" and "Lord", which most Bibles use interchangeably in place of both Yahweh's name and the Messiah's name, Yah'shua, without ever providing any rationale for such obvious contempt!

Thus ALL of these copy-written Bibles are by definition, significantly different than Yahweh's originally inspired, written word, and the most significant qualifying difference, is the blasphemous removal of Yahweh's name! Other variations in grammar and style have also been used to aid in attaining variations of copy-rights, all of which are quite ridiculous when properly studied, but the worst, and most inexcusable example of man's arrogance, cannot be anything but this issue of Yahweh's name.

More importantly than our own human understanding, this matters a great deal because Yahweh says it matters to Him! Read carefully through the Bible and you will discover hundreds of references which not only say that Yahweh as our God should be revered, but also His Name.

Yahweh is all knowing. He is the Divine Being with whom we may converse and get to know personally. But how are we to distinguish the True God from all of the other gods masquerading as Him? How would your little daughter who, for the sake of argument, got lost and was picked up by the police, identify her parents orally? She could describe their appearance which might help. She could describe their characteristics -- "my Dad is kind and my Mom loves me", she could even correctly identify them as "a man and a woman", but that wouldn't be too helpful to the police. So what would she do? She would give their names -- Joe and Shirley Smith. Simply calling them mom and dad, or man and woman, or him and her, all of which are accurate titles, would not be helpful.

We are commanded in Scripture to call upon Yahweh by His Name! Yahweh is merciful when, in our ignorance, we address Him in the wrong manner. I don't much like being called "man", but I am a man, just like Yahweh is a God. But because I am a man, my name is not automatically, "man", no more than Yahweh's name is automatically "God", simply because He is a God!

If your pet cow was named Daisy, would you say, "there is cow" or would you say properly, "there is Daisy, *my* cow", or, "there is *my* cow, Daisy" . If you pretend your cow could speak, would you say; "and cow said, 'mooo'"? If this sounds silly, then realize it is no sillier than saying, "and God said, 'listen to Me'". Would you say, "I must do this because cow said so"? No, of course not. You would say many things such as "I must do this because *my* cow said so", or because "*my* cow, Daisy said so", or "*our* cow, Daisy said so", or because "*the* cow said so", or "Daisy *the* cow, said so", or "Daisy, *our* cow said so", etc.

Yahweh deserves at least as much respect as your fictional cow! Thus "Yahweh,

my God said so", or "my God Yahweh, said so", or "Yahweh, our God said so", or "our God Yahweh, said so", etc., would afford this same courtesy and respect. Thus if we know our God's Name is Yahweh, yet we persistently call Him "Jehovah" (*a fabricated name never used before 1518*), or just call Him by His title of God, which is "what" He is, not "who" He is, are we not, in fact, mocking Him, or at least minimizing our respect for His name and His commandments? Think of calling your high school teacher, "man" simply because he was a man, does it make sense?

The third commandment says that we are not to misuse the Name of our God, Yahweh. His Name is not "Jehovah" or "Allah" or "God" or "LORD" or any of the other man-made names, some of which are undoubtedly of demonic origin. Though "Lord" (*Adonai*) and "God" (*Elohim, El*) are by no means disrespectful as titles, they are only generic titles, they are not names.

It is important that we get the Name of our Heavenly Father correct in our thinking. Salvation, according to Scripture, is in the Name of Yahweh only (*Ac.4:12; Joel 2:32; Prov.18:10*). We are commanded to address Him as "Father" (*Mt.6:9*) and "Yahweh" (*Ps.113:3*). Knowing the Name of Yahweh is considered important (*Ps.91:14; Mal.3:16-17*) and gathering in His Name will bring about special blessings (*Zec.10:12; 13:9*). Yahweh's people do not deny His true Name (*by insisting on "Jehovah", for example -- Rev.3:8; 2:13*) and indeed will, as a sign that they are on the true Path, know that Name (*Is.52:6; 43:7; Dan.9:19; 2 Chr.7:14; Amos 9:12; Jer.15:16*) and will be sealed in that Name (*Rev.22:4*). And once we know that true Name, our use of it will be evidence of our obedience to His commandments and respect of His will (*Jer.10:25; Rev.13:17 & 14:1*), and the Name will be the focus of those who rebel against

Yahweh (*Mal.1:6; Rev.13:6; Rev.16:9*). Indeed, those who refuse to acknowledge His Name will be punished (*Mal.1:14; Ps.79:6; Jer.10:25; Jn.3:18; Rev.11:18*).

Many people have some misconceptions about "names" and "titles." Names are generally seen in the western mind as simply identifiers, whereas titles are seen as what the person does or a character trait. In Hebrew there is no such distinction. "Names" and "titles" are all the same, and are attributes of a person.

Let's use "King David" for an example. Many see King as a title and David as an identifier. However in Hebrew, David is "beloved" or "one who is loved," and king (*melek*) is "one who rules." So "King David" would be "the one who rules is beloved" or "the beloved one who rules." The same is true with the Creator's name! In fact, the word translated as "name" is "shem." Which literally means character, authority, fame, or renown; akin to "title"!

Consider our Creator. The origin of His Holy name - a name so sacred that superstitions were such that it could not even be spoken out loud by the people of ancient Israel. In the Hebrew scriptures it was represented by four letters called the "Tetragrammaton". In its earlier written form, Hebrew didn't contain vowels, so this sacred name would be represented in English by the four letters - YHWH.

Many may debate over the true pronunciation of Yahweh's Holy Name. Some, pronounce it Yahweh - others say Yehovah, some even say Jehovah. Strong's Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible erroneously informs us that "Yehovah" - pronounced {*yeh-ho-vaw*} - is the correct Hebrew rendering.

***The Encyclopedia Judaica***, Volume 7, pages 680-682, correctly sums it all this way: "YHWH" - (*not "YHVH"*). The personal name of

the God of Israel is written in the Hebrew Bible with the four consonants YHWH and is referred to as the "Tetragrammaton". At least until the destruction of the First Temple in 586 B.C.E., this name was regularly pronounced with its proper vowels, as is clear from the Lachish Letters, written shortly before that date. But at least by the third century B.C.E., the pronunciation of the name YHWH was avoided, and Adonai, "the Lord", was substituted for it, as evidenced by the use of the Greek word *Kyrios*, "Lord", for YHWH in the Septuagint, the translation of the Hebrew Scriptures that was begun by Greek speaking Jews in that century. Where the combined form Adonai YHWH occurs in the Bible, this was read as Adonai Elohim, "Lord God".

In the early Middle Ages, when the consonantal text of the Bible was supplied with vowel points to facilitate its correct traditional reading, the vowel points for 'Adonai with one variation - a *sheva* with the first *yod* of YHWH instead of the *hataf-patah* under the *aleph* of 'Adonai were used for YHWH. When Christian scholars of Europe first began to study Hebrew, they did not understand what this really meant, and they mistakenly introduced the hybrid names "Yehovah", later followed by "Jehovah".

In order to avoid pronouncing even the sacred name \*Adonai for YHWH, the custom was later introduced of saying simply in Hebrew *ha-Shem* (or *Aramaic Shemc*, "the Name") even in such an expression as "Blessed be he that cometh in the name of YHWH" (*Ps. 118:26*).

### **THE PROHIBITION OF USE OF THE NAMES OF Yahweh.**

The prohibition applied both to the pronunciation of the name of our God and its committal to writing, apart from its use in sacred writings. The prohibition against the

pronunciation of the name of our God applied only to the Tetragrammaton, which could be pronounced by the high priest only once a year on the Day of Atonement in the Holy of Holies (*cf. Mishnah Yoma 6:2*), and in the Temple by the priests when they recited the Priestly Blessings (*Sot. 7:6; see also Ch. Albeck (ed.), Seder Nashim (1954), 387*).

**As the Talmud expresses it: "Not as I am written am I pronounced. I am written *yod he waw he*, and I am pronounced *alef dalet*" (*nun yod, i.e., Adonai; Kid. 71a*). [*Yahweh*].**

Authoritative scholars, such as the one shown above, point out that the original, personal name of our Creator, written YHWH in the Hebrew tongue spoken by all the patriarchs and prophets, is correctly written and pronounced Yahweh in English.

In ancient times, the Hebrew words were written without vowels in what is called the unpointed script, so that each word consisted of a group of consonants whose vowel sounds were supplied from memory by the reader. In other words, Hebrew words were pronounced with vowel sounds even though the vowels themselves were not written. The Hebrews knew, from oral teaching and practice, which vowels were associated with the different words. Yahweh's Name is written *yod-heh-waw-heh* hwhy in Hebrew, transliterated YHWH in English, but is written and pronounced with the proper vowels YAHWEH as these sources show.

Notice what **The Jewish Encyclopedia** of 1901, Volume 12, page 119, states: It thus becomes possible to determine with a fair certainty the historical pronunciation of the Tetragrammaton, the results agreeing with the statement of Ex. iii. 14, in which YHWH terms Himself *hyha*. "I will be", a phrase which is immediately preceded by the fuller term "I will be that I will be," or, as in the

English versions, "I am" and "I am that I am." The name hwhy is accordingly derived from the root hwh(=hyh), and is regarded as an imperfect. This passage is decisive for the pronunciation "Yahweh"; for the etymology was undoubtedly based on the known word.

**The Encyclopedia Judaica**, Volume 7, page 680, further states this fact: The true pronunciation of the name YHWH was never lost. Several early Greek writers of the Christian Church testify that the name was pronounced "Yahweh". This is confirmed, at least for the vowel of the first syllable of the name, by the shorter form Yah, which is sometimes used in poetry (e.g., *Ex. 15:2*) and the *-yahu* or *-yah* that serves as the final syllable in very many Hebrew names.

**The Encyclopedia Britanica**, Volume 23, page 867, confirms this fact: Yahweh, the proper name of the God of Israel; it is composed of four consonants (YHWH) in Hebrew and is therefore called the Tetragrammaton...

**The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia**, Volume 9, page 160, confirms this fact: Of the names of our God in the Old Covenant, that which occurs most frequently (6,823 times) is the so-called Tetragrammaton, YHWH (*hwhy*), the distinctive personal name of the God of Israel.

**And The Jewish Encyclopedia** Volume 12, pages 118-119, confirms this fact also: TETRAGRAMMATON: The quadrilateral name of our God, (*hwhy*). The Tetragrammaton is the ancient Israelitish name for our God...

**The Jewish Encyclopedia**, Volume 9, pages 162-163, also shows us that while the rabbis recognized only one proper name for the Creator, they also considered other names as titles for the Creator. As you read this excerpt, notice and remember the title (*Adonai*) that was used in place of the Creator's Name:

The Rabbis as well as the cabalists steadfastly maintained their belief in monotheism. Hence they recognized only one proper name for the Deity, considering the other names as appellations or titles signifying divinity, perfection, and power, or as characterizing His acts as observed and appreciated by mankind. The name YHWH is considered as the Name proper; it was known in the earliest rabbinical works simply as the Name; also as Shem ha-Meyuhad ("the Extraordinary Name"; Sifre, Num. 143): as Shem ha-Meforash ("*the Distinguished Name*"; *Yoma vi. 2*); as Shem ben The Name. Arba' Otiyyot ("*the Tetra-grammaton*" or "*the Quadrilateral Name*"; *Kid 71a*); and as Yod He Waw He (*spelling letters of YHWH*).

Vowel points were placed among the letters of Yahweh's Name (*hwhy*) as a code telling the reader to pronounce another name (or title) in place of the Name Yahweh (*hwhy*).

**The Century Bible**, by Adeney and Bennett, Volume 1, page 91, also chronicles the establishment of this doctrine: Hebrew was originally written without vowels, but when the vowel points were added, the vowels of *Adonay* or *Elohim* were written with yhwh, as a direction that these words were to be read instead of the word whose consonants were YHWH. Thus we find the combinations YeHoWaH and YeHoWiH; equally pronouncable as "Yahweh" in the English.

When the vowel points of Adonai or Elohim were placed among the letters of the Name Yahweh (*hwhy*), Yahweh's Name was changed to look like the following: (*ho\*hy++*) or (*ho!hy++*). Then, when a reader saw the Name Yahweh with the vowel points, the reader would know to say Adonai when he saw the form (*ho\*hy+*), and Elohim when he saw the form (*ho!hy++*).

The **Babylonian Talmud**, Tractate Kiddushin, page 71a, openly confirms that this

became the standard practice of all Israyl, as it still is to this day.

In short, the Name Yahweh is the foundation for all truth. What shall we say then, of those who reject Yahweh, but accept "Jesus"? By accepting "Jesus", they have unwittingly rejected Yahweh also, because "Jesus" is in truth, Yah'shua -- the Salvation of, or Son of Yahweh! Indeed, Yah'shua is so closely identified with Yahweh in the Scriptures at times, as to be seemingly indistinguishable from Him, being the "mighty God", the "everlasting Father" (*Is.9:6, AV*). Thus we are justified in saying that Yahweh and Yah'shua are, of One; both of One name and One Spirit; i.e.: "Yah'weh" and "Yah'shua".

Before we get into the proper name of our Saviour, it is a point of interest that Mormons refer to the Father as "Elohim" and Yah'shua as "Jehovah", the latter blasphemous name even appearing at the end of the Book of Mormon (*Moroni 10:34*) and in a misquotation of *Is.12:2* where "Lord Jehovah" erroneously translates "Yah, Yahweh" (*2 Nephi 22:2*).

"Elohim" is not a proper name and may be transliterated simply as "God-Family" and is invariably connected to Yahweh in appellations to Deity, such as "Yahweh-Elohim" (*mis-translated in most English Bibles as "LORD God" which would be akin to saying "man male" to describe someone*). "Elohim" is a uni-plural noun referring to the multiple aspects of the Divinity such as the masculine and feminine, or the Father, Creator, Sustainer, Provider, Protector, etc.

#### **ADDENDUM:**

Many people misunderstand the alleged distinction between the words "Elohim" and "God", or "elohim" and "god", [*or "El" and "el"*] as the case may be.

It is well known and even widely publicized to this day by the "Jews", that they originally used this title "El", and ultimately,

"Elohim" to "replace" the name of Yahweh, which they [*"Jews" - originally "Khazars"*] erroneously and superstitiously believed was "too holy to utter" and "too holy to read"! The true and original Israelites never did believe such foolishness regarding their Creator's name. You will only find evidence of this superstitious behavior in modern "Jewish", or Khazar tradition, not within any actual or implied context of the true Hebrew or Israelite faith.

These superstitions were originally brought into the Hebrew Bible by the Khazars, or as we know in modern English language, the "Jews", who were not originally of the Israelites, but rather were pagans from the lands of Edom. These pagan Jews, being self-styled followers of what they then termed "Judaism", being their newly coined title for their equally newly formed religion - being a fusion of pagan Khazar traditions with some aspects of the Israelite faith, have had devastating impact upon what content has been attributed to the Bible and how it has been translated. They are perhaps the most deceiving group of religious fanatics on the planet - and they were of pagan origins and they were the originators of the name-titles, "El" and "Elohim".

"Elohim" existed in the ancient pagan languages outside of the original Hebrew, and its original use was directly associated with the name of at least one false god [*'b'el' and 'el'*], and later as a more universal title for a number of related false gods, as in "el'ohim", or "family of 'el". This was the amended name "Elohim", brought into the Hebrew language by the Khazars, now self-styled Jews, or false Hebrews, and it was their ingrained use of this word, together with their superstitions about the true name of Yahweh, that caused them to substitute their pagan name-title for that true name of Yahweh.

The original Israelites ALWAYS referred to [and always will refer to] Yahweh by His name "Yahweh" as they were instructed to do, and the only adjective they applied to His name was related to His "Almighty" or omniscient ability, or sometimes to His creative ability as in "Creator", but even then it was ALWAYS in the context that implied "the Creator of all that is", not that He was just a "creator".

In our time, it is relatively easy for us to get caught up in using improper language, or in using language of improper origins, such as by labeling certain words as "pagan". But if we objectively analyze the roots of all words in any language other than Yahweh's original Hebrew, we will soon realize that 100% of all existing words in every language except that of the original Yahweh inspired Hebrew language, are of pagan origins, and indeed remain as pagan languages to this day. Thus if we are followers of the Israelite faith, yet are bound by our limitations of being able only to speak and write in the pagan "English", then we will of necessity, find ourselves communicating with "pagan" words. This does not mean, nor should it be construed to even imply that we hold onto any pagan beliefs, merely that we are unable to adequately communicate using Yahweh's inspired Hebrew language.

Once we understand that the true Hebrew language and only the true Hebrew language - not the language of ancient or modern Khazars [*Jews*], is the only language that is NOT PAGAN, then we can fully appreciate why it is so important to do our best to ascertain what was meant by the original Hebrew writers. Further, we can also do our best to "undo" every known alteration, whether accidental or deliberate, to these original writings. Thus the "use" of the pagan word "God" is no less of a mistake as would be the use of the pagan word "Elohim". They are equally pagan, and indeed the pagan origins of

"Elohim" or "El", go back much further than they do for the more recently invented pagan word "God" or "god".

These reasons are precisely why we chose when conducting our Bible translation [NIBEV], to ALWAYS use Yahweh's actual name "Yahweh" [*English transliteral equivalent to Hebrew YHWH*], even and especially when we replaced the erroneously translated *name-titles* such as God or Lord. We only left the *name-titles* in some few instances where they act as adjectives modifying the glory of our Father insofar as an English reader of our version would be concerned. We felt, and still feel that this is the best way for those that communicate in a pagan language such as English, to distinguish themselves from mainstream pagans; by having the best possible ability to comprehend the true meaning of the original Hebrew writing, not by attempting to discern which English/pagan words may be more or less pagan than others. Essentially, we are of the Israelite faith, yet most of us are limited to communicating in the pagan language of English - but we are also gifted by our Creator with the ability to discern what we hope is the best possible use of this pagan language we have been born into

## **Yahweh - our Father's Name:**

Did you know that our Father's name can be found 7,000 times in the original Old Covenant! We may inquire why is the "Name" of the Most High so significant? It is very important because the Most High proclaims in His Word that His people shall know His "Name".

*Is. 52:6, "Therefore My people shall know My name: therefore they shall know in that day that I am He that doth speak: behold, it is I."*

*2nd Chron. 7:14, "If My people, which are called by My name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land."*

Our Heavenly Father has a people who shall know His Name and are called by His Name. Are you one of them?

### **1. What does the word "Name" mean?**

NAME (#8034, Hebrew): Shêm, mark memorial of individuality by implication honor, authority, character. (*SHÊM, meaning "Name" in the Scriptures, has been used as a substitute, for Yahweh.*)

NAME (#3687, Greek): from 3686; to name, to utter, mention, profess. (*Lexical Aid: character described by the name, fame reputation, implying authority, dignity.*)

NAME (*Noah Webster's Dictionary, 1828*): The letters or characters written or engraved expressing the sounds by which a person or thing is known and distinguished.

God, Lord, LORD are titles they are not names. If we choose not to use His proper name, then we do not retain authority over Satan.

### **2. Is our Creator's Name "Jehovah?"**

We must eliminate blatant errors. Even a rather shallow encyclopedia will explain the

error of "Jehovah." The man who gave us the hybrid word "Jehovah" was Petrus Galatinus.

In Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia, it states that

Jehovah (*or Yahweh*), the Hebrew name for the God of Israel, means the self-existent or unchangeable One; in English generally rendered the LORD. It also says that the letter "J" has a history of the letter "I". The Romans and their European successors used "I" both for the vocalic "I" and for the consonantal "y" (*as in the English word yet*). The English letter "J" did not come into existence until the end of medieval times, when scribes began to use a tailed form of I, with or without the dot, next to the short form of I (1). When printing was invented, the tailed form of I (2) was often used for an initial I, which is usually consonantal. Not until the 17th century, however, was the distinction between J or j as a consonant and I or i as a vowel fully established.

"Jehovah": [*hovah #1943: another form for #1942; ruin:-mischief*]. Is that what we call Him, when we use the word Jehovah? Does this name give Him reverence?

When we look at the word God, we can also see that this was never the true Father's name, as in the Hebrew and Greek Bible, by Spiros Zodhiates claims on p.1722, under "Theos: states God. Originally used by the heathen and adopted in the New Covenant as the name of the true God."

However, we know that the capitals or the letter "J" did not exist until the 17th century. So these names were substituted for the originals. What deception? Do you think in the spirit world they go by sound or writing? Do you think the evil spirits are sitting there capitalizing your spoken word God? When they hear you say God, they think of the deities that they worship, not Yahweh.

**The word God in 20 Languages:** (*All different*): Greek: Theos.; Cretan: Thios.;

Latin: Deus.; Celtic and Old Gallic: Diu.; French: Dieu.; Spanish: Dios.; Swiss: Gott.; Portuguese: Deos.; Italian: Dio.; Irish: Die.; German and Dutch: Godt.; Danish and Swedish: Gut.; Norwegian: Gud.; Polish: Bog.; Chinese: Prussa.; Japanese: Goezur.; Teutonic: Goth.; Persian: Sire.; Old Egyptian: Teut.; Old German: Diet.

As you can see here, it is a lie to call our Heavenly Father God, as these are titles and not names, they are all different; however, Yahweh's name in every language is the same (*as previously shown*). In Fossilized Customs, by Lew White, it states: "Lies are poison, but truth is like fire; it tests the purity of metals." Israel's former PM Benjamin Natan Yahu has a Hebrew name that was properly transliterated in the English language. In his own ears, he can hear his name perfectly pronounced by people of any language! It is improper to "translate" his name, or anyone's, just because someone of another language uses it. Your name retains the same sound out of the mouth of people of any and every language, just as Yahweh's does!

More than just labels, names in the Scriptures tell us about the individual. Nowhere is this more notable than in the revealed Name of our Creator. As He did with Israel, His Name closely binds true believers to our Father, and is the key that unlocks deeper knowledge and understanding.

### **3. What does the 2nd Commandment mean?**

Exodus 20:7, "Thou shalt not take the name of Yahweh thy Almighty in vain; for Yahweh will not hold him guiltless that taketh His name in vain."

VAIN (#7723, Hebrew): from the same 7722 in the sense of desolating, evil as destructive, ruin, guile (*trick*) uselessness (*as deceptive*):-falsely, lie, lying.

(*Lexical Aid: It means nothingness, emptiness, vanity, anything which disappoints the hope which rests upon it. The hope is in His name.*)

Nameless: not known by name, a nameless hero, not mentioned by name, having no name.

When we do not call our Heavenly Father by His Name, are we keeping Him Nameless, breaking the third commandment?

Uselessness: Unserviceableness, unfitness for any valuable purpose, as for purpose intended.

When we don't use His proper Name, we give it no use or power in which it was intended. When we do not use His Name, we bring it to uselessness, ruin, there is no hope in a false name. Because the Name was not to be blasphemed by improper use, it became a custom to never use it. They could not destroy it in any way and that is why they buried the worn out scrolls in jars at the Dead Sea. Yet, they did destroy the Name, by not speaking it; this also violates the 2nd Commandment.

Many Christian believers today, ignorantly, take Yahweh's name in vain, by using the titles, God, Lord, LORD. They do not use His proper Name "Yahweh," but use substitutes.

#### **4. What does the word LORD mean?**

In the book, "A History of English in its own Words," by Craig, M. Carver. C725, Lord is Anglo Saxon English; this person was half-weird or halflord, literally "a bread keeper" from half (*loaf, bread*) and weird. This name was originally a translation (*c1000*) and was adapted to Lord. (*Adapted: meaning to fit.*)

Again, here we see it was "adapted," not a word originally used for our Heavenly Father's Name or the Son's Name. We must remember and view the information that has been recorded for centuries, that these titles (*God, Lord*) were always pagan and no matter

what we do with them, we will not change their roots.

How do you know these titles are not names? When you call someone, you don't say "the Mary" ( or the Lord), you say Mary, or Yahweh.

### **5. How was the Name suppressed?**

We can see how the real Name has become veiled or concealed; these are made up words, substitutions.

The name which consists of four letters was reverently transcribed by the Hebrew copyist and was placed before the eye of the Hebrew reader. They were instructed not to pronounce it, but to replace it with a less sacred word, title, "Adonay". The Septuagint, ancient Greek version, made it hidden by regularly substituting it similarly with the Vulgate, which also employed dominus; having at the same time answered to the Hebrew "Adonay", confessedly meaning Lord and occasionally God.

The Talmud (*a book of oral law instruction used after the Babylonian Captivity*) and the Mishna (*a collection of laws which is the basis of Talmud*) commanded the Hebrew clergy to hide the name of Yahweh and keep it secret. The result was that the Name was ultimately avoided, substituted, and disguised.

*Jer. 23:27, "Which think to cause My people to forget My name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbor, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal." (Emphasis ours now and throughout.)*

Baal (#1168, Hebrew): Ba`al (*bah'-al*); the same as #1167; Baal, a Phoenician deity:- Baal, (*plural*) Baalim.

#1167: ba`al (*bah'-al*); from #1166; a master; hence, a husband, or (*figuratively*) owner (*often used with another noun in modifications of this latter sense*):- + archer, + babbler, + bird, captain, chief man, + confederate, + have to do, + dreamer, those to

whom it is due, + furious, those that are given to it, great, + hairy, he that hath it, have, + horseman, husband, lord, man. (*Strong's Concordance*)

Do you want to be responsible for calling Our Heavenly Father by a pagan name, Lord, meaning Baal? Also the fact still remains Lord is a title not a name. In the "Complete [Scriptures]", by Dr. J.M.P. Smith, writes a reference to the sound name, "Anyone, therefore who desires to retain the flavor of the original text has but to read 'Yahweh,' wherever he reads Lord or God." (*Remember capitals were not there till after the 17th century, so we are really reading, Lord (meaning baal) and God, meaning a false deity.*) Since the beginning of time the enemy, Satan, has tried in the hearts of man to hide the name of the Most High, so that we would have no power. If we have had power in using the fictitious names, then he comes as an angel of light. Satan will try and keep us fooled, so we don't see the truth.

*Acts 17:30, "And the times of this ignorance the Almighty winked at; but now commandeth all men everywhere to repent."*

Yahweh winks at our ignorance; once we know, then we are held accountable, to change that which is wrong. Did you know that Satan's name has not been changed, in Scripture, but the Father's Name has?

### **Satan's goal is to disguise it.**

Satan (#7554, Hebrew): Satan from #7853.

Satan (#4567, Greek): Satanas of Chaldee originally

(*Greek Satan of the Hebrew originally #7853, spelt the same, sounds the same.*)

Why didn't the scribes leave, Yahweh and Yah'shua's Name the same? Do you see these names below as being the same? Do They sound the same and are They spelt the same? How can you be a child of Yahweh, if

you do not have the right Name, or do not even know what His name is?

### YAHWEH

When you look up the Word "Yahweh" in the Oxford English Reference Dictionary it states: a form of the Hebrew name of God (YHWH) used in the Scriptures. The Name came to be regarded by Hebrews (c3000 B.C.) as too sacred to be spoken.

"I am Yahweh, that is MY Name: ..." (*Is. 42:8; Jer. 33:2*)

"...This is MY Name forever..." (*Ex. 3:15*)

"...My people shall know MY Name..." (*Is. 52:6*)

"...His Father's Name written in their foreheads." (*Rev. 14:1*)

"Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named." (*Eph. 3:15*) (*What Name?*)

"...My people, which are called by My Name,..." (*2 Chron. 7:14*)

"...For Thy city and Thy people are called by Thy name." (*Dan. 9:19*)

"...What is His Name, and what is His Son's Name, if thou canst tell?" (*Prov. 30:4*)

"That men may know that Thou, whose Name alone is Yahweh, art the Most High over all the earth." (*Ps. 83:18; see also Ps. 68:4; Is. 12:2.*)

Paul was slapped in the face for using the Father's Name. *Acts. 23:1,2*, "And Saul, earnestly beholding the council, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all right conscience before Yahweh until this day. And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him to smite him on the mouth."

Now do you think they smote him on the face, because he said the word God or for using the word "Yahweh"? The Hebrews forbade anyone to say the Father's name? Remember again, there was no capital "G" at this time, therefore, it would have never been

used. From the Hebrew and Greek Key Study Bible, KJV, Zodhiates, p. 1722, Lexical Aids to the New Covenant: "2316. Theós; God. States, "Originally used by the heathen and adopted in the NT as the name of the true God..."" The only gods the Greeks worshipped were the various aspects of created nature and especially the heavens, or some demons or intelligences which they supposed resided in them." We are well persuaded that Saul used "Yahweh" in order to be smote across the face.

Hebrews 2:12, "...I will declare Thy Name..."

DECLARE (#518, Greek): to announce, bring word (again), declare, report, shew (again) tell.

DECLARE (Dictionary): His name, to make clear, to manifest, to explain. See clear and glory. Sense to open, separate or to spread. To make known, to tell explicitly, to manifest or communicate plainly to others by words.

PROCLAIM (Noah's 1828 Dict.): to utter openly, to make public. #3 proclaim the Name of [Yahweh].

One cannot render a proper name by a mere title and a title can never convey the full meaning of the Name of the Father. Knowing the Names, learning what that Name represents, and worshipping the possessor of that Name can convey the full meaning. Our Father has linked His Name with His qualities, purposes and acts.

Yahweh has commanded us to know and say His Name when He uses the words "shall" and "shalt," as stated in above Scripture verses.

SHALT (Noah's 1828 Dict.): Second person singular of shall, as thou shalt not steal.

SHALL (Noah's 1828 Dict.): to be obliged. It coincides in signification nearly with ought, it is a duty, it is necessary; ... to owe ..." Means I have, I need to. "This declaration

simply informs another of a fact that is to take place.

"In the second and third persons, *shall* implies a promise, command or determination."

In translating the word man from Hebrew to English, we have six different Hebrew words pertaining to the word "Man." You can also see, we lose a deeper meaning, by just using the English word, "man," and not the Hebrew variations, as listed below. The Hebrew Language is so pure it has a definite significance and there is no mistake about the root meaning of the word.

1. Man: Heb. Aw-dawm: 120 Strongs: Righteous Man (*Gen. 1:27*)

2. Man: Enoshe: 582 Strongs: Unrighteous Man (*Ps. 8:4*)

3. Man: Enash: 606 Strongs: Generic Word for man-kind

4. Man: Bachur:970 Strongs: unmarried man (*1 Sam. 8:16*)

5. Man: Ghever: 1397 Strongs: the height of man's masculine strength. (*2 Sam 23:8*)

6. Man: Ish: 376 Strongs: man, individual, male person, husband. (*Deut. 23:13*)

When you think of how Yahweh is so particular in using the right name for the right meaning, for the word Man, you can see how Yahweh would feel about people using the titles, God, Lord, (*Baal*) and the name Jesus Christ. (*Latinized Greek Name*) where the root is pagan, that He would not want His name to be affiliated with it, as it being evil. We can see Yahweh is very particular about differentiating man in the Scriptures, why wouldn't He be so particular about His own Name and description?

Psalm 115:1,

"Not unto us, O Yahweh, not unto us, but unto thy name give honour, for thy mercy, and for thy truth's sake."

## **SATAN'S COUNTERFEIT, TO DECEIVE, EVEN THE ELECT!**

John 5:43, "*I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.*"  
YAHWEH – YAH'SHUA.

Prov. 14:12, "*There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death.*"

Will you perhaps be one of the many deceived who will be traumatically shocked, if you should happen to discover that you were to be cast into the lake of fire at the end of time simply because you thought your Pastor or denomination was following Scriptural truth, and believing you had a thorough understanding of every archaic word?

Matt. 7:22,23, "*Many will say to Me in that day, Master, Master, have we not prophesied in Thy name? And in Thy name have cast out devils? And in Thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, you that work iniquity.*"

Are you willing to gamble away your eternal life on what you and most other sincere Believers believe to be Scripturally correct and in their proper context? Our Heavenly Father's Word tells us that if we will seek Him with all of our heart, we will find Him, *Jer. 29:13.* We must not give up hope because He does truly care. Many of us will be held accountable and judged accordingly, simply because we did not take the necessary time to read the Scriptures, or research and study the facts for ourselves, and did not genuinely try to put into practice what our Creator's true unadulterated Word really says.

We all need to "come out of her my people" (*Rev. 18:4*), out of the worldly deception of falsehood and tradition. Our worship is in vain (*empty*) if we continue to obey the commandments and traditions of men

rather than the commandments of the Almighty, *Mk. 7:6-9*. Satan was allowed to counterfeit the true Sabbath, causing many to break the fourth commandment, thus what would keep him from counterfeiting the true sacred names of both the Heavenly Father as well as His Son, causing many sincere believers who do not realize what is truly going on, to break the first and third commandments? If Satan had his way, he would steal and kill just so that he could destroy you and to keep you from entering into eternal life (*Jn. 10:10*).

*Matt. 24:24b*, "Insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect."

Not only through a false Messiah (Hebrew for the Anointed One), but also through false prophets which can refer to Pastors, teachers, Scripture translators or anyone proclaiming to have the true Word of The Almighty, but in actuality have themselves been deceived. If they do not happen to possess the whole unadulterated truth, in which case, they cause or change it to become a lie. "And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into a messenger of light" (*2 Cor. 11:14*).

*Act 4:12*, "Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."

If we are to believe this particular verse, then that one and only name is not only significant, but absolutely essential to salvation. (Compare Acts 2:38.)

Because the Greek and Hebrew language never had the letter J, no, not even so much as the sound of a J, it is quite obvious Jehovah could not possibly have been our Heavenly Father's true name and neither could Jesus have been our precious Messiah's true name.

The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language (1969) explains (p. 698) that "the Romans changed the letter i, and put a tail on it, to form a j." It was not until the 17th century that capitals came into existence. How could our Messiah's true name possibly be Jesus? There is just no possible way on earth save but via Satanic deception .

*1 Thess. 5:21*, "Prove all things; hold fast that which is honest."

Study for truth with first taking the necessary time to compare it with Scripture, encyclopedias, and dictionaries. If you will find a Strong's concordance which has both the Hebrew and Greek dictionaries, you will soon discover the letter "J" in both alphabets is not only missing, but does not even come close to having the sound of one. Most reputable encyclopedias or collegiate dictionaries will give you the Hebrew translation of the counterfeit name Jesus, stating that it is, in fact, Yah'shua.

*1 Jn. 5:13*, "These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of Yahweh ; that ye may know that you have everlasting life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of Yahweh."

*Jn. 3:18*, "He that believeth on Him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of Yahweh."

The imposter Jesus is not only erroneous, he may also be considered a false Messiah as well, which in actual truth, can save absolutely no one, not even himself. *Jn. 5:43*, "...if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive." Is this other name "Jesus"? Remember the warning we received regarding the rise of false Messiah's in *Mt. 24:24*?

We must not blame our pastors (false prophets) for something that many clergymen were simply not made aware of, or if they were

made aware, simply did not have the slightest clue as to the horrendous consequences of being lost forever through the substitute name Jesus. Being written over 7,000 times in the original Hebrew manuscripts and called the tetragrammaton, our Heavenly Father's true name has only four consonants YHWH, not LORD. It also does not translate into Jehovah, (*hovah* #1943: another form for #1942; *ruin:-mischief*), in spite of Strong's inaccurate definition. The new Strongest of Strong's concordance has corrected this mistake.

Long ago, many Scripture translators were considered superstitious, believing that the true sacred name was too righteous to be used; they were afraid to even pronounce it, calling it ineffable (*unspeakable*). By so doing, Satan, through these superstitious translators, eventually substituted the true sacred name YHWH with counterfeit names and titles, (*Lord, God, Jehovah; remember there were no capitals till the 17th century, so what does lord, god mean with no capitals?*) This caused many sincere believers to break the first and third commandments: "*Thou shalt have no other elohim before me.*" Also, "*Thou shalt not take the name Yahweh thy Almighty in vain; for Yahweh will not hold him guiltless that taketh His name in vain.*" (*Ex. 20:3,7*) They caused many innocent and sincere believers not only to take Yahweh's name in vain, but also to commit idolatry.

Here is the discernment of knowledge: Strong's archaic definition of the word vain, #7723, taken from *Ex. 20:7*, "to rush over, a tempest: by implied devastation, desolate, destroy, destruction, wasteness, to bring to ruin, especially guile, idolatry as false, uselessness, as being deception, also adverb in vain, to make false, to lie which is to falsify or deceive." The new Strongest of Strong's definition also includes: "worthlessness and vanity."

*"...yea, they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart; which think to cause My people to forget My name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbor, as their fathers have forgotten My name for Baal." (*Jer. 23:26b,27*).*

Baal (pronounced Bah-al) or Baalim are the unmistakable words for Lord or Lords, which at the time were the heathen deities of the Canaanites. (*See Strong's #1167, #1168, and the universal subject guide in the back of the concordance, p. 25.*) If, in fact, Baal equals Lord and Lord equals Baal, as this appears to indicate, then the title Lord can also be considered the name of the heathen deity of the Canaanites. If Yahweh was rejecting the name Baal which stands for Lord and was synonymous with the pagan deity; should we not be rejecting the stand-alone title Lord as well? Compare *Hosea 2:16*. (*The title for husband is the word Ishi, #376.*)

Is the word God just another so-called innocent title? Why don't you be the judge of that for yourself by checking out the following which comes from the Encyclopedia Britannica, 11th Edition: "God the common Teutonic [(Germanic)] word for a personal object of worship. Applied to all those superhuman beings of the heathen mythologies. The word 'God' on the conversion of the Teutonic peoples... to Christianity was adopted as the same [(identical)] name of the one Supreme Being [(Almighty Yahweh)]." Both g-d and God sound identically the same, regardless of whether the G is capitalized or not, making no difference to the exact, same pronunciation. Is Satan deliberately trying to undermine you and I with his underhanded desire to steal away all of the praise, worship and adoration that belongs to Father Yahweh alone?

*Isa. 42:8, "I am Yahweh: that is My name: and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images."*

Ex. 23:13, "And in all things that I have said unto you be circumspect [careful to consider the consequences]: and make no mention of the name of other deities, neither let it be heard out of thy mouth."

Compare Josh. 23:7,8 and 1 Cor. 8:5. Do we not need to consider the consequences before we speak? This may all seem quite harmless at first glance, but make no mistake about it; by not deciding to do anything about our new found treasure of knowledge, we may already have made the choice to allow Satan in. He's trying to condemn us to spiritual suicide and perhaps eternal doom. "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge:..." (Hos. 4:6). Do not be one of them. Do we not yet understand that these so-called titles (God, Lord etc.) are in fact actual name/titles of heathen and pagan deities? So, obviously, by worshipping, singing, or praying to these other deities, not only do we take Father Yahweh's name in vain, but we also commit spiritual fornication, which of course is idolatry: something true believers do not want to be caught doing.

Jn. 4:23,24, "But the hour cometh and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship [kneeling upon bended knee] the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. Yahweh is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth."

If, in fact, we are genuinely called of Yahweh, our one and only true Heavenly Father (without a doubt, we will definitely be called by His name), we will use His true name and pronounce it with reverence and adoration.

" Even every one that is called by my name: ..." Is. 43:7; "... Then they... spake often one to another: and Yahweh hearkened, and heard it and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared Yahweh and that thought upon His name." (Mal. 3:16).

Compare: Mic. 6:9; Is. 52:5-7; Ps. 69:36; Joel 2:31,32; Ezek. 39:7; Mal. 2:5-7; Ps. 91:14-16; Prov. 8:10; Ps. 22:22,23; 5:11,12; 72:17-19; 9:6; 96:5-8; 124:8; 139:20; Am. 5:8; Deut. 28:10; Jer. 10:25; Jer. 14:9; Jer. 16:20-21; Mal. 1:11; 2:2; Mic. 4:5-7; Is. 12:4; 26:13,14; 56:6,7; Zech. 13:9; Ac. 2:21,39; Mt. 20:16; Rom. 10:13; 1 Cor. 8:5,6; 2 Tim. 1:9; Heb. 2:12; James 2:7; Rev. 2:13,14; 3:8,9; 11:18; 15:4; 22:3-4.

Jn. 17:26, "And I have declared unto them Thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved Me may be in them, and I in them."

Because of the word "that", it appears that a condition has been made, indicating the fact that we must know our Heavenly Father's true name before we are able to receive Yahweh and Yahshua's true love. Please consider these verses regarding Yah'shua as well: Jn. 1:12; 14:13,14; 16:23,24; 17:6; 20:31; Ac. 10:43; 1 Cor. 6:11; Phil. 2:9,10; Rev. 14:12,13.

Yahweh's name is the mark, or memorial, of His individuality in regards to honor, authority, and character. His name is who He is and what He stands for, representing His value, estimation, and reputation. His name is a symbol used for identification or indication of ownership as Father. The name or signature of Yahweh is considered a characteristic identifying mark and distinguishes Him from all other deities.

Ex. 3:15, "And The Almighty said more over unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, Yahweh The Almighty of your fathers...hath sent me unto you: this is My name for ever and this is My memorial unto all generations."

Strong's definition of the word memorial (#2142 & #2143) means to mark so as to recognize.

Dear friends, please do not judge us for caring enough to be honest with you in trying to warn you of the danger that awaits those who remain deceived by the father of lies. By holding onto the erroneous names and titles, and by refusing to pronounce our Heavenly Father's true sacred name, are we not in effect saying that traditions, which are the commandments of men, are more important than Yahweh and the keeping of His commandments?

If you should happen to reject these precious truths, which can save your precious soul from eternal death, you are not rejecting us but the One who sent us (*Is. 58:1; Ezek. 33:1-13*). Do not feel alone because we all were just as skeptical at first, until Yahweh's Spirit convicted us to search His sacred Scripture for His truth.

*Matt. 7:14, "Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life and few there be that find it."*

## Rejoice in Understanding our Father's Name:

In most Bible translations, Yahweh is recorded in Exodus 3:14, as having responded to the question, "What shall I say to them?", posed by Moses regarding Yahweh's name, when or if he was asked by the Israelites: "And Yahweh said to Moses, "I AM THAT I AM." And He said, "Thus you shall say to the children of Israel, 'I AM has sent me to you.' " However, the original Hebrew did not say the Hebrew equivalent to "I AM THAT I AM". The closest English equivalent to the original Hebrew words, actually states: "I AM THE EXISTING ONE" (or loosely translated "I AM THE BEING"), Thus "the EXISTING ONE has sent you", is also a correct transliteration.

This great "I Am" is not any more of "who" Yahweh is, but rather, a description of "what" Yahweh is. He is existence pure and simple. I Am upon who you can rely, I AM who does not change. We are because Yahweh is. We are nothing without Him. This is reflected in Yah'sua's declaration that 'I Am [eternally existing] before Abraham was [resurrected to eternal life]'.

The ancient Hebrews refused to speak or sometimes even write the name Yahweh. Some orthodox Jews still refuse, because they feel unworthy of uttering the Divine Name. Because I Am an existing one, I may be what I will to be. My own individuality is one of the modes in which the Infinite expresses Himself and therefore I Am myself, that very power which we find to be the innermost within all things. I Am is the admission and confirmation of pure existence.

The I AM in the individual is none other than the I AM in the universal. Now the immense practical importance of this principle is that it affords the key to the great law that "as a man thinks so he is." The figure of liberated and perfected humanity forms its

desire in all nations and peoples. It sets forth their great ideal of Divine power intervening to rescue them by man becoming one with Him; the attainment of spiritual liberty however expressed. As we gradually grow into the habit of finding this inspiring Presence within ourselves, and of realizing it as the ultimate determining factor in all true health and full mental action, it will become first nature to us to have all of our plans, down to the most trivial come into perfect harmony in our lives.

Yahweh's true and proper name is Yahweh, the One I AM, and His desire is that all should be one in the One. Therefore whatever divides is not of Yahweh. Whatever fosters unity is of Yahweh, hence, "WE ARE".

**●Yahweh Is, Was and Will be Creator, all by Himself! ●Yah'shua the Messiah is Not Yahweh's "Co-Creative" God:**

Many modern day, or traditional Christians believe that Yah'shua the Messiah pre-existed in some form or another. Some say he was Melchizedek, some say he was "the captain of the host of Yahweh" (*Josh.5:14*), some say he was the archangel Michael, others say he was the "angel of Yahweh". Perhaps the most erroneous view is that Yah'shua was the "Yahweh" (*LORD*) of the Old Covenant. This study is written in hope of helping those seeking the truth to finally understand that Yahweh is the One-True-Almighty-Creator of the heavens and the earth, and that Yah'shua the Messiah did not exist until being born of the flesh and resurrected as His Son, as it is written.

For some reason many church organizations feel a need to magnify the Savior into the position of the Almighty when, in fact, scripture makes it quite clear that the Father is greatest of all and the "head of Messiah" (*1 Cor.11:3*). Consider Yah'shua's own words in Jn. 14:28, "...for my Father is greater than I."; Jn.10:29, "My Father, which gave them me, is

greater than all..."; and Jn. 13:16, "Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant [*Yah'shua*] is not greater than his lord [*Yahweh*]; neither he that is sent [*Yah'shua*] greater than he that sent him [*Yahweh*]." These verses teach us *Yah'shua's* view of his relationship to his Father. Notice he didn't claim to be the Father but instead, made a clear distinction between the two.

### **Who is *Yah'shua's* Father?**

Who does scripture say is the Father? Is.63:16 says, "Doubtless thou art our father, though Abraham be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us not: thou, O *Yahweh*, art our father, our redeemer; thy name is from everlasting." *Yahweh* is the Father. Yet, some might claim that this scripture says *Yahweh* is the Father of Israel, not of *Yah'shua*. In that case we need to note two other verses. The first is Heb.1:5; "For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?" Who said these things? All would agree that *Yah'shua's* Father said them since He is referring to *Yah'shua* as His Son. Heb.1:5 is a direct quote from Ps.2:7; "I will declare the decree: *Yahweh* hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee." The first "I" here refers to *Yah'shua* speaking through prophecy in which he declares that *Yahweh* is his Father!

We also previously saw that *Yah'shua* said, "My Father is greater than I." In reality he was also saying, "[*Yahweh*] is greater than I", thereby teaching us that he is not *Yahweh*.

### **Who is the Elohim of Israel?**

Who does scripture say is the Elohim (*God*) of Israel? Is. 45:3 says, "And I will give thee the treasures of darkness, and hidden riches of secret places, that thou mayest know that I, *Yahweh*, which call thee by thy name, am the Elohim of Israel." *Yahweh* is the Elohim

of Israel. Since we already learned that *Yah'shua* is not *Yahweh*, *Yah'shua* cannot be the Elohim of Israel. This is confirmed in Acts 3:13, "The Elohim of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the Elohim of our fathers, hath glorified his Son *Yah'shua*;..." The Elohim of Jacob (*Jacob being Israel*) glorified His Son.

Since the scriptures reveal the Elohim of Israel and the Father are both called *Yahweh*, some will go so far as to teach that there are two separate beings called *Yahweh* in order to support their erroneous belief that *Yah'shua* pre-existed as *Yahweh*, Elohim of Israel. They use Gen.19:24 as proof of this; "Then *Yahweh* rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from *Yahweh* out of heaven;" At first glance there appear to be two *Yahwehs*, one in heaven and one somewhere near Sodom and Gomorrah. This is merely a figure of speech peculiar to the Hebrew language, an idiom. Similar idioms are seen in Eze.11:24 (two Spirits), Zech.10:12 (*two Yahwehs*), Ex.24:1 (*Yahweh used as idiom for "me"*), Gen.17:23 (*two Abrahams*), and 1 Kgs.8:1 (*two Solomons*).

It is impossible to harmonize the two *Yahweh* doctrine with verses that teach there is only one *Yahweh*. Consider Nehemiah's prayer; "Thou, even thou, art *Yahweh* alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee." Neh 9:6

Ps 83:18 says;"That men may know that thou, whose name alone is *Yahweh*, art the most high over all the earth."

Is 45:6 says; "That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am *Yahweh*, and there is none else."

Zech 14:9 reads; "And *Yahweh* shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be

one Yahweh, and his name one."

**A second God cannot exist and cannot be named "Yahweh."**

Is.42:1 teaches us that Yah'shua is Yahweh's servant. "Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles." And again in Is.49:6, "And he said, It is a light thing that thou shouldst be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel: I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be my salvation unto the end of the earth."

Ps.2:2 reads, "The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against Yahweh, and against his anointed." His "anointed" is Yah'shua, making a clear distinction between the two. Peter applied this prophecy to Yah'shua in Acts 4:26; "The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against Yahweh, and against His Messiah." Peter never claimed that the Messiah pre-existed as Yahweh.

Ps.110:1 also distinguishes the two; "Yahweh said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool." In Mt.22:41-46, Yah'shua reveals this "lord" to be himself, the Messiah. Is Yahweh talking to His Son the Messiah or is He talking to Himself?

Ps.110 makes another interesting statement in verse 5. This is one of the verses in which the Sopherim erroneously removed Yahweh's name and replaced it with "Adonai". The text would have originally read, "Yahweh at thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of His wrath." It is then wrongly deduced that since Yah'shua was invited to sit on Yahweh's right hand (*Heb.1:13*), he, Yah'shua, must also be called "Yahweh". There is no doubt that Yahweh invited Yah'shua to sit at His right hand. But what does

verse 5 mean? It must be understood in the same way Ps.16:8 and Ps.109:6 are to be understood. When someone is "at thy right hand" it means their power and strength are derived from that source. David derived his power from Yahweh and so it is said that Yahweh is "at my right hand." A wicked person would derive his power from Satan and so it is said, "Let Satan stand at his right hand." When Yah'shua comes to carry out Yahweh's wrath upon the wicked, Yahweh will be his strength. See, also, Mic.5:4.

**Who is the Prophet like unto Moses?**

In Acts 3:22,23 Peter quotes from Deut.18:15,19 proving that Yah'shua is the "prophet like unto Moses." Placing the name "Yah'shua" in brackets clearly shows him not to be Yahweh. "Yahweh thy Elohim will raise up unto thee a Prophet [*Yah'shua*] from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him [*Yah'shua*] ye shall hearken.. . I [*Yahweh*] will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my [*Yahweh's*] words in his [*Yah'shua's*] mouth; and he [*Yah'shua*] shall speak unto them all that I [*Yahweh*] shall command him [*Yah'shua*]. . . . And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my [*Yahweh's*] words which he [*Yah'shua*] shall speak in my [*Yahweh's*] name, I [*Yahweh*] will require it of him." Jn.12:49 is a direct fulfillment of Deut.18:18; "For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak."

Let's treat Is.53:6, 10, 12 similarly; "All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and Yahweh hath laid on him [*Yah'shua*] the iniquity of us all. . . . Yet it pleased Yahweh to bruise him [*Yah'shua*]; he [*Yahweh*] hath put him [*Yah'shua*] to grief: when thou [*Yahweh*] shalt make his [*Yah'shua's*] soul an offering for sin,

he [Yah'shua] shall see his seed, he [Yah'shua] shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of Yahweh shall prosper in his [Yah'shua's] hand."

Zech.12:10 is often misunderstood due to an apparent error in the text. It reads, "And I [Yahweh] will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn." The word "me" obviously does not harmonize with the pronouns "him" and "his" that follow. The same verse is quoted in Jn.19:37; "And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced." John gives us the correct understanding of this verse.

Another possible error occurs in Acts 20:28; "Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Spirit hath made you overseers, to feed the congregation of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood (KJV)." The great majority of Greek MSS have kurios (*Lord*) here instead of theos (*God*). In that case, Lord would refer to Yah'shua whose blood was shed. Even if we were to accept the KJV rendering, it would have to be understood in the sense that parents often refer to their children as their "own flesh and blood." In that sense the blood of Yah'shua was the "blood of [Yahweh's] own."

### **YAHWEH OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS**

Jer.23:6 is often used to prove Yah'shua is Yahweh. "In his [Yah'shua's] days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his [Yah'shua's] name whereby he [Yah'shua] shall be called, YAHWEH OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS." If this verse teaches that Yah'shua is Yahweh because he is called

"Yahweh Our Righteousness", then Jer.33:16 teaches that Jerusalem is also Yahweh. It reads, "In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, "Yahweh our righteousness." The translators did not use the same capitalization because they undoubtedly feared that it would suggest Jerusalem is Yahweh.

A difficult passage to understand is found in Jn.12:37-41. A superficial reading leads one to believe that the "his" and "him" of verse 41 refers to Yah'shua and ties in with verse 37. For the sake of clarity these verses will be printed out with [brackets] designating the speaker. Jn.12:37,38, "But though he [Yah'shua] had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him [Yah'shua]: That the saying of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he [Isaiah] spake, Lord, 'who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of Yahweh been revealed?' (*The underlined is a quote from Is.53:1. The "arm of Yahweh" is Isaiah's reference to the Messiah.*) The passage continues with verses 39-41; "Therefore they could not believe, because that Isaiah said again, 'He [Yahweh] hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I [Yahweh] should heal them.' These things said Isaiah, when he [Isaiah] saw his [Yahweh's] glory, and spake of him [Yahweh]." Verse 40 (*underlined*) is a quote from Is.6:10. John is quoting a second passage from Isaiah to show why they could not believe on Yah'shua; because Yahweh blinded them. Verse 41 therefore, is referring to Is.6:10, not Is.53:1. In Is.6:1-3 Yahweh is seen in all His glory. That is the glory referred to in verse 41. It was not Yah'shua's glory.

Since John the Baptist preceded Yah'shua, Is.40:3 and Mt.3:3 are often used to

claim Yahweh is Yah'shua. Is.40:3 reads, "The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of Yahweh, make straight in the desert a highway for our Elohim." Of all the N.T. verses that quote Isaiah, Lu.3:4-6 aids our understanding because it includes Is.40:4 & 5. It says, "As it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of Yahweh, make his paths straight. Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth; And all flesh shall see the salvation of Yahweh." "Prepare ye the way of Yahweh" does not mean, "Move out of the way because Yahweh is coming." And so when Yah'shua comes they believe he is Yahweh.

How was "the way" to be prepared? By filling valleys, leveling mountains, straightening paths, etc. This work is not to be understood literally, but spiritually through the humbling of those in exalted positions and the restoration of truth. Who was to do that work? Jn.4:34 says, "Yah'shua saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of Him that sent me, and to finish his work." Almighty Yahweh appointed His Son Yah'shua to finish His work. Yah'shua was Yahweh's instrument in the accomplishment of His great plan. Yah'shua is the "Messenger of the Covenant," "the servant of Yahweh," and "the salvation of Yahweh." Jn.14:6 calls Yah'shua "the way." He is "the way of Yahweh;" the means through which Yahweh will finish His work.

### **Two Creators?**

Gen.1:26 is often used to show Yah'shua's hand in Creation. It reads, "And Elohim said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that

creepeth upon the earth." They say the Father is talking to the Son in this verse based on the pronouns used. Notice, however, that verse 27 says, "So Elohim created man in his own image, . . ." Why isn't the phrase "in their own image" used? Again, in Gen.11:7,8, "us" is used and yet Yahweh alone scattered them abroad. According to Job 38:4-7, "the sons of Elohim shouted for joy" when Yahweh created the earth. This doubtless refers to the angels who were also present at the creation of man. Yahweh could be speaking to them, in Gen.1:26, using the plural of majesty. An example of this is found in Ezz. 4:18; "The letter which ye sent unto us hath been plainly read before me." In this case, a letter was delivered and read to King Artaxerxes and no one else (vs. 11). Yet the King speaks as though it was written to others, because it was written to him on behalf of his people as well. It can also be understood in the sense of someone saying, "Let us drive to the lake for a picnic," and yet, only the speaker does the driving. To believe Yahweh is talking to Yah'shua is an assumption. It is reading into the text something that it does not say.

If we do not try to force the scriptures to conform to our own doctrines, they are so simple to understand. Instead men try to support "Holy Trinities", "Incarnations", "Transubstantiations", and the like. The Bible does not use terms like "Father" and "Son" to try and trick us. They are used to express a relationship that we can relate to. If Yah'shua is Father Yahweh, the scriptures would state it in plain language. Instead, it says that Yah'shua is the Son of Father Yahweh.

An article in "Israel Today" tried to explain this relationship by saying Yahweh manifested himself in the fleshly form of Yah'shua. The author calls this the 'incarnation'. This same author rightfully puts down the trinity because the word is not found

in the Bible and yet, he exalts another unscriptural term, "incarnation." Perhaps he was misled by the erroneous translation of 1 Tim.3:16 in the KJV. It says, "God was manifest in the flesh." A footnote in the Emphatic Diaglott reads, "Nearly all ancient MSS., and all the versions have "He who," instead of "God," in this passage." Even if the incarnation theory was true, would Yahweh continue to manifest himself as Yah'shua even after the Millennium? 1 Cor.15:24-28 and Rev.22:1 show both as separate beings after the Millennium. The truth is, they are not parts of one being but two separate and distinct beings. That is why Yah'shua could say what he did in Jn.8:17,18, "It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me." Yahweh and Yah'shua are two separate beings, not two manifestations of one being.

When the scriptures are accepted at face value, without reading into the text more than it says, the relationship between the two becomes quite clear. In spite of this, many people are not satisfied with Yah'shua's rank in the hierarchy of heaven. They feel a need to exalt him into the number one position, that of Yahweh Almighty, and they will twist scripture in a variety of ways to accomplish this.

### **Yahweh is One**

Concerning the "Shema" (*Deut.6:4*) it reads, "Hear, O Israel: Yahweh our Mighty One is one Yahweh:" or "Yahweh is one." It is believed by many that the word "echad," translated "one," means "a united one" or a "compound unity," not singularity. The scriptures prove this belief to be false. Note Nu.7:13-82 where "echad" is translated "one" 84 times and each time it means one as in the number one, singularity. Consider also Gen.2:1 - one rib and Dan.9:27 - one week.

Historic Judaism does not give echad the meaning of unity or plurality as is seen in the Encyclopedia Judaica, Vol. 14, p.1373: "Perhaps from earliest times, but certainly from later, the word echad (one) was understood also to mean unique. God is not only one and not many, but He is totally other than what paganism means by gods." Note also The Jewish Commentary, Soncino Edition, p.770: "He is one because there is no other Elohim than He; but He is also one, because He is wholly unlike anything else in existence. He is therefore not only one, but the Sole and Unique, Elohim."

Perhaps the most conclusive evidence that the word echad has the meaning of alone or unique comes to us from the Messiah himself in Mk.12:28-34. When asked which commandment was the most important, Yah'shua responded by quoting the Shema. In response to his answer the teacher replied, "You are right in saying that Yahweh is one and there is no other but Him." Although Yah'shua did not specifically say "there is no other but Him" the teacher understood that meaning to be implied in the word echad or one. Yah'shua acknowledged that the teacher answered wisely thereby confirming the teacher's correct understanding of the meaning of the Shema.

It is true that echad was used in verses such as Ge.2:24 and Ge.41:25. There we see two people becoming one flesh and two dreams having one meaning. The key here is that two become one. In the Shema, we only see one individual, Yahweh, proclaimed to be one! It doesn't say, "And the two Yahweh's became one." In the two verses in Genesis, we don't see one becoming two. But that is what people are trying to do with the Shema. They say one means two and therefore, there must be two Yahweh's.

Yah'shua said, "I and my Father are one." (Jn.10:30). Does that mean they are the same being? Yah'shua said something similar in Jn.17:22, "And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:" Here again, Yah'shua says he and the Father are one. But he also prays that his followers will be one in the same sense that he and Yahweh are one. That is a oneness of mind, purpose, and will, not a oneness of being. And it certainly does not mean there are two Yahweh's.

### **Elohim - Plural or singular?**

The word "Elohim," translated "God," is often attacked as well. It is believed that it denotes a plurality or a god consisting of more than one being or more than one manifestation of a being. This, too, is a false concept based on the philosophy of men. Elohim is used in the Bible with a plural sense when it refers to several deities and in a singular sense when it refers to a singular deity. Its plural sense can be seen in Ex.12:12, "For I will pass through the land of Egypt this night, and will smite all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both man and beast; and against all the gods (*elohim*) of Egypt I will execute judgment: I am Yahweh." Its singular sense can be seen in 1 Sam.5:7, ". . . and upon Dagon our god (*elohim*)" and 2 Kgs.1:2, ". . . Go, enquire of Baal-zebul the god (*elohim*) of Ekron whether I shall recover of this disease." Are we to believe that Dagon and Baal-zebul are also plural beings who can "incarnate" themselves as Yahweh "supposedly" did?

The word "God" (*elohim*) is properly applied to Yah'shua in Heb.1:9 and Jn.20:28. Both words are from the Greek word "theos" which was also used in reference to Satan (2 Cor.4:4) and Herod (Acts 12:22). It has the same meaning as the Hebrew word "elohim" and can be applied to men, angels, and the Almighty. Ps.82:6 applies it to any child of the

Most High; "I have said, Ye are gods [*elohim*]; and all of you are children of the most High." It simply means "a mighty one among his people." It is not wrong to call Yah'shua an *elohim* or a god. The problem lies in believing he is the one true "God," Yahweh Almighty. Yah'shua made it clear that he was not, in Jn.17:3; "And this is life eternal, that they might know thee [Yahweh] the only true Elohim, and Yah'shua the Messiah, whom thou hast sent." The Apostle Paul declared the same thing in 1 Cor.8:6; "But to us there is but one Elohim, the Father [*Yahweh*], of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Master Yah'shua the Messiah, by whom are all things, and we by him."

Oneness proponents wrongly interpret 1 Jn.5:20 to mean that Yah'shua is the one true "God." It reads, "And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life" (KJV). When it says, "his Son Jesus Christ," it means Yahweh's Son. That being the case, the previous use of the pronoun "him" in the two phrases "him that is true" must also refer to Yahweh. The "his" and "him" refer to the same being. To say that "This is the true God" refers to the Son is grammatically incorrect.

Not only is Yahweh the one true Elohim, but He is also Yah'shua's Elohim. If Yah'shua is an *elohim* or god and he himself has a god, then surely his god must be a greater god. This is what scripture teaches in Mt.27:46; Jn.17:3; 20:17; Eph.1:17; Heb. 1:9; and Rev.3:12. Rev.3:12 says, "Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my Elohim, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my Elohim [*Yahweh*], and the name of the city of my Elohim, New Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my

Elohim: and I will write upon him my new name." Yah'shua is saying this after he ascended to heaven and sat down at the right hand of Yahweh (*Heb 8:1*). If he was the Yahweh Almighty of the Old Covenant, who is his Elohim and who is he sitting next to? Two scriptures answer that question. The first is Ps.110:1; "Yahweh said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool." The second is Mic.5:4; "And he [*Yah'shua*] shall stand and feed in the strength of Yahweh, in the majesty of the name of Yahweh his Elohim; and they shall abide: for now shall he be great unto the ends of the earth."

### **The Image of Yahweh**

What about Jn.14:9? "Yah'shua saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?" Is Yah'shua declaring that he is Father Yahweh? Heb.1:3 and Col.1:15 both state that Yah'shua is the "image" of Yahweh. An image is something that resembles something else. Yah'shua resembles Yahweh in that their characters are almost identical. "Not that any man has seen the Father" (*Jn. 6:46*) bodily, but we have seen His character through His Son.

Man (*specifically Adam*) was made in the "image of Elohim" (*Gen 1:26,27; 5:3; 9:6*). Messiah Yah'shua is also in the "image of Elohim" (*2 Co 4:4; Col 1:15*). "Elohim" in these verses, when understood in the context of pure monotheism, is a reference to Yahweh the Creator. Adam's inner man resembled Elohim, but he himself is not Elohim. Yah'shua's inner man resembles Yahweh, but he himself is not Elohim.

Col 3:10 tells us that after a person's conversion, after he has put on the new man, he is "renewed in knowledge after the image of Him [*Yahweh*] that created him." Rom 8:29, 30

echoes this in that those that have been justified (*through conversion unto the Messiah*) have been predestined to be "conformed to the image of His [*Yahweh's*] Son." Since the Son is in the image of Elohim, to be conformed to the image of the Son is to be conformed to the image of Elohim or Yahweh the Creator. 2 Co 3:18 says that we "are changed into the same image" as the Messiah. This also happens upon conversion.

Adam was made in the image or character of Yahweh. Upon his fall, that image was lost. It can only be restored through conversion unto the Messiah Yah'shua. Yah'shua, being sinless, never lost the image or character of Yahweh. The image of Yahweh has nothing to do with the physical appearance as far as the above references are concerned. It has to do with the inner man.

Look at Ps 73:20. Yahweh despises the image of the wicked. Why? Because they have put off Yahweh's image through sin and have created their own new image. The same is true of all men for all have sinned. We all have fallen away from the image of Yahweh and need to have that image restored through the indwelling Spirit of the Messiah.

When Yahweh looks upon a believer, He sees the righteousness of His Son clothing us. He also sees the image of His Son clothing us. Our physical appearance has not changed, but our inner man has.

### **Yah'shua is from everlasting?**

What about Mic.5:2; "But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting." This is undoubtedly a Messianic prophecy. The question is, what does "goings forth" mean? Does it mean Yah'shua has existed as long as Yahweh? Some say yes thereby giving more weight to

their argument that Yah'shua is Yahweh or has eternally co-existed with Yahweh. According to Strong's Concordance, "Goings forth" comes from one Hebrew word, "mowtsaah". It means, "a family descent." Since Yahweh is Yah'shua's Father, Yah'shua's family descent would go back as far as Yahweh's existence. Since Yahweh has always existed, Yah'shua's family descent or goings forth must be from everlasting. The New English Bible, the Phillips translation, and Today's English Bible render it similarly. Yah'shua himself is not from everlasting. His family descent, or his family tree, is.

There are those who believe that Yah'shua was not only Yahweh, but Melchizedek as well. They site Heb.7:4 to prove this. In Gen.14:18 we read that Melchizedek, king of Salem, "was the priest of the most high God." The "most high God" is shown to be Yahweh three verses later; "...I have lift up mine hand unto Yahweh, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth." Therefore, Melchizedek is the priest of Yahweh, not Yahweh Himself. If Yah'shua is Melchizedek, he cannot be Yahweh. If Yah'shua is Yahweh, he cannot be Melchizedek. The fact is, Yah'shua is neither one of these beings. He is Yahweh's Son and Yahweh made him a priest "after the order of Melchizedek" (*Ps.110:4, Heb. 7:21*).

### **Receiving Worship and Forgiving Sins**

Many people believe that only Almighty Yahweh can forgive sins and receive worship. Since Yah'shua conducted both they believe he must be the Almighty. Yah'shua indeed is worthy of our worship and honor, but only as Yahweh's representative, not as Yahweh Himself. Yahweh commanded even the angels of heaven to worship Yah'shua (*Heb.1:6*). Rev.5:12 ,13 show both Yahweh and the Lamb [*Yah'shua*] receiving worship. Eventually, those

believers comprising the Philadelphia assembly will receive worship as well (Rev. 3:9). The worship they receive however, is not directed at them as though they were Yahweh.

A study of the Hebrew and Greek words that were translated "worship" will show that the Almighty is not always the recipient. Of the 170 occurrences only about half refer to the worship of Yahweh. This is hidden from the reader of scripture because half of those occurrences were translated 'to bow, bow down, do reverence, do obeisance,' as can be seen in the following verses: Gen.18:2; 19:1: 23:7,12; 27:29; 1 Sam.24:8; 25:23,41; 2 Sam.9:6; 14:4,22.

Yah'shua said to a man with palsy, "thy sins be forgiven thee" (*Mt.9:2*). The account continues, "But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (*then saith he to the sick of the palsy,*) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house. And he arose, and departed to his house. But when the multitudes saw it, they marveled, and glorified Yahweh, which had given such power unto men." Were they correct? Had Yahweh given Yah'shua the power to forgive sins? Yah'shua said, "I can of my own self do nothing," "I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things," "the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works" (*Jn.5:30a; 8:28b; 14:10b*). Yahweh gave Yah'shua the authority to forgive sins, judge men, heal the sick, raise the dead, etc. He is Yahweh's Representative with the power to act in His name and in His stead. The word "power" in Mt.9:2 is from the same Greek word that was translated "authority" in Jn.5:27 and throughout the New Covenant. This same power was given to the Angel of Yahweh in Ex.23:20-21, "Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared. Beware

of him, and obey his voice, provoke him not; for he will not pardon your transgressions: for my name is in him."

While we are on the subject of sin, many believe Yah'shua was the one true "God" because "only the death of God could atone for man's sins. The death of a man wouldn't suffice." This is another example of the philosophy of men contrary to scripture. Heb.9:22 says, "And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission (of sins)." One requirement was shed blood. The other requirement was that the sacrifice had to be "without blemish" which, regarding the Messiah, meant sinless. Yahweh Almighty did not have to die. Only the blood of a sinless man was required. Yah'shua was that only sinless man (1 Jn.3:5).

### **The Attributes of Yahweh**

The terms "omniscient" (*all knowing*), and "omnipotent" (*all powerful*) are often applied to Yah'shua to prove he is the Almighty. In Jn.5:30 Yah'shua said, "I can of mine own self do nothing" therefore, he cannot be omnipotent as Yahweh is. Mt. 24:36 proves Yah'shua is not omniscient; "But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but my Father." In order to explain such verses "Oneness" proponents must turn Yah'shua into the "God-Man." This unscriptural idea claims that Yah'shua's divine half is omniscient and omnipotent but that he suppressed his powers during his life in the flesh. Nowhere in scripture is the Messiah called a God-Man or shown to have two such natures at the same time. He is repeatedly referred to as a man in such verses as 1 Tim.2:5. When he is called "God" it is in the sense of a mighty one among his people as was shown earlier. This is not to say that Yah'shua was a mere man. Scripture is clear that Yah'shua's birth was a miracle in that he

was not made from the seed or sperm of man. He is Yahweh's only begotten Son; the only being ever to be "Fathered" by the Spirit of Yahweh.

### **Titles in Common**

Should we refer to Yah'shua as the Almighty, a title only applied to Yahweh? Nowhere in scripture is this ever the case. One scripture that seemingly supports such an application is Rev. 1:8; "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith [the Lord]\*, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty." (KJV). \*The Greek has "kurios o theos" ("*the Lord the God*" or "[Yahweh] Elohim"). The phrase "Lord God" is never used of Yah'shua in the New Covenant. Aside from that, John is giving a greeting starting in verse four and ending in verse seven. Verse four is a greeting from the Father "which is, and which was, and which is to come." Verse five is a greeting from Yah'shua the Messiah. Verse eight is spoken by the Father which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty." Scripture makes a clear distinction between the Almighty and Yah'shua in Rev.21:22; "And I saw no temple therein: for [Yahweh] Elohim Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it." Yah'shua is not Yahweh Almighty.

This misapplication of titles is often the cause of making these two beings into one. For example, Acts 3:14 reads, "But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you;" Here the title "Holy One" is applied to Yah'shua the Messiah. In Is.43:3 it says, "For I am Yahweh thy Elohim, the Holy One of Israel, thy Saviour:. . ." Here the title "Holy One" is applied to Yahweh. Without further study one would conclude these two references are to the same being. However, we are not to study scripture superficially. In what way is Yah'shua the Holy One? The answer is found in Mk.1:24; "Saying,

Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Yah'shua of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of Yahweh." Yahweh is the Holy One of Israel and Yah'shua is the Holy One of Yahweh, not of Israel. Ps.16:10 confirms this understanding; "For thou wilt not leave my body in the grave; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption." This is a Messianic prophecy. "My body" refers to Yah'shua's physical body "thine Holy One" refers to Yahweh's Holy One. Scripture reveals two Holy ones that are separate beings.

Another shared title is "Savior." Is.43:11 says, "I, even I, am Yahweh; and beside me there is no saviour." That seems quite clear. Since Yahweh is the only Savior and Yah'shua is called our Savior, the two must be one and the same being. This is true only in the minds of men who do not study deeply. Is.19:20b reads, "for they shall cry unto Yahweh because of the oppressors, and he shall send them a saviour, and a great one, and he shall deliver them." It was prophesied that Yahweh would send someone other than Himself to be a savior to Egypt. Yahweh is the one true Savior who works through Yah'shua the Messiah, His appointed Savior, or Agent-Savior.

A few other shared titles, all basically equal in meaning, are "Alpha and Omega," "the first and the last," and "the beginning and the end." Each of these titles are applied to both Yahweh and Yah'shua (*Is.41:4;44:6;48:12; Rev.1:8,17;2:8;22:13*) and have the meaning of uniqueness. Each is the first and last of his peculiar, unique kind. Yahweh is unique in that He is the only being that was not created and Yah'shua is unique in that he is the only being ever to be directly begotten by Yahweh the Father (*Jn.1:14*). (Adam was created, all others were begotten by men). Titles that Yahweh and Yah'shua have in common do not supply a firm foundation for a "Oneness" doctrine. If that

were true, Cyrus, the king of Persia, would have been the pre-existent Yah'shua since both are called "Messiah." In Is.45:1 it reads, "Thus saith Yahweh to his anointed, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have holden, to subdue nations before him;" The Hebrew for "anointed" is the same word that was translated "Messiah" in Dan. 9:25,26 and "anointed" in Ps.2:2.

The scriptures tell us Yah'shua would also be called Emmanuel, meaning "God with us," or more correctly, "El with us." As a result, people teach that Yah'shua is "God." This name is to be understood in the light of Acts 10:38; "How [*Yahweh*] anointed Yah'shua of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for [*Yahweh*] (*El*) was with him." Not that Yah'shua was El, but that El was with and in Yah'shua. If you choose to use the logic of those in error, then consider the name Jehu. In Hebrew, this name means "He is Yah" or "Yah is He." Does that mean the man Jehu is, in reality, Yahweh?

Is.9:6 reads, "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace." Is this prophecy declaring Yah'shua the Messiah to be the Heavenly Father? There are at least 27 names in the Bible with the same Hebrew construction as in this verse. Each one means the "father of (*something*)." For example, Abishua means "father of plenty." Instead of translating the phrase in Is.9:6 as "Father of eternity," the KJV reversed the sequence making the true meaning harder to discern. Several newer versions correct this mistake such as The Emphasized Bible, The Bible in Basic English, The New American Bible, The Holy Bible; A Translation From the Latin Vulgate in the Light of the Hebrew and Greek Originals, and The New English Bible,

just to name a few. Yah'shua is the Father of Eternity because eternal life comes to us through him. And so it is written in Heb.5:9, "And being made perfect, he became the author (*or father*) of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;"

One last title that confuses people is "Rock." 1 Cor.10:4 says, "And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was the Messiah." Since Yahweh is called a "Rock" in several Old Covenant verses, the two beings are made into one. This verse must be understood with Ex.17:6 in mind; "Behold, I will stand before thee there upon the rock in Horeb; and thou shalt smite the rock, and there shall come water out of it, that the people may drink. And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel." 1 Cor. 10:4 is figuratively making reference to Ex.17:6 which is a shadow of the Messiah.

To "smite the rock" is to kill the Messiah. The rock could not yield water until it was smitten. Similarly, the Messiah Yah'shua could not give forth "rivers of living water" until he was put to death and then resurrected unto eternal life (glorified). Jn.7:39 shows this "living water" to be the Holy Spirit. Yah'shua was not physically present with them in the wilderness. Spiritually speaking he was. That is why the verse says "spiritual drink" and "spiritual Rock."

The word "them" in the phrase "that followed them" is not in the Greek. Reading the verse without that misleading word gives the meaning that Yah'shua followed in time as in 1 Pe.1:11, "Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of the Messiah which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of the Messiah, and the glory that should follow."

Even if one were to believe Yah'shua physically followed Israel, that would not prove he was Yahweh since Yahweh was not

personally leading or following Israel in the wilderness. Scriptures reveal that the Angel of Yahweh, Yahweh's representative, followed them (*Ex.14:19*).

### **I AM**

"Before Abraham was, I am." These words, spoken by our Savior in Jn.8:58, have led to much controversy and confusion. Some use this verse to prove the Messiah's pre-existence. Others use it to prove the trinity doctrine. And then there are those who use it to prove Yah'shua is the great "I AM" of Ex.3:14.

The phrase "I am" is "ego eimi" in Greek. Since the Greek New Covenant records Yah'shua using "ego eimi" many times, Israelite theologians term these sayings, "The I Am's of Jesus." It is believed that each of these occurrences implies Yah'shua's identity as the "I AM" of Ex.3:14. Can this be true? Can our Savior, the Son of Yahweh, actually be the "I AM"?

Ex.3:14-15 reads, "And Elohim said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you. And Elohim said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, Yahweh, Elohim of your fathers, the Elohim of Abraham, the Elohim of Isaac, and the Elohim of Jacob, hath sent me unto you: this is my name for ever, and this is my memorial unto all generations." Therefore, the "I AM" is identified as "Yahweh."

And what does Yahweh say in Ps.2:7? "I will declare the decree: Yahweh hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee." Yahweh is the Father of Yah'shua. Yah'shua is the Son of Yahweh. Yah'shua is not Yahweh and the Son is not the Father. Therefore, Yah'shua (*the Son of Yahweh*) cannot be the I AM (*Yahweh*). That alone should be sufficient to discredit the belief that Yah'shua was claiming to be the "I AM." But let's look into the matter a little farther.

In the Greek Septuagint (LXX), Ex 3:14 reads,

και ειπεν ο θεος προς μωυσην λεγων εγω ειμι ο ων και ειπει ουτω ερει τοι υιοι ισραηλ ο ων απεσταλκε με προς υμα.

In Septuagint English it reads, "And Yahweh spoke to Moses, saying, I am THE BEING; and he said, Thus shall ye say to the children of Israel, THE BEING has sent me to you."

In KJV English it reads, "And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you."

In John 8:58, "I am" is " εγω ειμι " in Greek. As you can see, " εγω ειμι " in Ex 3:14 is just the prelude to what the Almighty really wanted the Israelites to know, that is, that He was the " ο ων " or "the Being" or "the Existing One".

If Yah'shua truly wanted to tell the Hebrews he was the great "I am" of Ex 3:14, he would have said, "Before Abraham was I am the Being" or "I am the Existing One".

It is believed that Jn.8:59 further supports the position that Yah'shua is the "I AM." Why else would the Hebrews try to stone him? He obviously blasphemed in the eyes of the Hebrews, a stoneable offense. Or did he? Is the mere utterance of "ego eimi" a blasphemy? Does the use of "ego eimi" automatically identify the speaker as Yahweh, the I AM?

Several individuals aside from Yah'shua used "ego eimi" as well. In Lu.1:19, the angel Gabriel said, "Ego eimi Gabriel." In Jn.9:9, the blind man whose sight was restored by Yah'shua said, "Ego eimi." In Acts 10:21, Peter said, "Behold, ego eimi (*I am*) he whom ye seek." Obviously, the mere use of "ego eimi" does not equate one to the "I Am" of Ex.3:14. But perhaps the Saviors use of it was somehow different.

If, in fact, Yah'shua spoke Greek to the Hebrews (*which we doubt*), he used the phrase

"ego eimi" at least twenty times and yet, in only one instance did the Hebrews seek to stone him (*Jn.8:58*). Yah'shua said, "I am the bread of life" to a large crowd, in Jn.6:35 & 48, yet no one opposed him. In verse 41, the Hebrews murmured because he said, "I am (*ego eimi*) the bread which came down from heaven." But in verse 42, the Hebrews questioned only the phrase, "I came down from heaven" and ignored "ego eimi." The same is true of verses 51 & 52.

In Jn.8:12, 18, 24, & 28, Yah'shua used "ego eimi" with Pharisees present (*vs.13*) and yet, no stoning. He, again, used it four times in Jn.10:7, 9, 11, & 14 with no stoning. Yah'shua said to his disciples, "...that...ye may believe that I am (*ego eimi*)" in Jn.13:19 without them batting an eye.

An interesting account occurs in Jn.18 when the Hebrews came to arrest Yah'shua in the Garden of Gethsemane. When the chief priests and Pharisees said they were seeking Yah'shua of Nazareth, Yah'shua said to them, "Ego eimi." At that they fell backward to the ground. It is not made clear why they fell to the ground, but what followed will make it clear that Yah'shua was not claiming to be the "I AM."

After Yah'shua's arrest, the Hebrews took him to Annas first (*vs.13*). Then they took him to Caiaphas (*vs.24*) and eventually to Pilate (*vss.28,29*). A parallel account is found in Mt.26:57-68. Notice, in particular, verse 59. The same men that had fallen backward to the ground were in attendance when the council sought false witnesses against Yah'shua to put him to death. Verse 60 says they couldn't find any. Eventually two came forward. Interestingly, they didn't bear false witness about what Yah'shua said in Jn.8:58, but about his reference to destroying the temple and building it again in three days. Where were all those witnesses from Jn.8:58?

The point about Mt.26 is, why would false witnesses be sought if they had true witnesses in attendance? The arresting officers heard Yah'shua say "Ego eimi." They could have stoned him right there in the garden for blasphemy, but they didn't. They could have reported the supposed blasphemy to the council, but they didn't. Why not? Because it wasn't blasphemy, nor was it a stoneable offense. He was merely identifying himself as Yah'shua of Nazareth.

This brings us back to Jn.8:58. Why did the Hebrews seek to stone him on that occasion? The context of Jn.8 shows that Yah'shua;

- 1) accused Hebrews of "judging after the flesh" (vs.15).
- 2) said they would die in their sins (vss.21,24).
- 3) implied they were in bondage (vss.32,33).
- 4) said they were servants of sin (vs.34).
- 5) said they were out to kill him (vss. 37,40).
- 6) implied they were spiritually deaf (vs.43,47).
- 7) said their father was the devil (vs.44).
- 8) said they were not of Yahweh (vs.47).
- 9) accused them of dishonoring him (vs.49).
- 10) accused them of not knowing Yahweh (vs.55).
- 11) accused them of lying (vs.55).

Aside from that, the Hebrews misunderstood Yah'shua's words leading them to believe;

- 1) he accused them of being born of fornication (vs.41).
- 2) Yah'shua had a devil (vs.52).
- 3) that he was exalting himself above Abraham (vs.53).
- 4) that he saw Abraham (vs.56).

Yah'shua's words in verse 58 were the culmination of an encounter that was so offensive to the Hebrews that they couldn't restrain themselves anymore. They simply couldn't take it anymore so they sought to stone him, not because of two simple words, "ego eimi," but because he was making himself

out to be greater than their beloved father Abraham. They sought to stone him illegally.

So what does Jn.8:58 really mean? Let's look at the context of Yah'shua's statement. It begins in verse 51 with the thought of eternal life; "If a man keep my sayings, he shall never see death." The Hebrews thought since Abraham and the prophets were dead, Yah'shua must have a devil. The context is eternal life. Then in verse 56 Yah'shua says Abraham "rejoiced to see my day." He did not say he saw Abraham as the Hebrews misunderstood. How did Abraham see Yah'shua's day? Heb.11:13 says, "These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth." He saw Yah'shua's day by faith.

Yah'shua then resumed the context of his initial conversation by saying, "Before Abraham was, I am." "Was" is from the Greek "ginomai" meaning, "to come into being, ... to arise." What Yah'shua actually meant was, "Before Abraham comes into being (*at his resurrection unto eternal life*), I will." Confirmation of this understanding comes to us from Figures of Speech Used in the Bible by E.W. Bullinger, pgs. 521,522. Under the heading "Heterosis (*Of Tenses*)," subheading "The Present for the Future," he writes, "This is put when the design is to show that some thing will certainly come to pass, and is spoken of as though it were already present." He then lists some examples such as Mt.3:10b, "therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is [shall be] hewn down;" and Mk.9:31a, "For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is [*shall be*] delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day."

Included among this list of examples of Heterosis is Jn.8:58. In other words, although properly written, "Before Abraham comes to be, I am," with "I am" in the simple present tense, the meaning points to the future, "Before Abraham comes to be, I will."

Yah'shua was telling them that Abraham will be one of those people who will be granted eternal life, but before that takes place, Yah'shua will receive that same eternal life. This statement of fact must be, since Yah'shua is to have the preeminence in all things. He must be the firstborn from the dead, the first to receive eternal life.

Some people believe this verse should be translated, "Before Abraham existed, I existed." However, neither Greek verb is in the perfect tense (*past tense*). "Was" is in the aorist tense and "am" is in the present tense. Let's look a little closer at "was." Concerning the aorist tense, A Manual Grammar of the Greek New Covenant by Dana and Mantey says, "It has time relations only in the indicative, where it is past and hence augmented." The verb ginomai (*was*) is in the infinitive, not the indicative. Therefore it should not be translated in the past tense. This same reference says of the infinitive, "The aorist infinitive denotes that which is eventual or particular, ..." Abraham will eventually resurrect which is why the Greek uses the aorist infinitive. The meaning is, "Before Abraham comes to be" not "Before Abraham was (*or existed*)."

Yah'shua was not declaring that he is the great "I AM" of Ex.3:14. Yah'shua was not declaring himself to be Yahweh. And Yah'shua was not declaring his pre-existence. He is the Son of Yahweh and the Son of the great "I Am."

### **The Word was God?**

In Jn.1:1-3 we read, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God,

and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made" (*KJV*). As mentioned previously, it is not wrong to address Yah'shua as god or elohim as long as we don't address him as the "one true Elohim." According to the common understanding of verse 1, there are two beings, the Word and God, Yah'shua and Yahweh. Therefore, the phrase "the Word was God" would lead one to believe that Yah'shua (*the Word*) was Yahweh (*God*). However, if we know that Yahweh called Yah'shua "God" or "elohim" in Heb.1:9 and Ps.45:7, there is no problem with the phrase "the Word was God." Yah'shua is obviously an elohim in Hebrew or a god in English. This, of course, is based on the common understanding of the "Word" being Yah'shua. That, however, is not what John intended when he wrote these verses.

Nor did John intend to teach us that the Son preexisted "with" God from the very beginning of creation. De 32:39 says, "See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god with me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of my hand." Yahweh the Father is speaking here. He is saying there is no other "elohim" or no other God with Him. John 1:1 says, ". . .and the Word was WITH God, and the Word was God." If the "Word" is the Son and the Son was WITH God and was God, how does that harmonize with the above verse? In De 32:39, since Yahweh was speaking, then there was no other God with Him, not even the Son.

Since Yah'shua is called "The Word of God" in Rev.19:13, the translators of the KJV assumed the "Word" of Jn.1:1 was also Yah'shua and therefore, capitalized the word "word" and used the pronoun "him" in reference to the "word." The Greek for "Word" is "logos." It appears in the text written with a small letter l. Logos means "the spoken word"

or "something said (*including the thought*)." In that sense the word is an "it," not a being but a thing. The great English translator William Tyndale renders it that way in his 1525 version as does the Matthew's Bible of 1537, the Great Bible of 1539, the Geneva Bible of 1560, and the Bishop's Bible of 1568. Verse 3 should read, "All things were made through it; and without it was not anything made that was made." In other words, Yahweh spoke creation into existence. This understanding agrees perfectly with passages such as Gen.1:3,6,9,11,14, 20, and 24 all of which begin, "And Elohim said." Yahweh spoke and it was done. Ps.33:6,9 says, "By the word of Yahweh were the heavens made; and all the host by the breath of his mouth. . . For He spoke and it was; He commanded, and it stood fast." Not only did Yahweh speak creation into existence, but He also spoke His Son Yah'shua into existence; "And the word (*Yahweh's spoken word*) was (*what*) made flesh" (*Jn.1:14*). Yah'shua did not become the "Word of [*Yahweh*]" until his birth as a flesh and blood male child - then He would become Yahweh's "agent".

How then should we translate verse 1? "In the beginning was the spoken word, and the words were from Yahweh, and the words were Yahweh's. It was in the beginning from Yahweh. All things were made through Yahweh's word, and without it nothing was made that was made. In Yahweh's word was life, and the life was the light of men" is believed to be the most accurate suggestion. The Greek word translated "God" is "theos." The Greek does not have a different word to show possession. Therefore, theos can be translated "Yahweh" or "Yahweh's." The possessive form makes this verse so clear and in harmony with the phrase "the word was with Yahweh."

### **Who is the Creator?**

Getting back to the issue of creation, many believe Yah'shua created all things. A thorough study of the Old Covenant scriptures shows Yahweh to be the Creator and that He acted alone to accomplish this. Note Is.44:24; "Thus saith Yahweh, thy redeemer, and he that formed thee from the womb, I am Yahweh that maketh all things; that stretcheth forth the heavens alone; that spreadeth abroad the earth by myself;" Where is Yah'shua in this verse? It has been proven beyond a shadow of a doubt that Yah'shua is not Yahweh, therefore, Yah'shua did not have a hand in creation. This is confirmed in Job 9:8; "Which alone spreadeth out the heavens, and treadeth upon the waves of the sea." Consider also Prov.30:4; "Who hath ascended up into heaven? who hath gathered the wind in His fists? Who hath bound the waters in a garment? Who hath established all the ends of the earth? What is His name, and what is His son's name, if thou canst tell?" This verse teaches us that the Creator, whoever He is, has a Son. Does Yah'shua have a son? No. Father Yahweh is the Creator and He has a Son who is not given credit for creation in this verse.

There are several New Covenant scriptures used to prove he did create all things. They are Jn 1:3, which we already looked at; Jn.1:10; 1 Cor.8:6; Eph.3:9; Col.1:16; and Heb.1:2. All these verses use the same basic phrase, "by him" or "by Yah'shua Messiah." The phrase "by Yah'shua the Messiah" in Eph.3:9 is not found in any Greek MSS. Without the added words this verse teaches us that Yahweh is the Creator. The remaining four verses imply that Yah'shua is the Creator. Thus far, it has been conclusively proven that Yah'shua is not Yahweh. Since the scriptures emphatically state over 100 times that Yahweh is the Creator (*Ex.20:11*) and that

He acted alone (*Is.44:24*), should we discard that wealth of evidence and accept Yah'shua as the Creator without question? A careful examination of the Greek of those four verses will yield a different picture.

The Greek word for "by" is "dia." It can be translated "by," "through," "on account of," "for," etc., based on the context or message of the sentence. These four verses in question will not allow the translation "by" because it does not agree or harmonize with over 100 other verses stating that Yahweh is the Creator. An example of the importance of context is Mk.2:27; "And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath." Both words "for" in this verse are from the Greek word "dia." It would be incorrect to translate "dia" as "by" in this verse: The Sabbath was made by man. If you will notice the Greek of Jn.1:10 you will see it is the exact same construction as Mk.2:27 yet one verse says "for" and the other says "by." Also, in the case of Heb 1:2, it is revealed that Yah'shua is the heir of all things that have been created by Yahweh. He is not the Creator Himself.

1 Pe.1:20 says, "Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you." Before creation, Yah'shua existed in the foreordained plans of Yahweh. He was "the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world" (Rev.13:8). Even before creation Yahweh knew that Yah'shua had to be slain. Even before creation Yahweh knew that He would create all things through and for His Son. And so it is written and correctly translated in Col.1:16, "For in him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created through him, and for him:" Without Yah'shua in Yahweh's plan, creation

would never have occurred. The remaining three scriptures using "by" should be translated similarly.

### **Know the Scriptures**

There has been a very sharp attack centered on using Old Covenant quotes found in the New Covenant that are applied to both Yahweh and Yah'shua to prove the two are one and the same. It is important to fully understand these verses correctly.

The first is found in Rom.14:10,11. It reads, "But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God" (*KJV*). Paul was quoting Is.45:23 in which the speaker is Yahweh. So when verse 23 says, "That unto me," "me" refers to Yahweh. Every knee will bow and every tongue will swear to Yahweh. Therefore, in Rom.14:11, "Lord" must mean Yahweh, as does "me" and "God". There is no mention of the Messiah in this verse; not even in verse 10. Concerning the phrase "judgment seat of the Christ," the Jamieson, Faussett, Brown Commentary says, "All the most ancient and best MSS. read here, "judgment seat of Yahweh."

Paul does, however, apply portions of Isa.45:23 to Yah'shua in Ph.2:10,11. That does not mean he is also applying the Name "Yahweh" to him as well. Jn.5:23 helps us to understand this. If you don't honor the Son, by extension, you don't honor the Father. And Jn.15:23; if you hate the Son, by extension, you hate the Father. If you bow your knees to the Son, by extension, you bow your knees to the Father. Notice that what is sworn in Isa.45:23,24 is not what is sworn in Ph.2:11. (*every tongue shall confess or swear that Yah'shua is "Master" [kurios]*). That same word (*kurios*) was applied to men in several other

verses such as Jn.12:21. It is only a reference to Yahweh when it is a direct quote of an Old Covenant verse containing the Tetragrammaton which Is.45:23 does not.

The next reference is 1 Pe.2:8, "And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offense, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed." Peter is here applying Is.8:14 to Messiah. It is to be understood in the sense that, since Yah'shua is Yahweh's representative or agent, whatever Yah'shua does is credited to Yahweh, or is as though Yahweh did it. Isaiah says Yahweh will be a stumbling stone. Yahweh then causes Israel to stumble over Yah'shua which makes them both stumbling stones. "The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner. This is Yahweh's doing; it is marvelous in our eyes" (Ps.118:22,23).

Consider Ex.7:17 when understanding this verse. "Thus saith Yahweh, In this thou shalt know that I am Yahweh: behold, I will smite with the rod that is in mine hand upon the waters which are in the river, and they shall be turned to blood. And the fish that is in the river shall die, and the river shall stink; and the Egyptians shall lothe to drink of the water of the river. And Yahweh spake unto Moses, Say unto Aaron, Take thy rod, and stretch out thine hand upon the waters of Egypt, upon their streams, upon their rivers, and upon their ponds, and upon all their pools of water, that they may become blood; and that there may be blood throughout all the land of Egypt, both in vessels of wood, and in vessels of stone. And Moses and Aaron did so, as Yahweh commanded; and he lifted up the rod, and smote the waters that were in the river, in the sight of Pharaoh, and in the sight of his servants; and all the waters that were in the river were turned to blood."

Yahweh says He Himself will smite the waters with the rod in His own hand. Yet, it was Aaron that held the rod (Ex.7:19,20). Are we to believe that Aaron is also Yahweh? Neither should we believe that Yah'shua is Yahweh in this verse.

Consider Zech 14:4 in this light as well. "And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south."

Most people believe "his feet" refers to Yahweh's feet. Yet, they realize that it is Yah'shua who is returning to set up the Kingdom on earth. So they jump to the erroneous conclusion that Yah'shua is Yahweh. As Messiah's feet land on the Mount of Olives, Yahweh the Father will cause it to cleave in two. Yet, as Yahweh's representative, Yah'shua's feet are spoken of as Yahweh's feet just as Aaron's hand is spoken of as Yahweh's hand.

Yah'shua is not the only one "coming" on judgment day. Yahweh will come as well, but not in the physical sense that Yah'shua will.

Isa 40:10 - "Behold, the Sovereign Yahweh will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him."

The phrase "his arm" is a reference to the Messiah (Jn 12:38), but "the Sovereign Yahweh" is a reference to the Father.

Isa 66:15 - "For, behold, Yahweh will come with fire, and with his chariots like a whirlwind, to render his anger with fury, and his rebuke with flames of fire."

This is the language of 2 Peter 3:10-13 when it talks about "the Day of Yahweh." Yahweh the Father will come bringing judgment upon the world. He will do so through

His Son Yah'shua and the saints which will be riding on the "chariots" of Yahweh the Father. "All the saints" of Zech 14:5 would include Yah'shua.

Ex.7:17 is also the key to understanding Zec.11:13 which reads, "And Yahweh said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prized at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of Yahweh." Since Yah'shua was priced at 30 pieces of silver, and since Yahweh here says, "I was prized at of them," some conclude that Yah'shua is also called Yahweh. Using that same logic, who cast the silver down? Mt.27:5 says of Judas, "And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple..." Are we to believe that Judas is also called Yahweh?

The next attack on Scripture comes in 1 Pe.3:14,15, "But and if ye suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye: and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled; But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear." (KJV) Several commentaries and Greek manuscripts read "Christ" instead of "God" in these verses. They imply it should read, "But sanctify [Yahweh] who is Christ." According to the Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures, there are 6 Mss. that have "Christos" or "Messiah" in the text and 8 MSS. that do not. Since the Hebrew Text clearly says, "Yahweh of hosts" (Is.8:13), the Greek would say either theos or kurios, not Christos. The Greek text was obviously tampered with by those who tried to prove that Yah'shua was the YHWH of the Old Covenant.

The last attack comes in 1 Pe.2:3,4, "If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God,

and precious," (KJV). In verse 3, Peter is quoting Ps.34:8 which is speaking about Yahweh. Some people would have us believe that Peter is applying the Tetragrammaton, YHWH, to the Messiah in verse 4. The words "as unto" in the KJV, however, are added words not found in the Greek that change Peter's meaning. Delete these words and the Greek text reads, "To whom coming toward" or "To whom drawing near, as living stone..." In other words, the living stone (*Yah'shua*) was drawing near or coming toward Yahweh as will all living stones in the future (vs.5). The "whom" in verse 4 refers to the "Lord" YHWH of verse 3; "To [*Yahweh*] coming, a living stone."

### **No Man Has Seen God?**

This study would not be complete without addressing the issue concerning the following statements; (*Jn.5:37*), "And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape."

And again in 1 Jn.4:12, "No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us" (KJV). Since Yahweh (God) was never seen, or heard for that matter, then who was it that men saw in such passages as Deut.4:12, Ex.24:9-11, etc.? It is assumed that the pre-existent Messiah is the one they saw and that he is referred to as Yahweh.

To understand this we need to look at a few other examples. Consider the following;

Gen.22:11-12 - "And the angel of Yahweh called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I. And he said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest Elohim, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me."

Ex.3:2-6 - "And the angel of Yahweh appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush:... And when Yahweh saw that he turned aside to see, Elohim called unto him out of the midst of the bush, ... he said, I am the Elohim of thy father, the Elohim of Abraham, the Elohim of Isaac, and the Elohim of Jacob. And Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to look upon Elohim."

In these two passages, and many others involving the Angel of Yahweh, the angel speaks as though he was Yahweh. That is because Yahweh was speaking through the angel. Ex.23:20-22 reads, "Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared. Beware of him, and obey his voice, provoke him not; for he will not pardon your transgressions: for my name is in him. But if thou shalt indeed obey his voice, and do all that I speak; then I will be an enemy unto thine enemies, and an adversary unto thine adversaries." As Yahweh's chosen representative, the Angel speaks whatever he is told to speak by Yahweh. The same was true of Yah'shua (*Jn.12:49,50*), and the prophets (*Heb.1:1*).

How does this relate to the giving of the Law at Mt. Sinai? Wasn't it Yahweh's own voice they heard? That is what Deut.4:12 would suggest. Yet, several New Covenant Scriptures reveal the speaker to be an angel. Acts 7:38,53 read, "This is he, that was in the congregation in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us:...Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it." Also in Gal.3:19, "...and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator (Moses)."

So what can we conclude about this? It is true that Yahweh's voice has never been heard nor His shape seen. It was an angel that

appeared to men. Yet, this angel, as Yahweh's chosen representative, could speak with the authority of Yahweh as though he were Yahweh. The prophets do the same thing quite often. Therefore, Malachi can say, "Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me..." (*Mal.3:1*), yet, no one would dare say Malachi was Yahweh.

The Jewish understanding of this is important to note here. It is called the law of agency. "The Encyclopedia of the Jewish Religion," Adama Books, New York, 1986, pg.15 reads, "The main point of the Jewish law of agency is expressed in the dictum "A person's agent is regarded as the person himself." Almighty Yahweh appointed both Yah'shua the Messiah, His Son, and the Angel of Yahweh, as His agents. As such, anything they did was regarded as though the Almighty Himself did it.

A wealth of scriptural truth has been presented in this study. An honest seeker of truth should now know that Yah'shua is not Yahweh, the Mighty One of Israel, nor did Yah'shua pre-exist with Yahweh from eternity. He is Yahweh's only begotten Son – created when He was begotten by His Holy Spirit. That is what we must believe. "Whosoever shall confess that Yah'shua is the Son of [*Yahweh*], [*Yahweh*] dwelleth in him, and he in [*Yahweh*]" (*1 Jn.4:15*). If you believe that Yah'shua is Yahweh instead of the Son of Yahweh, the truth is not in you. Peter knew this truth and responded correctly; "Thou art the Messiah, the Son of the living Elohim" (*Mt.16:16*). How will you now respond?

### **Appendix A**

There are several passages in which Yahweh is spoken of as "God" and yet, they are mistakenly applied to Yah'shua. The first is Jude 1:24,25. It reads, "Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory

with exceeding joy, to the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen." Who is it that is able to keep us from falling? Jn.10:29 and Rom.16:25-27 teach us that it is the Father (*Yahweh*) who keeps us. He is "God only wise" or "the only wise God."

The second passage is 1 Tim.1:17. It reads, "Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen." We just saw who the "only wise God" is in Rom.16:25-27.

The third passage is Titus 2:13; "Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus the Christ;" Does this mean Paul is saying Yah'shua is the great God? In his opening (Titus 1:4) he greets Titus from "God [Yahweh] the Father and the Lord Jesus the Christ [Yah'shua].

In Paul's mind there are two individuals, not two manifestations of one being. Some commentators believe the word "and" in Titus 2:13 should be translated "even" since the Greek word "kai" can carry that meaning. Most lexicons will show that kai means "and" in the overwhelming majority of uses and, in comparison, rarely means "even." If we change "and" to "even" anytime we want, then we can say things like Prisca and Aquila are the same person (*2 Tim.4:19*), etc.

## The “Why” & “How” of Pronouncing our Father’s Name:

Regarding pronunciation, a difficulty lies in the fact that neither written Hebrew letters or Hebrew words are directly translatable into written English letters or words. Compounding this issue of course, is the fact that not every Hebrew speaker agrees with the precise pronunciation of all Hebrew words and/or letters (*nor do English speakers agree on English*).

There are innumerable versions of the Creator's name in English, all alleging to be "the correct" spelling, yet all offering different origins and justifications for their opinion. To determine the correct pronunciation or enunciation of any of these English versions is not relevant to any valid purpose that we can imagine.

There is only one Hebrew version of our Creator's name that is written in the original Hebrew language of the original Hebrew Bible, or Hebrew Torah. Any and all attempts to conduct a "literal" translation of the Hebrew letters used in this original writing of our Father's name, into English letters is utterly pointless.

Thus when a Hebrew, speaking the Hebrew language, attempts to advise "what" letters or words he is speaking, we can only utilize a best possible English equivalent for a translation. Notwithstanding, if we "hear" the word spoken in Hebrew, then we can "pronounce" that word identically, whether or not our native tongue is Hebrew or English (or any other language for that matter). For example, the English name "Sam" can be pronounced virtually identically by people of a great many languages, yet they may indeed, all write it differently.

Therefore we could justify any number of spellings for our Father's name in "English", based upon it's supposed "\*proper"

pronunciation, or "sound" when spoken by a Hebrew speaker, simply by adjusting our own definitions of the English letter/word sound combinations. However, if we accept the most commonly spoken Hebrew sound of our Father's name, and if we accept the most common "\*proper" definitions of the sounds of English letter combinations, we are left with an English spelling for our Father's name as, "Yahweh", pronounced to sound as, "hyahhwehh". This "sound" is well established and accepted as the sound spoken when uttering the Father's name in the ancient form of Hebrew, as well as in most modern forms of the Hebrew language.

Taking this to the next step of identifying an acceptable spelling of our Messiah's name, we must again look at the original Hebrew sounds, the original Hebrew texts, as well as the most logical English language equivalent to accomplish the proper "sound", while maintaining the integrity of the name itself. Exhaustive research indicates that the best possible English equivalent to the proper Hebrew sound would be to spell His name in English as "Yah'shua", and pronounce it as "hyahhshooahh".

To summarize, there is a comparative degree of importance relative to the various aspects of spelling, as opposed to speaking, the names of our Father and of His Son. We can only agree with the Hebrew speaking authorities insofar as the proper "sounds" are concerned, thus we can only agree to an impersonal transliteration of these "sounds" into English letters, that in the highest instance of usage, would result in readers interpreting the English letters so utilized, to "sound" exactly like the original Hebrew does (*when spoken*).

Many organizations have devised arguments to support an English spelling of our Father's name (*and in many cases, the*

*Messiah's name*) that in the highest instance of usage, results in English readers interpreting their selected letters as sounding different than the historical Hebrew "sound". One can only conclude that these organizations are either ignorant of the significance of the proper Hebrew sound(s), or that they have some undisclosed agenda associated with their choice of English letters.

\*See "The Canadian Style" ISBN #:1-55002-276-8 for more detail.

## Yah'shua - the proper name of our Messiah



### Hebrew "Yh'shw" = English "Yah'shua"

There is no more prophetically important Name than the Name of the Son of Yahweh whom the world has come to know as "Jesus". In the Bible we are told its meaning: "..Yahweh sent the angel Gabriel...and said (to Mary)...You will...give birth to a son, and you are to give Him the Name Yah'shua...because He will save His people from their sins" (*Lk. 1:26-31; Mt. 1:21*).

Unfortunately millions of Christians have been brought up to believe that the Name of the Son of Yahweh is "Jesus". It isn't. "Jesus" isn't His real name at all but it is a corrupt Latin-Greek fabrication of a name that does not carry the meaning ascribed by Yahweh through His angel Gabriel. The Greek for "saviour" is *soter* and the Latin is *salvare*. The Son of Yahweh was never called "Jesus" at any time in the original Bibles, either in prophecy or while on earth or in Heaven.

Every son anciently bore his father's name. There were no surnames or "family names" anciently, though there were certainly tribal associations. The ancient practice still obtains in many countries around the world. While a mortal, Yah'shua carried the name of his step-father, Joseph, and would typically have been known as He was often referenced as "Yah'shua ben Joseph" (or "*Yah'shua bar Joseph*") under normal conditions, meaning Yah'shua, son of Joseph.

However, His Heavenly Father was His true Father and whose Name we would therefore also expect Him to bear. And indeed

He does, and He claimed to do the same, when He said: "I have come in My Father's Name" (*Jn.5:43*) which means more than simply bearing the authority of Yahweh -- it means that the Father's Name was in His own name, meaning He was "Yah'shua, the Son of Yahweh" (*His Father*).

The true Name of the Man we have come to know as "Jesus" is, in fact, Yah'shua. His Name is even mentioned in the Old Covenant when Moses said: "Yah (*the Lord*)...has become my salvation" (*Ex.15:2*). David echoed him: "Yah (*the Lord*)...has become my salvation" (*Ps.118:14*). This became a common cry of victory: "..Yah (*God*)...is my salvation" (*Isa.12:2a*). The Hebrew for "salvation" is *shua*; thus Yah'shua in "loosely translated" English means "God of Salvation", or more accurately transliterated, it means, "Yahweh is Salvation" or "Yahweh's Salvation".

In the light of what we know about the proper name of Yahweh, what then should be our position regarding "Jesus" and Yah'shua? Unlike the word "Jehovah", which we consider blasphemous, we can find no evidence that "Jesus" falls under a similar category. "Jesus" is not, as we have said, His proper name, and tells us by its definition, nothing about the Man of the Messiah. Clearly Yah'shua is the proper Name that defines "who" the Messiah is, and the one we should begin to get into the habit of using.

"Jesus" is derived from the Greek which has no "sh" sound. When originally Yah'shua was translated into the Greek, it probably sounded something like "Eesu-uh" with the suffix "-s" for the correct grammatical ending, making *iesous*. This was also the name used in English up to about two-and-a-half-centuries ago when it was written "Iesus", and is still the pronunciation used in Scandinavian countries, even though it is spelled "Jesus", as is the

Spanish version which sounds like "Heyzuez".

There are some who maintain that "Iesous" or its derivative "Jesus" is a blasphemous syncretism with the Greek deity Zeus but we find little evidence for that. Iesous is simply the erroneous Hellenic (*Greek*) version of Yah'shua which later became corrupted into the word Jesus. To say "Jesus" instead of Yah'shua is, in our opinion, no more insulting than someone calling me "Henry" instead of "Jon". However, clearly "Yah'shua" is His proper name and demonstrates not only our respect, but our willingness to be obedient. There is no obstacle to Anglo-Saxon tongues articulating it, thus we should learn to use it.

The name "Jesus" is thrice removed from the original Hebrew/Aramaic "ישוע". That said, the Messiah's name is not "Jesus," it is "Yah'shua", nor is it "Yeshua" as others also erroneously claim.

"Yah'shua" is a transliteration of the Hebrew ישוע. "Yeshua" is an incorrect transliteration of the Hebrew, more akin to a translation. Yeshua is an incorrectly shortened or contracted form of Y'hoshua יהושע - the Hebrew equivalent of "Joshua", which is more accurately, "salvation" as opposed to "Yahweh is Salvation", or "Yahweh's Salvation".

Where Y'hoshua is used it is intended to mean "Yahweh Saves" or "Yahweh of salvation", or sometimes simply "salvation". (**"Yah" יה** being a shortened, Biblical form of the sacred Name of Yahweh יהוה, usually represented in English as YHWH, or sometimes incorrectly as YHVH and commonly misspelled in English as "Jehovah".) The ancient scribes of the Hebrew Scriptures (*Masoretes*) purposely misspelled (*mis-pointed*) the sacred Name ("YHWH") to alert readers to avoid its pronunciation, which was superstitiously considered too sacred to utter.

All throughout the Scriptures, the Masoretes purposely misspelled (*mis-pointed*)

other names, like "Y'hoshua," for the same reasons - to avoid pronouncing the sacred Name. The Hebrew for "Yah" appears in many places in the Scriptures, including in other names, such as "Yeshayahu" (*Isaiah*), "Yoshiyahu" (*Josiah*) and many others where this same form of misspelling did not occur.

Since "Y'hoshua" has purposely been misspelled, it should be correctly rendered "Yah'shua" to preserve the "Yah" in the name. Any 5-year-old Hebrew student can easily pronounce what was originally written in the Scriptures, which can only be transliterated correctly as "Yah'shua".

According to Matthew 1:21, the Master was named "Yah'shua" because he would in His Father's name, save his people from their sins. "Yeshua", the shortened form of the Hebrew "yeshuah" ישועה, does not mean "Yahweh saves," but means simply "salvation" or "Yah of salvation" - which although is exactly what Yah'shua is for us, it tends to imply that our salvation is by the power or authority of the Messiah rather than by the power and authority of Yahweh. Salvation is "through" the Messiah, but exclusively by the power and authority of Yahweh, as the Messiah Himself stated, "I can do nothing of Myself".

When reading the original Hebrew and in many cases, even the original Greek writings, we must also utilize the proper grammatical structure originally intended. For example, the phrase; "you shall call His name" has been erroneously used in place of; "His name shall be called" in many, if not most modern English translations of the New Covenant.

The original writers were attempting in these instances to explain to us what would come to mind, or what we would think of when we heard His name, or in other words, "what His name means" as opposed to "what His name is". The word "called", might be better

translated in English as "mean", so that the phrase properly transliterated would read: "His name shall mean".

The best example of this is where the same grammar was left intact in the English translations of Isaiah 9:6: "For unto us a Child is born, Unto us a Son is given; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called [will mean] Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace." Obviously, these are meant to describe what His name "means" to us, they are not all intended to "be" His names.

In this example, it is clear that whatever His "name" would be, it would call to mind, ALL of these things. This also applies to the often misunderstood Hebrew word "Immanuel". The grammar used with the word Immanuel was the same.

In other words, when we heard His name called, we would think of "God with us" in English, or "Immanuel" if we were Hebrew speaking (*which is translated into the English phrase "God with us"*). Our Messiah's name is Yah'shua. Yah'shua's name will be called - it will mean to us, Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace, God with us, or if you are Hebrew speaking, Immanuel, which is the Hebrew equivalent of God with us.

We should not be surprised at why *Christians* "changed" the Messiah's name when conducting their early Bible translations. Does it not seem obvious that *Christians* wanted to change names and other key words to gain credibility for their adoption of the false traditional, pagan doctrines still practiced by them today. If not, they would have changed His name from Yah'shua to 'Immanuel', not to the totally foreign Greek name, "Ieusus", which has more recently been altered into the form, "Jesus".

The Messiah has so many names in the Tanakh that if He was to be literally acknowledged by them all, the result would be ridiculous. This fact opened the opportunity for deception by the early *Christians*. We must be aware that Biblically, names can indicate something of a descriptive nature of the one to whom they belong. For that reason, Abraham, Jacob and others had their names changed to indicate a change of nature or position. Abram, the "exalted father", becomes Abraham; the "father of multitude".

The Messiah has many descriptive names; e.g.: ha Tsemach, "the Branch" (*Zechariah 3:8*); Pele, "Wonderful"; Ya'ats, "Counselor"; El gibbor, "mighty God" (*Isaiah 9:6*) etc.

It should be obvious that these descriptive names, including Immanuel speak of His nature, describing who He is, and are not meant to be strictly literal designations as to His actual name/title. What is interesting is that Matthew, while recognizing that Yah'shua is the Messiah – the prophesied Immanuel, relates that it was the angel Gabriel who instructed Miriam as to what her Son's name would mean [*what His name shall be called - meaning what His name shall 'mean', not what His name shall 'be'*] (*Matthew 1:18-25*).

## Our Messiah was an Israelite

### Not a "Jew":

During Yah'shua's lifetime, no people were described as "Jews" anywhere on the planet. That fact is supported by theology, history and science. When Yah'shua was in Judea, it was not the "homeland" of the ancestors of those who today style themselves as "Jews". (*Remember the letter "J" did not exist in any alphabet until about the 17th century AD!*)

The self-styled modern Jews' ancestors never set a foot in Judea. They existed at that time in Asia, their true "homeland", and were known as Khazars. In none of the manuscripts of the original Old or New Covenant was Yah'shua or anyone else for that matter, described or referred to as a "Jew". The term originated in the late **eighteenth** century as an abbreviation of the term Judean and refers to a resident of Judea without regard to race or religion, just as the term "Texan" signifies a person living in Texas, without regard to whether the "Texan" is a Jew, *Christian* or Satanic worshipper.

In spite of the powerful propaganda effort of the so-called "Jews", they have been unable to prove in recorded history that there is even one slight record, prior to that eighteenth century period of Bible translations, of any race, religion or nationality, referred to as "Jew". The religious sect in Judea, in the time of Yah'shua, to which self-styled "Jews" of today refer to as the "Jews", were in fact known as "Pharisees". "Judaism" of today and "Pharisaism" of the time of Yah'shua are one and the same.

Yah'shua abhorred and denounced "Pharisaism" and by extension, modern Judaism ("*Jews*"); which is self-evident by His choice of the words, "Woe unto you Scribes and **Pharisees**, Hypocrites, Ye Serpents, Ye Generation of Vipers".

We know that Saul was the first king of Israel and that John was the first man called Baptist, but who was the first Jew? Neither Adam, Seth or Noah are called Jew. Nor were Abraham, Isaac or Jacob. Moses was not called a Jew and neither were Saul, David or Solomon called Jew. In fact you will not find the word Jew in the first eleven books of even any modern versions of the Bible.

The first time Jews are mentioned in the Bible translations, is in II Kings 16:6 (*and then only in translations revised in or later than the eighteenth century*) where we find Israel was at war with these Khazars [*Jews*] and drove the Khazars [*Jews*] from Elath. Isn't it interesting that we can read over five hundred pages of the Bible before we find a Jew anywhere, yet those who call themselves Jews today erroneously claim the first five books of the Bible as their own and call it their Torah!

Do you not find it rather strange that those who claim to have written the first five books of the Bible and call themselves Jew, can't find the word Jew written anywhere in the book they call their own and claim to have written? Yah'shua the Messiah tells John in Revelation 2:9 "I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Hebrews and are not, but are the SYNAGOGUE OF SATAN".

We know that God changed the name of Abram to Abraham in Genesis 17:5, and that He changed the name of Jacob to Israel in Genesis 32:28, but nowhere in the Bible do we find where God changed the name of Israel or any of Israel's descendants to Jew! There is therefore no authority by which those who say they are Jews can claim to be Israel, or of Israel, or of the original Hebrew tribes!

By the time of Yah'shua, the word "Edom" or Edomite had been translated by Greek and Latin translators into Ioudaios and Iudaeus meaning a person living in or from Edom. The original King James version of the

Bible, 1611, translated Idumaeen into lewes. It wasn't until the revised editions of the King James Bible, that the newly coined word "Jew" appeared.

The word Jew does not mean Israel or Israelite, nor Hebrew! We must conclude therefore that the first "Jews" were Canaanite-Edomite-Hittite; commonly "Khazars". It is certain, according to the Bible, that Jews are not, nor never have been Israel. Thus those that truly comprehend themselves to be modern Israelites, are indeed just like their Messiah, NOT Jews!

"It is highly provable that the bulk of the Khazars [*Jew's*] ancestors '*never*' lived in Palestine at all, which witnesses the power of historical assertion over fact."

Under the heading of "**A brief History of the Terms for Jew**" in the **1980 Jewish Almanac** we read: "Strictly speaking it is incorrect to call an Ancient Israelite a '*Jew*' or to call a contemporary Jew, an Israelite or a Hebrew."

**The World Book** omits any reference to the Jews, but under the word Semite it states: "Semite . . . Semites are those who speak Semitic languages. In this sense the ancient Hebrews, Assyrians, Phoenicians, and Cartaginians were Semites. The Arabs and some Ethiopians are modern Semitic-speaking people....The Khazars were once a sub-type of the Mediterranean race, but they have mixed with other peoples until their modern name '*Jew*' has lost all racial meaning."

There are hundreds of books, mainly Jewish Encyclopedias and histories available for study, which prove that nearly 98% of the "Jews" of the world are not a Semitic people, but few people other than historians ever bother to read them. Following are just a few:

**The Jews are Not a Race!** by Dr. Alfred Lilienthal - "Jewish" historian, journalist, lecturer, and graduate of Cornell University and

Columbia Law School. During the Second World War, he served with the US Army in the Middle East. He later served with the Department of State, and as a consultant to the American delegation at the organizing meeting of the United Nations in San Francisco.

Since 1947, he has been at the forefront in the struggle for a balanced US policy in the Middle East. He is the author of several acclaimed books on the Middle East, including *The Zionist Connection*. He now lives in Washington, DC.

On December 18, 1993 Dr. Lilienthal celebrated both his 80th birthday and the 40th anniversary of his first book, *What Price Israel?* Dr. Lilienthal, who is a courageous anti-Zionist Jew, was joined by more than 200 guests who traveled from all over the United States to attend.

The following excerpt is taken from this first book, ***What Price Israel?*** "Today, to trace anyone's descent to ancient Palestine would be a genealogical impossibility; and to presume, axiomatically, such a descent for Jews, alone among all human groups, is an assumption of purely fictional significance. Most everybody in the Western world could stake out some claim of Palestinian descent if genealogical records could be established for two thousand years. And there are, indeed, people who, though not by the widest stretch of imagination Jewish, proudly make that very claim: some of the oldest of the South's aristocratic families play a game of comparing whose lineage goes farther back into Israel. . . to speculate on who might be who is a favored Anglo-Saxon pastime, and Queen Victoria belonged to an Israelite Society that traced the ancestry of its membership back to those [so-called] lost 10 tribes.

Twelve tribes started in Canaan about thirty-five centuries ago; and not only that ten of them became "lost" and moved away from

the original lands of Judea - more than half of the members of the remaining two tribes never returned from their "exile" in Babylon. How then, can anybody claim to descend directly from that relatively small community which inhabited the Holy Land at the time of Abraham's Covenant with Yahweh?

The Jewish racial myth flows from the fact that the words Hebrew, Israelite, Jew, Judaism, and the Jewish people have been used synonymously, yet completely erroneously, to suggest a historic continuity. But this is a misuse. These words refer to different groups of people with varying ways of life in different periods in history. Hebrew is a term correctly applied to the period from the beginning of Biblical history to the settling in Canaan. Israelite refers correctly to the members of the twelve tribes of Israel. The name Yehudi [*mistranslated as Jew*] is used in the Old Covenant to designate members of the tribe of Judah, descendants of the fourth son of Jacob, as well as to denote citizens of the Kingdom of Judah, particularly at the time of Jeremiah and under the Persian occupation. Centuries later, the same word came to be applied to anyone, no matter of what racial or geographic origin, whose religion was Judaism.

The descriptive name Judaism was never heard by the Hebrews or Israelites; it appears only with Christianity. Flavius Josephus was one of the first to use the name in his recital of the war with the Romans to connote a totality of beliefs, moral commandments, religious practices and ceremonial institutions of Galilee, practiced by the Khazars, which he believed superior to rival Hellenism. When the word Judaism was born, there was no longer a Hebrew-Israelite state [of land]. The people who embraced the creed of Judaism were already mixed of many races and strains; and this diversification was rapidly growing. . .

Perhaps the most significant mass conversion to the Judaic faith occurred in Europe, in the 8th century A.D., and that story of the Khazars (*Turko-Finnish people*) is quite pertinent to the establishment of the modern State of Judaism. This partly nomadic people, probably related to the Volga Bulgars, first appeared in Trans-Caucasia in the second century. They settled in what is now Southern Russia, between the Volga and the Don, and then spread to the shores of the Black, Caspian and Azov seas. The Kingdom of Khazaria, ruled by a khagan or khakan fell to Attila the Hun in 448, and to the Muslims in 737. In between, the Khazars ruled over part of the Bulgarians, conquered the Crimea, and stretched their kingdom over the Caucasus farther to the northwest to include Kiev, and eastwards to Derbend. Annual tributes were levied on the Russian Slavonians of Kiev.

The city of Kiev was probably built by the Khazars. There were Jews in the city and the surrounding area before the Russian Empire was founded by the Varangians whom the Scandinavian warriors sometimes called the Russ or Ross (*circa 855-863*).

The influence of the Khazars extended into what is now Hungary and Roumania. Today, the villages of Kozarvar and Kozard in Transylvania bear testimony to the penetration of the Khazars who, with the Magyars, then proceeded into present-day Hungary. The size and power of the Kingdom of Khazaria is indicated by the act that it sent an army of 40,000 soldiers (*in 626-627*) to help Heraclius of the Byzantines to conquer the Persians.

The Jewish Encyclopaedia proudly refers to Khazaria as having had a "well constituted and tolerant government, a flourishing trade and a well disciplined army."

Jews who had been banished from Constantinople by the Byzantine ruler, Leo III, found a home amongst these heretofore pagan

Khazars and, in competition with Mohammedan and Christian missionaries, won them over to the Judaic faith. Bulan, the ruler of Khazaria, became converted to Judaism around 740 A.D. His nobles and, somewhat later, his people followed suit. Some details of these events are contained in letters exchanged between Khagan Joseph of Khazaria and R. Hasdai Ibn Shaprut of Cordova, doctor and quasi foreign minister to Sultan Abd al-Rahman, the Caliph of Spain. This correspondence (*around 936-950*) was first published in 1577 to prove that the Jews still had a country of their own - namely, the Kingdom of Khazaria. Judah Halevi knew of the letters even in 1140. Their authenticity has since been established beyond doubt.

According to these Hasdai-Joseph letters, Khagan Bulan decided one day: "Paganism is useless. It is shameful for us to be pagans. Let us adopt one of the heavenly religions, Christianity, Judaism or Islam." And Bulan summoned three priests representing the three religions and had them dispute their creeds before him. But, no priest could convince the others, or the sovereign, that his religion was the best. So the ruler spoke to each of them separately. He asked the Christian priest: "If you were not a Christian or had to give up Christianity, which would you prefer - Islam or Judaism?" The priest said: "If I were to give up Christianity, I would become a Jew." Bulan then asked the follower of Islam the same question, and the Moslem also chose Judaism. This is how Bulan came to choose Judaism for himself and the people of Khazaria in the seventh century A.D., and thereafter the Khazars (*sometimes spelled Chazars and Khozars*) lived according to Judaic laws - which are non-Biblical.

Under the rule of Obadiah, Judaism gained further strength in Khazaria. Synagogues and schools were built to give

instruction in the Bible and the Talmud. As Professor Graetz notes in his *History of the Jews*, "A successor of Bulan who bore the Hebrew name of Obadiah was the first to make serious efforts to further the false Jewish religion of today. He invited Jewish sages to settle in his dominions, rewarded them royally. . . and introduced a divine service modeled on the ancient communities. After Obadiah came a long series of Jewish Chagans (*Khagans*), for according to a fundamental law of the state only Jewish rulers were permitted to ascend the throne."

Khazar traders brought not only silks and carpets of Persia and the Near East but also their Judaic faith to the banks of the Vistula and the Volga. But the Kingdom of Khazaria was invaded by the Russians, and Itil, its great capital, fell to Sweatoslav of Kiev in 969.

The Byzantines had become afraid and envious of the Khazars and, in a joint expedition with the Russians, conquered the Crimean portion of Khazaria in 1016. (*Crimea was known as "Chazaria" until the 13th century*). The Khazarian Jews were scattered throughout what is now Russia and Eastern Europe. Some were taken North where they joined the established Jewish community of Kiev. Others returned to the Caucasus. Many Khazars remarried in the Crimea and in Hungary.

The Cagh Chafut, or "mountain Jews," in the Caucasus and the Hebraile Jews of Georgia are their descendants. These "Ashkenazim Jews" (*as Jews of Eastern Europe are called*), whose numbers were swelled by Jews who fled from Germany at the time of the Crusades and during the Black Death, have little or no trace of Semitic blood, and do not follow Biblically based beliefs, rather man-made "Talmud".

That the Khazars are the lineal ancestors of Eastern European Jewry is a historical fact. Jewish historians and religious textbooks acknowledge the fact, though the propagandists of Jewish nationalism belittle it as pro-Arab propaganda. Somewhat ironically, Volume IV of the *Jewish Encyclopaedia* - because this publication spells Khazars with a "C" instead of a "K" - is titled "Chazars to Dreyfus": and it was the Dreyfus trial, as interpreted by Theodor Herzl, that made the modern Jewish Khazars of Russia forget their descent from converts to Judaism and accept anti-Semitism as proof of their Palestinian origin.

For all that anthropologists know, Hitler's ancestry might go back to one of the ten thought-to-be Lost 10 Tribes of Israel; while Weizmann may be a descendant of the Khazars, the converts to Judaism who were in no anthropological respect related to Palestine. The home to which Weizmann, Silver, and so many other Ashkenazim Zionists have yearned to return has in reality, never been theirs. "Here's a paradox, a most ingenious paradox": in anthropological fact, many Christians may have much more Hebrew-Israelite blood in their veins than most of their "Jewish" neighbors, since being Jewish, is merely a man-made set of religious traditions."

**The History of The Jewish Khazars**, by D. M. Dunlop, pp. 4-15: ". . . Our first question here is, When did the Khazars and the Khazar name appear? There has been considerable discussion as to the relation of the Khazars to the Huns on the one hand and to the West Turks on the other. The prevalent opinion has for some time been that the Khazars emerged from the West Turkish empire. Early references to the Khazars appear about the time when the West Turks cease to be mentioned. Thus they are reported to have joined forces with the Greek Emperor Heraclius

against the Persians in A.D. 627 and to have materially assisted him in the siege of Tiflis. It is a question whether the Khazars were at this time under West Turk supremacy. The chronicler Theophanes (*died circa A.D. 818*) who tells the story introduces them as "the Turks from the east whom they call Khazars."

A similar discussion on the merits of the different races is reported from the days before Muhammad, in which the speakers are the Arab Nu'man ibn-al-Mudhir of al-Hirah and Khusraw Anushirwan. The Persian gives his opinion that the Greeks, Indians, and Chinese are superior to the Arabs and so also, in spite of their low material standards of life, the Turks and the Khazars, who at least possess an organization under their kings. Here again the Khazars are juxtaposed with the great nations of the east. It is consonant with this that tales were told of how ambassadors from the Chinese, the Turks, and the Khazars were constantly at Khusraw's gate, and even that he kept three thrones of gold in his palace, which were never removed and on which none sat, reserved for the kings of Byzantium, China and the Khazars.

In general, the material in the Arabic and Persian writers with regard to the Khazars in early times falls roughly into three groups, centering respectively round the names of (a) one or other of the Hebrew patriarchs, (b) Alexander the Great, and (c) certain of the Sassanid kings, especially, Anushirwan and his immediate successors. A typical story of the first group is given by Ya'qubi in his History. After the confusion of tongues at Babel, the descendants of Noah came to Peleg, son of Eber, and asked him to divide the earth among them. He apportioned to the descendants of Japheth - China, Hind, Sind, the country of the Turks and that of the Khazars, as well as Tibet, the country of the (*Volga*) Bulgars, Daylam, and the country neighboring on Khurasan. In

another passage Ya'qubi gives a kind of sequel to this. Peleg having divided the earth in this fashion, the descendants of 'Amur ibn-Tubal, a son of Japheth, went out to the northeast. One group, the descendants of Togarmah, proceeding farther north, were scattered in different countries and became a number of kingdoms, among them the Burjan (*Bulgars*), Alans, Khazars (*Ashkenaz*), and Armenians.

Similarly, according to Tabari, there were born to Japheth Jim-r (*the Biblical Gomer*), Maw-' (*read Mawgh-gh, Magog*), Mawday (*Madai*), Yawan (*Javan*), Thubal (*Tubal*), Mash-j (*read Mash-kh, Meshech*) and Tir-sh (*Tiras*). Of the descendants of the last were the Turks and the Khazars (*Ashkenaz*). There is an association here with the Turgesh, survivors of the West Turks, who were defeated by the Arabs in 119/737, and disappeared as a ruling group in the same century. Tabari says curiously that of the descendants of Mawgh-gh (*Magog*) were Yajuj and Majuj, adding that these are to the east of the Turks and Khazars. This information would invalidate Zeki Validi's attempt to identify Gog and Magog in the Arabic writers with the Norwegians. The name Mash-kh (*Meshech*) is regarded by him as probably a singular to the classical Massagetai (*Massag-et*).

A. Bashmakov emphasizes the connection of 'Meshech' with the Khazars, to establish his theory of the Khazars, not as Turks from inner Asia, but what he calls a Jephetic or Alarodian group from south of the Caucasus. Evidently there is no stereotyped form of this legendary relationship of the Khazars to Japheth. The Taj-al-Artis says that according to some they are the descendants of Kash-h (? *Mash-h or Mash-kh, for Meshech*), son of Japheth, and according to others both the Khazars and the Saqalibah are sprung from Thubal (*Tubal*). Further, we read of Balanjar ibn-Japheth in ibn-al-Faqih and abu-al-Fida' as

the founder of the town of Balanjar. Usage leads one to suppose that this is equivalent to giving Balanjar a separate racial identity. In historical times Balanjar was a well-known Khazar center, which is even mentioned by Masudi as their capital.

It is hardly necessary to cite more of these Japheth stories. Their Jewish origin is priori obvious, and Poliak has drawn attention to one version of the division of the earth, where the Hebrew words for 'north' and 'south' actually appear in the Arabic text. The Iranian cycle of legend had a similar tradition, according to which the hero Afridun divided the earth among his sons, Tuj (*sometimes Tur, the eponym of Turan*), Salm, and Iraj. Here the Khazars appear with the Turks and the Chinese in the portion assigned to Tuj, the eldest son. Some of the stories connect the Khazars with Abraham. The tale of a meeting in Khurasan between the sons of Keturah and the Khazars (*Ashkenaz*) where the Khaqan is mentioned is quoted from the Sa'd and al-Tabari by Poliak. The tradition also appears in the Meshed manuscript of ibn-al-Faqih, apparently as part of the account of Tamim ibn-Babr's journey to the Uigurs, but it goes back to Hishim al-Kalbi. Zeki Validi is inclined to lay some stress on it as a real indication of the presence of the Khazars in this region at an early date. Al-Jahiz similarly refers to the legend of the sons of Abraham and Keturah settling in Khurasan but does not mention the Khazars. Al-Di-mashqi says that according to one tradition the Turks were the children of Abraham by Keturah, whose father belonged to the original Arab stock. Descendants of other sons of Abraham, namely the Soghdians and the Kirgiz, were also said to live beyond the Oxus. . ."

Benjamin Freeman, **Facts are Facts:** "CHAZARS: A people of Turkish origin whose life and history are interwoven with the very

beginnings of the history of Judaism [*non-Biblical Jewish faith*] of Russia . . . driven on by the nomadic tribes of the steppes and by their own desire for plunder and revenge. . . In the second half of the sixth century the Chazars moved westward. . . The kingdom of the Chazars was firmly established in most of south Russia long before the foundation of the Russian monarchy by the Varangians. . . At this time the kingdom of the Chazars stood at the height of its power and was constantly at war. . . At the end of the eighth century . . . the chagan (*king*) of the Chazars and his grandees, together with a large number of his heathen people, embraced the false Jewish religion."

**Encyclopedia Americana (1985):** "Khazar, an ancient Turkic-speaking people who ruled a large and powerful state in the steppes North of the Caucasus Mountains from the 7th century to their demise in the mid-11th century A.D. . . In the 8th Century it's political and religious head . . . as well as the greater part of the Khazar nobility, abandoned paganism and converted to Judaism. . ."

**Encyclopedia Britannica (15th edition):** "Khazars, confederation of Turkic and Iranian tribes that established a major commercial empire in the second half of the 6th century, covering the southeastern section of modern European Russia . . . In the middle of the 8th century the ruling classes adopted Judaism as their religion."

**Academic American Encyclopedia (1985):** "Ashkenazim, the Ashkenazim are one of the two major divisions of the Jews, the other being the Shephardim."

**Encyclopedia Americana (1985):** "Ashkenazim, the Ashkenazim are the Jews whose ancestors lived in German lands . . . it was among Ashkenazi Jews that the idea of political Zionism emerged, leading ultimately to the establishment of the state of Israel . . . In

the late 1960s, Ashkenazi Jews numbered some 11 million, about 84 percent of the world Jewish population."

**The Jewish Encyclopedia:** "Khazars, a non-Semitic, Asiatic, Mongolian tribal nation who emigrated into Eastern Europe about the first century, who were converted as an entire nation to Judaism in the seventh century by the expanding Russian nation which absorbed the entire Khazar population, and who account for the presence in Eastern Europe of the great numbers of Yiddish-speaking Jews in Russia, Poland, Lithuania, Galatia, Besserabia and Rumania."

**The Encyclopedia Judaica (1972):** "Khazars, a national group of general Turkic type, independent and sovereign in Eastern Europe between the seventh and tenth centuries C.E. during part of this time the leading Khazars professed Judaism . . . In spite of the negligible information of an archaeological nature, the presence of Jewish groups and the impact of Jewish ideas in Eastern Europe are considerable during the Middle Ages. Groups have been mentioned as migrating to Central Europe from the East often have been referred to as Khazars, thus making it impossible to overlook the possibility that they originated from within the former Khazar Empire."

**The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia:** "Khazars, a medieval people, probably related to the Volga Bulgars, whose ruling class adopted Judaism during the 8th cent. The Khazars seem to have emerged during the 6th cent., from the vast nomadic Hun (*Turki*) empire which stretched from the steppes of Eastern Europe and the Volga basin to the Chinese frontier. Although it is often claimed that allusions to the Khazars are found as early as 200 C.E., actually they are not mentioned until 627 . . . most Jewish historians date the

conversion of the Khazar King to Judaism during the first half of this century [A.D.] . . ."

The primary meaning of Ashkenaz and Ashkenazim in Hebrew is Germany and Germans. This may be due to the fact that the home of the ancient ancestors of the Germans is Media, which is the Biblical Ashkenaz . . . Krauss is of the opinion that in the early medieval ages the Khazars were sometimes referred to as Ashkenazim . . .

The Bible relates that the Khazars (*Ashkenaz*) Jews were/are the sons of Japheth not Shem: *"Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth: and unto them were sons born after the flood. The sons of Japheth; . . . the sons of Gomer; Ashkenaz . . ."* **So the Bible verifies that the Ashkenaz Jews [Khazars] are not the descendants of Shem and cannot be Semitic. About 92 percent of all Jews worldwide, are self-acknowledged to be Ashkenazim!**

**The American People's Encyclopedia for 1954** at 15-292 records the following in reference to the Khazars: "In the year 740 A.D. the Khazars were officially converted to Judaism. A century later they were crushed by the incoming Slavic-speaking people and were scattered over central Europe where they were known as Jews. It is from this grouping that most German, Polish and Hungarian Jews are descended, and they likewise make up a considerable part of that population now found in America. The term Aschenazim is applied to this round-headed, dark-complexioned division."

**Academic American Encyclopedia Deluxe Library Edition**, Volume 12, page 66 states: "The Khazars, a turkic people, created a commercial and political empire that dominated substantial parts of South Russia during much of the 7th through 10th centuries. During the 8th century the Khazar Aristocracy

and the Kagan (*King*) were converted to Judaism."

**The New Encyclopedia Britannica**, Volume 6, page 836 relates: "Khazar, member of a confederation of Turkic-speaking tribes that in the late 6th century A.D. established a major commercial empire covering the southeastern section of modern European Russia . . . but the most striking characteristic of the Khazars was the apparent adoption of Judaism by the Khagan and the greater part of the ruling class in about 740 . . . The fact itself, however, is undisputed and unparalleled in the history of Central Eurasia. A few scholars have asserted that the Judaized Khazars were the remote ancestors of many of the Jews of Eastern Europe and Russia."

**Collier's Encyclopedia**, Volume 14, page 65 states: "Khazars [*kaza'rz*], a semi-nomadic tribe of Turkish or Tatar origin who first appeared north of the Caucasus in the early part of the third century . . . In the eighth century Khaghan Bulan decided in favor of the Jews and accepted Judaism for himself and for his people..."

**New Catholic Encyclopedia**, Volume VIII, page 173 relates: "The Khazars were an ethnic group, belonging to the Turkish peoples, who, toward the end of the 2nd century of the Christian Era, had settled in the region between the Caucasus and the lower Volga and Don Rivers . . . At the beginning of the 8th century, dynastic ties bound the Khazars more closely to Constantinople, which led to a limited spread of Christianity among them. They also became acquainted with Judaism from the numerous Jews who lived in the Crimea and along the Bosphorus. When the Byzantine Emperor, Leo the Isaurian, persecuted the Jews in A.D. 723, many Jews found refuge in the Khazar kingdom, and their influence was so great that, around the middle of the 8th

century, the King of the Khazars and many of the Khazar nobility accepted the Jewish faith."

**The Cadillac Modern Encyclopedia**, page 822, states: "Khazars (*khah'-zahrz*), a Russian people of Turkic origin, who at the height of their power (*during the 8th-10th cent., A.D.*) controlled an empire which included Crimea, and extended along the lower Volga, as far E as the Caspian Sea. The Khazar Royal Family and Aristocracy converted to Judaism during the reign of King Bulan (768-809 A.D.) and Judaism was thereafter regarded as the state religion . . ."

There are many, many publications we could quote but from the above, we can clearly see that the Jews fully understand their Khazarian heritage as the third edition of **The Jewish Encyclopedia for 1925** records: "CHAZARS [Khazars]: A people of Turkish origin whose life and history are interwoven with the very beginnings of the history of the Jews of Russia. The kingdom of the Chazars was firmly established in most of South Russia long before the foundation of the Russian monarchy by the Varangians (855). Jews have lived on the shores of the Black and Caspian seas since the first centuries of the common era [*after the death of the Messiah*]. Historical evidence points to the region of the Ural as the home of the Chazars. Among the classical writers of the Middle Ages they were known as the 'Chozars,' 'Khazirs,' 'Akatzirs,' and 'Akatirs,' and in the Russian chronicles as 'Khwalisses' and 'Ugry Byelye.' . . ."

**The Antiquities of the Jews** by Flavius Josephus, XIII ix 1; XV vii 9 instructs us: John Hyrcanus forcibly assimilated the Edomites as a national group and they became "Jews" in about 120BC. The Jewish historian Josephus, who lived just after the time of the Messiah, wrote, "They [*Edom*] were hereafter no other than Jews'. The Jewish scholar Cecil Roth in his **Concise Jewish Encyclopedia (1980)**

says on page 154, "John Hyrcanus forcibly converted [*Edom*] to Judaism. From then on they were part of the Jewish people. In the Talmud the name of Edom was applied to Christian Rome, and was then used for Christianity in general".

Terrible judgments against Edom are made in most of the prophecies of the Old Covenant. For instance, Isaiah 34, 63, Jeremiah 49, and the entire book of Obadiah.

Isaiah 63:1-6, "*Who is this coming from Edom . . . in garments stained with crimson? It is I [the Lord] who speak in righteousness and am mighty to save.*"

"*Why are your garments red, as if you had trodden the winepress?*" "*I have trodden the winepress alone: and of the people there was none to help Me. In My anger I trod them down, trampled them in My wrath. Their blood splattered My garments, and all My clothes are stained. For the day of vengeance is in My heart, and the year of My redeemed has come. . . I will tread down the people in My anger, and bring their blood upon the ground*".

These verses refer to Revelations chapter 19:11-21, when the Word of Yahweh destroys His enemies: "*And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse: and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True. . . His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on His head were many crowns, and He had a Name written that no man knew but Himself. And He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood, and His Name is called The Word of Yahweh. . . and He trod the winepress of Yahweh's fierce anger*".

Yahweh, God of the Old Covenant "*hated Esau (Edom), against whom He has indignation forever*" (*Malachi 1:2-4*). If Yah'shua will destroy Edom when He returns, then Edom is present today, and obviously evil, anti-Biblical, and anti-Semitic.

**The Bible confirms Israel will be dominated by non-Semitic Jews until the consummation:** Genesis 27:39-41, *"Isaac prophesied to Esau his son, Yours will be no life of ease and luxury but you shall hew your way by your sword. For a time you will serve your brother, but when you break loose you shalt have the dominion. So Esau hated Jacob because of the blessing with which his father had blessed him: and Esau said to himself, The days of mourning for my father are approaching; then will I slay my brother Jacob".*

Daniel 9:27, *"Then he [Rome] will confirm a covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and offering to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it defile the sanctuary until the consummation and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate".*

Luke 21:24, *"Jerusalem shall be trodden down by the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled".*

Also see Isaiah 6:10-13; 28:22; Daniel 2:40-45; Joel 2:17; Zechariah 12-14; Malachi 1:3-4; 3:2-18; Revelation 11:2,8 and so-forth.

In summary, Jewish faith; namely Judaism, is a modern word for a man-made religion that is based upon hundreds of extra-Biblical rules and regulations, similar to the Pharisaic faith that our Messiah described as being "unfruitful", and promoted by a "brood of vipers – hypocrites and evil doers", and it is this false religion that traditional "Christians" equally falsely believe to be the roots of their own adulterous faith.

## Our Father, our Messiah and our Family:

What about the Catholic idea of a "Trinity" of Gods being one God? Or what about other ideas of there being two or more Gods discussed in the Bible? Or what about the doctrine of "pure monotheism"?

There are quite literally hundreds of Scriptural examples clearly demonstrating the absolute "oneness" of the Almighty-Creator-**Yahweh**. We will not repeat all of them here. When asked "which is the first commandment of all, Yah'shua answered: Mark 12:29, "The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; Yahweh our God is one Lord:" And in 1 Timothy 2:5, we read: "For there is one God, and one mediator between Yahweh and men, the man Yah'shua the Messiah".

This should be simple to understand, but Satan-inspired, carnal-minded man has confused it for many. This confusion stems from a hidden purpose of Satan, which will become clear as we progress through this short study. Think of Satan's involvement as you would a magician on stage. Like the magician, Satan creates his myriad illusions for one simple reason, which is to distract you from the truth. Satan does not care what you believe so long as he can distract you from Yahweh's plain truth.

Confusion is often fostered by many Biblical verses which are taken out of context by Satan's armies of deceived [false] ministers. For example, these verses can easily be mis-construed: Genesis 1:26: "And Yahweh [Elohim] said, let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness..." This coincides with the same use of the Hebrew word "Elohim" in Gen. 1:1, when, "In the beginning Yahweh [Elohim] created the heaven and the earth". "Elohim", is a noun or name, plural in form, but normally singular in usage,

such as the English words, family, group or couple.

We could conclude here that there was more than one personification of Yahweh being described, or that two "Gods" were present, yet we are told there is only one God! After Adam rebelled against Yahweh (*Elohim – in this instance this means the one and only Almighty Creator Yahweh*), notice what Elohim said: "And the Lord Yahweh said, 'Behold, the man is become AS ONE OF US, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever'" (*Gen. 3:22*). Here, the one and only Yahweh not only says "us", He says "as one of us"!

These verses are often erroneously understood to imply that there were two "Gods" around at the re-creation of life on earth. In reality, there was not. There only was one God - Yahweh. Yahweh was always the only Creator, who created all things by Himself! According to Job 38:4-7, "the sons of Elohim shouted for joy" when Yahweh created the earth. This doubtless refers to the angels who were also present at the creation of mankind.

A reasonable comparative example of conversational discussion might be when a father that is driving his family to a destination, says; "let us turn at this intersection", yet the father is the only driver, or "let us stop here for the night". Or a mother who is creating dinner for her family, might say something like; "let us make bread for dinner", while she plans to make it all by herself.

In the Biblical example, it must be understood that angels had already been granted Yahweh's free moral agency to determine right from wrong, hence, when Yahweh said; "'Behold, the man is become AS ONE OF US, to know good and evil'", that is precisely what He meant - He meant, in His

discussion with the angels that were present, that man had in direct contradiction to Yahweh's instructions, "taken" his own ability to determine right from wrong, which is something that the Yahweh and the angels already fully grasped. This is the aspect of "becoming as one of us" Yahweh is referring to, not the aspect of becoming a God or a Co-Creator.

"Christendom" today has degenerated to a belief in many gods. Generally speaking, Catholics believe in four gods; three good ones and one evil one, or in some cases, they believe in five gods, having added a "Mother of God" who is in their system of belief, purported to be the supreme deity. These are all bolstered by a host of demi-gods, one for every day of the year (*and more*), all of which mythical and man-invented deities are worshipped and prayed to, contrary to Biblical teaching.

The simple truth as to who and what Yahweh is, does not need to be a mystery, in spite of the apparent inconsistencies depicted above. It is in fact, very clearly, and simply set forth in the pages of your Bible, if that Bible is read in context of its true intent and with proper respect for translation between the original languages and modern English. If we begin our focus by accepting the underlying purpose for Satan's deceptions, then the various "illusions" he has created fall apart. That underlying purpose is to destroy the Gospel of the Messiah - that of the Kingdom, or Family of Yahweh.

In John 1:1-4, we find verses that many Christians erroneously claim describe things prior to Genesis. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made" (*KJV*). Since Yah'shua is called "The Word of God" in Rev.19:13, the translators of

the KJV incorrectly assumed the "Word" of Jn.1:1 was also Yah'shua and therefore, capitalized the word "word" and changed the pronoun "him" in reference to the "word." The Greek for "Word" is "logos." It appears in the text written with a small letter l. Logos means "the spoken word" or "something said (*including the thought*)." In that sense the word is an "it," not a being but a thing. The great English translator William Tyndale renders it that way in his 1525 version as does the Matthew's Bible of 1537, the Great Bible of 1539, the Geneva Bible of 1560, and the Bishop's Bible of 1568. Verse 3 should read, "All things were made through it; and without it was not anything made that was made." In other words,

Yahweh spoke creation into existence. This understanding agrees perfectly with passages such as Gen.1:3,6,9,11,14, 20, and 24 all of which begin, "And Elohim said." Yahweh spoke and it was done. Ps.33:6,9 says, "By the word of Yahweh were the heavens made; and all the host by the breath of his mouth. . . For He spoke and it was; He commanded, and it stood fast." Not only did Yahweh speak creation into existence, but He also spoke His Son Yah'shua into existence; "And the word (*Yahweh's spoken word*) was (*what*) made flesh" (*Jn.1:14*). Yah'shua did not become the "word of [*Yahweh*]" until his birth as a flesh and blood male child - then He would become Yahweh's "agent".

How then should we translate verse 1? "In the beginning was the spoken word, and the words were from Yahweh, and the words were Yahweh's. It was in the beginning from Yahweh. All things were made through Yahweh's word, and without it nothing was made that was made. In Yahweh's word was life, and the life was the light of men" is believed to be the most accurate suggestion. The Greek word translated "God" is "theos."

The Greek does not have a different word to show possession. Therefore, theos can be translated "Yahweh" or "Yahweh's." The possessive form makes this verse so clear and in harmony with the phrase "the word was with Yahweh."

According to these verses, before the universe, before the angels, before the pre-human history of life and before man, something called "Yahweh" existed. This single personification of Yahweh is revealed and confirmed in this earliest account in the Bible. There is no mention of His Holy Spirit at this stage, nor any other God-Family members.

The Word in John 1 is translated from the Greek word "Logos" and loosely means "spokesman", or more correctly means "spoken word". Notice verse 14: "And the word [of Yahweh] did make Him flesh to dwell among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father". The word then, or "logos" was not a personification of some aspect of Yahweh that was made flesh, it was the power of Yahweh expressed in spoken word that by being spoken, MADE flesh. This word prior to being spoken, thus making flesh, was not the Son of Yahweh, it was simply Yahweh's un-spoken thoughts. The Son of Yahweh was MADE flesh when He was begotten by Yahweh's power of the virgin Mary, and later, this sinless man was resurrected as the FIRSTBORN SON OF Yahweh. This was the beginning of Yahweh's Family!

Matthew 19:26, states, that "with men this is impossible, but with Yahweh all things are possible". Here is where we need to appreciate Yahweh's revealed understanding of the "spirit in man". Notice 1 Cor. 2:11: "For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of Yahweh knoweth no man, but the Spirit of Yahweh". The spirit of man - man's

will, makes known the things of man. Likewise, the Spirit of Yahweh - Yahweh's Will, makes known the things of Yahweh.

We know that Yahweh is eternal and we know that Yahweh is "Spirit", hence "Spirit" is also eternal. We also know that the spirit in man is temporarily gifted to man from Yahweh's eternal Spirit; hence the spirit in man is also eternal. This does not mean automatic eternal life for man, it simply means that the spirit in man is an eternally existing spirit; hence man has been blessed with the possibility of eternal life through this spirit. We also know from our Bibles that when a man dies in the flesh, that man's "spirit will return to Yahweh who gave it" Ecc. 12:7.

So if we believe the Messiah's own words, these verses will all easily reconcile themselves. The Great Yahweh-Almighty, created all things through His spoken word. Yahweh's Spirit impregnated Mary, hence a portion of Yahweh's eternal Spirit was with the unborn Christ – a portion of Yahweh's Spirit that was pure and undefiled by man's sinful nature.

Obviously, before Impregnating Mary with His Spirit; Yahweh and His angels were capable of carrying on conversation with one another. This does not mean that some Divine being divested Himself of His glory as a Divine Spirit being to be begotten as a human man. A portion of Yahweh's Spirit – impregnated Mary which resulted in the Messiah, who was thus made Yahweh's Son. The Messiah was begotten, or sired by the Power of Yahweh and then born of the virgin Mary as a "man", and upon His resurrection he was born in His Holy Spirit as the "firstborn Son of Yahweh". This is no great mystery - that the Creator of the entire universe could very easily use this same "creative" POWER – His Spiritual-creative-will-power to impregnate the virgin Mary!

For Him, “all things were made” (v. 3). How did Yahweh create all things? Ephesians 3:9 says: “Yahweh who created all things for Yah'shua the Messiah”. The power of Yahweh (*Elohim*) was such that His own spoken word was able to speak His very thoughts into the reality we see. So it is revealed that Yahweh is the Creator, and that He created all things through His spoken word, not His Spokesman, for His firstborn Son (*by the resurrection*) - Yah'shua the Messiah.

At the time of Genesis 1, the angels of Yahweh (*Elohim*) and Yahweh were not yet a family. We could say they were like a family, because at that time they were co-existing in the God Kingdom – they were/are, eternal. The angels and Yahweh worked in perfect harmony. In order for the government of Yahweh (*Elohim*) to function, one had to be in supreme authority. Yahweh the Father and Creator of all that is, including the angels, fulfilled that role.

The Messiah was not mistaken when He stated that there is one God! When we begin to understand what the Bible reveals about Yah'shua the Messiah being resurrected as the firstborn of many brethren, and more specifically, about our own ultimate potential, then the importance of the Bible teaching on the Family of Yahweh becomes quite clear. The word “son” is used in the New Covenant 422 times, about half of which refer to the Messiah - the Son of Yahweh the Father. The word “father” is used 352 times, over 250 of which refer to Yahweh the Father. Father and Son - the beginning of our eternal Family!

In Hebrews 7:3 we see that the Messiah was made the Son of Yahweh. Romans 1:4 elaborates as to when this happened: “And DECLARED to be the Son of Yahweh with power, according to His Spirit of holiness, BY THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD”. After His death, the Messiah was resurrected as the

firstborn Son of Yahweh (*Rom. 8:29; Col. 1:15*). Prior to this, the Messiah, or that portion of Yahweh's Holy Spirit that became the Messiah's, was simply “with Yahweh” along with all of the remaining portions of Yahweh's Spirit, including all of us!

Recall this Biblical quote: “Before I formed you in the womb, I knew you” Jeremiah 1:5. We must separate our carnal mind-set from the spiritual mind-set. Yahweh knew each and every one of us, including His Christ, before any of us were “born in the flesh”, because Yahweh has known our Spirit from eternity. When we die in the flesh, our Spirit returns to Yahweh who gave it, which means He had it first – forever – for eternity because Spirit is eternal. Hence He also knew the Messiah in His Spirit long before the Messiah was born in the flesh, but this does not mean the Messiah co-existed with Him eternally, any more than any of us.

In the flesh, the Messiah was also of Yahweh (*1 Tim. 3:16*). While Yahweh's Spirit was in Him, He was also in the flesh (*mortal human - subject to death*), and He died for us. “Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he [*the Messiah*] also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy [annul] him that had the power of death, that is the devil” (*Heb. 2:14*). This does not mean that the Messiah was not a man, it simply means that the Messiah had the Spirit of Yahweh dwelling in Him – hence he “was Yahweh” in His Spirit, while He “was man” in the flesh.

Yahweh's plan is literally to reproduce Himself with the human Family. We are to become His Family and we will inherit “all things” - the universe, as joint heirs with Yahweh's firstborn Son, the Messiah. the Messiah is the firstborn of many “brethren”. “For as many as are led by the Spirit of Yahweh, they are the sons of Yahweh” (*Rom.*

8:14). Yahweh called Yah'shua His Son - and He calls us His sons - in other words, His Family! "And because YE ARE SONS, Yahweh hath sent forth His Spirit as of being his son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father" (*Gal. 4:6*).

We can go to Yahweh our Father, just as the Messiah did. The Bible is replete with evidence of a Family relationship. The word Trinity, on the other hand, is nowhere in the Bible! In Ephesians 3:14,15, Paul is writing of some of the trials he has faced in proclaiming this message. He said: "For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Yah'shua the Messiah...Of whom the WHOLE FAMILY in heaven and earth is named". Yahweh is the single, unified head of a family! Not a Trinity!

John wrote: "And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free" (*8:32*). If what you hear is indeed the truth, you can be sure that you will be able to easily understand it. Yahweh's truth is not delivered obscurely, while surrounded in some clouds of mystery like the false "Trinity" doctrines so common in churches today. Yet most of these same churches agree that the Trinity is the most difficult doctrine to explain.

This difficulty, stems largely from the mythology that His Holy Spirit is some type of personal deity, that together with Yah'shua and Yahweh the Father, form one "God". We have already seen ample Bible proof that Yahweh the Father, and Yah'shua the Son, are two separate beings, with the Son being under the authority of the one and only Yahweh, God-Almighty. Now we will see what the Bible teaches about His Holy Spirit.

His Holy Spirit simply put, is the power of Yahweh. It is the impersonal power, or force, or Will of Yahweh. We find very early in the New Covenant, revealed understanding of His Holy Spirit. "...for that which is conceived in her is of His Holy Spirit" (*Matt. 1:20*). Right away

we see that Yah'shua was begotten of the virgin Mary, by Yahweh's Holy Spirit - Yahweh's Will. When Mary was told that she would conceive and bare a son, she asked: "How can this be, since I do not know a man?" (*Luke 1:34*). And the angel answered: "His Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the POWER of the Highest will overshadow you; therefore, also, that Holy One who is to be born will be called the Son of Yahweh" (*v. 35*). Here we are told simply, that the power of Yahweh - His Will - called His Holy Spirit would impregnate Mary.

Just as we are begotten (*impregnated*) physically by our fathers through the sperm cell, so the Will of Yahweh - His Holy Spirit impregnated Mary and Yah'shua the Messiah was begotten. Truly converted Israelites are also begotten of His Holy Spirit, SPIRITUALLY (*James 1:18*). Our physical birth began when we were conceived in the womb. Our Spiritual birth began when we were baptized by His Holy Spirit - when our minds were fertilized with a small portion of Yahweh's Holy Spirit - His "Will" combined with ours.

Notice Ephesians 1:13,14: "...after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that [when] you believed, ye were [*then*] SEALED with that Holy Spirit of PROMISE...Which [*His Holy Spirit*] is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession". His Holy Spirit then, the very Will of Yahweh has been given us as an earnest, or good faith deposit immediately upon our belief in Yahweh's "Word of truth". It is the down payment for our inheritance! It is not a distinct being or entity - it is simply Yahweh's Will-Power.

Notice 1 Cor. 2:11: "For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of Yahweh knoweth no man, but the Spirit of Yahweh". The spirit of man - man's will, makes

known the things of man. Likewise, the Spirit of Yahweh - Yahweh's Will, makes known the things of Yahweh. How simple and plain is Yahweh's Word!

Our spirit within us is not a distinct being or entity - it is merely the power that enables us to think, reason and to accomplish things. The Spirit of Yahweh is the POWER that enables Yahweh to accomplish things. According to Yahweh's Will, His Spirit reveals the things of Yahweh to us; His plan of salvation, the potential of man, and yes, even the very nature of Yahweh! "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of Yahweh: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, BECAUSE THEY ARE SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED...But Yahweh hath revealed them unto us BY HIS SPIRIT: for His Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of Yahweh" (*1 Cor. 2:10,14*).

So we see that man, without the help of His Holy Spirit, is lost - unable to discern these important Biblical truths. That is why the Bible and these basic Bible truths, seem like so much "foolishness" to so many people and why they go to such great lengths to support their carnally-minded illusions of who and what Yahweh might be. Simply put, without the help of Yahweh's Spirit, our puny little minds do not have the power to comprehend what the Bible teaches.

The Catholic (and many other) churches concede that the Trinity doctrine is "beyond our finite understanding". That we should merely accept it as truth! I would rather hold on to what is provable, plain and simple, according to Yahweh's command to "prove all things" (*1 Thess. 5:21*). Further, the truth, if it is in fact the truth, MUST be revealed in the Bible on any and every subject, as in John 17:17 "Thy word [*the Bible*] is truth"!

## Our Messiah, Man or Logos?

For centuries the Hebrews had been ground under the heel of foreign conquerors - Babylonian, Persian, Greek, and then Roman. In much popular eschatology the Messiah was expected to reverse the situation. The oppressed would rise under his leadership, overthrow pagan rule, and establish Israelite hegemony over the world.

The Biblical concept of Messianism, understood as the collective expression of the historical hope of a people on its way, can become one of the most important sources for a theology of liberation. The idea of the Messiah carried with it the belief in a divinely appointed person who would deliver Israel and bring about the consummation of the divine plan with its corollary of peace, freedom and justice, in reality the belief in progress and hope. The Zealots were expecting a warrior as Messiah; and the school of Shammai a legalist; and the Essenes an ascetic; and the philosophic schools some divine vision.

But Yah'shua reveals to them another King. Yah'shua seems to want to conceal his Messiah ship, even though the confession of Yah'shua as the Messiah is essential to man's salvation. If Yah'shua had publicly announced that He was the Messiah, or allowed his disciples to do so, the Hebrew people would have assumed - wrongly - that he was putting himself forward as a king in the political, nationalistic sense, and the universal outreach of the gospel would have been obscured.

Let's now look at the difference between the "Messiah", Yah'shua the Messiah the "Man" as our Bibles refer to "Him", and to the rest of us as "men". The Messiah was born of the flesh as were each of us. The Messiah grew in stature and in wisdom as [hopefully] do the rest of us. The Messiah was subjected to physical and spiritual temptation and sin just like the rest of us. Strictly referring to being in

the flesh, the Messiah was not different than the rest of us.

A first difference between the Messiah and the rest of us, is that the Messiah was able to resist all fear and temptation and to thereby overcome sin in the flesh. A second difference is relative to "why", or more specifically, to "how". The Messiah's capacity to resist temptation came from Yahweh - as all good things do. His ability was directly related to His being "born of the Spirit of Yahweh" while concurrently being born of the flesh "of the virgin Mary". The rest of us are "born of fleshly father and mother". The "Power" or Spirit of Yahweh was the Messiah's Father.

This "Power" or Spirit of Yahweh is eternal as Yahweh is eternal and Yahweh is Spirit. Let's now try to explain the significance of this "eternal" existing Spirit. Purely for demonstration purposes, let's imagine a snow man made of "eternal snow" that will not disappear or diminish in volume. Even if you remove a handful of it, the total volume somehow remains the same. Now let's pretend we call the snow man, Father, and we remove a handful of snow to build a second snow man from, and we call this second snow man, Son. Remember that the qualities of the snow are eternal, hence they do not change when moved from place to place or from snow man to snow man.

We could say then, that in the beginning, was the Son, and the Son was with the Father, and the Son was [part of the] Father. The Son was in the beginning with the Father. We could also say that the Father snow man knew the qualities and characteristics of the Son snow man before the Son snow man was made, because the snow that He was made from was the Father's. Just like the Spirit that the Messiah was sired from, was the Father's Spirit. Yahweh knows His Spirit - His Will perfectly.

Let's take our pretense back to Spiritual realities. We know that Yahweh is Spirit and that Yahweh is Love, hence we know that the Perfect Spirit of Yahweh is Perfect Love. We also know that Perfect Love casts out all fears or temptations, hence the Perfect Spirit of Yahweh that WAS made into His Messiah by siring Him in the flesh, enabled the Messiah to overcome all fears or temptations. The "knowing" of the Messiah that Yahweh refers to does not refer to knowing Him in the flesh any more than knowing any of the rest of us in the flesh. Yahweh eternally knew the Spirit of His Messiah because the Spirit of His Messiah was a portion of Yahweh's own Spirit, thus He foreknew that His Messiah could and would resist and overcome all fear and temptation.

In this sense Yahweh knew His Messiah before He was formed in the womb of Mary, just like He says He knows each of us and knew each of us before we were formed in the womb. He knows us "Spiritually", not physically as in the flesh. Yahweh knew that He could separate a perfect portion of His own perfect Spirit to sire His Messiah with, such that His Messiah would retain all of the Father's Perfect Spiritual characteristics while living in the flesh.

Yahweh also knows that the "spirit" that is in man - the rest of us, has been seduced and therefore defiled by sin and that although it originated from Yahweh, it no longer retains its perfect characteristics. Our hope of eternal life, is that we may "yet overcome"!

### **Logos**

In the beginning was the spoken word [*logos*], and the words [*logos*] were from Yahweh, and the words [*logos*] were Yahweh's. It [*logos*] was in the beginning from Yahweh. All things were made through Yahweh's word [*logos*], and without it [*logos*] nothing was made that was made. In Yahweh's word [*logos*] was life, and the life was the light of men. And the

light shines in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. John 1:1-5.

When the apostle John speaks of the Word here, it is the Greek word Logos. The word "Word" in the Bible is translated from two Greek words, Logos and Rhema. Logos is a word denoting collecting or a collection and also used to describe the reason of Yahweh, as expressed in or by the "spoken word". As you collect your thoughts, you are using the gift of reason that Yahweh has given you, which is part of the divine nature that Yahweh has given to all of us, "created in His image".

The Spoken Word of Yahweh, His "Logos" is His creative tool such that He is able to speak His very own thoughts into the reality we can see and into the reality we cannot see, yet believe in due to His specific words, or "Rhema".

Those that describe the Word of Yahweh as the Bible are only being partially correct. To be more precise, the Bible is a collection of the Words of Yahweh as revealed to men through His written Word, and His prophets and recorded, provided of course, it is a Bible that has maintained the originally inspired Words, not the artificial man-crafted, copy-righted wording.

By the time John was ready to start his gospel, the term Logos was the common way of referring to Yahweh's revelation of Himself. The philosophy of Philo, current at the time, was so compelling that it was getting more attention than the message of Yah'shua. The thinking world was using the term Logos to indicate the revelation of the "unknown God", so he seized it as a terrific opportunity to present the truth of Yahweh. John began his gospel with "in the beginning was the spoken word" (*Logos*). Without any apology John states bluntly in effect: This Logos people are referring to is a person. He is a specific person, and I am going to identify him for you. He is

none other Yahweh, our Creator, who offers us eternal life through Yah'shua, who became His firstborn Son by Yahweh's resurrection of His life from the dead.

There were two meanings of Logos; "reason and speech", plus "thinking and speaking". From the beginning, there has been Yahweh. And always there has been another aspect of His Spirit with Him, who is to Yahweh what a man's word and thought are to a man. It is through this Logos, or Word, that Yahweh acts and how Yahweh expresses Himself to man who has fallen from His grace. It is Yahweh's Logos, or spoken word that causes His creative thoughts to be turned into reality.

## The "Black-Sheep" of our Family:

Is there a devil? Many people talk about the devil and Satan. Others scoff and say it's just superstition and imagination. But is there a devil? According to knowledgeable Israelites the Bible is supposed to teach that the devil is "the god of this world".

Did Yahweh create a devil? What does the Bible actually teach? To find out let's look back to the very beginning. Open your Bible to Genesis 1:1. "In the beginning Yahweh". Yahweh was before all. The next word in the Authorized Version is "created". "Yahweh created". He created the heaven and the earth. But the very next verse of the first chapter of Genesis typically says this: "The earth was without form, and void". The Hebrew words for "without form", and "void" are "tohu" and "bohu". Translated into English they mean chaotic, in confusion, waste, and empty.

When Yahweh created the heaven and the earth, did He create this earth originally in a state of confusion? Did He create it all topsy-turvy and chaotic? We read in 1 Corinthians 14:33, that, "Yahweh is NOT the author of confusion". Yahweh is the author of peace; Yahweh is the author of order and of law. Why would He create the earth in disorder and then have to straighten it out? That doesn't make sense! One definition points out that the Hebrew word for created, "bara", used in Genesis 1:1, "implies that the creation was a perfect work". That very word "created" implies, according to this definition, a perfect, beautiful order and system, not chaos or confusion!

The book of Job shows Yahweh talking with Job about the creation. Yahweh is saying to Job, "Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth?" There is the implication here that Job had directed the building of some great edifice. Job was righteous and somewhat proud of his accomplishments. Yahweh was whittling him

down to humility by a comparison of accomplishments. Yahweh continues, "Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened [*margin, "sunk"*]? or who laid the corner stone thereof; when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of Yahweh shouted for joy?" (*Job 38:4-7*).

The "morning stars" are light-(truth)-bringing angels and archangels, according to Biblical interpretation of symbols. As creations of Yahweh, they also are referred to as "all the sons of Yahweh". So this, too, implies a perfect and glorious creation of earth.

Then how did it become chaotic? In Genesis 19:26, the same Hebrew root word "hayah" is used that is translated "was" in Genesis 1:2. (*See also Genesis 2:7 and 9:15*). And there it is translated into the English word "BECAME". In the first three chapters of the Bible, and many other places where you find the Hebrew word "hayah", in almost every case it denotes a condition that was different from a former condition.

In other words, the earth "BECAME" chaotic. It had not always been that way. Plainly the word "was" (*hayah*) here has the meaning of "became". The Rotherham translation of Genesis 1:2, out of the original Hebrew language, is this: "Now the earth HAD BECOME waste and empty". It hadn't always been that way!

In Jeremiah 4:23, Isaiah 34:11, and in other places in the Bible, you find the same words, "tohu" and "bohu", meaning "chaotic" and "in confusion". In every case that condition is a result of sin. Notice Isaiah 45:18. "Thus saith Yahweh that created the heavens; Yahweh himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it NOT IN VAIN". "In vain" is an inappropriate translation of, "emptiness or waste".

The original Hebrew word here is "tohu". This Hebrew word is the identical word used in Genesis 1:2, meaning "confusion", or "emptiness", or "waste" - a result of disorder, a result of violation of law. In Isaiah 45:18 we have the plain statement that Yahweh created the earth NOT "tohu", that is, not in confusion, not in disorder. But in Genesis 1:2, the earth was (*because it had become*) chaotic and in confusion! Then it became that way after it was created. Now, what could have caused that confusion; that disorder? What sin could have wrecked the earth and brought it into the condition in which it was found in Genesis 1:2?

These facts prove that there must have been some form of LIFE on earth prior to human life. That life populated the earth, because the Bible says the sins of that life (the breaking of Yahweh's laws), had occurred on the earth and brought it into a condition of chaos and confusion!

Yahweh reveals what type of life that was in 2 Peter 2:4: "For Yahweh spared not the angels that sinned..." and now in the 6th verse of Jude, "and the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day".

The sin of the angels, brought about the chaotic condition on the earth. There was a devil already in existence when Adam was created. He and his demons had an estate that they did not keep, or maintain. "...and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord Yahweh; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. Thou hast been in Eden the garden of Yahweh; every precious stone was thy covering...the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes [*music*] was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created".

Notice, this is speaking of a created being - not a human being. "Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set

thee so," says Yahweh. In Exodus 25:17,20, we find the description of Yahweh's throne in heaven, and about this throne are two cherubim - super archangels - whose wings spread out and cover the throne. This created being then, is the former Lucifer, who was at the very throne of the universe, thoroughly experienced in the Government of Yahweh. He is then prior to Genesis, pictured as being on earth to administer the Government of Yahweh over earth's angels and Yahweh's other created life forms.

There was happiness, peace and joy on earth. Of Lucifer, the Moffatt translation reads: "From the day you were created, you lived a perfect life, till you were discovered doing wrong" (Ezekiel 28:15). Yahweh did not create a devil, but a beautiful, perfect super angel. But Yahweh did give to his angels free moral agency - minds that were free to think and reason - the right of free choice. Lucifer had allowed his great intelligence and beauty to fill him with vanity; with self-glory and SELF-desire. He became envious of Yahweh's exalted position and resented Yahweh's authority. He plotted with his angels to marshal them into an invading army, to invade the heaven of Yahweh. "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of Yahweh: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High [*Yahweh*]" (Isa. 14:12-14).

Lucifer was going to try to be God of the entire creation! He was no longer satisfied with simply being the administrator of Yahweh's government on earth. A third of the angels united with Satan in the rebellion. (*Lucifer was no longer "light-bringer", but now an adversary*

- *an enemy. The name Satan means "adversary". His angels now became demons.*) This rebellious sin of the angels reached into the heavens and brought chaos. What the geologists and astronomers see, is not an evolving universe, but the wreckage of a titanic battle waged by spirits throughout space - a battle fought before man's creation.

Millions of years ago, the earth and MANY TYPES OF LIFE FORMS, including what we euphemistically refer to as "pre-historic man", such as Cro-Magnon and Neanderthal, were created perfect, and placed under rule of Yahweh's most highly esteemed Lucifer. The angelic rebellion then caused the earth and its life forms to become chaotic, waste, and in confusion. Then Yahweh refashioned, remade, or RE-CREATED THE EARTH IN SIX DAYS for the purpose of providing a proving ground for His NEWLY CREATED human life. The human life that through Yahweh's plan of salvation, would overcome the devil, and become, the family of Yahweh.

Notice that the Bible does NOT say that ADAM and EVE were the first, or ONLY humans created! In the Hebrew language, "Adam", means literally, "MANKIND"! Genesis 1:26 states very clearly, that Yahweh said, "let us make man[*kind*] in our image, according to our likeness: let THEM have dominion ... on the earth"! And in verse 27 and 28, "So Yahweh created man[*kind*] in His own image, in the image of Yahweh created He him [*mankind*]; male and female created He THEM. And Yahweh blessed THEM, and Yahweh said unto THEM, Be fruitful and multiply, and REPLENISH the earth...!" (*Notice the use of the word "RE"plenish! Obviously, you can only "RE"plenish that which is no longer there; the former, or "pre-historic" life forms!*) Then AFTER this, in verse 7 of Chapter 2, Yahweh describes how he specifically created Adam

like He had the rest of mankind, out of the "dust of the ground". And EVEN LATER STILL, in verses 8 and 15, we are told that Yahweh "took the man [*Adam - mankind*] and put him [them] in the garden of Eden to tend and keep it".

We conclude here, that Yahweh ALSO created many other ancestors of the human race; MANKIND! This stage of creation no doubt accounts for the origin of distinctions within the races, such as those of the Asians, Orientals, Africans, Indians, South Americans, Australian Aborigines, North American Indians and so on.

The placing of Adam in the garden of Eden, was Yahweh's FIRST STEP in His plan of salvation. Adam and Eve were specifically selected by Yahweh to begin a line of descendents that would become an example, or a "light to the world" as the Messiah would state it. Unfortunately, the earth and ALL HUMANS were still conditionally, under ruler ship of Satan. Adam had the chance to supplant him. In the contest to see if Adam would conquer, if he would obey Yahweh, he failed. He obeyed the devil instead, and man BECAME THE PROPERTY OF THE DEVIL, and the whole human race has been held captive by him ever since! Adam and Eve took of the tree of "the knowledge of good and evil", allowing them to decide for themselves what is right or what is sin. This, of course, meant rejecting Yahweh's law, which defined FOR THEM, the right and the wrong.

Adam, not deceived, nonetheless went along with his wife. With her, he took to himself the determination of what is right and what is wrong - thus DISBELIEVING what his Maker had said, REJECTING Yahweh as Saviour and Ruler - rejecting Yahweh as the source of revealed BASIC KNOWLEDGE. He believed, obeyed and followed Satan's way! When Yahweh "drove out the man" from the Garden

of Eden (*cut man off from His presence*), and barred re-entrance to the Garden, lest he go back and receive eternal life in sin (*Gen. 3:22-24*), Yahweh had, in effect pronounced sentence on all of mankind!

Once Adam failed, Yahweh wasted little time in getting to the next step in His plan of salvation; ABRAHAM - the FATHER OF THE FAITHFUL! In as few as 12 chapters in the Bible, Yahweh leads us to, and REVEALS (*or exposes*) the THEME OF THE ENTIRE BIBLE - His plan of salvation FOR ALL MEN (*1 Tim. 2:1-5*), through a line of descent, or spiritual adoption - from ABRAHAM, the father of the faithful, through to Yah'shua the Messiah, the ultimate Saviour of ALL MANKIND (*Gal. 3:16*)!

Yahweh said, in effect: "You have made the decision for yourself and the world, and all those that shall spring from you. You have rejected Me as the basic source of knowledge; you have rejected power from Me through My Spirit to live the righteous way - you have rebelled against My command and My government - you have chosen the 'GETTING', 'TAKING' way of Satan. Therefore I sentence you and the world and those you shall beget to 6,000 years of being cut off from access to Me and My Spirit - except for the exceedingly FEW I shall specially CALL. And that FEW shall be called for special service preparatory for, and as part of, the kingdom of Yahweh. They shall be required to do what you have failed to do - discern, reject, resist and overcome Satan and his ways, and follow the ways of My spiritual law.

"Go therefore, Adam, and all your progeny that shall form the descendents of my plan of salvation for the world, produce your own fund of knowledge. Decide for yourself what is good and what is evil. Produce your own educational systems and means of disseminating knowledge, as your god Satan shall mislead you. As the rest of the world will,

form your own concepts of what is "god", your own religions, your own governments, your own lifestyles and forms of society and civilization. In all this Satan will deceive you and the world with his attitude of SELF-centeredness - with vanity, lust, greed, jealousy, envy, competition, strife, violence, wars and rebellion against Me and My laws of love.

"After the world of your descendants has written the lesson of 6,000 years of human suffering, anguish, frustration, defeat and death - after the world that shall spring forth from you shall be brought to confess the utter hopelessness of the way you have chosen - I will supernaturally intervene. By My Power I shall then take over the government of the whole world. With re-education, I will produce a happy world of peace. And on repentance, I shall then offer eternal salvation to ALL MANKIND. After 1,000 years of that happy world to come, I will resurrect from death to mortal life, all who have died uncalled during this present 6,000 years. Their judgement shall then come. And on repentance and faith, they too shall be offered eternal life.

"During this 6,000 years, when I Myself shall cut them off from Me, they shall not be eternally judged. Only, as they sow during their lifetimes, they shall reap. But when I open eternal salvation to them, there shall be no Satan to hinder or deceive them - no Satan to overcome. Those few called during the first 6,000 years shall have to reject and overcome Satan. But those who do overcome (My elect), shall sit with Me in My throne, and have POWER UNDER MY SUPREME AUTHORITY TO RULE ALL NATIONS FOREVER!"

So, as the Bible says, Satan is "the god of this world". You need only look around to see an abundance of supporting evidence. We are still, necessarily required to resist the selfish and negative influences of Satan and

his demons. They, and this influence, are all too real. The Bible warns us repeatedly to "believe not every spirit, but try [test] the spirits whether they are of Yahweh" (1 John 4:1). Don't be fooled! Satan is the father of all lies (John 8:44). If a message in any way contains a lie, then it is not from Yahweh, because Yahweh cannot lie (Heb. 6:18).

Satan the devil is very clever. No wonder. Before he became the devil, he was a resplendent spiritual being - an archangel. At that time he was "full of wisdom" (Ezek. 28:12). However, all that wisdom has become perverted - it became such a masterful example of trickery and deceit, that it has deceived the WHOLE world, as the Bible clearly states (Rev. 12:9).

In the same way media broadcasting has at times been misused by human propagandists, Satan "broadcasts" his deceptive message. He is the "prince of the power of the air" (Ephesians 2:2). He emits a contagious attitude of defiance and disobedience. Some of his message consists of outright lies, some of it is disinformation - a mixture of truth and deceit. But the message is always the same - do not totally submit to the government of Yahweh.

Though Satan has fallen, Yahweh has not yet removed him from his throne as the "ruler of this world", as Yah'shua acknowledged him to be in John 14:30. He has deceived "the whole world". Satan is a compromiser, he will engage in give and take as long as he gets his way in the end. It is vital that we understand, that we not be "ignorant of his devices", lest he get the advantage over us (2 Cor. 2:11).

The devil has something for everyone. The broad highway leading to destruction - the one humanity is following, is broader than most think. It is divided into innumerable lanes, at least some of which, nearly everybody is sure

to find appealing. If he had his preference he no doubt would want everybody to be Yahweh hating, atheistic anarchists bent only on doing evil, but he hasn't succeeded in bringing this about. There are a few individuals in the world like that - but most are not. There are devil worshippers. They too, are small in number. There are those who deny Satan is real and those who have no opinion on the matter. Satan does not care so long as they do not totally obey Yahweh.

Satan is even willing to allow you to obey many of Yahweh's laws, as long as there is at least one point in the law that you refuse to keep. The reason, is that he knows Yahweh has ordained that to break one point of His law of love is to break it all (James 2:10,11). Therefore, to refuse to submit to one point is to rebel against Yahweh's entire divine code of behaviour - not totally submitted to Yahweh. That's good enough for Satan.

There are those that preach powerfully and eloquently against Satan and his evil works, condemning his ways as corrupt. They may even promote acceptance of Yah'shua as Saviour.

All this, too, can fit into the parameters of his scheme. How? It is possible for church denominations, and unfortunately quite true for most of them, to stop short of teaching that we must obey all of Yahweh's holy laws.

Most traditional Christian churches teach differing versions of the false doctrines adopted and/or created by the Roman Catholic church and the Protestants ("Mother of Harlots"), where the pagan traditions of men have been placed above the law of Yahweh!

We must beware: A glass of good water with a few drops of cyanide in it still looks like an innocent, perfectly good glass of water. Your only hope of not being fooled by him is to study and believe Yahweh's Word and obey all of Yahweh's laws.

Do what Satan does not want you to do  
- surrender to Yahweh, then "resist the devil  
and he will flee from you" (*James 4:7*). That's  
how to get rid of Satan's influence in your life.

That's how you come to the place where  
you can make the same victorious statement  
Yah'shua made when He declared concerning  
the devil: "He has nothing in me!" (*John 14:30*).

## What is Man?

Man is the most complex, truly unique physical mechanism ever designed and made.

With such a marvellous mind and body, we might expect it was only natural that our Maker send along His "Instruction Book" - just as a manufacturer sends along with the instrument or device he manufactures an instruction book describing what his product is designed to do.

That Instruction Book Yahweh did send. It reveals the missing dimension in knowledge - the incredible human potential.

This Instruction Book tells us what we are, why we are, where we are going, and the way to get there! We call it the Holy Bible.

It reveals that Yahweh first created angels - composed of spirit, though lesser than Yahweh and lacking in ultimate creative power. It reveals that the physical universe, including the earth, was next brought into existence. A third of the angels were then placed here on earth. They were put under the rule of the government of Yahweh, which was administered on earth by the great archangel known as Lucifer.

Under the government of Yahweh - which is in reality the administration of Yahweh's way of outgoing love as spelled out by Yahweh's Commandments - the earth was initially filled with peace, happiness, joy and wonderful accomplishment. But ultimately, Lucifer led the angels under him into rebellion. The government of Yahweh was rejected, no longer enforced. As a result, the earth became waste and empty, in confusion and darkness (*Genesis 1:2*). Later, in six literal days Yahweh renewed the face of the earth (*Psalms 104:30*). He made physical life forms - the flora and then the fauna. These life forms were created without reasoning or decision-making processes, and without ethical or moral

capabilities, except for man, Yahweh's masterpiece of creative workmanship.

In the foundation of knowledge, Yahweh's Instruction Book for man, the Creator Yahweh reveals much knowledge about man that is totally beyond man's ability to discover for himself - including the knowledge and understanding of what man is, why he was made that way, and what he is ultimately to become.

Yahweh created the first man. And He tells us how He made him so there would be no doubt as to what we really are. The first man was made from and therefore composed of earth - the dust of the ground! (*Genesis 2:7*). It was the whole man - "thou" - that was composed of the dust of the ground (*Genesis 3:19*).

After Yahweh had formed the man - made all the cells in his body - Yahweh imparted to him physical life (*Genesis 2:7*). Yahweh blew into the man's lungs, through the nostrils, air - "the breath of life" - containing oxygen, and the man began to live! Notice that the verse does not say Yahweh breathed an immortal soul into the man.

The source of physical life in man and all animals is the same. Not once in the Bible does the "breath of life" even remotely refer to an "immortal soul" or life apart from the physical body. Otherwise animals, birds and even insects - gnats, fleas, mosquitoes - have immortal souls, for they all have the same "breath of life" (*Genesis 7:21-22*).

When Yahweh breathed the breath of life into the nostrils of the first man, he became "a living soul" (*Genesis 2:7*). Man does not have a soul - man IS a "soul"! Since man is a soul, and the soul is mortal - then man is mortal, subject to death. That is why the Scriptures call human beings "mortal man" (*Job 4:17*).

When an animal dies, it is dead. When man dies, he is completely dead, too. All men and animals alike go to the same place at death (*Ecclesiastes 3:20*). Why? Because they all have the same temporary source of life - air. After death, all men and animals become dust once again.

The government of Yahweh ceased to be administered on this earth after the rebellion of Lucifer (*now Satan*) and one third of the angels. Later, Yahweh created the first human, Adam, with the potential of qualifying to replace Satan as ruler of the earth, thus restoring the government and way of Yahweh to this earth. But to qualify as successor to Satan, the human successor had to reject Satan's way and voluntarily come under the government of Yahweh.

Yahweh's master plan for accomplishing His purpose for the human race took form and shape even before man was made. Yahweh planned that if mortal man sinned by rejecting Yahweh's government - as all but Yah'shua have - Yahweh would make it possible for him to REPENT - to turn from sinning, to be reconciled to Yahweh and to live Yahweh's way of life, finally to be born of Yahweh as members of His eternal family!

Repentance is turning from the way of Satan to the government of Yahweh. It is accepting Yahweh's rule over our lives through His law of love. It is accepting Yah'shua the Messiah as Saviour and coming King - the "second Adam" who qualified (*where the first Adam failed*) to re-establish the government of Yahweh on the earth by overcoming Satan. Those who are to reign with the Messiah must likewise reject Satan's way; overcome that way day by day, and actually live by Yahweh's law of love. If they continue in this way, they will be born of Yahweh - become immortal spirit at the first resurrection (*1 Corinthians 15:42-54; John 3:3-8*).

But those who will not repent and accept the Messiah's sacrifice in payment for their sins - those who refuse to turn from Satan's way and refuse to come under the government of Yahweh in their lives - will ultimately perish (*Romans 6:23; Revelation 20:14-15; Malachi 4:1-3*).

Yahweh wants every human being who has ever lived to have the opportunity to repent and live forever. (*2 Peter 3:9; 1 Timothy 2:4*). But Yahweh will not force anyone to choose life. For those who refuse to follow Yahweh's way to eternal life there will be the "second death" - the fate of all unrepentant sinners. They will cease to exist forever. They will be as if they had never been!

We can now see that Yahweh chose to make man first out of physical matter instead of spirit for an important reason. Before the creation of man, He had made the angels out of immortal spirit - not mortal flesh and blood, subject to death. And one third of these angels sinned by rebelling against the government of Yahweh. But the punishment of sinning angels is not death.

Angels are composed of spirit and therefore cannot die. Since one third of the angels chose the way of sin, their punishment will last for eternity. Their sins have resulted in eternal hopelessness and frustration, their minds being filled with resentment, bitterness and rebellion. Happiness and joy have left them forever!

But for man, Yahweh planned in advance that if man, composed of matter, sinned and refused to repent, he would die - he would be as though he had not been. Yahweh will not allow any incorrigible human being to live forever in mental anguish and torment like the fallen angels. This plan reflects Yahweh's great mercy toward mortal man!

When called by Yahweh and made to realize that he has sinned, man can REPENT -

turn from his sin to Yahweh's way. And once his course is changed, with Yahweh's help he can pursue a life of obedience to Yahweh. He can grow in spiritual knowledge and develop the character of Yahweh - overcome wrong habits, weaknesses and faults. And this is all done through the free will and choice of each human mind.

Only man, of all Yahweh's physical creatures, has the seemingly miraculous ability to think, reason, plan and design, and come to conclusions based on acquired knowledge. Animals cannot comprehend the concepts of good and evil. They don't repent.

Have you ever wondered why? Have you ever thought about the vast difference between animal brain and human mind, and what could possibly account for it?

There is a great, uncrossable GULF between animal brain and human mind. The evolutionary theory assumes that humans are animals. But one thing evolution can never explain is the total difference between animal brain equipped with instinct, and the human mind with creative reasoning powers of intellect and devoid of instinct in the strict sense that animals possess it.

Some animals have physical brains as large or larger than man's brain, and with similar cerebral cortex complexity - but none has the powers of intellect, logic, self-consciousness and creativity.

The physical brain of a dolphin, whale or elephant is larger than the human brain, while a chimp's is slightly smaller. Qualitatively the difference between them and the human brain is very little - not enough to remotely account for the vastly superior intelligence and output of the human brain. The gap between animal brain and human mind is incredibly vast!

When Yahweh moulded Adam out of the dust of the ground, he was made in the "likeness" - the outward form and shape - of

Yahweh Himself (*Genesis 1:26*). Yahweh did not make any of the other creatures to be a clay replica of Himself. This unique form and shape was given to man alone. This is because man was created with the potential to become a God!

Each animal was created with a brain suited for its particular animal kind. But animals do not have the potential of MIND and CHARACTER that Yahweh gave only to man. No animal was ever given the gift of mind power - ability to think, to reason, to make choices and decisions - as was man!

It is this very SPECIAL ATTRIBUTE OF MIND AND CHARACTER that separates men from animals!

Animals possess what we call instinct. Their brains are programmed, so to speak, by Yahweh with particular instinctive habit patterns in their feeding, nesting, migration and reproduction. Thus beavers build dams and birds build nests. These aptitudes are inherited - they are not the result of logical, cognitive or thinking processes.

For example, millions of birds flock south each year as winter approaches in the Northern Hemisphere. They don't stop to reason why, they don't ask themselves whether they should, they don't plan ahead an itinerary for the trip. At a given internal signal - like the preset alarm of a clock - they leave their summer feeding grounds in the north and travel hundreds, sometimes thousands of miles south. Scientists don't fully understand why - they merely observe the operation of the animal instinct.

Each species or kind of bird builds a different type of nest, feeds on specific kinds of foods, and migrates at different times to various destinations. But none of these actions is planned in advance by the birds as humans would. Birds merely have the capability and proclivity to do that which Almighty Yahweh

built into the instinct of each at creation.

But man's mind is vastly different from animal instinct. Man is able to devise various ways to do any one thing or to achieve a predetermined goal. Man can acquire knowledge and reason from it. He can draw conclusions, make decisions, will act according to a thought-out plan.

Man can design and build different types of houses, using different designs and different building materials. Some houses are built of wood, some of brick or stone, and some people living near the North Pole even live in ice houses called igloos. Humans also eat different foods, prepared in many different ways. We may live entirely different life-styles from one another. And if a man wants to change his way of life - he can! Man is not subject to instinct. He is not governed by a set of predetermined habit patterns as animals are.

Man can choose - he has free moral agency. He can devise codes of conduct and exercise self-discipline. Man can originate ideas and evaluate knowledge because he has a MIND that is patterned after Yahweh's own mind! Man can devise, plan and bring his plans to fruition because he has been given some of the very creative powers of Yahweh!

Man alone can wonder, "Why was I born? What is life? What is death? Is there a purpose in human existence?" Man, unlike the animals, not only "knows" how to do certain things, but he also KNOWS that he knows - that is, he is aware that he has knowledge. He is conscious of the fact. He is self-conscious, aware of his own existence as a unique being.

These attributes of mind and character make man Yahweh's UNIQUE physical creation. Yahweh has shared some of His own qualities with man. And Yahweh expects man to develop and become conformed to the spiritual "image" of Yahweh's perfect mind and holy character (*Matthew 5:48*) - just as man

now is formed in the physical "image" of Yahweh.

Man was created to have a special relationship with Yahweh that animals are utterly unable to have. Man was made in the likeness of the God kind. He was made in Yahweh's image so that he might one day be born into Yahweh's divine family!

Yahweh's purpose in making mortal man after His own likeness demanded mind power in man patterned after Yahweh's own mind. That is why the most remarkable thing about man is his mind.

What is it then that separates humankind from the animal kingdom? What gives man this God-plane power of intellect? It all boils down to a non-physical component in the human brain that does not exist in animal brain. It is this non-physical component that makes man so vastly different from animals. It is what makes man truly UNIQUE!

Man does not have an immortal soul within him that enables him to live on apart from his body after death (remember man is a mortal soul). But the Bible nevertheless does speak of a "Spirit IN Man" (*Job 32:8, 18; Zechariah 12:1; 1 Corinthians 2:11*).

Many passages of Scripture show that there is a "spirit" IN man! This spirit is not the man - it is something that is IN the man, joined with the physical brain providing its unique powers of intellect and personality - the ability to think rationally and make free will decisions. It imparts the ability to learn mathematics, languages or other types of knowledge such as music, art, carpentry, and flying.

But that's all. The spirit that is IN man has no consciousness of itself. It is not an "immortal soul". This spirit is not the "man", nor is it "alive", or possess any "life" of its own.

The spirit that is IN man can be called "human" spirit, for it is in each human, even though it is spirit essence and not matter. It is

not a "ghost", spirit being, or His Holy Spirit. It is not the man, but spirit essence IN the man. It is NOT a soul - the physical human is a soul.

The human spirit does not supply human life - the human life is in the physical blood, oxidized by the breath of life (*Leviticus 17:11*). But the spirit in man does impart the power of intellect to the human brain. This non-physical component in the human brain is spirit essence, just as in the material world air is a gaseous essence. This "human" spirit cannot see. The physical brain sees through the eyes.

This human spirit cannot think. The brain thinks - although the spirit imparts the power to think far above the level of brute animals' brain function. Without such spirit animals cannot do original thinking.

Whatever knowledge enters the brain through the five senses is instantly stored (memorized) in the "human" spirit within the man or woman, much like a computer stores information. It enables the brain to have instant recall of stored-up knowledge in the spirit, thus enabling the brain to utilize bits of related knowledge in the process of THINKING and REASONING.

The human spirit imparts the power of intellect to the physical brain in two ways: 1) it gives the brain instant recall of whatever the brain calls for in the knowledge stored in this memory; 2) it supplies the brain whatever energy is needed to cause it to think - that is, to put the pieces of information stored in the spirit together in the process we call "thinking," "reasoning" and "drawing conclusions". The human spirit also is the means Yahweh has instilled to make possible a personal relationship between human MAN and divine Yahweh.

The truth about the "spirit in man" is so important that Satan, the arch deceiver, twisted and perverted it long ago. He clouded the minds of men and led them into believing his

"big lie" as far back in time as the first human beings in the garden of Eden.

Here was the origin of the "immortality of the soul" teaching so prevalent today! Satan told the first woman she would "not surely die" (*Genesis 3:4*). In other words, she had an "immortal soul" that would live forever. Eve believed this lie. And most of the world today continues to believe some variation of that ancient "big lie"!

Man has the intellectual capacity to design space ships to take him to the moon and back, to invent the computer and to do other marvellous exploits in the physical, material realm. Yet during man's nearly 6,000 years on earth, he has proved that he cannot solve his problems with fellowman.

Why has this been so? Because man's real problems are spiritual in nature and the natural man simply cannot solve spiritual problems. In producing the computer or in flying to the moon, he is dealing with physical matter that he can understand because of the human spirit within him. But he cannot solve problems with fellow humans because this involves knowledge and understanding of spiritual principles, which he cannot comprehend without the addition of another spiritual element to his mind!

Man was made to need another spirit - the Holy Spirit of Yahweh! Just as a human could not know the things of human knowledge except by the human spirit within him, so he cannot know the things of Yahweh - spiritual knowledge - except by the addition of the Spirit of Yahweh (*1 Corinthians 2:9-11, 14*).

Just as surely as no animal brain - such as a cow's, for example - can comprehend or understand human affairs without the human spirit, so no human mind can have comprehension of spiritual truths on the divine plane without His Holy Spirit!

Even the greatest scientific and philosophical minds simply cannot come to know and understand SPIRITUAL truths with their natural minds. Spiritual truths are "foolishness" to them. The natural man, with human spirit is limited to material knowledge.

Spiritual things cannot be seen with the eye, heard with the ear, felt with the hands, tasted or smelled. The human mind which can receive knowledge only through the physical senses, can never really comprehend spiritual concepts and principles without the Holy Spirit of Yahweh. A man or woman can come to know that which is spiritual only through Yahweh's Holy Spirit, which works with the human spirit in the mind. That is the only way the human mind can receive and comprehend the knowledge of and attain Yahweh's GREAT PURPOSE for man's existence!

Man was created incomplete. He was made to need another spirit - the Holy Spirit of Yahweh. How can one receive His Holy Spirit? Through the Messiah, the second Adam, we can receive Yahweh's gift of His Holy Spirit. Upon repentance and faith in Yah'shua the Messiah, whose death paid the penalty for sin in our stead, we may be reconciled to Yahweh and receive the Holy Spirit of Yahweh, which is added to our human spirit (*Acts 2:38; John 7:38-39*). Thus we become the begotten children of Yahweh (*1 Peter 1:3; Romans 8:14-17*).

The human spirit in man and the Holy Spirit of Yahweh join to make a begotten child of Yahweh, just as the male sperm cell and the female ovum or egg cell join to make a begotten human, but not yet developed or ready to be born as a human being.

Yahweh's Holy Spirit, when it combines with the human spirit in the human mind, does two things: 1) it begets the human with divine, eternal life later to be born into the Yahweh family as a divine being, then composed wholly

of spirit; 2) it imparts to the mind the ability to comprehend spiritual knowledge - to understand the things of Yahweh.

The first human beings were freely offered this second and much-needed Spirit. Of the two symbolic trees in the garden in Eden, the "tree of life" represented Yahweh's Holy Spirit. To have taken the fruit of that tree would have been to receive Yahweh's Holy Spirit, which would have joined with their human spirits, impregnating them as begotten (*not yet born*) children of Yahweh.

But by taking of the fruit of the "tree of the knowledge of good and evil", our first parents rejected Yahweh's Spirit, which would have begotten the very life of Yahweh in them and would have enabled them to understand revealed spiritual knowledge. Thus they cut themselves and their descendants off from access to Yahweh's Spirit. They limited themselves and the human race to material knowledge and understanding (*Genesis 3:22-24*), except for those whom Yahweh would specially call (*John 6:44*) and give His Spirit.

The Spirit-begotten Israelite now has, conditionally, the presence of eternal life within him (*or her*) through a portion of His Holy Spirit from the Father. But this does not mean he is an immortal spirit being. He is not yet composed of Yahweh's Spirit. He is now an "heir" of Yahweh (*Romans 8:16-17*) - not yet an inheritor or a possessor, not yet "born again". But, if His Holy Spirit dwells in us, Yahweh will at the Messiah's return to earth as King of kings, give us immortality by His Spirit that dwells in us (*Romans 8:11*).

Now just as in human reproduction the impregnated embryo, which later becomes a fetus, is not yet born, but must be nourished for a period of time through the human mother, so the begotten Israelite is not yet born into the Yahweh family. The divine life has merely been begotten. It must now grow!

Included in Yahweh's purpose for creating man is the development of righteous, spiritual character within him. Notice again what Yahweh said in Genesis 1:26: "Let us make man in our image..." The original Hebrew here indicates far more than merely the form and shape of Yahweh - His outward likeness. "Image" also refers to mind and character! Yahweh intended for man - to whom He gave the gift of a thinking, reasoning mind - to ultimately have the very mind and character of Yahweh!

Yahweh's purpose in creating man is to reproduce Himself with the perfect spiritual character only Yahweh possesses. Man was therefore created in Yahweh's own image and likeness, His own form and shape with a mind similar to His, so Yahweh could begin to develop the very character of Yahweh in him.

Just as the human body and brain gradually begin to form during the gestation period in human reproduction, the righteous and holy character of Yahweh must begin to form and grow once one is begotten by Yahweh's Spirit (*2 Peter 3:18; 1 Peter 2:1-2*).

Obviously, one cannot become absolutely perfect in character until the resurrection, when Yahweh will complete the process by giving each begotten human a new, perfect spirit body with perfect, sinless nature (*1 John 3:2,9*), that will be like the Messiah's and the Father's. But in the meantime, Yahweh wants His Spirit-begotten children to grow in this spiritual character daily by obeying His commandments and overcoming and rooting sin out of their lives - growing toward that spiritual perfection!

Such perfect, holy and righteous character cannot be created by fiat. It must be developed, and that requires time and experience. Yahweh gives mortal man time in which to learn that only Yahweh's way of life brings real peace, happiness and a joyful,

abundant life. Men will have learned that sin causes only heartache, misery, suffering and death. Those whom Yahweh calls will have seen the results of Satan's way of life and rejected it, and will have been developing, with the help of Yahweh's Spirit, Yahweh's own holy, righteous character until their change to sinless immortal life!

We become spiritual "embryos" when, upon receipt of His Holy Spirit, we are begotten of Yahweh. And to grow spiritually, we must take in spiritual nourishment. Just as the embryo in a mother's womb must be nourished with life-giving food through the placenta, so we must be nourished by the Word of Yahweh. "The words that I speak unto you," said Yah'shua, "they are spirit, and they are life" (*John 6:63*). Those words are recorded in the Bible - and Yah'shua said we are to live by every word of Yahweh (*Matthew 4:4*). We drink in these life-giving words from the Bible through reading, studying and meditating (thinking) on what we read.

Spiritual character development requires time and comes largely by experience - by putting the Word of Yahweh into practice in our daily lives. One builds the righteous character of Yahweh as one comes to discern, through Yahweh's revelation in the Holy Bible, right from wrong - the true values from the false - truth from error, then chooses the right and rejects the wrong and, with the help of Yahweh's Holy Spirit, resists the wrong and DOES the right.

This growing in spiritual knowledge and spiritual character is a gradual process that continues the rest of one's life. In addition to Bible study, earnest prayer is absolutely necessary. You absorb spiritual nourishment through personal, daily contact with Yahweh. When you study the Bible, Yahweh is talking to you. When you pray, you are talking to Him. You get to really know Yahweh in this manner,

just as you become better acquainted with people by conversation.

Yahweh's "elect" - His chosen ones, are the spiritual "mother" of all who have been begotten by Yahweh's Holy Spirit. Yahweh has set his called and chosen "elect" in the Congregation to "feed the flock" so the individual members may grow spiritually (*Acts 20:28*).

The Messiah has given His "elect" the responsibility to SHARE REVEALED UNDERSTANDING with the rest of the members of the FAMILY OF Yahweh - the Congregation, which is all of spiritual Israel (*Ephesians 4:11-15*). So just as a human mother feeds her begotten child within her womb through the placenta and umbilical cord, Yahweh's children are nourished with spiritual food from Yahweh's Word, with the help of His elect.

And as the human mother carries her unborn baby in that part of her body where she can protect it from physical harm, the function of Yahweh's elect is also to protect the begotten children of Yahweh from spiritual harm - the false doctrines of false ministers who appear as the Messiah's representatives, but who actually represent Satan and his way (*2 Corinthians 11:13-15*).

Finally, when resurrected from the dead or changed from mortal flesh to immortal Spirit at the Messiah's return, the incredible human potential will have blossomed into reality for those who were called by Yahweh and begotten by His Holy Spirit. We will have been BORN into the divine family of Yahweh possessing the fullness of the very character of Yahweh!

Now we see clearly the great purpose the Creator Yahweh had in making man UNIQUE among all His physical creations. Mortal man has within his reach the glorious reality of attaining to the resurrection of the

dead, and receiving immortality - forever being a part of the universe-ruling family of Yahweh.

The idea of an "immortal soul" long predates the founding of today's major religions. The ancient Greek historian Herodotus (*5th century B.C.*) tells us in his History that the ancient Egyptians were the first to teach that the soul of man is separable from the body, and immortal. This Egyptian idea existed centuries before Judaism, Hinduism, Buddhism, Christianity or Islam came onto the scene.

But what of the professing Christian world? Certainly here we should find the doctrine of an immortal soul independent of any Egyptian or Greek influence? Now consider this fact: Many of the early theologians and scholars of the professing Christian religion - including such men as Origen, Tertullian and Augustine - were closely associated with Platonism. Tertullian (*A.D. 155-220*), for example, wrote: "For some things are known even by nature: the immortality of the soul, for instance, is held by many...I may use, therefore, the opinion of Plato, when he declares: 'Every soul is immortal'" (*The Ante-Nicene Fathers, vol. III*).

Notice, it is the opinion of Plato that is cited! Augustine of Hippo (*A.D. 354-430*) - held to be the greatest thinker of Christian antiquity - also taught the immaterial and spiritual nature of the human soul. But notice the source of his teachings. The Encyclopaedia Britannica admits: "He (*Augustine*) fused the religion of the New Covenant with the Platonic tradition of Greek philosophy".

Why should those early professing Christian scholars have resorted to the opinions of a pagan Greek philosopher? Could it be that the immortal soul doctrine is not clearly supported in Israelite Scripture? The deep-seated teachings of centuries were not to be easily dislodged, even by Protestant

reformers. Theologians and churchgoers alike persisted, for the most part, in their unquestioning embrace of the ideas passed down from the ancient pagan philosophers. As the Encyclopaedia Britannica summarizes: "Traditional Western Philosophy, starting with the ancient Greeks...shaped the basic Western concepts of the soul".

Notice the warning of the apostle Paul, who once personally confronted Greek thinkers on Mars' Hill in ancient Athens (*Acts 17:15-34*). To the Greeks in Colosse in Asia Minor he wrote: "Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after the Messiah" (*Colossians 2:8*).

So what does the Bible really say? Yah'shua the Messiah, in fact, declared that Yahweh is able to destroy one's soul (*Greek psuche, or life*) in Gehenna fire (*Matthew 10:28*). The words immortal soul are found nowhere in the Bible - Old Covenant or New. The word immortal occurs only once in the entire Bible in 1 Timothy 1:17, where it refers specifically to Yah'shua the Messiah!

The word immortality is found only in the New Covenant, where it occurs fewer than half a dozen times. One of those places - 1 Timothy 6:16 - clearly states that, of all humans, Yah'shua the Messiah "ONLY hath immortality"! Romans 2:7 admonishes Israelites to "SEEK FOR...immortality". If man already had immortality, he would not have to seek for it!

1 Corinthians 15, the "resurrection chapter" of the Bible, shows that a Israelite "puts on" immortality at a future resurrection of the dead (see verses 50-54). As Yah'shua clearly stated: "That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of His Holy Spirit is spirit" (*John 3:6*). Man - born of the flesh - is flesh. He was not created with inherent immortality. He has only a temporary

physico-chemical existence. "For dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return", Yahweh told Adam (*Genesis 3:19*).

Only when mortal man is "born again" in a future resurrection will he finally put on immortality and be spirit! Why would a resurrection of the body be needed if the soul were already in heaven? The soul does not go to heaven! The mortal soul - man's physical life - dies and turns to dust.

The New Covenant then, teaches the resurrection - a rising from the dead - in direct opposition to the pagan Greek idea of an immortal soul. The resurrection is our only hope of eternal life!

Yah'shua the Messiah's resurrection was a type or forerunner of the resurrection Yahweh promises to all who obey Him (*John 5:28-29; 11:25; Romans 8:11; Philippians 3:10-11*). Man has no hope of future life inherent within himself!

## **Our Jewish Brothers Deceive us:**

To the average Bible Believer, the word "Talmud" is just another word associated with the form of religious worship practiced by "Jews" in their synagogues. "Jew" being another word that Bible Believers almost universally misunderstand.

Many Bible Believers have never heard of the Talmud. Very few Bible Believers are informed on the contents of the Talmud. Some may believe the Talmud to be an integral part of the religious worship known to them as "Judaism." It is not. To "Jews", it suggests a sort of bible addendum or religious text book.

Some Bible Believers may indeed know that it is classed by Jews as a spiritual manual, but otherwise few if any Bible Believers have an understanding of the contents of the Talmud, and what it means in the daily lives of so-called or self-styled "Jews."

As an illustration, how many Bible Believers have any conception of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer recited in synagogues on the Day of Atonement? In Volume VIII of the Jewish Encyclopedia on page 539 found in the Library of Congress, the New York Public Library and libraries of all leading cities, will be found the official translation into English of the prayer known as the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer. It is the prologue of the Day of Atonement services in their synagogues.

This "prayer", is recited three times by the standing congregation in concert with chanting rabbis at the altar. After the recital of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer, the Day of Atonement religious ceremonies follow immediately. The Day of Atonement religious observances are the highest holy days of the so-called or self-styled "Jews" and are celebrated as such throughout the world.

The official translation into English of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer follows:

"ALL VOWS, OBLIGATIONS, OATHS, ANATHEMAS, whether called "konam," "konas," or by any other name, WHICH WE MAY VOW, OR SWEAR, OR PLEDGE, OR WHEREBY WE MAY BE BOUND, FROM THIS DAY OF ATONEMENT UNTO THE NEXT, (*whose happy coming we await*), we do repent. MAY THEY BE DEEMED ABSOLVED, FORGIVEN, ANNULLED, AND VOID AND MADE OF NO EFFECT; THEY SHALL NOT BIND US NOR HAVE POWERS OVER US. THE VOWS SHALL NOT BE RECKONED VOWS; THE OBLIGATIONS SHALL NOT BE OBLIGATORY; NOR THE OATHS BE OATHS." (*emphasis supplied*)

The implications, inferences and innuendoes of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer, are referred to in the Talmud in the Book of Nedarim, 23a-23b as follows:

"And he who desires that NONE OF HIS VOWS MADE DURING THE YEAR SHALL BE VALID, let him stand at the beginning of the year and declare, "EVERY VOW WHICH I MAKE IN THE FUTURE SHALL BE NULL (1). (*HIS VOWS ARE THEN INVALID,*) PROVIDING THAT HE REMEMBERS THIS AT THE TIME OF THE VOW." (*emphasis in original*)

(*footnote*) "(1) This may have provided a support for the custom of reciting Kol Nidre (*a formula for dispensation of vows*) prior to the Evening Service of the Day of Atonement (*Ran*)...Though the beginning of the year (*New Year*) is mentioned here, the Day of Atonement was probably chosen on account of its great solemnity. But Kol Nidre as part of the ritual IS LATER THAN THE TALMUD, and, as seen from the following statement of R. Huna b. Hinene, THE LAW OF REVOCATION IN ADVANCE WAS NOT MADE PUBLIC. (*emphasis supplied and in original text*)

The greatest study of the "Kol Nidre" (*all Vows*) prayer was made by the eminent

psycho-analyst Professor Theodor Reik, the celebrated pupil of the famous Dr. Sigmund Freud (*both self-styled "Jews"*). The analysis of the historic, religious and psychological background of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer by Professor Reik presents the Talmud in its true perspective. This important study is contained in Professor Reik's "The Ritual, Psycho-Analytical Studies." In the chapter on the Talmud, on page 168, Professor Reik states:

"THE TEXT WAS TO THE EFFECT THAT ALL OATHS WHICH BELIEVERS (*JEWS*) TAKE BETWEEN ONE DAY OF ATONEMENT AND THE NEXT DAY OF ATONEMENT ARE DECLARED INVALID." (*emphasis added*)

Before explaining how the present wording of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer was introduced into the Day of Atonement synagogue ceremonies, we quote a passage from the Universal Jewish Encyclopedia. The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia confirms the fact that the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer has no spiritual value as might be believed, because it is recited in synagogues on the Day of Atonement as the prologue of the religious ceremonies which follow it. The **secular significance** of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer is indicated forcefully by the analysis in the Universal Jewish Encyclopedia. In Volume VI, on page 441, it states:

"The Kol Nidre HAS NOTHING WHATEVER TO DO WITH THE ACTUAL IDEA OF THE DAY OF ATONEMENT . . . it attained to extraordinary solemnity and popularity by reason of the fact that it was THE FIRST PRAYER RECITED ON THIS HOLIEST OF DAYS." (*emphasis added*)

Compelled by what you may now read here about the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer, you must be shocked to learn that many professing Bible Believer (*traditional Christian*)

churches actually "peal their bells" on the Day of Atonement in celebration of that holy day for so-called or self-styled "Jews." How stupid can the mainstream traditional Christian clergy get? There is not one single fact in this entire article which every graduate of a theological seminary did not have the opportunity to learn.

Under a prominent headline in the New York World Telegram; "JEWISH HOLIDAYS TO END AT SUNDOWN", gave great prominence to the following story:

"Synagogues and temples throughout the city were crowded yesterday as the 24 hour fast began. Dr. Normal Salit, head of the Synagogue Council of America, representing the three major Jewish bodies, had called on other faiths TO JOIN THE FAST... Cutting across religious lines, MANY PROTESTANT CHURCHES IN THE CITY PELED THEIR BELLS LAST NIGHT TO SOUND THE KOL NIDRE, TRADITIONAL MELODY USED AT THE START OF YOM KIPPUR. THE GESTURE OF GOOD-WILL WAS RECOMMENDED BY THE MANHATTAN OFFICE OF THE PROTESTANT COUNCIL" (*emphasis supplied*).

That just about "tops" anything revealing the ignorance and indifference of the professing *Christian* clergy to the hazards today facing the true Bible Believers' faith. We hold out very little hope for any constructive contribution that leaders of the professing *Christian* faith can make to the common defense of the true Bible Believers' faith against its dedicated enemies.

Traditional Christians consistently buckle under the "pressure" exerted upon them by so-called or self-styled "Jews." If it was not so tragic it would be comic. It is a joke indeed but the joke is on the *Christian* clergy. Ye gods!

"Many" *Christian* churches "pealed their bells," as the Protestant Council reports the event, "TO SOUND THE KOL NIDRE,

TRADITIONAL MELODY USED AT THE START OF YOM KIPPUR." Just where does betrayal of a trust and breach of faith begin?

The present wording of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer dates from the 11th century. A political reversal in eastern Europe compelled the so-called or self-styled "Jews" in eastern Europe to adopt the present wording of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer. That story involves the history of the so-called or self-styled "Jews", a story which will not be full related here.

In analyzing the course of history which resulted in the present wording of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer, the Jewish Encyclopedia in Volume VII, on page 540, states:

"AN IMPORTANT ALTERATION IN THE WORDING of the "Kol Nidre" was made by Rashi's son-in-law, Meir ben Samuel, WHO CHANGED THE ORIGINAL PHRASE "FROM THE LAST DAY OF ATONEMENT TO THIS ONE" to "FROM THIS DAY OF ATONEMENT UNTIL THE NEXT." (*emphasis supplied*)

Meir ben Samuel knew what he was doing. The wording of that altered version of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer makes the recital of the prayer a release during the coming year from any obligations to respect any oath, vow or pledge during the coming year. This is why "Jews" will so eagerly commit to one thing, yet so readily do another, or say one thing, but mean another.

Like any one-year license obtained from the Federal, State or Municipal governments, the altered version of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer, extends immunity in advance, allegedly authorized by the Rabbi, for one year from all obligations to observe the terms of oaths, vows, promises and pledges made in the year following the date of the Day of Atonement when the prayer was recited.

Each year however it becomes necessary to renew this "license" which automatically revokes in advance, any oath, vow or pledge made during the next twelve months, by again appearing in a synagogue on the next Day of Atonement and reciting the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer again.

Would you approve of this? Would Yahweh approve of this? Would your *Christian* God approve of this?

The passage in the Talmud referring to "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer certifies to several serious situations. It certifies that "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer was added as a prologue to the Day of Atonement religious services long after the completion of the Talmud between 500 A.D. - 1000 A.D. by the statement, "as part of the ritual is later than the Talmud."

It confirms that Meir ben Samuel who authored the present altered version of the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer, lived in the 11th century. Furthermore, the so-called or self-styled "Jews" in believed it served their purpose better to keep secret from their Bible Believer conquerors, their attitude on oaths, vows, promises and pledges, "the law of revocation in advance was not made public."

With a complete and accurate knowledge of the origin and history of the so-called or self-styled "Jews", it is quite impossible for anybody to intelligently understand the harmful influence the Talmud has exerted for ten centuries , and the "Kol Nidre" (*All Vows*) prayer for seven centuries upon the course of world history.

These little known factors form the hub and the spokes of the "big wheel" rolling merrily along the road to complete world domination in the not distant future, without arousing suspicion, and wearing the innocent disguise of an alleged religious belief as their only defense mechanism.

This insidious intrigue creates a most effective camouflage for the conspirators. The virility of their plot presents a problem in the defense of the political, economic, social and cultural ideologies developed under a true Bible Believer civilization, and more to the point, even under a traditional *Christian* civilization.

Nearly 350,000,000 traditional *Christians* remain ignorant of the facts related to the origin and the history of the so-called or self-styled "Jews". These so-called or self-styled "Jews", were never at any time in their history, the legendary "lost ten tribes" of Bible lore. That historic fact is incontrovertible.

The so-called or self-styled "Jews", by their own published admissions, cannot legitimately point to a single ancient ancestor who ever set even a foot on the soil of Palestine in the era of Bible history. They were never "Semites," are not "Semites" now, nor can they ever be regarded as "Semites" at any future time by any stretch of the imagination. They are not Israelites, nor is Abraham their father.

They are ancestors of the pagan Khazars, and they are responsible for the fantastic fabrication, generally accepted by traditional *Christians* that the so-called or self-styled "Jews" are the legendary "Chosen People" so very vocally publicized by the traditional *Christian* clergy from their pulpits.

This is also why, and just how, the origin and the history of the Khazars and Khazar Kingdom was so well concealed from the world for so many centuries. What secret mysterious power has been able for countless generations, to keep the origin and the history of the Khazars and of the Khazar Kingdom out of history text-books and out of class-room courses throughout the entire world? The so-called, self-styled "Jews".

## **The Amazing Warnings Of Benjamin Freedman. Jewish Defector Warns America:**

### **Introductory Note:**

Benjamin H. Freedman was one of the most intriguing and amazing individuals of the 20th century. Born in 1890, he was a successful Jewish businessman of New York City at one time principal owner of the Woodbury Soap Company. He broke with organized Jewry after the Judeo-Communist victory of 1945, and spent the remainder of his life and the great preponderance of his considerable fortune, at least 2.5 million dollars, exposing the Jewish tyranny which has enveloped the United States.

Mr. Freedman knew what he was talking about because he had been an insider at the highest levels of Jewish organizations and Jewish machinations to gain power over our nation. Mr. Freedman was personally acquainted with Bernard Baruch, Samuel Untermyer, Woodrow Wilson, Franklin Roosevelt, Joseph Kennedy, John F. Kennedy, and many more movers and shakers of our times.

This speech was given before a patriotic audience in 1961 at the Willard Hotel, Washington, D.C., on behalf of Conde McGinley's patriotic newspaper of that time, Common Sense. Though in some minor ways this wide-ranging and extemporaneous speech has become dated, Mr. Freedman's essential message to us -- his warning to the West -- is more urgent than ever before. -- K.A.S.

### **Benjamin Freedman Speaks:**

"Here in the United States, the Zionists and their co-religionists have complete control of our government. For many reasons, too many and too complex to go into here at this time, the Zionists and their co-religionists rule these United States as though they were the absolute monarchs of this country. Now you may say that is a very broad statement, but let

me show you what happened while we were all asleep.

"What happened? World War I broke out in the summer of 1914. There are few people here my age who remember that. Now that war was waged on one side by Great Britain, France, and Russia; and on the other side by Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Turkey.

"Within two years Germany had won that war: not only won it nominally, but won it actually. The German submarines, which were a surprise to the world, had swept all the convoys from the Atlantic Ocean. Great Britain stood there without ammunition for her soldiers, with one week's food supply -- and after that, starvation. At that time, the French army had mutinied. They had lost 600,000 of the flower of French youth in the defense of Verdun on the Somme. The Russian army was defecting, they were picking up their toys and going home, they didn't want to play war anymore, they didn't like the Czar. And the Italian army had collapsed.

"Not a shot had been fired on German soil. Not one enemy soldier had crossed the border into Germany. And yet, Germany was offering England peace terms. They offered England a negotiated peace on what the lawyers call a status quo ante basis. That means: "Let's call the war off, and let everything be as it was before the war started." England, in the summer of 1916 was considering that -- seriously. They had no choice. It was either accepting this negotiated peace that Germany was magnanimously offering them, or going on with the war and being totally defeated.

"While that was going on, the Zionists in Germany, who represented the Zionists from Eastern Europe, went to the British War Cabinet and -- I am going to be brief because it's a long story, but I have all the documents to prove any statement that I make -- they said:

"Look here. You can yet win this war. You don't have to give up. You don't have to accept the negotiated peace offered to you now by Germany. You can win this war if the United States will come in as your ally." The United States was not in the war at that time. We were fresh; we were young; we were rich; we were powerful. They told England: "We will guarantee to bring the United States into the war as your ally, to fight with you on your side, if you will promise us Palestine after you win the war."

"In other words, they made this deal: "We will get the United States into this war as your ally. The price you must pay is Palestine after you have won the war and defeated Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Turkey." Now England had as much right to promise Palestine to anybody, as the United States would have to promise Japan to Ireland for any reason whatsoever. It's absolutely absurd that Great Britain, that never had any connection or any interest or any right in what is known as Palestine should offer it as coin of the realm to pay the Zionists for bringing the United States into the war. However, they did make that promise, in October of 1916. And shortly after that -- I don't know how many here remember it -- the United States, which was almost totally pro-German, entered the war as Britain's ally.

"I say that the United States was almost totally pro-German because the newspapers here were controlled by Jews, the bankers were Jews, all the media of mass communications in this country were controlled by Jews; and they, the Jews, were pro-German. They were pro-German because many of them had come from Germany, and also they wanted to see Germany lick the Czar. The Jews didn't like the Czar, and they didn't want Russia to win this war. These German-Jew bankers, like Kuhn Loeb and the other big banking firms in the United States refused to

finance France or England to the extent of one dollar. They stood aside and they said: "As long as France and England are tied up with Russia, not one cent!" But they poured money into Germany, they fought beside Germany against Russia, trying to lick the Czarist regime.

"Now those same Jews, when they saw the possibility of getting Palestine, went to England and they made this deal. At that time, everything changed, like a traffic light those changes from red to green. Where the newspapers had been all pro-German, where they'd been telling the people of the difficulties that Germany was having fighting Great Britain commercially and in other respects, all of a sudden the Germans were no good. They were villains. They were Huns. They were shooting Red Cross nurses. They were cutting off babies' hands. They were no good. Shortly after that, Mr. Wilson declared war on Germany.

"The Zionists in London had sent cables to the United States, to Justice Brandeis, saying "Go to work on President Wilson. We're getting from England what we want. Now you go to work on President Wilson and get the United States into the war." That's how the United States got into the war. We had no more interest in it; we had no more right to be in it than we have to be on the moon tonight instead of in this room. There was absolutely no reason for World War I to be our war. We were railroaded into -- if I can be vulgar, we were suckered into -- that war merely so that the Zionists of the world could obtain Palestine. That is something that the people of the United States have never been told. They never knew why we went into World War I.

"After we got into the war, the Zionists went to Great Britain and they said: "Well, we performed our part of the agreement. Let's have something in writing that shows that you

are going to keep your bargain and give us Palestine after you win the war." They didn't know whether the war would last another year or another ten years. So they started to work out a receipt. The receipt took the form of a letter, which was worded in very cryptic language so that the world at large wouldn't know what it was all about. And that was called the Balfour Declaration.

"The Balfour Declaration was merely Great Britain's promise to pay the Zionists what they had agreed upon as a consideration for getting the United States into the war. So this great Balfour Declaration, that you hear so much about, is just as phony as a three dollar bill. I don't think I could make it more emphatic than that.

"That is where all the trouble started. The United States got in the war. The United States crushed Germany. You know what happened. When the war ended, and the Germans went to Paris for the Paris Peace Conference in 1919 there were 117 Jews there, as a delegation representing the Jews, headed by Bernard Baruch. I was there: I ought to know.

"Now what happened? The Jews at that peace conference, when they were cutting up Germany and parceling out Europe to all these nations who claimed a right to a certain part of European territory, said, "How about Palestine for us?" And they produced, for the first time to the knowledge of the Germans, this Balfour Declaration. So the Germans, for the first time realized, "Oh, so that was the game! That's why the United States came into the war." The Germans for the first time realized that they were defeated, they suffered the terrific reparations that were slapped onto them, because the Zionists wanted Palestine and were determined to get it at any cost.

"That brings us to another very interesting point. When the Germans realized

this, they naturally resented it. Up to that time, the Jews had never been better off in any country in the world than they had been in Germany. You had Mr. Rathenau there, who was maybe 100 times as important in industry and finance as is Bernard Baruch in this country. You had Mr. Balin, who owned the two big steamship lines, the North German Lloyd's and the Hamburg-American Lines. You had Mr. Bleichroder, who was the banker for the Hohenzollern family. You had the Warburgs in Hamburg, who were the big merchant bankers -- the biggest in the world. The Jews were doing very well in Germany. No question about that. The Germans felt: "Well, that was quite a sellout."

"It was a sellout that might be compared to this hypothetical situation: Suppose the United States was at war with the Soviet Union. And we were winning. And we told the Soviet Union: "Well, let's quit. We offer you peace terms. Let's forget the whole thing." And all of a sudden Red China came into the war as an ally of the Soviet Union. And throwing them into the war brought about our defeat. A crushing defeat, with reparations the likes of which man's imagination cannot encompass. Imagine, then, after that defeat, if we found out that it was the Chinese in this country, our Chinese citizens, who all the time we had thought were loyal citizens working with us, were selling us out to the Soviet Union and that it was through them that Red China was brought into the war against us. How would we feel, then, in the United States against Chinese? I don't think that one of them would dare show his face on any street. There wouldn't be enough convenient lampposts to take care of them. Imagine how we would feel.

"Well, that's how the Germans felt towards these Jews. They'd been so nice to them: from 1905 on, when the first Communist revolution in Russia failed, and the Jews had to

scramble out of Russia, they all went to Germany. And Germany gave them refuge. And they were treated very nicely. And here they had sold Germany down the river for no reason at all other than the fact that they wanted Palestine as a so-called "Jewish commonwealth."

"Now Nahum Sokolow, and all the great leaders and great names that you read about in connection with Zionism today, in 1919, 1920, 1921, 1922, and 1923 wrote in all their papers - - and the press was filled with their statements -- that the feeling against the Jews in Germany is due to the fact that they realized that this great defeat was brought about by Jewish intercession in bringing the United States into the war. The Jews themselves admitted that. It wasn't that the Germans in 1919 discovered that a glass of Jewish blood tasted better than Coca-Cola or Muenschner Beer. There was no religious feeling. There was no sentiment against those people merely on account of their religious belief. It was all political. It was economic. It was anything but religious. Nobody cared in Germany whether a Jew went home and pulled down the shades and said "Shema 'Yisroel" or "Our Father." Nobody cared in Germany any more than they do in the United States. Now this feeling that developed later in Germany was due to one thing: the Germans held the Jews responsible for their crushing defeat.

"And World War I had been started against Germany for no reason for which Germany was responsible. They were guilty of nothing. Only of being successful. They built up a big navy. They built up world trade. You must remember that Germany at the time of the French Revolution consisted of 300 small city-states, principalities, dukedoms, and so forth. Three hundred separate little political entities. And between that time, between the times of Napoleon and Bismarck, they were

consolidated into one state. And within 50 years they became one of the world's great powers. Their navy was rivaling Great Britain's, they were doing business all over the world, they could undersell anybody, they could make better products. What happened as a result of that?

"There was a conspiracy between England, France, and Russia to slap down Germany. There isn't one historian in the world who can find a valid reason why those three countries decided to wipe Germany off the map politically.

"When Germany realized that the Jews were responsible for her defeat, they naturally resented it. But not a hair on the head of any Jew was harmed. Not a single hair. Professor Tansill, of Georgetown University, who had access to all the secret papers of the State Department, wrote in his book, and quoted from a State Department document written by Hugo Schoenfelt, a Jew whom Cordell Hull sent to Europe in 1933 to investigate the so-called camps of political prisoners, who wrote back that he found them in very fine condition. They were in excellent shape, with everybody treated well. And they were filled with Communists. Well, a lot of them were Jews, because the Jews happened to comprise about 98 per cent of the Communists in Europe at that time. And there were some priests there, and ministers, and labor leaders, and Masons, and others who had international affiliations.

"Some background is in order: In 1918-1919 the Communists took over Bavaria for a few days. Rosa Luxemburg and Karl Liebknecht and a group of other Jews took over the government for three days. In fact, when the Kaiser ended the war he fled to Holland because he thought the Communists were going to take over Germany as they did Russia and that he was going to meet the same fate as the Czar. So he fled to Holland

for safety, for security. After the Communist threat in Germany was quashed, the Jews were still working, trying to get back into their former status, and the Germans fought them in every way they could without hurting a single hair on anyone's head. They fought them the same way that, in this country, the Prohibitionists fought anyone who was interested in liquor. They didn't fight one another with pistols. Well, that's the way they were fighting the Jews in Germany. And at that time, mind you, there were 80 to 90 million Germans, and there were only 460,000 Jews. About one half of one per cent of the population of Germany were Jews. And yet they controlled all the press, and they controlled most of the economy because they had come in with cheap money when the mark was devalued and bought up practically everything.

"The Jews tried to keep a lid on this fact. They didn't want the world to really understand that they had sold out Germany, and that the Germans resented that.

"The Germans took appropriate action against the Jews. They, shall I say, discriminated against them wherever they could. They shunned them. The same way that we would shun the Chinese, or the Negroes, or the Catholics, or anyone in this country who had sold us out to an enemy and brought about our defeat.

"After a while, the Jews of the world called a meeting in Amsterdam. Jews from every country in the world attended this meeting in July 1933. And they said to Germany: "You fire Hitler, and you put every Jew back into his former position, whether he was a Communist or no matter what he was. You can't treat us that way. And we, the Jews of the world, are serving an ultimatum upon you." You can imagine what the Germans told them. So what did the Jews do?

"In 1933, when Germany refused to surrender to the world conference of Jews in Amsterdam, the conference broke up, and Mr. Samuel Untermyer, who was the head of the American delegation and the president of the whole conference, came to the United States and went from the steamer to the studios of the Columbia Broadcasting System and made a radio broadcast throughout the United States in which he in effect said, "The Jews of the world now declare a Holy War against Germany. We are now engaged in a sacred conflict against the Germans. And we are going to starve them into surrender. We are going to use a world-wide boycott against them. That will destroy them because they are dependent upon their export business."

"And it is a fact that two thirds of Germany's food supply had to be imported, and it could only be imported with the proceeds of what they exported. So if Germany could not export, two thirds of Germany's population would have to starve. There was just not enough food for more than one third of the population. Now in this declaration, which I have here, and which was printed in the New York Times on August 7, 1933, Mr. Samuel Untermyer boldly stated that "this economic boycott is our means of self-defense. President Roosevelt has advocated its use in the National Recovery Administration," which some of you may remember, where everybody was to be boycotted unless he followed the rules laid down by the New Deal, and which was declared unconstitutional by the Supreme Court of that time. Nevertheless, the Jews of the world declared a boycott against Germany, and it was so effective that you couldn't find one thing in any store anywhere in the world with the words "Made in Germany" on it. In fact, an executive of the Woolworth Company told me that they had to dump millions of dollars worth of crockery and dishes into the

river; that their stores were boycotted if anyone came in and found a dish marked "made in Germany," they were picketed with signs saying "Hitler," "murderer," and so forth, something like these sit-ins that are taking place in the South.

"At a store belonging to the R. H. Macy chain, which was controlled by a family called Strauss who also happen to be Jews, a woman found stockings there which came from Chemnitz, marked "Made in Germany." Well, they were cotton stockings and they may have been there 20 years, since I've been observing women's legs for many years and it's been a long time since I've seen any cotton stockings on them. I saw Macy's boycotted, with hundreds of people walking around with signs saying "murderers," "Hitlerites," and so forth.

"Now up to that time, not one hair on the head of any Jew had been hurt in Germany. There was no suffering, there was no starvation, there was no murder, there was nothing.

"Naturally, the Germans said, "Who are these people to declare a boycott against us and throw all our people out of work, and make our industries come to a standstill? Who are they to do that to us?" They naturally resented it. Certainly they painted swastikas on stores owned by Jews. Why should a German go in and give his money to a storekeeper who was part of a boycott that was going to starve Germany into surrendering to the Jews of the world, who were going to dictate who their premier or chancellor was to be? Well, it was ridiculous.

"The boycott continued for some time, but it wasn't until 1938, when a young Jew from Poland walked into the German embassy in Paris and shot a German official, that the Germans really started to get rough with the Jews in Germany. And you found them then

breaking windows and having street fights and so forth.

"Now I don't like to use the word "anti-Semitism" because it's meaningless, but it means something to you still, so I'll have to use it. The only reason that there was any feeling in Germany against Jews was that they were responsible for World War I and for this world-wide boycott. Ultimately they were also responsible for World War II, because after this thing got out of hand, it was absolutely necessary for the Jews and Germany to lock horns in a war to see which one was going to survive. In the meanwhile, I had lived in Germany, and I knew that the Germans had decided that Europe is going to be Christian or Communist: there is no in between. And the Germans decided they were going to keep it Christian if possible. And they started to re-arm. In November 1933 the United States recognized the Soviet Union. The Soviet Union was becoming very powerful, and Germany realized that "Our turn was going to come soon, unless we are strong." The same as we in this country are saying today, "Our turn is going to come soon, unless we are strong." Our government is spending 83 or 84 billion dollars for defense. Defense against whom? Defense against 40,000 little Jews in Moscow that took over Russia, and then, in their devious ways, took over control of many other countries of the world.

"For this country now to be on the verge of a Third World War, from which we cannot emerge a victor, is something that staggers my imagination. I know that nuclear bombs are measured in terms of megatons. A megaton is a term used to describe one million tons of TNT. Our nuclear bombs had a capacity of 10 megatons, or 10 million tons of TNT, when they were first developed. Now, the nuclear bombs that are being developed have a capacity of 200 megatons, and God knows how many

megatons the nuclear bombs of the Soviet Union have.

"What do we face now? If we trigger a world war that may develop into a nuclear war, humanity is finished. Why might such a war take place? It will take place as the curtain goes up on Act 3: Act 1 was World War I, Act 2 was World War II, Act 3 is going to be World War III. The Jews of the world, the Zionists and their co-religionists everywhere, are determined that they are going to again use the United States to help them permanently retain Palestine as their foothold for their world government. That is just as true as I am standing here. Not alone have I read it, but many here have also read it, and it is known all over the world.

"What are we going to do? The life you save may be your son's. Your boys may be on their way to that war tonight; and you don't know it any more than you knew that in 1916 in London the Zionists made a deal with the British War Cabinet to send your sons to war in Europe. Did you know it at that time? Not a person in the United States knew it. You weren't permitted to know it. Who knew it? President Wilson knew it. Colonel House knew it. Other insiders knew it.

"Did I know it? I had a pretty good idea of what was going on: I was liaison to Henry Morgenthau, Sr., in the 1912 campaign when President Wilson was elected, and there was talk around the office there. I was "confidential man" to Henry Morgenthau, Sr., who was chairman of the Finance Committee, and I was liaison between him and Rollo Wells, the treasurer. So I sat in these meetings with President Wilson at the head of the table, and all the others, and I heard them drum into President Wilson's brain the graduated income tax and what has become the Federal Reserve, and I heard them indoctrinate him with the Zionist movement. Justice Brandeis and

President Wilson were just as close as the two fingers on this hand. President Woodrow Wilson was just as incompetent when it came to determining what was going on as a newborn baby. That is how they got us into World War I, while we all slept. They sent our boys over there to be slaughtered. For what? So the Jews can have Palestine as their "commonwealth." They've fooled you so much that you don't know whether you're coming or going.

"Now any judge, when he charges a jury, says, "Gentlemen, any witness who you find has told a single lie, you can disregard all his testimony." I don't know what state you come from, but in New York state that is the way a judge addresses a jury. If that witness told one lie, disregard his testimony.

"What are the facts about the Jews? (*I call them Jews to you, because they are known as "Jews". I don't call them Jews myself. I refer to them as "so-called Jews", because I know what they are*). The eastern European Jews, who form 92 per cent of the world's population of those people who call themselves "Jews", were originally Khazars. They were a warlike tribe who lived deep in the heart of Asia. And they were so warlike that even the Asiatics drove them out of Asia into eastern Europe. They set up a large Khazar kingdom of 800,000 square miles. At the time, Russia did not exist, nor did many other European countries. The Khazar kingdom was the biggest country in all Europe -- so big and so powerful that when the other monarchs wanted to go to war, the Khazars would lend them 40,000 soldiers. That's how big and powerful they were.

"They were phallic worshippers, which is filthy and I do not want to go into the details of that now. But that was their religion, as it was also the religion of many other pagans and barbarians elsewhere in the world. The Khazar

king became so disgusted with the degeneracy of his kingdom that he decided to adopt a so-called monotheistic faith -- either Christianity, Islam, or what is known today as Judaism, which is really Talmudism. By spinning a top, and calling out "eeny, meeny, miney, moe," he picked out so-called Judaism. And that became the state religion. He sent down to the Talmudic schools of Pumbedita and Sura and brought up thousands of rabbis, and opened up synagogues and schools, and his people became what we call "Jews".

"There wasn't one of them who had an ancestor who ever put a toe in the Holy Land. Not only in Old Testament history, but back to the beginning of time. Not me nor even one of them! And yet they come to the Christians and ask us to support their armed insurrections in Palestine by saying, "You want to help repatriate God's Chosen People to their Promised Land, their ancestral home, don't you? It's your Christian duty. We gave you one of our boys as your Lord and Savior. You now go to church on Sunday, and you kneel and you worship a Jew, and we're Jews."

"But they are pagan Khazars who were converted just the same as the Irish were converted. It is as ridiculous to call them "people of the Holy Land," as it would be to call the 54 million Chinese Moslems "Arabs." Mohammed only died in 620 A.D., and since then 54 million Chinese have accepted Islam as their religious belief. Now imagine, in China, 2,000 miles away from Arabia, from Mecca and Mohammed's birthplace. Imagine if the 54 million Chinese decided to call themselves "Arabs." You would say they were lunatics. Anyone who believes that those 54 million Chinese are Arabs must be crazy. All they did was adopt as a religious faith a belief that had its origin in Mecca, in Arabia. The same as the Irish. When the Irish became Christians, nobody dumped them in the ocean and

imported to the Holy Land a new crop of inhabitants. They hadn't become a different people. They were the same people, but they had accepted Christianity as a religious faith.

"These Khazars, these pagans, these Asiatics, these Turko-Finns, were a Mongoloid race who were forced out of Asia into eastern Europe. Because their king took the Talmudic faith, they had no choice in the matter. Just the same as in Spain: If the king was Catholic, everybody had to be a Catholic. If not, you had to get out of Spain. So the Khazars became what we call today "Jews".

"Now imagine how silly it was for the great Christian countries of the world to say, "We're going to use our power and prestige to repatriate God's Chosen People to their ancestral homeland, their Promised Land." Could there be a bigger lie than that? Because they control the newspapers, the magazines, the radio, the television, the book publishing business, and because they have the ministers in the pulpit and the politicians on the soapboxes talking the same language, it is not too surprising that you believe that lie. You'd believe black is white if you heard it often enough. You wouldn't call black black anymore -- you'd start to call black white. And nobody could blame you. That is one of the great lies of history. It is the foundation of all the misery that has befallen the world.

"Do you know what Jews do on the Day of Atonement, which you think is so sacred to them? I was one of them. This is not hearsay. I'm not here to be a rabble-rouser. I'm here to give you facts. When, on the Day of Atonement, you walk into a synagogue, you stand up for the very first prayer that you recite. It is the only prayer for which you stand. You repeat three times a short prayer called the Kol Nidre.

"In that prayer, you enter into an agreement with God Almighty that any oath,

vow, or pledge that you may make during the next twelve months shall be null and void. The oath shall not be an oath; the vow shall not be a vow; the pledge shall not be a pledge. They shall have no force or effect. And further, the Talmud teaches that whenever you take an oath, vow, or pledge, you are to remember the Kol Nidre prayer that you recited on the Day of Atonement, and you are exempted from fulfilling them.

"Rabbis go to great lengths to pretend that this Kol Nidre prayer only applies to oaths made to God, but all Jews know this is not really the case. If it were so, they would simply correct the alleged improper wording to avoid so much controversy. It would certainly be much less troublesome to make such a simple correction, than persisting with the never-ending and ever-increasing efforts to "justify" leaving it as it is now written, and as it is now solemnly spoken by those that profess Judaism.

"How much can you depend on their loyalty? You can depend upon their loyalty as much as the Germans depended upon it in 1916. We are going to suffer the same fate as Germany suffered, and for the same reason."

## Nazirites - A Peculiar People:

Most scholars in the fields of biblical studies and history agree that Yah'shua [Jesus <sic>]...was accused of sedition against the Roman Empire, and on the orders of Roman Governor Pontius Pilate, was sentenced to death by crucifixion. – Excerpted from *Wikipedia*, the free encyclopedia.

**Sedition**; is a term of law to refer to covert conduct such as speech and organization that is deemed by the legal authority as tending toward insurrection against the established order. Sedition often included subversion of a constitution and incitement of discontent (or resistance) to lawful authority. Sedition may include any commotion, though not aimed at direct and open violence against the laws. (*Ibid.*)

**INSURREC'TION**, n. [L. *insurgo*; *in* and *surgo*, *to rise*.] 1. A rising against civil or political authority... It is equivalent to sedition, except that sedition expresses a less extensive rising of citizens. - *Webster's 1828 American Dictionary of the English Language*

This "**less extensive rising of citizens**" were, **and are**, the "**called out ones**", i.e. the true congregation, or *ekklesia*, a *political* term, if you will forgive the expression, as opposed to a *religious* one. In Yahweh's Kingdom there is no separation of any alleged *church* and *state*..

Sedition differs from rebellion, for the latter [*rebellion*] expresses a revolt, or an attempt to overthrow the government, to establish a different one or to place the country under another jurisdiction. (*Ibid.*)

This is a very important distinction, since we are **not** attempting "**to overthrow the government**", **nor** are we trying to "**place the country under another jurisdiction**", but rather we have simply been "called out" from, and have left, the governments, i.e. jurisdictions, of men, and have been **translated [or moved, transported]** into another

jurisdiction. "Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, **and hath translated us into the Kingdom of his dear Son...**"

**KING'DOM**, n. [*king* and *dom*, *jurisdiction*.] – *Webster's 1828 American Dictionary of the English Language*

Paul joined this "rising" and was, as a consequence, also accused of sedition.

'...we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the loudaios throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazoraios...'

This "**sect of the Nazoraios**" was not, **and to this day is not**, a sect of people from a place called Nazareth (*the guarded one*), it is exactly what Joseph Thayer defines it as in his *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*, Nazarite = "one separated", though the worldly ones [*PERSONS belonging to the STATE*] may do everything in their power to try **con**-vince us into believing otherwise.

We find two different words being used for Nazareth in the phrase "Yah'shua [Jesus <sic>] of Nazareth". First we find *Nazaraios* at Mattith'yahu 26:71 and the second one is *Nazarenos*, found at Mark 1:24. The first one refers to the sect, or party, of the Nazirites, while the second refers to someone from the place referred to as Nazareth.

Behold, the days come, saith Yahweh, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch (*tsemach*), and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth.

We believe, for the sake of accuracy, that the Ibriy [*Hebrew*] word *tsemach*, *Strong's Hebrew and Chaldee Dictionary* number H6780, should have been translated "sprout" since Yah'shua is the Son of perpetuity (*nun*), (*See Matt. 28:20*) in the sense of, "to resprout, that is, propagate by shoots; figuratively, to be perpetual".

“And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch (*netser*) shall grow out of his roots: and the Spirit of Yahweh shall rest upon him, His Spirit of wisdom and understanding, His Spirit of counsel and might, His Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of Yahweh; And shall make him of quick understanding in the respect of Yahweh: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked.”

*Netser*, Strong’s number H5342, is “always figurative” for *descendant*. It is not, as far as we have been able to ascertain, from the Ibriy root word *natsar*, as both *Strong’s Hebrew Dictionary* and *Brown-Driver-Briggs’ Hebrew Lexicon* indicate. (We believe it can be demonstrated that BDB merely followed James Strong’s lead on this point.)

*Natsar* pronounced *naw-tsar*, according to *Brown-Driver-Briggs’ Hebrew Lexicon*, means: 1) to guard, watch, watch over, keep; 1a) (*Qal*) - 1a1) to watch, guard, keep; 1a2) to preserve, guard from dangers; 1a3) to keep, observe, guard with fidelity; 1a4) to guard, keep secret; 1a5) to be kept close, be blockaded; 1a6) watchman (*participle*).

We will admit the possibility that Nazareth may have come from this Ibriy word, *natsar*, since its existence may have been specifically ordained for the sole purpose of *guarding, with fidelity*, His chosen descendant of David. In fact, *Thayer’s Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament* seems to confirm it.

**G3478:** Nazareth / Nazaret **Thayer Definition:** Nazareth = “the guarded one”

**However...**We see in both *Strong’s Greek Dictionary* and *Thayer’s Greek-English*

*Lexicon of the New Testament* that G3478 is, “of uncertain derivation”. Our antennae goes up!

It is written, ...”he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth [G3478]: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene” [G3480].

It will be noted here that Joseph Thayer says that *Nazoraiois*, G3480, means, “one separated”. If this is true it would mean that it came from the Ibriy word *nazar*, Strong’s number H5144, which means: **nazar BDB Definition:**

- 1) to dedicate, consecrate, separate
  - 1a) (*Niphal*) to dedicate oneself, devote oneself
  - 1b) (*Hiphil*) to keep sacredly separate
  - 2) (*Hiphil*) to be a Nazarite, live as a Nazarite
- Therefore, we as modern Israelites, are not nazirites, we are nazirites; we are naziyr, pronounced *naw-zeer*, which means: **H5139 naziyr/nazir BDB Definition:**
- 1) consecrated or devoted one, Nazarite <sic>
  - 1a) consecrated one
  - 1b) devotee, Nazarite <sic>
  - 1c) untrimmed (*vine*)

This would help to explain why the Jews of about 2,000 years ago accused Yah’shua of being a wine drinker. (See *Matt. 11:19; Luke 7:34*) They thought that nazirites (*consecrated/separated/devoted ones*) couldn’t partake of the fruit of the vine.

James Strong, in his *Hebrew and Chaldee Dictionary*, makes an interesting observation concerning the Ibriy word *naziyr* [H5139]: ...*separate*, that is, consecrated (*as prince, a Nazirite*).

When we remember that the *italicized* words are what he believes to be the English synonyms for the Ibriy word he is defining we find that the first one is simply *separate*, like, “come out from among them and be ye **separate** (*naziyr*)”.

We also note that second word *italicized* is *prince*, consecrated as *prince*. A Prince (*a sovereign*) is the son of a King (*the supreme sovereign*) and the first-born prince is heir to his Father's Kingdom. [*the King of Israel, even Yahweh, is in the midst of thee*"]

**King:** Is in Scripture very generally used to denote one invested with authority, whether extensive or limited.

...The Hebrew kings did not rule in their own right, nor in name of the people who had chosen them, but partly as servants and partly as representatives of **Yahweh [Jehovah <sic>, the true King of Israel.** – *Easton's 1897 Bible Dictionary*. And, consecrated, of course, means, "separated (*nazar*) from a common...use".

We find further evidence in our *Webster's 1988 New World Dictionary of American English, Third College Edition*, on page 905, that the root of "Nazirite or Nazirite" is the Greek *Nazaraïos*, and it further informs us that *Nazaraïos* is the Greek word "for the Heb *nazir* < *nazar*, to separate, consecrate", while *Nazarenos* is the Greek word for, "the Nazarene", or "of Nazareth..."

Furthermore, in the *Webster's New Collegiate Dictionary*, copyrighted 1916 through 1960, we read this under the heading Nazirite, *n.* Also Nazirite ...2. *Now Rare.* A (or the) Nazarene, that Nazirite was sometimes mis-translated as Nazarene.

...He shall be called a Nazarene (G3480 *Nazaraïos*), and as we can see from the above etymologies this would mean that it was prophesied, "He shall be called a Nazirite" (better transliteration of the Heb *naziyr*), which appears, to us, to be precisely the prophecy that was fulfilled. "...the child shall be a Nazirite (*naziyr*) to Yahweh from the womb to the day of his death."

Virtually all those who searched the Scripture for the prophecy that he would be

called a *Nazarenos*, i.e. an inhabitant of Nazareth, had basically the same outcome that Jay P. Green Sr., author of the *Literal Translation of the Holy Bible*, had, i.e. "No OT passage". However, as you can readily see, when we are looking for the right word, the outcome is quite different.

Some people might now say, "So what?" The "so what" of it is this: If we are to emulate (*imitate, follow, copy, try to be like*) Yah'shua, the Anointed Prime Minister of the Kingdom of Yahweh, also known as the commonwealth of Israel, (*not to be confused with the man-made STATE OF ISRAEL*), it would then stand to reason that we too should come out from among them (*nazar*) and be separate (*naziyr*), as it is written.

We are because we have been proclaimed to be, a 'Peculiar People unto Yahweh' – we are His Natural Israelites indeed. We are not of the many man-made factions of false 'Jews' or of those that claim Israelite or 'Jewish' lineage based upon their equally false man-made religious traditions.

We are, as is our religion, unadulterated by traditions and doctrines of men, thus we are as Natural as when we were created by our Father and our being separated or consecrated by our Father as Nazirites, confirms this.

We did not, nor do we choose to separate of our own accord; rather we believe, thence we have faith that our Father has separated and consecrated us in His own manner of Natural selection. Thus we have become as dead with the Messiah from the rudiments of the world and in such condition [*civilly dead*] are not subject to the ordinances [*statutes*] after the commandments and doctrines of men.

We do not profess or pledge allegiance to any secular government(s). We are fellow citizens of the commonwealth of Israel, as it is written. Our Supreme Sovereign is Yahweh,

and the Anointed Prime Minister [*High Priest*] of our government is our Messiah, Yah'shua the Nazirite. We live with no marks of servitude of any species from any secular government.

“O Yahweh ‘Elohiym (*God = Ruler, Judge*) of Israel, which dwellest between the cherubims, thou art the ‘Elohim (*Ruler, Judge*), even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; thou hast made heaven and earth.”

**JUDGE**, noun 2. The Supreme Being. “Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?” Gen 18. ...5. In the history of Israel, a chief magistrate, with civil and military powers. – Webster’s 1828 American Dictionary of the English Language

“Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me from all people: for all the earth is mine: and ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an set apart nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel.” - Exodus 19:5-6

“For thou art an holy people unto Yahweh thy ‘Elohim, and Yahweh hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, from all the nations that are upon the earth.” - Deuteronomy 14:2

“Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people...” - Titus 2:14

“But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people...” - 1Peter 2:9

**PECU'LIAR**, a. [*L. peculiaris, from peculium, one's own property, from pecus, cattle.*] 1. Appropriate; belonging to a person and to him only. 4. Belonging to a nation, system or other thing, and not to others. - Webster's 1828 Dictionary

Thus, in our unique “*Peculiarity*”, we are Yahweh’s chosen Congregation; chosen of His Naturally made Israelites. Following our

Messiah, we are not of Nazareth, yet we are indeed, Nazirites, consecrated as belonging to Yahweh and to Him alone!

## Cretin-Crestin-Christian:

**CHRISTIAN** (*Christian*): the word is Greek, and was derived from a former Pagan usage: CHRESTOS MITHRAS: pure, sacred, good, holy. Roman meaning was interchangeable; e.g., "good Mithras", or "holy Mithras". CHRIST HELIOS: Mandaean. CHREISTOS OSIRIS: Alexandrian.

In relation to the *Torah*, a Christian might well be considered to be mentally retarded; because the actual word that means "retard" or "idiot" is derived from cretin, which derives from crestin.

The *American Heritage Illustrated Encyclopedic Dictionary* tells us the etymology for the word **CRETIN**: **cre-tin** (*kre-tin, kret'n*) *n.* **1.** One afflicted with Cretinism. **2.** A fool; an idiot. [*French, cretin, from Swiss French, crestin, later CHRISTIAN, hence human being (an idiot being nonetheless human).*] Cretinism is dwarfism and or retardation. Cretin is simply the word that is derived from the word crestin, later, CHRISTIAN.

The questions we need to be asking ourselves are:

**1.** "What would the Israelites or a splinter group of Israelites that practice the Torah of Yahweh and follow the Messiah be doing with a Greek term used by Pagans as a label for themselves?"

**2.** "Are we to search out the adopted Greco-Roman roots, or the natural Hebrew origins of our faith?"

Knowing there is some relationship with the word cretin, what if the people of Antioch, at first, called the disciples CRESTINS (*retards, idiots*)? Don't fall for the excuse, "we speak English, not Hebrew". The word "crestos" (*or kristos, chreistos*) isn't English, it's Greek. If we follow the redemption plan of our Creator, keeping the Torah of Yahweh, we are counted among the citizenship of Israel; not a "Gentile", foreign nation. In fact, we are no longer

Gentiles at all (*Eph. 2:11-13*), although we were at one time strangers to the Covenants. After our spiritual adoption through faith, there is no distinction, and no dividing wall between any of us and a native-born Israelite.

The main idea that people seem to be steered away from when words like "Christian" are examined closely is that the original word (*the Hebrew word, MESSIAH*) is not being brought to the table, but is typically kept from the discussion. The word "Christianity" is not found in the Scriptures at all, so there is no such thing in reality.

Misdirection is used to convince the listener of supposed facts which are not true and by simply saying the lie often enough, it will become familiar, and therefore comfortable. In this particular case, the premise is that the original word was this Greek word "Christos", since it is emphasized (*by those with an agenda to preserve the error of tradition*) that the disciples of Yah'shua all spoke and wrote in Greek.

We are expected to pay no mind that Greek was and remains a foreign language to the people of Israel. It's a promotion of the Jesuits to believe that the Messiah and His students spoke to one another, and wrote everything down in Greek. The truth is, Greek was a transitional language, or translation, of the original texts originally written in Hebrew (*or the dialect of it; Syraic Aramaic*).

Remember, all the first "protestants" were Catholics, and they had already been indoctrinated with the Jesuit teachings. What is practically unknown is the fact that there were "Christians" on Earth before Yah'shua the Messiah was born - and they were Pagans.

The Greek word "Christos" (*kristos*) has come to mean anointed, and this supposedly corresponds to the common English transliteration of the title, Messiah, from the

original Hebrew. What is not commonly known is that Osiris and Mithras were both called "Chrestos", which meant "GOOD". The word was adopted from gnostic Paganism: The inscription "CHRESTOS" can be seen on a Mithras relief in the Vatican. During the time of Marcion, around 150 CE, Justin Martyr said that "Christians" were "Chrestoi", or "good men". Clement of Alexandria said "all who believe in Christ are called "Chrestoi, that is 'good men'".

Rome was the center of Chrestos Mithras worship, so the adaptation or revisionism to the new faith for this title should hardly be a huge mystery; but this information has been intentionally buried. The word "Christian" is only used 3 times in the received Greek texts; and if it were in fact what the disciples called themselves as a "sect", it would have seemed very foreign not only to them, but to everyone involved. Of course, every Israelite (*and modern orthodox "Jew"*) believes in a "Messiah" that is coming at some point. Many of them - in fact most - don't currently believe in the Messiah portrayed by the "Christian" faith in any of its diverse denominations.

However, if we had to adopt a Greek word for these practitioners of "Judaism" that related to them as believers in a coming Messiah, then they too could be labelled "Christians". But, the word "Christian" is a very non-specific label when you consider that it doesn't specify who the Messiah is.

The true sect that followed Yah'shua's teachings did use a term for themselves, and it was "NATSARIM", or more commonly, Nazarene (*Acts 24:5*). Even the "Church father" Epiphanius wrote of the Natsarim sect, whom he called "heretics", because they observed the Commandments of Yahweh and were indistinguishable from "Hebrews", except that they believed in the then present Messiah.

Greek is a corrupted, polluted language, having many Pagan deities' names and titles associated with it. Since Yahweh has told us that one day He would purify the lips of the peoples to call upon His Name and serve Him shoulder-to-shoulder (*Zeph. 3:9*), it's unlikely that the word "Christian" will be preserved after that purification takes place. Acts 24:5 states that the sect was called "Nazarene", derived from its Hebrew root "NATSARIM", or "branches/watchmen", not [*man*]-anointed, or good ones.

It was prophesied that we would be called "NATSARIM". Carefully study the text of Jer. 31:6, where he used the word NATSARIM which is translated "watchmen", who will cry on "Mount Ephraim". Those crying out to go up to Yahweh are called watchmen, from the Hebrew word NATSARIM. The Greek has distorted quite a few things, but to believe that they were called both terms (*Nazarenes and Christians*) would surely be conflicted thinking.

The Natsarim were very specific in their labelling of themselves, since their label referred to the One they were followers of, Yah'shua of Natsarith (*Nazereth*). Chapter 31 is also significant because it prophecies the renewed Covenant, which is quoted again in chapters 8 & 10 of the book of Hebrews.

All Israelites were, and are, waiting for the "Messiah", the Yahweh-anointed One prophesied in Daniel. So by that logic it would be redundant to refer to themselves as a sect of what they all were, even if the label was translated into another tongue, like Greek. The translators simply wanted to separate themselves as far from the Torah and Israel as possible; and it was done by creating labelling that would permanently separate them, and keep "Gentiles" from ever joining the commonwealth of Israel, or even realizing that it was necessary.

Realize that "Greek" culture was a very powerful influence on the entire civilized world over a long period;"Alexandria" Egypt (*named for Alexander, a famous Greek conqueror*), became the center or hub of the cultural world. Sophists, orators who refined public speaking to an art, developed the "3-point" speech. They could convince their audiences of things they didn't even believe themselves! Clement and Origen, two "church fathers", promoted their Christian teaching from Alexandria.

Everything taught became watered-down into "allegorical" meanings. In every way, words were used as powerful tools. Platonic philosophy steered their whole culture, and Plato is still quoted in modern seminaries! Mithraists, Neoplatonists, Pythagoreans, Therapists, and Magi were all contemporary cults of the Greeks. From Egypt arose the Hermetic religion of the worship of Osiris.

These religions produced the Pagan "fathers" that influenced modern Christianity (*Cyprian, Augustine, Marcion, Eusebius, Ambrose, Epiphanius, etc.*), and they quoted from their former Pagan sources virtually constantly, merging what they had been, with what they were becoming - a blended religion, with their beloved Greek culture as the dominant aspect. There already were "Christians" in Egypt, gnostic sun-worshippers who knelt before huge ankhs (*crux ansatas*). The Serapis-Isis cult used this symbol at Alexandria. When the Emperor Hadrian wrote from Alexandria, he said:

"Those who worship Serapis are Christians and those who call themselves bishops of Christ are vowed to Serapis".

Ancient Babylonian [pagan] influences abounded then, and abound now, hidden in plain sight. Alexandria was the primary launching point for the new fusion religion we know as "Christianity" today. The

word "Christos" is directly related to Krishna, Crestos, and Chreston. These literally mean "shining", as they refer to the sun. Krishna is the sun deity of the Hindu religion. Even as late as 348 CE, Cyrill said: "Let the heresy be silenced which blasphemes the Messiah, the Son of the Mighty One. Let those be silenced who say that the sun is Messiah, because He is the Creator of the sun, and not the visible sun itself."

They were calling the sun "Christ Helios". The Manichaeans worshipped the sun as it passed through the sky ALL DAY, and Augustine came from them. The ancient Crestos of the Serapian Culte was worshipped as "the good god", so the word "Christ" is actually a polluted and forbidden word when you carefully weigh the texts of Exodus 23:13 & Duet. 12:28-32.

Great darkness results from not properly understanding Yahweh's Word, or departing from it, thinking The Book of the Law no longer has application. The one verse most cling to in defense of the term "Christian" is at Acts 11:26: "And at first in Antioch the taught ones were called Kristianous." (*This is the order of this sentence in the Greek*).

This sentence doesn't claim that the disciples called themselves this, but were called this "at first". Also, as with the English language, the context determines what is meant. If this meant they were mistaken (*at first*) for the Pagan believers in Serapis, that's one thing; or this could have been simply the Greek translation distorting the original Hebrew word, Messiah.

Or, what if this Greek word was not a label, and simply meant "good men"? Knowing there is some relationship with the word cretin, what if the people of Antioch, at first, called the disciples CRETINS, meaning literally, idiots or retards? Why is the Greek label so important that they had to make this single verse in its

translation an all-encompassing issue? Again, what would a bunch of Israelites that practice the Torah of Yahweh and follow the Messiah, be doing with a Greek term used by Pagans as a label for themselves? A name for a person or thing is a special designation, not a general reference. Is the Name of the Creator Greek?

If the Creator has a religion (*way*), does He refer to it by a Greek term? Would the Messiah of Adam, Noach, Mosheh, Daniel, and Eli Yahu have a Greek Name or a Greek Title? If we have inherited error, and we obviously have, then we all need to know about it, and not defend it.

So what great harm is there in abandoning the Greek title "Christos", and using the same Hebrew word Daniel wrote: Messiah? The word "MESSIAH" is transliterated TWICE in the received Greek writings, at Jn. 1:41 and Jn. 4:25 (*it's used twice in Daniel, at 9:25,26*).

Even the new age cult is awaiting their "Christ"; so why not give them their word back - maybe they'll stop laughing at believers behind their backs for having adopted so much of their philosophy. Give them their "Sun-day" too. Let's return to the Covenant! The Gentiles from the ends of the Earth will one day acknowledge that their forefathers have inherited nothing but lies.

"Krishna or Chris-na and Christos come from the same root. Kris in Sanskrit means the pure or the sacred, 'the first emanation of the invisible Godhead, manifesting itself tangibly in spirit' (*Isis Unveiled, II, 158*), it is the Spiritual Ego (*Buddhi-Manas*). 'The Spiritual, Immortal, Higher Ego in every man is an emanation, like a ray, from the Central Spiritual Sun (*Paramatman*), of which the visible Sun is the direct manifestation on our physical plane and its visible symbol.'"

The conclusion drawn from this study confirms once again that the faith was

"solarized", and our customs and words are rising up to prove it. The prophet Yermeh Yahu (*Jer.*) told us:

"O Yahweh, my strength, and my fortress, and my refuge in the day of affliction, the Gentiles shall come unto thee from the ends of the Earth, and shall say, '**Surely our fathers have inherited lies, vanity, and things wherein there is no profit**'.

Shall a man make elohim unto himself, and they are no elohim? Therefore, behold, I will this once cause them to know, I will cause them to know Mine hand and My might; and they shall know that My Name is Yahweh." Jer 16:19-21

Directly related to this issue of "terms" once used by Pagans, and taking the point-of-view of our Creator Yahweh, we have to consider what He has already spoken on this issue. Remember, even the "terminology" used by Pagans are their "ways" or methods. Here are 3 Scriptures of many that could have relevance:

Exodus / Shemoth 20:2,3: "I am Yahweh your Elohim, Who brought you out of the land of Mitsrayim, out of the house of slavery. You have no other mighty ones against My Face."

Exodus / Shemoth 23:13: "And in all that I have said to you take heed. And make no mention of the name of other mighty ones, let it not be heard from your mouth."

Deut. / Debarim 12:28-32: "Guard, and obey all these words which I command you, that it might be well with you and your children after you forever, when you do what is good and right in the eyes of Yahweh your Elohim. When Yahweh your Elohim does cut off from before you the nations which you go to dispossess, and you dispossess them and dwell in their land, guard yourself that you are not ensnared to follow them, after they are destroyed from before you, and that you do not

inquire about their mighty ones, saying 'How did these nations serve their mighty ones? And let me do so too.' Do not do so to Yahweh your Elohim, for every abomination which Yahweh hates they have done to their mighty ones, for they even burn their sons and daughters in the fire to their mighty ones. All the words I am commanding you, guard to do it - do not add to it nor take away from it."

## Do Israelites Comprise the True Church?

Let's start with "what" a *church* is. The word "*church*" is a poor English translation for the Greek "ekklesia". A proper transliteration would be "Congregation", or loosely, "a group or an assembly of people".

In New Covenant Biblical usage, the general intent was to use the word to define those people that were the "called out ones"; the ones with a willingness to be obedient to Yahweh and with faith in Yah'shua's resurrection. All of those "called out" are called out of this world, meaning out from among the entire human race - out from the "worldly", by Yahweh and by Yahweh alone, hence they are literally "His Congregation".

Now let's go to "who" makes up those called into Yahweh's Congregation. First, He has called His people of the physical birthright of Jacob, whose name was changed by Yahweh, to "Israel". These people originally called by Yahweh under the Old Covenant were and are comprised of thirteen tribes emanating from Israel's twelve sons, [original twelve tribes plus the resulting thirteenth when Joseph's tribe split into Ephraim and Manasseh].

These thirteen tribes represent a lot more people than simply the "Jews", or the single tribe of Judah – which are not Jews, as many people (*including modern Jews*) erroneously believe.

Additionally, under the New Covenant, Yahweh has called all those that are "of the faith of Abraham", meaning he has also called literally everyone on the planet that is capable of comprehending "spiritual adoption"; that of "hearing" His word, "believing" His word, "repenting" as a result of that belief, and thus being baptized by His Holy Spirit.

Thus all of Yahweh's children have been called by Yahweh and have been freely offered

Yahweh's gift of eternal salvation through His grace, with the inherent right to accept or reject that gift, which is literally our option to choose to believe Yahweh and repent, or to choose not to.

Everyone on this planet is a child of Yahweh, therefore by His Covenants and through His Spirit, Yahweh has "called" everyone into His Israelite Congregation according to His good and perfect will. And He has even had this written down as a testimony to us, so that we are without excuse.

Therefore the big question is not whether Yahweh's Congregation is the true "*church*" or not, that is elementary. Rather the big question is, who will answer Yahweh's call - who will recognize and respond to His most gracious invitation and enjoy being a part of His Natural Israelite Congregation in this lifetime?

Those that accept Yahweh's gift in this lifetime will receive eternal salvation and those that do not accept it in this lifetime, will not - yet. Yahweh's plan allows for only a few - the "remnant" of the Messiah's original followers to "answer His call"; to avoid the deceptive lure of Satan's myriad of false *churches* and accept His gift in this lifetime, while most will have to wait until during, or after the "millennium" for the time of the "Great White Throne Judgment" period, before they too will enjoy the opportunity to accept His gift without any associated deception. But in the end, Yahweh declares that it is His desire that almost "the whole world" be saved.

When you fully understand His many prophecies on this matter, it becomes clear that literally "almost" the entire world will be saved, it simply comes down to a matter of when, and how much tribulation some may have to endure in this lifetime as a result of the associated deceptions. So - have you recognized His offer and received His salvation in this lifetime, or must you wait until the Judgment period

coming after the millennium (*or during the millennium if you are alive at its arrival*)?

More properly, this might be expressed, as "are you truly a member of Yahweh's Congregation in this lifetime", or, "are you an atheist or a member of any one of Satan's competing *Christian churches or Jewish Synagogues*?" If you belong to any "*church*" or *Jewish Synagogue*, then you are outside of Yahweh's Congregation and His salvation has thus far eluded you! But you may, and most probably will, still receive Yahweh's eternal salvation!

The truth is, only Yahweh knows who has succeeded in this lifetime! In Yahweh's Congregation, "membership is registered in heaven". We can only know if Yahweh has accepted us into His Congregation by our own spiritual discernment, because the "things of Yahweh are spiritually discerned".

But we can also know of many worldly deceptions and take steps to avoid them. One such masterfully crafted deception, is man's advent of the many artificial "*churches*" and "*synagogues*", virtually all of which are Satan's tools. We cannot belong to Yahweh and to mammon at the same time!

All *churches and synagogues*, whether or not they are incorporated under man's law, or if they are organized by man in any fashion pursuant to, or under some aspect of international rule or convention, are subject to man's law, and deviously or deceptively, and maliciously or unwittingly, they place man's law as superior to Yahweh's law, and do thereby declare man's law as their sovereign authority! Merely operating or assembling under the artificial name of a "*church*" or "*synagogue*" is the first sign of this deception and is contrary to everything truly Biblical!

All such incorporated or man-organized *churches* are indeed artificial - and maintain artificial, or man-made baptismal and

membership records "on earth", and often maintain reliance upon man-made copyrights and other artificial protections in direct competition to Yahweh our God, in spite of His clear and multiple warnings on these topics, and in spite of their most noble efforts to dissuade otherwise. For the most part, their leaders are so deceived that they either cannot even recognize, or they refuse to recognize these warning signs, even when they are brought to their attention!

The bottom line is that only Yahweh can create things that are natural, and all things created by Yahweh are indeed natural, whereas everything man creates is by definition, artificial, and man has no capacity to create anything that is natural. All of man's *churches* are artificial, man-made constructs - they comprise Satan's greatest deception!

Does this mean that membership in one of these artificial *churches or synagogues* eliminates the possibility of receiving Yahweh's gift of eternal salvation? Of course not! Yahweh knows that almost the "whole world" will be deceived by this very issue of false *churches* administered by false *church* leaders: "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of the Messiah. And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing that his [false] ministers transform themselves into ministers of righteousness..." (2 Corinthians 11:7 thru 15).

This is why, in Yahweh's all knowing and all compassionate plan, He has allowed for those that are deceived in this lifetime by such things as memberships in man's many false *churches or synagogues*, the opportunity to repent and receive their eternal salvation either during, or after the millennium.

Now we recognize that there is nothing more natural or self-evident than Yahweh's

plain truth that He has so graciously and clearly written in the hearts and minds of His beloved children (in our DNA, whether we believe it or not), which justly compels the Natural Congregation of Yahweh to acknowledge its pre-eminence over all un-natural *Jewish Synagogues* or evangelical *churches*, which unwittingly proclaim by incorporating and or by copyrighting their material, that the un-natural, or artificial man-made laws of the "state" supersede the laws of Yahweh, our true God!!

The following excerpt is taken from a Provincial (*Canadian*) government's Not-for-Profit Incorporator's Handbook on special organizations including *churches*, *synagogues*, religious organizations, non-profit and charitable organizations. Similar, if not identical man-made [*artificial*] "statute" law exists in virtually every province, state, or country in the world:

"Special situations of religious organizations...Religious organizations should consider certain issues carefully before INCORPORATING.

GOVERNING LAW: If a religious organization becomes incorporated, its ecclesiastical, canon or church laws, rules, or regulations may be subject to the CORPORATIONS ACT.

This means that if any ecclesiastical, [Biblical] canon or church law, rule or regulation conflicts with the CORPORATIONS ACT, the organization once incorporated, MUST comply with the CORPORATIONS ACT, and will no longer be able to use that [Biblical] law, rule or regulation in administering its affairs."

[We added the underlining for our emphasis.]

There goes Bible law right out the proverbial window for any incorporated *church* or *synagogue*, regardless of their most noble efforts to dissuade otherwise!! The leaders of ALL traditional "Christian" *churches*, whether

Catholic, Protestant, denominational, non-denominational or otherwise, as well as *Jewish Synagogues*, have no idea they have unwittingly put man's artificial GOVERNMENTS and artificial laws as sovereign and superior before Yahweh's true government and law on earth; His Natural Congregation and His Natural Bible.

They have done so by incorporating under and binding themselves to man's artificial, un-natural and inferior laws! Yahweh's law as set forth in His Bible makes that perfectly clear to anyone that can actually read AND understand it, but here we have an example written in the simple language of man's law for everyone to see.

Even regular assemblies of well-intentioned people, held under the unincorporated name of a "*church*" or "*synagogue*", for a period longer than six months, constitute a "legally" recognized "*church*" or "*synagogue*" in the eyes of the state, pursuant to the same Common Law traditions that formally recognize the "legality" of marriage between a man and woman that have lived together for more than six months.

## **Nicolations and the True Congregation:**

The doctrine of the Nicolaitans was mentioned in the Revelation of John to the Congregations of Pergamos and Ephesus of the seven Congregations of Asia (*Revelation 2*). It was a symbolic name of a party that represented those who established a ruling class over the rest of the people in the "Congregation" (*ekklesia*), by exalting fleshly leadership and developing a "pecking order."

Yah'shua stated clearly that He hated this and warns the people to repent or else He "will come upon you quickly and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth." The same stern warning illustration is applied to those which were led to licentiousness from the example of Balaam, which was by seducing His faithful believers to fornication and tampering with idolatry.

The root of the word through historical evaluation shows us that the word Nicolaitans comes from Greek "nikao", to conquer or overcome, and "laos", which means people, and which the word laity comes from. The two words together in this context means the "conquering, or destruction of the people" and refers to the earliest form of what we call a priestly order or clergy, which later on in the history of the Congregation divided people by condoning leadership other than that ordained of Yahweh.

A good translation of Nicolaitan would be "those who prevail over the people." This clerical system later developed into the papal hierarchy of priests and clergy over the laity. In fact, the Council of Trent admittedly stated, and continues to hold that, "If anyone shall say that there is not in the Catholic Church a hierarchy established by the divine ordination, consisting of bishops, presbyters and ministers, let him be anathema."

Yahweh clearly renounces the Roman Catholic Church, calling it the great "Harlot", and as many Bible students are aware, Yahweh also refers to the Roman Catholic organization as "Babylon the Great".

The word "Babylon" in Bible usage is synonymous with "Sin" and only once when making this one reference to the Roman Catholic Church, does Yahweh use the Phrase "Babylon the Great"!

This very idea was taken over by all of the Protestants and subsequently by all non-denominational professing *Christian* churches, with the deceptive corruption of the congregation by the institution of their own artificial leadership, even if it includes just one "Pastor".

This same manner of man-made hierarchy prevails in all man-made "churches" including Jewish synagogues, and indeed is a revealing "sign" of this very thing. The Congregation that the Messiah founded, is the one and only true Congregation that remains unadulterated by man; or otherwise, it remains in its "Natural" state as designed and built by its Founder!

The Congregation of Ephesus was commended for hating the deeds of the Nicolaitans. The separation of clergy from the laity is a great evil in Yahweh's sight and by His words, He hates such lust for religious power.

There is an ungodly spiritual authority in the organised man-made *Churches* and synagogues today, which is nothing more than the prideful spirit of control, manipulation, domination, intimidation and a rebellion of the rightful authority of Yahweh.

Many, and indeed most professing *Christian churches* and Jewish synagogues today, have instituted authoritarian bodies to govern their membership, having at their core, all manner of rules and regulations for the proper conduct and potential "eviction" of their

members from their *church or synagogue*! If, as the Messiah clearly states, that membership in His Congregation is "registered in heaven", then one must wonder how and by what authority they access heaven to change the records!

Indeed "almost the whole world" has been deceived as prophesied; blinded by man's own arrogance regarding this very issue. How obvious it should be to those led by the Spirit of Yahweh, that no man or group of men can by any means take leadership precedence over our One and only High Priest, ordained by Yahweh as our "High Priest forever, according to the order of Melchizedek" (*Heb. 5:6*). Any formal organization of an hierarchy of men within a *church* has at its core and by definition, the essential premise that it is man-made, or un-natural.

Why else were we commanded: "But you, do not be called 'Rabbi' [*Father, Reverend, Teacher, Priest, Minister, Pastor*]; for One is your Teacher, the Messiah, AND YOU ARE ALL BRETHREN. Do not call anyone on earth your father [*with spiritual reverence*]; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven. And do not be called teachers; for One is your Teacher, the Messiah" (*Matt. 23:8-10*).

Clearly, in the true Congregation of Yahweh, there must be no man-made hierarchy. Within the book of Revelation chapters 2 and 3, "the deeds of the Nicolations" are revealed solely for the purpose of pointing out this very thing. These verses clearly set forth that we are to look for this artificial or man-made hierarchy of men within the *churches and synagogues*, as a "sign", and that we are to compare these un-natural "deeds of the Nicolations" to the Natural ordinances of Yahweh, to ensure that we are indeed following our true Leader, and thereby avoiding this deceptive trap with all of its many false teachings and beliefs.

Our Bibles hold Yahweh's revelation of the "deeds of the Nicolations" for good reason. The Godly purpose for revealing this sign, cannot be made to serve any other purpose, than to allow us to distinguish between the Natural or Yahweh-made, and the un-natural or man-made, no matter how noble the effort to try may be.

### **The Whole Truth About Church Incorporation**

Notes: 1. In this article, the word "Church" does not refer to any physical building, but refers to the whole body of believers in the Messiah. The word "church" is translated from the Greek word *ekklesia*, which literally means "assembly" or "congregation" of people; it does not refer to any physical building. Keep that in mind when reading this article. Thus in this article, it may mean the true Israelite believers, or it may mean the believers in false traditional Christian or Jewish religions.

2. Throughout this article many US laws, regulations, and references have been cited. In Canada, Western Europe, the British Common Wealth, and almost all of the countries in the world, the same things apply, just different terminology is used.

Joshua challenged the people: "choose you this day whom ye will serve." (*Joshua 24:15*). Today, government is demanding a similar choice. Today the world assumes that the Congregation is the church because it is registered with, and defined by, the State.

The following is intended merely to provide an overview, an introduction to the whole issue of the Church and incorporation. In addition, its purpose is not meant to be a criticism of the many well meaning Christian (*or Jewish*) men and women who have laboured for Yahweh in these matters, but simply as a supplemental guide for the avoidance of "rendering unto Caesar" that which is not and should not be his. We shall endeavour to

explore the relationship between, churches or synagogues and corporations.

So what exactly is incorporation? What really happens to a Congregation that becomes incorporated? Are there biblical principles against incorporation?

First of all, let us define the word "corporation." In the strict everyday definition of the word, a corporation is "a group of people combined into or acting as one body." This word is derived from the Latin word "corpus," which means "body." In this sense, the Christian Church is indeed a corporation. It is the "corpus Christi," the "Body of the Messiah." It derives its existence and authority from its Head, the risen and victorious Son of Yahweh. It is comprised of individual members who have covenanted together to further the Messiah's Kingdom by the preaching of the Gospel and the discipling of the nations (*Matthew 28:19-20*).

#### **State Claims to Supersede Yahweh!!**

The following underlined excerpt is taken from section 6.5 of the Ontario government's Not-for-Profit Incorporator's Handbook on special organizations including churches, synagogues, religious organizations, non-profit and charitable organizations. Similar, if not identical "statute" law exists in virtually every province, state or country in the world:

"Special situations of religious organizations...Religious organizations should consider certain issues carefully before INCORPORATING.

#### **GOVERNING LAW:**

If a religious organization becomes incorporated, its ecclesiastical, canon or church laws, rules or regulations may be subject to the CORPORATIONS ACT. This means that if any ecclesiastical, canon or church law, rule or regulation conflicts with the CORPORATIONS ACT, the organization once incorporated, MUST comply with the CORPORATIONS ACT

and will no longer be able to use that law, rule or regulation in administering its affairs."

*[We added the underlining for our emphasis.]*

There goes Bible law right out the proverbial window for any incorporated church!! The leaders of ALL traditional Christian Churches and Jewish Synagogues have no idea they have unwittingly put man's claimed GOVERNMENTS before Yahweh by incorporating! Yahweh's law makes that perfectly clear to anyone that can actually read AND understand it, but here we have it written in simple language in man's law for everyone to see.

#### **The Messiah is Sovereign over his Congregation**

The Congregation's "corporate status" is well-established in Scripture: Matthew 16:18, 1 Corinthians 12:12-14, 27, Ephesians 1:22; 5:23b, 30, Colossians 1:18; 2:19 teach that the Messiah is clearly the head of the Congregation, and we are all members of his body.

The Congregation is the visible manifestation of the Messiah's Kingdom on earth. However, as Yah'shua Himself stated, "My Kingdom is not of this world" (*John 18:36*). Many have misunderstood this verse to mean that neither the Congregation nor individuals should involve themselves with the affairs of the world. In what is known as "pietism," a false dichotomy is erected between the "spiritual" Kingdom and the "carnal" world.

Of course, this is not what Yah'shua had in mind at all. He very explicitly stated elsewhere that Israelites are to act as the "salt" of the earth and as a "light" in the world by permeating society and working to change it from within (*Mat.5:13-16*). This task of dominion is accomplished through the work of evangelism and discipleship, as Yah'shua commanded in the Great Commission. The

Israelite's purpose is indeed "worldly," insofar as it is involved in bringing the world into subjection to the Word of Yahweh (*2 Cor. 10:5*).

Thus, the true meaning of Yah'shua' declaration that His Kingdom is "not of this world," is that it does not derive its authority and power from the world or its institutions. The Congregation is indeed a spiritual organization, but this simply means that it is "of His Spirit"-- it relies upon His Holy Spirit and the inspired Word for its existence, not upon the efforts or laws of men. This important detail should be kept in mind as we further study the subject of church incorporation.

The State is Sovereign over its Corporations. Having briefly examined the biblical definition of a corporation, let us now look at the legal definition of a corporation

1. "A corporation is a creature of the state. It is presumed to be incorporated for the benefit of the public. It receives certain special privileges and franchises and holds them subject to the laws of the state and the limitation of its charter. Its powers are limited by law. It can make no contract not authorized by its charter. Its rights to act as a corporation are only preserved to it so long as it obeys the laws of its creation. There is a reserved right in the legislature to investigate its contracts and ascertain if it has exceeded its powers" (*Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43*).

2. "[A corporation is] an artificial person or legal entity created by or under the authority of the laws of a state. An association of persons created by statute as a legal entity.... The corporation is distinct from the individuals who comprise it (*shareholders*).... Such an entity subsists as a body politic under a special denomination, which is regarded in law as having a personality and existence distinct from that of its several members." Black's Law Dictionary West Publishing Company, 1991; 6th Edition, page 340.

3. "A corporation derives its existence and all of its powers from the State and, therefore, has only such powers as the State has conferred upon it. Power is used here to mean the legal capacity to execute and fulfill the objects and purposes for which the corporation was created, and the source of this power is the charter and the statute under which the corporation was organized." Len Young Smith and G. Gale Roberson, *Smith and Roberson's Business Law*, West Publishing Company, 1966, page 796.

Note: A corporation is created by, and derives its existence from, the State. In contrast, the Congregation is created by, a creature of, derives its existence from, subject to, and obeys the Law of, Yahweh.

4. "Corporate existence is a privilege granted by the sovereign upon compliance with specified conditions" Len Young Smith and G. Gale Roberson, *Smith and Roberson's Business Law*, West Publishing Company, 1966, page 931. .

5. "Corporations are not citizens.... The term citizen... applies only to natural persons... not to artificial persons created by the legislature" *Paul v. Virginia*, 8 Wall. 168, 177; see also the Opinion of Field, J., in the *Slaughterhouse Cases*, 16 Wall.36,99.

Note: Yahweh teaches that Israelites, his Congregation, are citizens of the household of Yahweh (*Eph.2:19, Phil.3:10*).

6. Every corporation has obtained a charter from the State of Incorporation. This charter is simply permission to exist given to the corporation, without which, its operations would be considered illegal. In addition to the charter are the articles of incorporation: "The objects or purposes for which a corporation is formed are expressly stated in its articles of incorporation, which delineate in general language the type of business activities in which the corporation proposes to engage"

Smith and Roberson's Business Law, West Publishing Company, 1966, page 798.

Note: Is the Congregation of Yahweh involved in any type of business activities? (*Matthew 21:12, John 2:16*).

7. "Instances of non-profit corporations are educational institutions, athletic clubs, library clubs, fraternities, sororities, hospitals, and organizations which have exclusively a charitable purpose" Smith and Roberson's Business Law, West Publishing Company, 1966, page 789.

The reader will notice that "churches" are conspicuously absent from this list of non-profit corporations. That is because our lawmakers are fully aware that incorporation involves creation, and the Congregation simply cannot be created by the State. Furthermore, the Congregation's ordained purpose of preaching the Gospel can never be illegal, so no special license is required from the State to do so.

Though not all of our founding fathers were genuine Israelites, they nevertheless understood that the Congregation of the Messiah is under the sole jurisdiction of its Lord, and that the civil magistrate therefore should not dare to encroach upon that authority. Because of this healthy respect for the Congregation, the very first sentence of the American Bill of Rights for example, reads as follows:

"Congress shall make no law regarding an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof" (*U.S. Constitution, First Amendment*).

According to Supreme Court Justice Hugo Black: "The establishment clause of the First Amendment means at least this: Neither a state nor the federal government can set up a church" (*Everson v. Board of Education, 1947*).

It was one of the principles of the sixteenth-century Reformation that the

Congregation and the State are separate governments, and that, although they are to work together for the furtherance of Yahweh's Kingdom, they are not to either merge with one another or usurp the sphere of authority of one another (*Westminster Confession of Faith, Chapter XXIII:3*) The Congregation is forbidden by Scripture to take up the State's "sword" (*Romans 13:4*), and the State is likewise forbidden to assume the Congregation's "keys" (*Matthew 16:19*). However, as we will see, the latter is precisely what occurs whenever a Congregation seeks incorporation at the hands of the State.

### **Is a Congregation required to Incorporate under the Government?**

According to the Internal Revenue Code, "a church, its integrated auxiliaries, and conventions and associations of the church are excluded from taxation." *United States Code, Title 26, § 508(c)(1)(A)*.

*Section 508(c)* of the Internal Revenue Code provides that churches are not required to apply for recognition of *Section 501(c)(3)* status in order to be exempt from federal taxation or to receive tax deductible contributions. Churches are automatically exempt from Federal income tax, and contributions to churches are deductible by donors under section 170.

Elsewhere, the IRS states: "Although a church, its integrated auxiliaries, or a convention of churches is not required to file Form 1023 to be exempt from federal income tax or to receive tax deductible contributions, such an organization may find it advantageous to obtain recognition of exemption (*Tax Exempt Status for Organizations, IRS Publication 557*).

Just what "advantage" is there for a church in obtaining 501(c)(3) recognition and thereby exchanging its sovereignty for a subordinate status in relation to the federal government? Most people would answer that

such grants the church exemption from taxation. However, we have already seen that the federal government has never been able to tax the Congregation of the Messiah; the Congregation is not exempt from taxation, it is immune. The "advantage" is something else entirely:

"By establishing its exemption, potential contributors are assured by the [Internal Revenue] Service that contributions will be deductible" Tax Exempt Status for Your Organization, IRS Publication 557.

The tragic irony of all this is that, according to the Internal Revenue Code, financial donations to an unregistered, unincorporated church are automatically tax-deductible (*26 USC 170-B*)! But is this biblical?

"Yahweh loveth a cheerful giver." (*2 Corinthians 9:7*). But the government promises, "Incorporate, and I will return to you up to thirty-five percent of your tithes and offerings!" And the Bridegroom wept. Now Yah'shua knows that His bride "purposeth in [*her*] heart . . . grudgingly, or of necessity." (*2 Corinthians 9:7*). Yahweh had no respect towards Cain's offering because he did not give from the heart (*Gen.4:3-6*).

The IRS, of course, knows very well that it has no constitutional authority over the Congregation, and that it may not violate the First Amendment protection against government interference with the Congregation. In fact, the IRS may not violate the constitutionally secured rights of any American Citizen or group of Citizens, and is able to gain jurisdiction only when such is given to it voluntarily. Thus, the IRS holds out the unbiblical "advantage" of *501(c)(3)* corporate status as bait to clergy ignorant of the law in hopes that these men will "bite," thereby placing themselves and their congregations firmly on its jurisdictional hook.

Once the bait has been taken, and the

catch is reeled in, another Congregation has been transformed into a "legal fiction" subject to the tyrannical control of the federal government. The truth is that "incorporated churches" are not, by definition, churches at all! They are merely "non-profit organizations" (or should I say "non-prophet organizations"). The truth is, any "church" that is incorporated has deposed Yah'shua the Messiah from His rightful position as Head over His own Body and has surrendered that Body to the dominion of the State.

The truth is, "incorporated churches" are subject to total governmental control -- whom they may hire, what they may and may not teach and preach, they cannot conflict with "public policy" nor assault the hearer's sense of mental well-being, self esteem, sexual orientation, etc. The IRS prohibits such organizations from "carrying on propaganda, or otherwise attempting to influence legislation" (*26 USC 501-C-3*). This prohibition extends, not only to the endorsement of a political candidate, but also any other attempts to "influence legislation," including taking a public stand against such government-protected abominations as abortion or homosexuality. Now, the church is discovering that favours from Washington, DC have strings attached. In this case, the string is a rope that is being used to throttle her once-powerful voice, to squeeze out her very life and, eventually, to hang her by the neck until dead!

Should the Bible itself one day be ruled by the government to be "politically incorrect," incorporated churches will find themselves on the horns of a very serious dilemma. After all, in a civil suit, a corporation's defence is limited to the terms specifically enumerated in its charter and articles of incorporation. All other "extrinsic evidence," including the Bible or any historical Israelite creeds or standards, will be disallowed in a State court case, because they

are "not contained in the body of [the] contract." (*Black's Law Dictionary*, p. 588). Outside of its own walls, the incorporated church may not stand on the authority of the Scriptures regarding any political or civil issue, because it is bound by the "higher laws" of the State. Consequently, the Christian Church in America, little by little, ceases to be the "salt" and "light" to society that it was commanded to be (*Mat.5:13-16*). And all this for a simple tax deduction! Because of money! This directly contradicts Yah'shua's teaching, "make not my Father's house an house of merchandise" (*John 2:16*).

### **Operating as a Government Business**

There are profit-making businesses and there are non-profit businesses, but a business is a business in the eyes of government. An incorporated church simply cannot deny the fact that it has requested permission of the State to operate as a business. Not only does it have its charter and articles of incorporation on file with the Secretary of State, but it is also required to list a President, Vice-President, Secretary, and Treasurer. None of these offices were instituted by the Messiah in His Congregation (*Eph.4:11-12*), because they exist to control the business dealings of a corporation, not the sacramental duties of the Body of the Messiah.

Many churches, since 1984, have begun to list the minister and other ecclesiastical leaders as "employees" for Social Security purposes. The IRS exists to regulate revenue which is internal to the federal government. Consequently, in the Internal Revenue Code, an "employee" is specifically defined as follows: "an officer, employee, or elected official of the United States, a State, or any political subdivision thereof" (*26 USC 3401-C*). By listing the minister as an "employee" who earns "income," the incorporated church is unknowingly identifying him as one who works

for the federal government. A free, unincorporated Congregation cannot be held to the standards of a corporation doing "business" as a church. A congregation is a private assembly of individuals, coming together as a family, to worship their Lord. Biblical worship is not a "public" activity. Yah'shua the Messiah, not the State, ordained the assembling together of believers.

### **Taxation Via Social Security**

Yet another indication that an incorporated church is a government agency is its participation in Social Security. Seen in this light, payment into Social Security by incorporated churches brings us to an astonishing conclusion: Incorporated 501(c)(3) churches are not exempt from taxation after all! It is an established legal principle that "the power to tax is the power to destroy." The government only has the power to destroy that which it has created.

Another related issue here is that of the "corporate franchise." According to law, "a corporation must have a franchise" (*Len Young Smith and G. Gale Roberson, Smith and Roberson's Business Law*, p. 786.) In the case of an incorporated church, who are its franchisees? If you guessed the members of the congregation, you are correct. In fact, they are legally "shareholders" in the business. This is proven by the fact that the so-called "congregational meetings" of the incorporated church must follow the legal guidelines of any other corporate meeting. For example, motions must be made and minutes must be kept of the proceedings. By-laws must be maintained and any additions (*amendments*) must be voted on by the members of the church.

Furthermore, at the end of the year, members and contributors will receive an itemized report of their financial contributions to the church for tax purposes, and distributes contribution records that shows a beginning

and ending "balance" for each member. This practice directly contradicts the Bible's command about giving alms before men (*Matthew 6:1-4*).

The pastor of an incorporated church may therefore inform the congregation of the tax-deductibility of their gifts only if he warns them that a tax write-off may be the only reward they will receive (*Matthew 6:4*).

### **The Incorporated Church Surrenders its Yahweh Given Laws**

Man, created by Yahweh in the image of Yahweh, was granted by Yahweh certain "unalienable rights" which are constitutionally protected. Corporations, created by the State, are not "real" or "natural" persons and, therefore, have no constitutionally secured rights!

It is a common belief that an incorporated church may refuse to disclose its financial records, particularly its tithing records, to the State should such be demanded. However, such a naive belief will not protect the church or its members from harassment from the Internal Revenue Service or any other federal agency: "[A] corporation is not considered as a person within that clause of the fifth amendment to the constitution which protects a "person" against self-incrimination" Len Young Smith and G. Gale Roberson, Smith and Roberson's Business Law, p. 787.

According to the ruling of the Supreme Court: "There is a clear distinction in this particular between an individual and a corporation and that the latter has no right to refuse to submit its books and papers for an examination at the suit of the State. While an individual may lawfully refuse to answer incriminating questions unless protected by an immunity statute, it does not follow that a corporation vested with certain privileges and franchises, may refuse to show its hand when

charged with an abuse of such privileges. *Hale v. Henkel*, 201 U.S. 74-75.

"Whenever a corporation makes a contract it is the contract of the legal entity ...The only rights it can claim are the rights which are given to it in that charter, and not the rights which belong to its members as citizens of a state" (*Bank of Augusta v. Earle*, 13 Pet. 586).

In other words, a corporation has no rights, only privileges which may be revoked any time its creator sees fit. Individual members ("*share-holders*" or "*corporate franchises*") also surrender their rights on account of their legal union with the corporation. Thus, the IRS may audit the corporation's financial records at any time, because, as one former IRS commissioner stated, "The churches... hold in trust that which belongs to the government." This is the law, and it cannot be changed by amendments to church by-laws, or even by the good intentions of church leaders.

Can an incorporated church refuse to disclose its financial records to the IRS on the grounds that it did not know that such consequences would arise from incorporation? Unfortunately, the answer is no. Incorporation is a form of "non-positive," or "contract law." According to Black's Law Dictionary, p.322, a contract is "an agreement between two or more persons which creates an obligation to do or not to do a particular thing." The laws comprising the contract do not apply to either party until the contract is agreed upon, at which time it is legally binding upon both. Claiming ignorance of the specifics of the contract will not excuse either party from their obligation once the contract is signed:

"As a general proposition, a party is held to what he signs.... One cannot obtain a release from contract liability upon the ground that he did not understand the legal effect of

the contract" Len Young Smith and G. Gale Roberson, Smith and Roberson's Business Law, p. 70

By incorporating, the pastor and elders of a church need to realize that they have, in effect, signed a contract with the federal government which they have become legally and morally liable to obey (*Romans 13:1*). They cease to exist as a "real" First Amendment association with "unalienable" rights, and are transformed into a federal institution under the complete jurisdiction & control of "Acts of Congress." A church can no more change the nature of a contract after the fact than a private individual.

### **The Unbiblical Status of Limited Liability**

Finally, let us take a brief look at the biblical problems of church incorporation. As we have seen, the Bible teaches that the Israelite Congregation is a spiritual corporation that derives its existence from its Head, who is the Messiah. Each individual member is in covenant with the others and exercises their gifts for the benefit of the collective group. This is the concept of unity in diversity. The whole derives its substance from its individual parts. Therefore, the actions of the individual indirectly affect the whole.

We see this concept of covenantalism numerous times throughout Scripture. For example, in the Old Covenant economy, the sin of Achan brought judgment upon the entire nation of Israel (*Joshua 7*), and the righteous act of Phineas brought Yahweh's blessings (*Numbers 25*). This principle did not pass away with the Old Covenant economy, however. In 1 Corinthians 5, Paul exhorted the Corinthian Congregation to "put away" from them the unrepentant adulterer with the following illustration (*verse 6b-7a*).

The corrupting influence of sin should never be underestimated, and Yahweh's

judgment on an entire congregation is risked if one of its members is allowed to continue in open rebellion against His Word. This is why it is so important for the elders to protect the Congregation from moral and spiritual disintegration by removing the ungodly member via excommunication. Likewise, it is equally the responsibility of individual members of a Congregation to disassociate themselves from an apostate Congregation as defined a "church", so that they might not "partake of her sins" (*Revelation 18:4*).

Church incorporation flies in the very face of biblical covenantalism. This is seen primarily in the privilege of "limited liability," which means that the corporation cannot be held legally responsible for the actions of the individual members: "A corporation... should be distinguished from the individuals who compose it and those who control it as well as from the property which it owns" Len Young Smith and G. Gale Roberson, Smith and Roberson's Business Law, p. 785.

Yahweh certainly did not deal with the nation of Israel on the basis of limited liability, so why should modern churches seek this unbiblical status for themselves? In giving the Congregation her orders, Yah'shua promised: "All power is given unto me . . . I am with you always." (*Matthew 28:18,20*). Apparently, this was not enough for the church. The State promised to protect the church from lawsuits and other attacks from without if only she would incorporate. Turning her back on the promised care of her Bridegroom, Yah'shua the Messiah, the Congregation accepted her lover's "protection."

Supposedly, limited liability protects the individual members from personal lawsuit. However, this is simply not the case. Franchises of a corporation are just as susceptible, if not more so, to a lawsuit than any other organization. Furthermore, the

incorporated church itself greatly increases its own susceptibility to a lawsuit due to the fact that a business is far more likely to be sued than is a strictly religious organization. Unincorporated churches are immune, they cannot sue, nor be sued by, anyone.

### **Corporations have no Life**

"Man has been created by, in, and for, the Word of Yahweh, and this makes him the being who is responsible. Masses, collectives, and species have no responsibility; they are not capable of assuming responsibility. They [corporations] cannot commit trespass nor be outlawed nor excommunicated, for they have no souls [life]." *10 Rep.32 b.*

"Human beings are called 'natural persons' to distinguish them from 'artificial' personas or corporations. To acquire the status of artificial or legal personality, the group seeking it must be incorporated, i.e., must obtain a formal state license. In modern civil law, while incorporation is necessary for some purposes, chiefly in commercial law, and group of persons, acting as a unit, may be treated as an artificial or legal person." *Warren Co. v. Heister, 219 La. 763, 54 S.2d 12." Radin Law Dictionary (1955), page 249.*

Can you imagine the early Congregation of the Apostles passing the hat to help Caesar out? To ask Yahweh's Congregation to collect a tax to finance every wicked thing on this earth, including the murder of millions of babies each year, is tyranny at its worst.

Because a 'person' has no access to any law outside the law creating it, then no constitutional arguments can ever be raised by the person, or corporation, successfully. Government is the person created by constitutions and no officer can make any arguments against the power establishing his office by using law which is not given him by the superior power. In the same vein, a 'person' created by legislation can use no law outside

the law creating it for any arguments against the superior power creating 'it'.

### **Organism or Organization?**

Is the body of the Messiah an Organism or an Organization? An organism is a living thing. I am living, and I am part of the body of the Messiah. The body of the Messiah is the Congregation. An incorporated Church is not an organism, but an organization. An organization is a creature of the State, and as such must hold allegiance to the creator of their organization.

All those who join with an organization that is under corporation status accept the debt of that organization, and become subject to that debt of another. I do not need to tell you what scripture tells us about this debt. Borrowing money, for expansion, from the ungodly bankers, is not a biblical principle and, as such, cannot be blessed by Yahweh.

Black's Law Dictionary, 5th Edition, defines 'organization' as a "corporation or government subdivision or agency, business trust, partnership or association...or any other legal or commercial entity". This definition shows that an organization (*even if it functions as a Congregation*) is recognized as commercial and public; an incorporated Church is legally interpreted as a commercial entity. But didn't the Messiah say "make not my Father's house an house of merchandise" (*John 2:16*)?

The real benefit the 501(c)(3) Church looks for with incorporation is the ability to borrow large amounts of debt capital. This enslaves every man, woman, and child whose name appears on the membership roles of the Church. How can this be? Because every officer and member of the Church pledges themselves as surety for the commercial debts of the Church, whether they know it or not. Why is this? Because the member's name that appears on the Church rolls is a beneficiary of

the Church 'services', which are also construed as commercial by the government (the term 'service' is a commercial term, and means either to get paid for an occupation, or it means an act giving assistance or advantage to another, which results in a benefit). Additionally, the 'tax-deductible contributions' are further evidence of the commercial connection to the corporation.

A maxim of law states: "He who accepts the benefit must also bear the burden," meaning if one accepts any benefit of the incorporated Church one is liable for the debts and acts of the church leadership. If the Church is sued and a cash settlement is ordered by the court, there is virtually no limit as to how far the court can extend its power to collect from the members, even if they are not the officers responsible for committing the civil crime. "For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light" (*Mat.11:30*).

"Although it was once said that 'a corporation is not indictable, but the particular members are' [Anon., 12 Mod. 559], it is now well settled that a corporation may be indicted for omission to perform a public duty imposed upon it by law." *Reg. V. Birmingham & G. Ry. Co., 3 Q.B. 233; New York & G.L.R. Co. v. State, 50 N.J.Law 303, 13 Atl. 1, affirmed in 53 N.J.Law, 244, 23 Atl. 168.*

In Yah'shua's day, the chief priests bound themselves to Caesar (*John 19:14-15*). Who were they a priest of? Caesar. Who did they minister for? Caesar. Who does the 501(c)(3) Church now minister for? "We have no king but Caesar." They have a United States flag in every one of their Churches. "We don't make political statements from the pulpit anymore, we don't ever preach against the one for whom we minister. We don't want to lose our tax-exempt status!" So, we had fascism in the Messiah's day, the same fascism we have today.

## Conclusion

It is time for the organized churches in this world to wake up to the fact that they have seriously compromised the headship of the Messiah by incorporating. Israelite Congregations do not need to obtain a special "operating license" to avoid taxation; the government simply cannot tax them to begin with! The Congregation is already immune to all taxation.

The Congregation of Yah'shua the Messiah is forbidden by Scripture to merge with the State because the two exist as separate entities. The State is not to claim jurisdiction over the Congregation, and the Congregation is not to place herself in such a position. The Congregation does not need to request of the State permission to exist as a legal entity. Its charter is the Bible, and its article of incorporation are the commandments of Yahweh. As Yah'shua said, "No man can serve two masters" (*Matthew 6:24*). If this principle applies to an individual, how much more so to his Congregation?

Congregation members should confront their pastors and elders on these issues. Do not let them simply brush you off with the claim that the subject has "been studied already," or that "we have always done it this way." Challenge them to produce a copy of the statutes which state that a Israelite Congregation must incorporate as an organization in order to carry out its Yahweh-ordained functions. They will not be able to do this, because such a law simply does not exist. You may find yourself unwelcome in your Congregation, but at least you will have the satisfaction of having stood for the truth and for the sole prerogative of the Messiah to govern His own Congregation.

## **Our Father's Word:**

The word Bible is derived from Biblia or the books, and is commonly used to signify the "Holy Scriptures", or the written Word of Yahweh. The word scriptures is derived from the Latin language.

The 1611 version of the Bible was translated under the auspices of King James. The Douay Version (1609-10) was the first Roman Catholic Bible in English. The King James Version was the culmination of earlier translations and revisions, and is deemed by most theologians and scholars as being a highly accurate version in terms of word for word translation.

The Bible will interpret itself if allowed to be read with an open mind to the whole truth and not to the narrow interpretations of others. The best rule of interpretation is to follow the Author's - Yahweh's instruction, which is to let His Holy Spirit do the teaching.

To do otherwise is to risk times entrenchment in whatever delusions that drives one, and in that respect, to become your own truth and way, taking upon yourself the many forms of false deity and becoming false Messiahs.

The Bible has been misinterpreted throughout history and there are those that still use these misinterpretations to bring forth further misconceptions, misunderstandings and a dissection of the true word of Yahweh. To be true to scripture, we must go to the original texts; the word of Yahweh, and understand its historical context before we can understand and teach others.

Christians must take the words of Paul to heart when he asked Timothy to (2:15): "Study to show thyself approved unto Yahweh, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth." It has been said that "the sacred page is not meant to be

the end, but only the means toward the end, which is knowing Yahweh himself."

Yahweh inspires us regardless of biblical inspiration and certainly no differently than He inspired the biblical writers. Yahweh has spoken through His prophets throughout history whether it is recorded in a canonical book or not. Progressive revelation shall never cease in the hearts of His people except in those that do not have the faith to believe it.

### **The Bible is not a Jewish Book:**

by *Bertrand L. Comporet*

The statement is commonly made, even by those who should know better, that we Christians owe a debt to the Jews, for we got our Bible and our religion from them. While many people have been deceived into believing this, it is completely false. Part of the mistake comes from the complete confusion in the minds of nearly all people as to just what they mean by Jew. Are they referring to people of a certain race, or referring to a people of a certain religion, for the two are not the same.

There are in Africa today, some pure blooded negroes who are Jews by religion; in India today there are some pure blooded Indians who are Jews, and there are in China today, some pure blooded Mongolians who are Jews by religion. Likewise, there are some people today who are racially of the stock we know as Jews, but who have been converted to other religions.

First let's consider the claim we got our Bible and our religion from the Jews, as meaning Jews by religion. It is certain we didn't get the New Testament from them, for it condemns the Jewish religion throughout all the New Testament. But did we get the Old Testament from them? No, for several reasons: in the first place, no Jew by religion existed before the return from the Babylonian captivity, shortly after 536 B.C. Their great historian

Josephus writes, "So the Jews prepared the work. Jew is the name they are called by from the day that they came up from Babylon." The only books of the Old Testament that were written after the return from Babylon are, Kings, Chronicles, Ezra and Nehemiah (*all of them historical, rather than doctrinal*) Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi. In none of these do the Jews receive anything but rebuke for their wickedness, for their apostasy from the religion of the Old Testament.

The late Rabbi Stephen F. Wise, formerly the Chief Rabbi of the United States said, "The return from Babylon and the introduction of the Babylonian Talmud mark the end of Hebrewism and the beginning of Judaism."

The learned Rabbi was correct in distinguishing the true religion of the Old Testament as Hebrewism for it was the religion of the real Hebrews, who were not Jews at all. Judaism, the religion of the Jews, is as the learned Rabbi says, based upon the Babylonian Talmud, which contains the supposed oral law. It was never reduced to writing as part of the Bible. This oral law gradually gained greater force among the Jews than the written law in the Bible, with which it often conflicted in The Messiah's' day, the Babylonian Talmud was known as the Tradition of the Elders.

This is why The Messiah told the Jews: "Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, this people honoreth Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. Howbeit, in vain do they worship Me, teaching for doctrines the Commandments of men. For laying aside the commandments of God that ye may keep your own tradition, ye make the Word of God of none effect through your tradition which ye have delivered" (*Mark 7:6-13*). "Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God" (*Matthew 22:29*).

"Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! for ye pay tithes of mint, anise and cumin and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy and faith" (*Matthew 23:23*).

This was the religion of the Jews. As the learned Rabbi Stephen F. Wise said, Judaism was distinguished from Hebrewism, the real religion of the Old Testament. Certainly Christianity took nothing from any Jewish religion for we have never taken any part of Christianity from the Talmud.

Well then, can it be said we got our Bible or our religion of Christianity from men of the Jewish race? No, it cannot. I haven't the time in the remainder of this lesson to give the Bible evidence in detail. I will have to reserve that for a later lesson. It can be clearly proven, both out of the historical books of the Bible and out of the only thorough history of the times written by one living when the facts were still well known. Josephus' "Antiquities of the Jews," tells that the Jews were a people distinct and separate from Yahweh's people Israel, although living among them.

The Jew were the Canaanite people who lived in Palestine, before Israel entered the Promised Land and who were not driven out. These Canaanite people, and the mixed offspring from intermarriage with the Israelites, were allowed to remain in the land while paying heavy tribute taxes.

The prophets, who wrote the books of the Old Testament, were all of pure Israelite stock, from one or another of the 12 tribes of Israel. Moses, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Habakkuk, Haggai, and Zechariah were of the tribe of Levi. Joshua and Samuel were of the tribe of Ephraim. Isaiah, Daniel, and Zephaniah were of the house of David, Jonah was of the tribe of Zebulun. Hosea was of the tribe of Issachar.

When the Assyrians conquered and deported the people of the ten northern tribes,

the Bible records that the Assyrians brought other people in from the Assyrian empire and settled them in Samaria, in place of the Israelites they had deported. Samaria is only the southern half of the territory occupied by these ten northern tribes. The northern half was Galilee and this was left vacant.

When the kingdom of Judah was later deported to Babylon, for their seventy years captivity, their land was left with very little population. While they were gone, the Edomites who were descendants of Esau, mixed with Canaanite people, were forced out of their own land by pressure of invading Arab tribes, and moved westward into the vacant lands of Judah, occupying the southern half of the former kingdom of Judah.

Therefore, when a portion of the two tribes of Judah and Benjamin returned from the Babylonian captivity, they were too few in numbers to drive out the warlike Edomites and had to try to squeeze into the very little territory they had left. It was too small for them, so what was left of the tribe of Judah took the little territory remaining around Jerusalem and Benjamin was pushed to the north. They could not move next door into Samaria, as this area was occupied by the peoples settled there by the Assyrians. Benjamin had to leapfrog over them into the vacant territory of Galilee.

That the apostles and the majority of Christian converts came from the Benjaminites should not surprise us. When the kingdom was split in two upon the death of Solomon, God said He would leave Benjamin with Judah so that the house of David should have a light before them. In The Messiah's' time the people of Benjamin were still the light bearers.

In the New Testament all of the apostles were of the tribe of Benjamin except Judas Iscariot, the only Jew among them. Judas came from the village of Kerioth in southern Judea. Iscariot is a corruption of Ish Kerioth,

man of Kerioth. Paul tells us that he was of the tribe of Benjamin and that the other apostles except Judas Iscariot were from Galilee where the tribe of Benjamin settled after the return from Babylon.

This is confirmed by the Messiah. In Matthew 15:24 He said, "I am not sent but unto the sheep of the house of Israel." In John chapter 10 the Messiah tells the Jews, "I am the good Shepherd and know My sheep and am known of Mine. But ye believe not because ye are not of My sheep, as I said unto you. My sheep hear My voice and I know them and they follow Me." From the Saviour's own lips we have the proof that the Jews are not of the tribes of Israel.

Note carefully that He does not say that their unbelief keeps them from being of His sheep. He says the exact opposite, that the reason why they do not believe is that they are not of His sheep, the house of Israel. Christianity and Judaism are completely and irreconcilably inconsistent. Whichever one is right, the other must be wrong for they mutually repudiate each other.

A great part of the Messiah's' reported Words are His denunciation of the Jews for their religion, which He tells them is not that of the Old Testament. In John 5:46 the Messiah told them, "Had ye believed in Moses, ye would have believed Me: for he wrote of Me." In Luke 16:31 the Messiah said, "If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded through one rose from the dead." He was right, He did rise from the dead, but to this day they are not persuaded.

It is therefore clear, we got neither our Bible nor our Christian religion, either in whole or in part from those who were Jews, either by religion or by race. We owe them no debt, for they gave us nothing.

### Supplementary Notes:

Rabbi Ben Zion Bokser wrote, "This is not an uncommon impression and one finds it sometimes among Jews as well as Christians - that Judaism is the religion of the Hebrew Bible. It is, of course, a fallacious impression. . . . Judaism is not the religion of the Bible" (*Judaism and the Christian Predicament, New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1967, p. 59*).

Rabbi Moshe M. Maggal, President, National Jewish Information Service wrote: ". . . you will notice the great difference between the Jewish and Christian religions. But these are not all. We consider the two religions so different that one excludes the other. . . . we emphasized that there is no such thing as a Judeo-Christian religion. . . . There is not any similarity between the two concepts" (*Letter of August 21, 1961*).

The London Jewish World of March 15, 1923 declared: "Fundamentally, Judaism is anti-Christian."

Rabbi Martin Siegel: "I am devoting my lecture in this seminar to a discussion of the possibility that we are now entering a Jewish century, a time when the spirit of the community, the non-ideological blend of the emotional and rational and the resistance to categories and forms will emerge through the forces of anti-nationalism to provide us with a new kind of society.

I call this process the Judaization of Christianity because Christianity will be the vehicle through which this society becomes Jewish" (*New York Magazine, January 18, 1972, p. 32*).

## **New Covenant Originally Written in Hebrew, not Greek:**

Every language possesses an inner structure, a specific flavour, and unique idioms reflecting a cultural background. These elements shape the way of thinking of those speaking or reading it. A language's idioms are only fully comprehended by people learned in that language. To translate language idioms directly into another language often makes it absurd and reveals the foreign origins of it.

Take the problem of idioms, for instance. What does "taking my hair" mean in English? Nothing at all, since it is from an idiom in Spanish, "tomar el pelo", meaning "to pull one's leg." In order to translate it dynamically, then, one must first know it was an idiom of speech, originally written in Spanish. Only then one may try to find an equivalent idiom in English.

On the other hand, what would happen if we assumed "tomar el pelo" was taken from the French? We would be at a loss to find in French anything such as "prenez les cheveux." We would conclude, erroneously, that the original came from a poor French, or some assumption like this. For this is exactly what happened with the New Covenant language, as we shall demonstrate.

The New Covenant's original language was neither Greek nor Aramaic, as popular wisdom goes, but Hebrew. The same Hebrew as the Tanach; the "Old" Covenant was written in. It is only natural that it should be Hebrew, since we are dealing with the same country, only in a latter period of its history.

Furthermore, Yah'shua was living in Judea, surrounded by Hebrew disciples, who had as their sacred text, a Tanach written almost entirely (*except for a few chapters in Daniel (2:4-7), in Hebrew*).

Internal proofs for Hebrew being the original language spoken by Yah'shua are

direct and convincing. We can take the New Covenant and prove this right away, in our own native language, be it English or Spanish or any other. There is no need for "experts" to tell us what to believe.

First, Scripture itself says the language of Yah'shua and His disciples was Hebrew - not Greek, nor Aramaic/Aramit. Luke 23:38: "And a superscription also was written over Him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE HEBREWS." If "Yah'shua spoke Aramaic" as many have been led to believe, why does it not list Aramaic here in Holy Scripture itself, since the sign was to the common folk, the vast majority of whom were Hebrew speaking Israelites?

John 5:2: "Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches." Notice that the Greek says here, as in every one of the quotations below, "hebraisti," (*obviously*), "Hebrew."

John 19:13: "When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Yah'shua forth, and sat down on the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha."

John 19:17: "And He bearing his stake went forth into a place called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha."

John 19:20: "Many of the Hebrews then read this title: for the place where Yah'shua was nailed was near to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin."

Acts 21:40: "And when he had given him permission, Saul stood on the stairs, and beckoned with the hand to the people. And when there was made a great silence, he spoke to them in the Hebrew language, saying..."

Acts 22:2: "(And when they heard that he spoke to them in the Hebrew language, they kept the more silence: and he saith,)"

Acts 26:14: "And when we had all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking to me, and saying in the Hebrew language, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the goads."

Revelation 9:11: "And they had a king over them, who is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew language is Abaddon, but in the Greek language he hath his name Apollyon."

Revelation 16:16: "And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Har Meguido (*Mount Meguido*) /'Armageddon'."

Whom will we trust: man or Yah'shua Himself? Yah'shua spoke in Hebrew to Paul. Paul said so! These verses state directly that Hebrew was the spoken language. What did Yah'shua refer to when He said in Mat. 5:18: "...not a jot/"yoot" nor a tittle (*the little "crown" on top of the yoot*) will pass..." Both refer to the Hebrew alphabet. Would He have referred to aspects of the Hebrew alphabet with an audience who spoke Aramaic or Greek, and thus would not have understood Him?

If I would try to tell an English speaking audience for example, that "Yah'shua" should be "accented" on the "u," very few people would understand since accents are almost nonexistent in English, except for a very few words like "attaché case" which are borrowed from other languages.

Despite this ample scriptural proof, various translations, especially the NIV, have falsified the original "Hebraisti" (*which does not require one to be a Greek scholar to understand it says "Hebrew"*) substituting it with "Aramaic."

Why? Is it the same reason they have changed the name of Yah'shua's half-brother Yaakov to "Saint James"? In honor of England's King James, who was about to supply the monies for the translation of the

Bible, and finally did not. Prior to this time in history, the letter "J" did not even exist.

Notwithstanding the internal proofs in the New Covenant itself, those from the Dead Sea Scrolls, the Talmud and those of Josephus, there are coins and inscriptions from the time of Yah'shua that nail "the Aramaic coffin" shut once and for all, for those who are after facts, and not biased, anti-Semitic-laden opinions. "The evidence provided by coins is also important in trying to evaluate the linguistic situation in the time of the Messiah.

Yaakov Meshorer, curator of the Numismatic Department of the Israel Museum, and its numismatic expert, has listed 215 Jewish coins in his catalogue. Of these, 99 have Hebrew inscriptions, only one has an Aramaic inscription! From the fourth century B.C. (*later Persian Period*) until the end of the Bar-Cochba Revolt in 135 A.D., the entire history of Jewish coinage, only one Jewish coin, minted during the reign of Alexander Jannaeus (103-76 B.C.) is inscribed in Aramaic. (*Our emphasis*)

"At Masada, Herod's stronghold overlooking the Dead Sea, archaeologists excavated from 1963 to 1965 under the direction of Professor Yigael Yadin. The epigraphical evidence is staggering: fragments of 14 scrolls, over 4,000 coins, and more than 700 ostraka (*inscribed pottery fragments*) in Hebrew, Aramaic, Greek, and Latin. Here too, the ratio of Hebrew to Aramaic is overwhelming." 1. Bivin and Blizzard Jr., op cit. pp. 55-56, 59-60.

In addition, there are over 5366 manuscripts of the New Covenant in Greek, each differing from the other and containing several hundred variants. However, in each one of these manuscripts there are idioms which are almost meaningless in Greek or Aramaic or in any language except in Hebrew! How can such a thing be explained unless it is

because the original language was indeed Hebrew?

There are many of these Hebraisms, one of the most common of them being "Son of man". What does "Son of man" mean in English, Spanish, German, in any language? Absolutely nothing! The expression "Ben Adam" means literally "son of Adam" and by extension "son of man", and "man", Adam being of course the first of mankind. In any street corner in Israel you may hear "here comes this Ben Adam", meaning "here comes this man." This example, which occurs no less than 92 times in the Tanak (*the Hebrew Scripture*) and 43 times in the New Covenant (*Cruden's Concordance*) is obviously the same Hebrew idiom.

It is said that the New Covenant was written in Koine Greek, "common Greek," because it is found to be a poor or inferior kind of Greek. When we find as many of these Hebraisms as there are there, we begin to understand that it is not Koine Greek written in the substratum of the text, but a Hebrew original which was almost literally translated into Greek, a process resulting in making it sound like some poor or inferior form of Greek. Further, there is little, if any evidence that such an inferior form of Greek language even existed at the time, particularly one that would account for the very complex use of grammar that is otherwise common throughout the New Covenant.

Let us take another example, the idiom "Peace be to you", appearing twelve times in the New Covenant. What kind of a greeting is "Peace be to you" in English, Spanish, French, or any other language? It is meaningless, again. Only in Hebrew does it make any real sense. This is the most common, everyday greeting in Israel today. The world famous "shalom", meaning literally "peace", is really an everyday greeting meaning anything from "Hi",

to "How are you?" according to the intonation and the mood of the speaker.

The third and last internal proof of the Hebrew character of the New Covenant is the use of two very Hebrew ways of speaking: that of repeating things twice, and the answering of a question with another question. Yah'shua did both quite often. In Matthew 27:46: "...My Elohim, my Elohim, why hast thou forsaken me?" and in Luke 20:2-3: "And spake unto him, saying, Tell me, by what authority doest thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority? And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing and answer me..." What is important to stress is that these two characteristics, especially the former, comes uniquely with the Hebrew. It does not appear in English, or in any European language, for instance.

There are several external sources, i.e., outside of Scripture, pointing to Hebrew as the written language of the New Covenant, as many outstanding scholars have most eloquently attested. These sources are: the testimony of the Church fathers and the Dead Sea Scrolls. We will examine these two external sources, albeit briefly.

Papias, bishop of Hierapolis, c. 150 A.D. said: "Matthew put down the words of the Lord in the Hebrew language, and others have translated them, each as best he could." Irenaeus (120-202 A.D.) Bishop of Lions, France. "Matthew, indeed, produced his Gospel written among the Hebrews in their own dialect."

Origen (c. 225 A.D.) said: "The first Gospel composed in the Hebrew language, was written by Matthew...for those who came to faith from Judaism." Eusebius, Bishop of Caesarea (c. 325 A.D.) "Matthew had first preached to the Hebrews, and when he was about to go to others also, he transmitted his Gospel in writing in his native [Hebrew]

language" (*Ecclesiastical History III 24, 6*). And, also, Ephiphanius, Jerome, translator of the Scripture into Latin, the so-called Vulgata version, said the same.

The Dead Sea Scrolls, discovered by an Arab shepherd boy in the caves of Qumran, in the Judean wilderness in 1947, contain a treasure load of Scripture: some 40,000 fragments of rolls, with 600 partial manuscripts, both scriptural as well as non-scriptural. "Of the ten major non-biblical scrolls published to date, only one, the Genesis Apocryphon, is in Aramaic.

The most recently published scroll, and the longest to date (*28 feet, equivalent to over 80 Old Covenant chapters*), is the now famous Temple Scroll, also written in Hebrew. If we compare the total number of pages in these ten sectarian scrolls, we again find an overwhelming ratio of Hebrew to Aramaic (*179 pages in the nine Hebrew scrolls to 22 pages of Aramaic in the Genesis Apocryphon*)."<sup>1</sup>

In a translation of the Dead Sea Scrolls, the early authors falsely state: "Prior to the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls, the dominant view of the Semitic languages of Palestine in this period was essentially as follows: Hebrew had died; it was no longer learned at mother's knee. It was known only by the educated classes through study, as educated medieval Europeans knew Latin. Rabbinic Hebrew...was considered a sort of scholarly invention...artificial, not the language of life put to the page. The spoken language of the Jews had in fact become Aramaic....

"The discovery of the Scrolls swept these false linguistic notions into the trash bin...the vast majority of the scrolls were Hebrew texts. Hebrew was manifestly the principal literary language for the Jews of this period. The new discoveries underlined the still living, breathing, even supple character of that language...proving that late Second-Temple

Jews used various dialects of Hebrew."<sup>2</sup> (*Our emphasis*)

Says a noted Jewish scholar—with no ax to grind: "What was the language of ordinary life of educated native Jews in Jerusalem and Judea in the period from 400 BCE to 150 CE? The evidence presented by Mishnaic Hebrew and its literature leaves no doubt that that language was Mishnaic Hebrew." (*Our emphasis*)

The Dead Sea Scrolls were so determinant and the evidence so overwhelming that no less an authority than The Oxford Dictionary of the Christian Church, in its first edition, in 1958, stated that "Hebrew had ceased to be a spoken language around the fourth century B.C."<sup>3</sup> However, in its third edition, in 1997 that had changed completely to: "Hebrew continued to be used as a spoken and written language...in the New Covenant period.

"To the Jewish people, it was Hebrew that was the 'Holy Tongue' whereas Aramaic was seen as 'the language of the Evil Force.'"<sup>2</sup> The Talmud states: "Four languages are of value: Greek for song, Latin for war, Aramaic for dirges, and Hebrew for speaking".<sup>3</sup> Thus, HEBREW WAS FOR SPEAKING, just as the New Covenant says in over a dozen verses above.

"A father was to speak to his sons in Hebrew and to teach him the Torah. Not to do so, would be "as if he had buried him."<sup>4</sup> "Whoever makes personal requests (*in prayer*) in Aramaic, the ministering angels pay no attention, since angels do not understand Aramaic."<sup>5</sup> The same Rabbi Gamaliel who was spoken of in Maasim ha Shlichim/Acts of the Sent ones/"Acts" 5:34-40, is quoted in the Talmud. When shown an Aramaic translation of Yov/"Job" he told the person who brought it: "bury it under the rubble."<sup>6</sup> Such was the low opinion of Jewish scholars of Aramaic vis-à-vis

Hebrew.

As a witness to the Second Temple period, the historian Josephus says that when news of the death of Tiberius is given to Agrippa, the news is given "in the Hebrew tongue" (*glosse te Hebraion (Gr.)*). (*Antiquities* 18, 228).

In another part he writes: "Adam...in Hebrew means..." (*Ant.* 1:34) and "Israel...in the Hebrew tongue..."<sup>7</sup> In sum, as far as the external evidence is concerned, both the Church Fathers as well as the recently discovered Dead Sea Scrolls state quite clearly and without any subtlety that Hebrew WAS the language spoken and written at the time of Yah'shua. If this is so, you will ask yourself, how did it come about that it is "known" by alleged *Christian* theologians that the New Covenant was originally written in Greek or Aramaic?

There are many false assumptions and prejudices leading to both the Greek and Aramaic theories. First of all, let us say that the issue of the New Covenant being written in Greek or Aramaic was non-existent prior to the Fourth or Fifth Century A.D. It has been a rather modern theory.

The question is: What basis does the "Aramaic theory" have? What are its external and internal proofs? The answer, quite unbelievably is: Almost none! There are a few, isolated borrowed words in Aramaic present in the New Covenant, which are far outweighed by its Hebrew words. It is like I would go about claiming that in Paraguay, the historically Spanish Speaking country in South America, that English is in fact the main language, simply because they have adopted or borrowed the English expressions of "weekend," and "O.K.!"

"Aramaisms" were exaggerated and still are, as noted Jewish lexicographer Moses Segal states: "Aramaic influence on the

Mishnaic Hebrew vocabulary has been exaggerated...it has been the fashion among writers on the subject to brand as an Aramaism any infrequent Hebrew word...Most of the 'Aramaisms' are as native in Hebrew as they are in Aramaic."<sup>1</sup> 1. Segal, Moses, *Mishnaic Hebrew Grammar*, p. 8.

J. Lee demolished the so-called "Aramaism" in Luke 6:7, maintained by scholars like Black, Fitzmayer and Wilcox to be an "Aramaic construction," quoting "23 parallel constructions in Greek literature of the period!" as author Brent Minge tells it. Time and again the Aramaic assumption has turned out to be a lemon, prompting Semitist Kenneth Kitchen to observe that "some 'Aramaisms' are actually Hebraisms in Aramaic."

"What is more, merely because a word does not appear in the Old Covenant Hebrew Bible, does not automatically make it a candidate for the Aramaic club. 'Hosanna' and 'gehenna' are words not found in that form in the Hebrew Old Covenant. Yet both occur in Mishnaic Hebrew, and are found, in identical form, in the modern Hebrew dictionary. Yet they were once erroneously claimed to be 'Aramaic.'"<sup>1</sup>

Finally, the in-famous "'Talitha cumi!" in Mark 5:41. "Kumi" [*cumi*] is the imperative form of the Hebrew verb "laakum." "Talitha" has nothing in itself that makes it "Aramaic"!

The late Professor David Flusser says, regarding Aramaic, in David Stern's commentary on this expression: "On this subject Professor David Flusser, an Orthodox Jewish scholar in Jerusalem, writes: "Until recently, it was believed by numerous scholars that the language spoken by *Jesus'* disciples was Aramaic.

It is possible that *Jesus* did, from time to time, make some small use of the Aramaic language. But during that period Hebrew was both the daily language and the language of

study. The Gospel of Mark contains a few possible Aramaic words, and this was what misled early scholars. Today, after the discovery of the Hebrew Ben Sira (*Ecclesiasticus*) [a book of the Apocrypha], of the Dead Sea Scrolls, and of the Bar Kokhba Letters, and in the light of more profound studies of the language of the Jewish Sages, it is accepted that most people were fluent in Hebrew." 2 (*Our emphasis*) 2. Minge, Brent, *Jesus spoke Hebrew (Busting the "Aramaic" Myth)*.

It can even be argued that what Yah'shua actually meant by that expression is: "Taalit, Talitha, takumi!" (*Get up, Talitha, arise!*) in Hebrew in the imperative tense and with a certain sense of urgency, hence the repetitious nature of the words.

As far as the "Greek theory" is concerned, the only basis one can think of is the fact that the written versions we have left to us are in that language, and that not one single copy remains of its Hebrew originals. One of the last ones (*of Matthew*) was burned publicly in Tours, France, in the mid-fifteenth century. This is admittedly a good enough basis, provided all we have said above would not exist, i.e., the above statements by the *church* fathers, the Hebraisms, the idioms, the discovering from the Dead Sea Scrolls, Josephus, etc.

In sum, what we have are a series of false assumptions by theologians, assumptions and, what is more, assumptions very probably based upon ugly, anti-Semitic prejudices. Historically, the great false *Church* has had a consistent record of being very anti-Semitic. Consider the Inquisition, with hundreds of thousands of "Jews" (*and professing Christians*) tortured and slaughtered simply because of their being followers of the Hebrew faith.

Consider the anti-Semitic statements by the fathers of the *Church*, such as Chrysostom, Eusebius, Origen, Cyril, Hyppolitus, and, yes, Martin Luther, the father of the Reform. "The Jews deserve the most severe penalties. Their synagogues should be razed to the ground, their homes destroyed. They themselves should be exiled to living in tents, like the gypsies. Their religious writings [the Old Covenant and the Talmud] should be taken away from them. The Rabbis should be forbidden to teach the Torah (*the Torah*). They should be forbidden to do any profession. Only the hardest, most strenuous work should be allowed to them. Their fortunes should be confiscated from them..." "A Jewish heart is as hard as a stick, a stone, as iron, as a devil." [Eric W. Gritsch, *Was Luther an Anti-Semite? Christian History Magazine, Vol. 12, No. 3, pp. 38-39*].

The famous historian, the late William Schirer, author of *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich*, in page 294, says one of the two factors explaining the behavior of the German *Church* towards the Jews during the Holocaust is Luther's influence.

Throughout the centuries there has been a satan-led motion away from anything Hebrew using two methods. First, the pretense that "Jewish" is equal to Hebrew. Second, by twisting all things Hebrew into something alleged to be *Christian [Jewish]*. In this spirit, the *Church* was forbidden to celebrate Passover on the "Jewish", i.e., scriptural dates set for it - in Hebrew, and had to do it on any other date EXCEPT the Hebrew one. Even today the *Church* celebrates "Easter," not Passover.

Those who insisted on celebrating Pessakh on the correct date were called "quatorcediman", an expression taken from the words meaning "fourteenth day of the first month", where Passover was ordained by

Yahweh to be celebrated. The Jewish sages' wisdom in the many-volumed Talmud, from where Yah'shua drew countless parables and examples was condemned by all within the *Church*, including Luther, as we just quoted; not merely condemned but burned and their owners with it. A sustained campaign of dejudaization began which continues to this day. We can only offer some brief highlights here:

\*Statements by almost all of the Fathers of the *Church* like Chrysostom, Hippolytus, Origen, Cyril, Eusebius (*"Abraham was a Christian, he was not a Jew"*.), Bishop Agobard, Luther.

\*The Jews were accused for twenty centuries of kidnapping *Christian* children and drinking their blood for Passover meals. (*The last time this accusation surfaced--would you believe it?-- was in 1992 in the Soviet Union.*)

\*Jews were accused of murdering Yahweh. [*Can you murder Yahweh!*] \*All sorts of doctrines were made judenrein (*free of Jews*), as if the New Covenant was never made with "the House of Israel and the House of Judah" but with the *Church*.

\*The appropriate name for the land of Israel was obliterated for the last 2,000 years at the bidding of Emperor Julius Caesar who swore to wipe the name of Judea from the face of the earth-- and he succeeded. Even *Christian* authors of today, still erroneously call Israel "Palestine"! Check the maps at the end of your Bible and see for yourself! Go to a *Christian* or Roman Catholic map inside an encyclopedia and check whether the name "Israel" or "Judea" exists. IT DOES NOT! It will say, ALMOST UNANIMOUSLY, "PALESTINE", although that name was imposed by Emperor Hadrian after the year 70 a.M (*"after Messiah"*), and should, therefore, not be valid for the period when Yah'shua was living in Israel and Judea.

\*The true name of our Lord was "Yah'shua". According to any Hebrew-English dictionary, "Yah'shua" means: "Yah's salvation, [*victory, deliverance*]."

What we have is a very Gentile-sounding "Jesus". What does "Jesus" mean? Nothing at all! You will say: "It is a translation." Then, how does Matitahu/Mat. 1:21 come to mean anything: "And they will call His name Jesus, because he came for salvation of his people." THAT VERSE DOES NOT MAKE SENSE, unless you write "Yah'shua" there!

\*The name of Yah'shua's half-brother was Jacob--apparently too Jewish for them--although there is a Jacob in every known language--so the anti-Semites gentilized it to "James", as in the book of "James" [*Where in Greek it says quite clearly EPISTOLE IAKOBUS.*]

Marcion, a historically recognized heretic within the *Church* created two Elohims: A Jewish Elohim, the Elohim of the "Old" Covenant, "Yahweh", a small deity, severe, specifically for the Jews; and a Gentile God-Elohim, Jesus, the God of Love. [*How many Elohims are there?*] However, the spirit of Marcion lives on in the *Church* to this day.

\*There are several references to Yah'shua speaking Hebrew in Scripture and Saul speaking Hebrew. Westcott and Hort, two New Age occultists (See *"New Age Versions of the Bible by G. Riplinger, A.V. Publications, 1993.*) substituted the word \*hebraisti\* with Aramaic, besides 5000-8000 other alterations on the Greek text from which modern translated versions are made.

The above shows us the "Aramaic" and "Greek" theories were not isolated mistakes or misconceptions, but very definitely, they have been and continue to be part of a worldwide, centuries-old campaign by the Satanic, anti-Hebrew [*modern anti-Semites*] within the *Church*.

## **Oracles Entrusted to Israelite Tribe of Judah, not to "Jews":**

A statement is commonly made by *Christians*, and even by many Israelites who should know better, "that we owe a debt to the Jews, for we got our Bible and our religion from them". While many people have been deceived into believing this, it is completely false. Part of the mistake comes from the complete confusion in the minds of nearly all people as to just what they mean by "Jew".

Are they referring to people of a certain race, or referring to a people of a certain religion, for the two are not the same. There are in Africa today, some pure blooded negroes who are Jews by religion and there are in China today, some pure blooded Mongolians who are Jews by religion. Likewise, there are some people today who are racially of the stock we know as Jews, but who have been converted to other religions.

First let's consider the claim that we got our Bible and our religion from the Jews, as meaning Jews by religion. It is certain we didn't get the New Covenant from them, for it condemns the Jewish religion throughout all of the New Covenant. But did we get the Old Covenant from them?

No, for several reasons. In the first place, no Jew by religion existed before the return from the Babylonian captivity, shortly after 536 B.C. Their great historian Josephus writes, "So the Jews prepared the work. Jew is the name they are called by from the day that they came up from Babylon."

The only books of the Old Covenant that were written after the return from Babylon are, Kings, Chronicles, Ezra and Nehemiah (all of them historical, rather than doctrinal) Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi. In none of these do the Jews receive anything but rebuke for their wickedness, for their apostasy from the religion of the Old Covenant. The late Rabbi Stephen

F. Wise, formerly the Chief Rabbi of the United States said, "The return from Babylon and the introduction of the Babylonian Talmud mark the end of Hebrewism and the beginning of Judaism."

The learned Rabbi was correct in distinguishing the true religion of the Old Covenant as Hebrewism for it was the religion of the real Hebrews, who were not Jews at all. Judaism, the religion of the Jews, is as the learned Rabbi says, based upon the Babylonian Talmud, which contains the supposed oral law. It was never reduced to writing as part of the Bible.

This oral law gradually gained greater force among the Jews than the written law in the Bible, with which it often conflicted in Yah'shua's day, and this Babylonian Talmud was known as the "Tradition of the Elders" which the Messiah rebuked them for.

This is why Yah'shua told the Jews: "Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoreth Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. Howbeit, in vain do they worship Me, teaching for doctrines the Commandments of men. For laying aside the commandments of Yahweh that ye may keep your own tradition, ye make the Word of Yahweh of none effect through your tradition which ye have delivered" (*Mark 7:6-13*). "Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of Yahweh" (*Matthew 22:29*).

*"Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites! for ye pay tithes of mint, anise and cumin and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy and faith" (Matthew 23:23).*

This was the religion of the Jews. As the learned Rabbi Stephen F. Wise said, Judaism was distinguished from Hebrewism, the real religion of the Old Covenant. Certainly *Christianity* took nothing from any Israelite

religion for it never took any part of its self-defined religion from the Talmud, but rather adopted many Jewish fables.

Well then, can it be said we got our Bible or our the religion of this *Christianity* from men of the Jewish race? No, it cannot. It can be clearly proven, both out of the historical books of the Bible and out of the only thorough history of the times written by one living when the facts were still well known. Josephus' "*Antiquities of the Jews*," tells that the Jews were a people distinct and separate from Yahweh's people of the tribes of Israel, although living among them. The Jew were the Canaanite people who lived in Palestine, before Israel entered the promised land and who were not driven out. These Canaanite people, and the mixed offspring from intermarriage with the Israelites, were allowed to remain in the land while paying heavy tribute taxes – to the true Israelites!

The prophets who wrote the books of the Old Covenant, were all of pure Israelite stock, from one or another of the 12 tribes of Israel. Moses, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Habakkuk, Haggai and Zechariah were of the tribe of Levi. Joshua and Samuel were of the tribe of Ephraim. Isaiah, Daniel and Zephaniah were of the house of David, Jonah was of the tribe of Zebulun. Hosea was of the tribe of Issachar.

When the Assyrians conquered and deported the people of the ten northern tribes, the Bible records that the Assyrians brought other people in from the Assyrian empire and settled them in Samaria, in place of the Israelites they had deported. Samaria is only the southern half of the territory occupied by these ten northern tribes. The northern half was Galilee and this was left vacant. When the kingdom of Judah was later deported to Babylon, for their seventy years captivity, their land was left with very little population. While they were gone, the Khazars who were

descendants of Esau, mixed with Canaanite people, were forced out of their own land by pressure of invading Arab tribes, and moved westward into the vacant lands of Judah, occupying the southern half of the former kingdom of Judah.

Therefore, when a portion of the two tribes of Judah and Benjamin returned from the Babylonian captivity, they were too few in numbers to drive out the warlike Khazars and had to try to squeeze into the very little territory they had left. It was too small for them, so what was left of the tribe of Judah took the little territory remaining around Jerusalem while Benjamin was pushed to the north. They could not move next door into Samaria, as this area was occupied by the peoples settled there by the Assyrians. Benjamin had to leapfrog over them into the vacant territory of Galilee.

That the apostles and the majority of early Congregation converts came from the Benjaminites should not surprise us. When the kingdom was split in two upon the death of Solomon, Yahweh said He would leave Benjamin with Judah so that the house of David should have a light before them. In Yah'shua's time the people of Benjamin were still the light bearers. In the New Covenant all of the apostles were of the tribe of Benjamin except Judas Iscariot, the only Jew among them. Judas came from the village of Kerioth in southern Judea. Iscariot is a corruption of Ish Kerioth, man of Kerioth. Paul tells us that he (*Paul*) was of the tribe of Benjamin and that the other apostles except Judas Iscariot were from Galilee, where the tribe of Benjamin settled after the return from Babylon.

This is confirmed by Yah'shua. In Matthew 15:24 He said, "I am not sent but unto the sheep of the house of Israel." In John chapter 10 Yah'shua tells the Jews, "I am the good Shepherd and know My sheep and am known of Mine. But ye [*Jews*] believe not

because ye are not of My sheep, as I said unto you. My sheep hear My voice and I know them and they follow Me." From the Savior's own lips we have the proof that the Jews are not of the tribes of Israel. Note carefully that He does not say that their unbelief keeps them from being of His sheep. He says the exact opposite, that the reason why they do not believe is that they are not of His sheep, the house of Israel.

Hebrewism of the true Israelites of Yahweh, and Judaism are completely and irreconcilably inconsistent. Whichever one is right, the other must be wrong for they mutually repudiate each other. A great part of Yah'shua's reported Words are His denunciation of the Jews for their religion, which He tells them is not that of the Old Covenant.

In John 5:46 Yah'shua told them, "Had ye believed in Moses, ye would have believed Me: for he wrote of Me." In Luke 16:31 Yah'shua said, "If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded through one rose from the dead." He was right, He did rise from the dead, but to this day they are not persuaded.

It is therefore clear, we got neither our Bible nor the true Israelite religion, either in whole or in part from those who were Jews, either by religion or by race. We owe them no debt, for they gave us nothing.

#### Supplementary Comments:

Rabbi Ben Zion Bokser wrote, "This is not an uncommon impression and one finds it sometimes among Jews as well as Christians - that Judaism is the religion of the Hebrew Bible. It is, of course, a fallacious impression. . . . Judaism is not the religion of the Bible" (*Judaism and the Christian Predicament, New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1967, p. 59*).

Rabbi Moshe M. Maggal, President, National Jewish Information Service wrote: ". . .

you will notice the great difference between the Jewish and Israelite religions. But these are not all. We consider the two religions so different that one excludes the other. . . we emphasized that there is no such thing as [an Israelite Jew or] a Judeo-Christian religion. . . . There is not any similarity between the two concepts" (*Letter of August 21, 1961*).

The *London Jewish World* of March 15, 1923 declared: "Fundamentally, Judaism is [*anti-Israelite and*] anti-Christian."

Rabbi Martin Siegel: "I am devoting my lecture in this seminar to a discussion of the possibility that we are now entering a Jewish century, a time when the spirit of the community, the non-ideological blend of the emotional and rational and the resistance to categories and forms will emerge through the forces of anti-nationalism to provide us with a new kind of society.

I call this process the Judaization of Christianity because Christianity will be the vehicle through which this society becomes Jewish [*meaning anti-Israelite*]." (*New York Magazine, January 18, 1972*).

## Has the Bible been Tampered With?

It is very revealing and interesting to study the supplemental foot-notes to the Catholic Encyclopaedia as entered by the Monks over the years (*and others*). Not because of any respect for the Catholic "doctrine", but because of the many instances of deliberate Bible tampering that the Monks admit to and why they did it during their 4th Century translation of the early Latin Vulgate! More recent discoveries such as the Dead Sea Scrolls add confirming proof.

Unlike the various Popes that gave the instructions for this activity, the Monks appear at least to have had sufficient conscience to have written down almost everything they were told to do in terms of "translation directives". A fairly well known example is in 1 John 5:7-8; "For there are three who bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. And there are three that bear witness on earth: His Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one".

In this case, the 4th century Monks make note that they were instructed by the then Pope to add the underlined words, and that it was their [*Papal*] furtherance of the false Trinity doctrine as well as further support of their [*Catholic*] dogma surrounding their fear-driven myth of heaven and hell that instigated the "amendment" to Scripture. This man-made alteration to our Scripture is only one of many examples that have survived almost all subsequent translations, including the KJ and NKJ.

Thankfully, the Messiah confirmed that "the Scripture cannot be broken" (*John 10:35*). But this does NOT mean that no one will try to break it! What it means is that we must expect such malicious Bible tampering attempts to occur and that we must be prepared and know how to deal with them. For example, we are

instructed to; "not be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit or by word or letter, as if from us [*the true apostles*]... let no one deceive you by any means... for the mystery of lawlessness is already at work... and for this reason Yahweh will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie" (*2 Thess. 2:1-12*).

"For false christs and false prophets will arise and show great signs and wonders, so as to deceive, if possible, even the elect" (*Matt. 24:24*). And in verse 25, the Messiah continues with, "see, I have told you beforehand". There are more warnings written by the apostles in the New Covenant concerning such attempts at deception by false apostles using false doctrine, than any other subject! Yet when you ask many the simple question of how one is to KNOW whether they are the elect, and therefore not deceived in their beliefs, the answer alludes most.

The Monks also admit to being "directed" to use the word "natural" as opposed to the more correct translation of "carnal" in many instances, as an attempt to make man feel incapable on his own, and thus dependent upon the Catholic church to save him, as it is expressed in the opening pages of their encyclopaedia, that, Yahweh's Word, the "Bible is not a sufficient guide to heaven"! Seeing that they KNEW they had altered it, the seemingly arrogant statement could then be made with some amount of certainty!

And a few others of the many such Bible tampering directives that the Monks admit to having followed are:

- translate three different original words with three different meanings into the one (*English*) word "Hell"; (*In recent years the Pope put out a "Papal Bull" effectively admitting that the entire concept of "Hell" was a misleading and unfortunate "error" made by early translators!*)

- use Holy Ghost which should have been Holy Spirit, to support the false personification of Yahweh's will;

- When referring to Holy Spirit, they were to personify it by the use of "he" rather than the correct "it", to support the false "Trinity" doctrine;

- use "fornication" or "fornicators" to replace the correct "adultery" or "adulterers", which was an attempt to have people think the subject was about their carnal behaviour when in fact it was referring to "spiritual" disobedience or obedience to other gods.;

- use "natural" to replace correct "carnal", causing people to believe that on their own, in their "natural" state as designed by Yahweh, they were evil and hopeless without the aid of their false church;

- use "soul" which is rooted in the Greek word "nephesh" which actually means "body", rather than using the word "spirit", which is something separate and distinct from the body, to instil false belief in the "immortal soul" or immortal body, thus contributing to their confused and fear-driven doctrine of life after death involving heaven and hell;

- And there are literally dozens more, including the big "justification", being that the "Pope" is divinely appointed and thus carries the authority to amend Yahweh's Word by his "Decree".

Another passage of Scripture that has been bastardized by improper punctuation, leads many to conclude that there is a transition at death such that death is not the end of life but rather the beginning of a new existence, is found in Luke 23:43, further contributing to the false doctrine of the "eternal soul". Yah'shua, speaking to the thief on the stake just before His death, said,

Luke 23:43, "...Assuredly, I say to you, today you will be with Me in Paradise."

However, the correct reading of this verse should be:

Luke 23:43, "... Assuredly, I say to you today, you will be with Me in Paradise."

If the Messiah went to Paradise that same day, He would have been in the very presence of Yahweh. But Yah'shua did not go to his Father that day, for He said to Mary three days later, after He had been raised from the dead, "...I have not yet ascended to My Father..." (*John 20:17*). The Messiah was resurrected for 40 days (*Acts 1:3*) and ascended to the Father only after his 40 days were fulfilled (*Acts 1:9-11*). Therefore, the thief and the Messiah were not together anywhere that day, except on the stake.

Did the Messiah contradict Himself? Notice the punctuation of Luke 23:43. The whole meaning of this verse revolves around the placement of the comma. The use of punctuation in the Bible is a relatively recent phenomenon. The early manuscripts of the scriptures did not use the comma. There was no punctuation used in the Greek and Hebrew manuscripts. The comma was not introduced until the 15th century, by Manutius, a learned printer, who lived in Venice.

Worldly translators of the Bible placed the punctuation marks we now have in our Bibles. Words were inspired by Yahweh, punctuation was not.

The change of a comma can make a great difference in the meaning of a sentence. If you write, "The teacher says my boy is no good," you mean one thing. You mean something very different, if you add two commas. "The teacher, says my boy, is no good." The words are the same, but the meaning is not.

Yah'shua did not promise that the thief would be with Him in Paradise that day. Yah'shua Himself did not go to Paradise that day but slept in the tomb. But on the day of the

crucifixion, the promise was given. "Today" while dying upon the stake, the Messiah promises the poor sinner, "...you will be with Me in Paradise." Instead of losing any meaning, the word "today" takes on a real significance. The comma belongs after the word "today."

A similar sentence construction is found in Zechariah. "Turn you to the strong hold, ye prisoners of hope: even today do I declare that I will render double unto thee" (*Zechariah 9:12*). The context shows that the rendering of "double" was not to take place on that "today" but was a future event. It is evident that "today" qualifies "declare." Likewise, if the "today" of Luke 23:43, which is a parallel to the language of Zechariah, is allowed to modify "say," there is no contradiction between the message to the thief and the words of Yah'shua to Mary.

When Yah'shua made this statement to the thief, it was in a reply to what the thief said to Yah'shua:

Luke 23:42-43, "Then he said to Yah'shua, "Lord, remember me when you come into your kingdom." And Yah'shua said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you today, you will be with me in Paradise."

Notice, the thief said "Lord, remember me when you come into your Kingdom." He did not say "when you go." He didn't go anywhere except the grave to go to sleep on that day. It is evident that the thief understood the Messiah to have taught that He would come again.

These accidental and deliberate alterations are examples of man's arrogance at work. So too, are other obvious misunderstandings such as defining the "Mark of the Beast" through total reliance on current English translations. The identity of the "Beast" as well as its "Mark" are revealed in a childish simple riddle when you go back and investigate from the perspective of the original words as originally written in their original language.

Now all of these examples are not to say that all of the translators have been wrong! That would be arrogant to the extreme! The translators have correctly translated the wrong words which were spuriously substituted for the original words by the 4th century Monks. If the translators would have had access to the original words when they conducted their translations, they undoubtedly would have made different choices.

That is also why the Catholics have tried so hard over the years to destroy and/or control all old original manuscripts, including their big fight over possession of the Dead Sea Scrolls found more recently. As it is, the established religions have fought tooth and nail to maintain what the current translations say, in order to prop up their story that our current Bibles are accurate in spite of these word substitutions by the Monks. It is like they will not admit to their prior mistakes even in spite of the overwhelming evidence now available.

We have only found one translation of the New Covenant aside from our own NIBEV (*Old Covenant is in process*) that has these words translated properly, and the translation is simply a direct translation of the original words from the Byzantine Greek Bible. (*The translation is being conducted by Fred Coulter of the Christian Biblical Church of God.*) We are informed that the translators are intending to use the original words from the Masoretic Text for translating the Old Covenant and have already confirmed their position on the words in question, plus others, all of which concur with our findings. Apparently these translators have been working on this new version for some time now and are finding all kinds of opposition from people that refuse to look past their existing belief systems.

The key here is not whether or not any current Bible translations are right or wrong translations of what they translated, but

whether or not they translated the original words, or the spuriously substituted ones. The traditional Christian ministries seem to be overwhelmingly in support of maintaining the status quo in spite of it being incorrect! After so many years of propagating false doctrines based upon misleading translations, it is like they feel too overwhelmed by the challenge to correct their obvious errors. Apparently they would rather hold on to their cherished, but known to be false beliefs!

Unfortunately, these arrogant Catholics have influenced the content of literally every version of the Bible currently in existence. The 4th Century Latin Vulgate (*Catholic*), which almost all current translations stem from (because for many years it was believed to be the oldest and a reliable version), contains the first historical use of such terms as "hell" and "soul". Earlier transcripts that have been more recently discovered, clearly evidence no such words as these.

Thankfully, "the Word of Yahweh endures forever" (*1 Peter 1:25*). But nowhere in what we refer to as our Bibles, does it say or even imply that it would endure in perfect form and content in one place called a Bible! In fact the Apostles warn us of this very deception more times that they warn us of any other subject in the New Covenant!

Centuries ago, after the Babylon captivity, a few of the Israelites, led by Zerubbabel, returned to Jerusalem, eager to rebuild the temple and return to the true worship of Yahweh. Ezra, who was a "ready scribe in the law of Moses" set about to collect and set forth a correct copy of the Scriptures. He "got together as many copies of the sacred writings as he could, and out of them all to set forth a correct edition...he took care of the following particulars: first he corrected [*by comparisons*] all the errors that had crept into these copies...Secondly, he...disposed them

[the books] in their proper order; and settled the canon of Scripture for his time" (*Clarke's Commentary*).

You see, all of our current Bibles have been and are continuing to be edited by self-appointed authoritarian bodies of men, primarily from the Latin Vulgate. Those bodies of men that have taken it upon themselves to be responsible for our current Bible translations are firstly, not appointed by Yahweh and therefore not infallible, and secondly, they have in many instances, even admitted to deliberate alterations, amendments, additions and omissions, all purposed for furtherance of their own misguided objectives! "...for the mystery of lawlessness is already at work".

We do no longer have the luxury of Ezra's presence to ensure that on its own, our Bible remains an accurate, correct canonization of Yahweh's authentic Word. We do have the promise of Yahweh that His Word endures forever, so we may have faith in the fact that He will enable those that diligently seek His authentic Word, to find it! We must recognize that we are to seek the original "intent" behind those words of Yahweh that we can prove are authentically His.

In our time, in order to do this; in order to "prove all things" as we are instructed to do, we must attempt by whatever possible means to discover any and all deliberate and known, as well as accidental alterations, amendments to, or omissions from of Yahweh's authentic Words, BEFORE we conclude the intent behind the meaning of the words written in our Bible - those words that we can simply and easily read in a book that has been edited, punctuated, re-edited and canonized by men. Otherwise we are of all people, the easiest targets for deception that Satan could hope for!

A Common Traditional Christian Commentary and supporting "Bible" Quote is:

“That one's body and soul do not remain united in death is clear in Genesis 35:18 relative to the death of Rachel: "And it came to pass, as her soul was in departing, (*for she died*) that she called his name Benoni:..."” End Quote:

The "body" and "soul" spoken of is an apparent mistranslation of the single Hebrew word "nephesh" or the Greek word "Soma", each sharing one identical meaning, into the two English words "body" and "soul" with two distinctly different meanings. The Hebrew word "nephesh" is the word used in the above quote, and it literally means "physical body" or "bodily object" or "living body" in English. The Greek word "Soma" means the same as nephesh, or "physical body" or "living body" in English.

Worldly translators, misled in part by the Catholic word substitutions, have mistakenly translated the words "nephesh" and "Soma" which both mean physical body, into the two words "soul" and "body" in many instances where it should have simply been "body", or in some cases "body" and "spirit". However, when the English word spirit would have been the proper translation, the Hebrew word "ruah" was originally used, or the Greek word "pneuma" was originally used, both of which are completely different in meaning and context to that of "nephesh" or "Soma".

"Ruah" was not used in this verse, "nephesh" was, hence the phrase is simply referring to the physical body. In other words you cannot separate the body from the body [soul] because it is one and the same. Thus it does remain united, and this verse simply says that Rachel's body was departing, or dying. This mistranslation is a furtherance of the deliberate confusion orchestrated by the Catholics concerning the "spirit". They originally alleged that because the Hebrew word "ruah" literally meant "spirit", and also literally meant "wind", and also literally meant

"breath", that they chose in some instances to use "soul" as the English equivalent to avoid confusion.

However, this reasoning is lame and falls apart, in that it would only have been proper if they were to have used the word "soul" as an alternative to "ruah", meaning spirit or wind, or breath, but they did not. They often used it as an alternative to the Hebrew "nephesh" or "physical body", as well as an alternative to the Greek "Soma" or "physical body".

This is totally out of context and dramatically affects the meaning of the entire subject matter being presented. The only way to reconcile the intent of the original writers is to ensure an understanding of their original language. These translations of the words that were originally intended to mean only the physical body, into a "soul" are nowhere near the original intent.

The mis-applications of the improper translations of these specific words are abundant. Without fail, the word soul is improperly used in place of the physical body or in some cases, in place of the word "spirit". To gain a full understanding of what was originally written in our Scriptures we must read these verses as they were written, not as they were translated from the substituted words placed into the Latin Vulgate by the Catholics.

When the word "soul" is used in our Bibles, it is always an improper translation, stemming back to early Platonism that was subsequently adopted by Rome. If the original Hebrew word was "ruah", or the original Greek word was "pneuma", then the English should say "spirit". If the original Hebrew was "nephesh" or the Greek was "Soma", then the English should be read as "body", specifically as the physical body.

For example, if read properly the Bible does not ever say "body and soul", rather it

says "body and spirit". And there are a great many instances when the word "body" should be used rather than "soul", which cannot but help change one's perspective on many passages.

Many of the early theologians and scholars of the professing Christian religion - including such men as Origen, Tertullian and Augustine - were closely associated with Platonism. Tertullian (A.D. 155-220), for example, wrote: "For some things are known even by nature: the immortality of the soul, for instance, is held by many...I may use, Therefore, the opinion of Plato, when he declares: 'Every soul is immortal'" (*The Ante-Nicene Fathers, vol. III*).

Notice, it is the opinion of Plato that is cited! Augustine of Hippo (A.D. 354-430) - held to be the greatest thinker of Christian antiquity - also taught the immaterial and spiritual nature of the human soul. But notice the source of his teachings. The Encyclopedia Britannica admits: "He (Augustine) fused the religion of the New Covenant with the Platonic tradition of Greek philosophy".

Why should those early professing Christian scholars have resorted to the opinions of a pagan Greek philosopher? The deep-seated teachings of centuries were not to be easily dislodged, even by Protestant reformers. Theologians and churchgoers alike persisted, for the most part, in their unquestioning embrace of the ideas passed down from the ancient pagan philosophers. As the Encyclopedia Britannica summarizes: "Traditional Western Philosophy, starting with the ancient Greeks...shaped the basic Western concepts of the soul".

Notice the warning of the apostle Paul, who once personally confronted Greek thinkers on Mars' Hill in ancient Athens (*Acts 17:15-34*). To the Greeks in Colosse in Asia Minor he wrote: "Beware lest any man spoil you through

philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after the Messiah" (*Colossians 2:8*).

Many well-intentioned people point out that they have relied totally and unquestionably upon the accuracy of their Bible to enable them to prove all things to their satisfaction. We are convinced that their efforts have indeed allowed them to reconcile a proof of all things so as to be consistent with their Bible translation, which translation has been conducted so as to be consistent with ancient pagan philosophy, but not consistent with Yahweh's originally inspired intent.

We are further convinced that it would be much more profitable for many, if their current beliefs were reconciled with an understanding of the intent of what was originally written in Yahweh's word as opposed to what it has been translated into.

We may also take comfort in these things. This task of discernment is not burdensome, as it is our duty to come to the full knowledge of Yahweh. Our Lord has promised us His Helper for this very cause! And He has promised that if we seek, we shall find, and if we ask, we shall receive! We are instructed to be faithful stewards of Yahweh's Word, which goes far beyond simply holding dearly to a man-made, man-edited, man-altered, printed version of it that can be "purchased" at our convenience!

Now we should all ask ourselves an original question: "Where have we sought, who have we asked, what have we found, what have we received, that we may KNOW that we have not been deceived? And then we might ask two more: "Have we been good stewards of Yahweh's authentic Word, or have we been guarding a man-made version of it?" And; "Have we been good and diligent students of Yahweh's authentic Word, or of that Word that we have found to be conveniently at our

disposal?"

Yahweh inspires us regardless of biblical inspiration and certainly no differently than He inspired the Biblical writers. Yahweh has spoken through His prophets throughout history whether it is recorded in a canonical book or not. Progressive revelation shall never cease in the hearts of His people except in those that do not have the faith to believe it.

### **Addendum; Bibles are only Milk**

When Yah'shua told the Pharisees, "Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me" (*John 5:39*), he was not talking about the King James Bible, the NIV, or any version of any bible, for bibles were not in existence at this time. The "scriptures" Yah'shua was referring to were the original Hebrew Old Covenant and the Greek Old Covenant (*the Septuagint*).

Copyright Yahweh's Word??? The mere fact that most bible translations are copyrighted proves the true motives of the Revision Committees of those particular translations (*240 and counting*); To change Yahweh's Word!

"To be copyrightable, a derivative work must be different enough from the original to be regarded as a 'new work' or must contain a substantial amount of new material. Making minor changes or additions of little substance to a pre-existing work will not qualify the work as a new version for copyright purposes." --The Derivative Copyright Law (*partial*).

Did you read that? In order for a bible to be copyrighted, it must be "substantially different" from the original texts! No wonder there are so many different doctrines going around today. No wonder there are so many contradictions in bibles! No wonder copyrighted bibles are so different from one another and say completely different things! They must be substantially different from one another in order

to be copyrighted! Dear reader, the copyrighted bible you have in your possession is not the Holy Scripture, it is a translation which is substantially different from the original scripture!

Copyright: "The legal protection given to authors and artists to prevent reproduction of their work without their consent. The owner of a copyright has the exclusive right to print, reprint, publish, copy and sell the material covered by the copyright." The New Standard Encyclopedia, volume 3, page 565.

First of all, who is the "owner" of Yahweh's Word? Well obviously, the one who created it; Yahweh. Certainly, not mere man. So how can any man copyright Yahweh's Word? The answer is he can't and he doesn't, because man can only copyright "their own words," and not the words of another. Therefore, copyrighted bibles contain the words of man and not the words of Yahweh.

Second, did you know if you quote from, or copy from, or preach from, one of these copyrighted bibles, without the written permission of the "author" of that work, you can be fined, imprisoned, and penalized for doing so? In other words, whoever owns the copyright to a bible is preventing you from repeating what is contained in that bible! Does mere man have the authority to prevent someone from sharing Yahweh's Word with others? No, he doesn't. But since copyrighted bibles contain the words of men; only some man's personal interpretation of the words of Yahweh, then this they can prevent others from using.

And think about this, if you have to get the bible "author's" permission, then obviously this work is "created" by some man who believes he himself is the "author" of this bible. He is basically saying, "Before you can preach Yahweh's Word, you must go through me and ask my permission!" This is basically what

copyrighted bibles demand!

Look at any copyrighted bible for proof of this. Here is the copyright notice to the New International Version (*the NIV Bible*):

The NIV text may be quoted in any form (*written, visual, electronic or audio*), up to and inclusive of five hundred (500) verses without express written permission of the publisher, providing the verses do not amount to a complete book of the Bible nor do the verses quoted account for twenty-five percent (25%) or more of the total text of the work in which they are quoted.

In other words, we must ask permission from the NIV bible publishers to use more than 25% of any book of the bible, or more than 500 verses. The NIV bible is preventing you from preaching over 500 verses of their bible, and is also preventing you from repeating an entire book of the bible! For example, if you wanted to read the entire book of Jude (*which contains only a total of 25 verses*) to a congregation, you are forbidden to do so from the NIV bible!!!

You will be persecuted if you do, because you would be quoting a "complete book" from their bible. The most you can quote from the book of Jude would be 25% of this book, which would you cannot read, print, or duplicate more than 6 verses from this book! You cannot read more than 25% of any book of their bible!

We must ask ourselves these questions, "Why are the publishers of copyrighted bibles threatening to persecute us if we quote from their bibles? Is this the character of someone who wants Yahweh's Word spread abroad to others? Or is this the character of someone who is preventing Yahweh's Word from being spread to others?"

How would you feel if some man said you could not preach Yahweh's Word unless you asked them for permission? Well, this is exactly what copyrighted bibles demand, on

pain of being fined, imprisoned, and penalized for preaching from their bibles. So, why give power to the beast? Why use some man's bible if he is threatening you? Why not go to scripture instead, where you will receive blessings and not cursings. Why not use scripture instead, where you need not worry about being persecuted from some man who thinks he owns the words you are quoting from?

How serious of an offense can copyright infringement be? According to the Copyright Law itself, from Title 17, Chapter 12, of the U.S.Code, Section 1204, the criminal offenses and penalties of someone who violates a copyright shall be fined not more than \$500,000 or imprisoned for not more than 5 years, or both, for the first offense; and shall be fined not more than \$1,000,000 or imprisoned for not more than 10 years, or both, for any subsequent offense.

You might ask, "Why are bibles copyrighted?" The answer is because merchants want to make money, and the only way for them to make a buck off of Yahweh's Word is to substantially change it and pass it off as the real thing!

Hosea 12:7, "He is a merchant, the balances of deceit are in his hand: he loveth to oppress."

Revelation 18:23, "...the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies...for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived."

Ecclesiasticus 26:29, "A merchant shall hardly keep himself from doing wrong; and an huckster shall not be freed from sin."

Now, to clarify, bibles do contain a lot of Yahweh's Truth, but they are also mixed with man's opinions and personal interpretations. It is possible to understand the True meaning of Yahweh's Word through some bibles, but it is a

lot more difficult to do than Yahweh intended. For example, one can understand the meaning of certain words by reading verses in context, and by comparing the use of those same words in other passages. Also, by studying the Greek and Hebrew Lexicons, one can understand more accurately certain words. So, even though words and meanings have been changed in bibles, it is possible to understand their true meaning, but it will take a lot more effort on the part of the reader.

We do use the King James bible, because it is not copyrighted. And it's New Covenant is taken from the Majority Text Manuscripts. But there are words in this bible that are watered down, and we must go to the original Greek, or at least a word for word translation, to really understand what it's saying.

Is it Possible to be Saved through Bibles? Well, yes, the facts surrounding the gospel of Yah'shua the Messiah, and the simplicity of salvation, are found intact even in the grossest perversions of bibles. It must be remembered, though, that the scriptures are a weapon in the hands of the servants of Yahweh (*Hebrews 4:12, Ephesians 6:17, 2 Timothy 3:16,*). It is also food that we may grow properly (*1 Peter 2:2, Hebrews 5:13-14*). It is in these areas, and many others, that bibles are weakened and corrupted. In fact, the very verses given above are altered in many new bible versions, thus weakening scripture. It is, therefore, possible to get saved through bibles, but you will never be a threat to the devil.

Hebrews 5:13-14, "For every one that useth milk is unskillful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil."

If you flip on a religious TV station, for example, or walk into a Church, you watch and listen to these guys expound on their theories of who Yahweh is, and all you're getting is the milk. You can't survive on milk. And if all you get is milk, you end up dying in the end, spiritually. This is why we fail to see the fruits of His Spirit being manifest in people today; the love, the peace, the joy, and the other fruits of His Spirit. If you look around the world today, there is no joy. The abundant life is gone. And it's all due to the fact that they haven't matured in the Word; they've stayed on the milk and have not eaten more solid food. If you keep someone on milk forever, they'll wind up dying on you. You have to move on to more solid food.

The same thing happens when you read from the Bible for instance. If you don't move on from its milk, and get into a more meatier substance (*i.e. Brenton's Edition of The Septuagint, and George Ricker Berry's Interlinear Greek English New Covenant*), you will end up dying, your bones start to get soft, your muscles start to wither; you're no longer exercising.

A soldier is always out there exercising so that he may be ready and useful for battle. But if you're going to use inferior tools, or if you're not going to be fully exercised, or you're only going to go through the motions but never really do them, then all you're ending up with is a fat, lazy military who, when the order is given to march, they sit back and say, "Well, according to my interpretation of this passage of the order, it doesn't mean this", and so the order is never executed.

Then another order comes down. Now you've got a second order when the first order hasn't even been executed yet, because we've re-interpreted the first order. When the second order comes down, we re-interpret that, and that one doesn't get executed. And this is what

we have today, many "soldiers of the Messiah" who do not exercise His commands.

Then where can we read Yahweh's Word? Basically, for the Old Covenant books, the Septuagint is the scripture cited by the Messiah and by the Apostles. As far as the New Covenant books are concerned, we should use the Interlinear Greek English New Covenant, because it is a transcription, not a translation. A transcription is done word for word as close to the original as possible. But as soon as you start translating to a bible, you are interjection your own knowledge and your own opinions.

For those who would like to get a copy of these scriptures, you can order them from most any book store. The following texts are not copyrighted, and are in the Public Domain. Here's more info for you about these books:

"The Septuagint with Apocrypha" Brenton's edition (*Sir Lancelot C.L. Brenton*), by Hendrickson Publishers. Originally published by Samuel Bagster & Sons, Ltd., London, 1851.

"Interlinear Greek-English New Covenant" (*King James Version*) with a Greek-English Lexicon and New Covenant Synonyms, by George Ricker Berry, published by Baker Books. Originally published by Handy Book Company, Reading Pennsylvania, 1897.

The Brenton Edition of the Septuagint is the most accurate. It has the Greek translation on one side of the page, and the English on the other. There are corrupted Septuagint manuscripts as well, so make sure you get the Brenton Edition.

Berry's Interlinear may be the most accurate. It has the Greek text, and under each Greek word is the English equivalent. It also has the King James Version text in the columns on the same page, so you can compare the differences side by side. Be aware, there are Interlinear bibles based upon

the minority texts (*based upon mainly 2 out of the 5,000 manuscripts found*) which are corrupted, so make sure you get the Berry's edition.

Note: Both of the above books are in the Public Domain. The 1897 Copyright notice on the George Ricker Berry is not in reference to the text itself, but only the added material, such as the introduction, index, glossary, and lexicon. The United States Public Domain and Copyright Rules state:

Works first published before January 1, 1923 with proper copyright notice entered the public domain no later than 75 years from the date copyright was first secured. Hence, all works whose copyrights were secured before 1923 are now in the public domain.

Of course we highly recommend our very own version, **NIBEV**.

## **Proving the Bible:**

The Bible is the world's best seller. It is the most widely distributed book on the planet. It is also the most misunderstood and maligned book ever written.

Millions of people believe the Bible is the inspired Word of Yahweh; to them, the Scriptures are inerrant - even though most have not read it in detail! But to others, the Bible is merely a collection of ancient, uninspired writings that may have some historical, poetic and inspirational value. Others still, think it is a Book of no positive value whatsoever.

One U.S. President, John Adams referred to it as "the Volume of Inspiration", really the unquestionable, authoritative Word of the living God. Bruce Baron wrote a book about the Bible, entitled "The Book Nobody Knows". Truly, many of those who claim to believe in the Bible don't really believe it - because they don't know what it says - they simply take the easy way out - they rely totally on some pastor, minister or false church to tell them what the Bible says, and how to apply it!

Many of the world's great men have been readers of the Bible and confessed that some of their beliefs and wisdom came from that Book. Abraham Lincoln, for instance, often read and quoted from the Bible. Winston Churchill understood the valuable teachings of the Bible, and said: "We reject with scorn all these learned and laboured myths that Moses was but a legendary figure. We believe that the most scientific view, the most up-to-date rationalistic conception [*theory*], will find its fullest satisfaction in taking the Bible story literally...We may be sure that all these things [mentioned in the Bible] happened just as they were set out according to Holy Writ; we may believe that they happened to people not so very different from ourselves, and that the impressions these people received were

faithfully recorded, and have been transmitted across the centuries with far more accuracy than many telegraphed accounts we read of the goings-on of today".

Churchill went on to make a challenge: "Let the men of science expand their knowledge and probe with their researches every detail of the records which have been preserved to us from these dim ages. All they will do is fortify the grand simplicity and essential accuracy of the recorded truths which have lighted so far the pilgrimage of man" (*Thoughts and Adventures*).

David said; "The words of Yahweh are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times" (Ps. 12:6). Yah'shua gave ample testimony as to the authenticity of the Scriptures. He referred to them as being the very Word of God [Yahweh]: "And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he [the Messiah] expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself" (*Luke 24:27*).

Paul said; "All scripture is given by inspiration of Yahweh, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of Yahweh may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works" (*2 Tim. 3:16,17*).

Humans visit museums and other repositories to view historic documents such as Britain's *Magna Carta* or America's *Declaration of Independence* and stand in awe at the sight of them. How much more should we be in awe of the very Words of our living God?

Through the prophet Isaiah, Yahweh revealed that He inspired the Bible in such a way as it would be misunderstood by those who disobey it. "Whom shall he teach knowledge? And to whom shall he make to understand doctrine? For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little" (*28:9-11*).

The Word of Yahweh is written so that its various pieces must be put together like a puzzle. All Scripture on any subject must be examined together, to get any understanding of it. This was done by Yahweh for two reasons. First, is a two part reason - to counter our inherent human laziness. If we could simply skim over the story flow and get a "quick-fix", most people would do just that. However, to acquire thorough understanding, the serious student must literally read the entirety of the Bible many times over. This complex "scattering" of information also serves to protect the Bible from deliberate tampering, as will be explained later.

Secondly, to provide Yahweh with one of the means by which He separates and judges His elect, as Isaiah declares: "That they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken" (*v. 13*). Yah'shua clarified this when He explained why He used parables: "To you [*His disciples - including those Elect of us*] it has been given to know the mystery of the Kingdom of Yahweh: but to those that are outside, all things come in parables, so that seeing they may see and not perceive, and hearing they may hear and not understand; lest they should turn, and their sins be forgiven them" (*Mark 4:11,12*).

Few in the world realize that this is not the only day of salvation. It is merely "a day of salvation" (*Isa. 49:8*). Yahweh is not trying to save the masses today. He is only calling out His Elect - His congregation (*the Greek word for congregation is Ekklesia, meaning "called out ones"*). Speaking to the few true Israelites, Yahweh says, "For the time has come for judgment to begin AT THE HOUSE OF Yahweh [*His Congregation*]; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those that do not obey the gospel of Yahweh?" (*1 Pet. 4:17*). Yahweh is now judging us - His Congregation - the Elect of the called out ones

ONLY (*those that have heeded the "call"*)!

What about the rest of the nearly 6 billion inhabitants? They are not being judged now. Their time will come later - "after the thousand years were finished".

Satan still holds full sway over their minds and hearts (*Rom. 11:8*). Yahweh has given the majority over to Satan to let him blind them at this time: "But even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, whose minds the god of this age [*Satan*] has blinded, who do not believe, lest the light of the gospel of the glory of the Messiah, who is the image of Yahweh, should shine on them" (*2 Cor. 4:3,4*).

How does Satan deceive the whole world (*Rev. 12:9*). He does it with false traditional Christianity: "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of the Messiah. And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light" (*2 Cor. 11:13-15*).

Just as Satan often quotes Scripture (*e.g., Matt. 4:6*), so do his ministers - the traditional Christians, but they always either quote it in isolation and out of context, or they put a clever but perverted twist on it: "For we are not as many" wrote Paul, "Which CORRUPT THE WORD OF Yahweh: but as of sincerity" (*2 Cor. 2:17*).

Yes Yahweh did inspire the Bible in such a way that the "worldly" wise and the DISOBEDIENT would misunderstand and stumble over it. The apostle Peter admitted that some of Paul's writings were not easy to understand: "Our beloved brother Paul, according to the WISDOM GIVEN to him, has written to you, as also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which those who are untaught [*by His Holy Spirit*] and unstable twist to their own destruction, as they do ALSO the rest of the Scriptures". *Pet. 3:15*.

Peter tells us how the Word of Yahweh was inspired: "We also have the prophetic word made more sure...knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of Yahweh spoke as they were moved by His Holy Spirit" (2 *Pet.* 1:20,21). In fact, most of the prophets did not even understand their own prophetic messages, as Daniel says: "Although I heard, I did not understand. Then I said, 'My Lord, what shall be the end of these things?' And He said, 'Go your way, Daniel, for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end'" (*Dan.* 12:8,9). Here, Daniel wrote his prophecies that not only he could not understand, Yahweh told him that none of his contemporaries would understand either!

Through the centuries, many have tried - unsuccessfully - to discredit or destroy the Bible, but "the Word of Yahweh endures forever" (1 *Pet.* 1:25). The Messiah said, "Heaven and earth shall pass away, but My words shall not pass away" (*Matt.* 24:35).

The Bible is not a science text book. Nonetheless, whatever the Scriptures mention in a scientific context, is always proven scientifically accurate. Neither is it a history book, but again, whatever is mentioned as history in the Bible has been proven accurate by secular history records and archaeology.

The British weekly newsmagazine *The Economist*, offers the common scientific view of creation: "According to modern physics, the universe began with a big bang, in which space and matter made a sudden explosive appearance - from literally nothing. There was a moment [shortly after] when all the material eventually used to create every star and galaxy could have been in the palm of an infinitely small hand" (*The Economist*, April 12, 1980).

Now look at the Bible explanation of the same event: "By faith we understand that the

worlds were framed by the word of Yahweh, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible" (*Heb.* 11:3). In plain language this verse says that Yahweh created the physical, material, tangible world that we see out of invisible, intangible, non-physical essence - what we might call, "spirit essence".

Of course, we do not know if Yahweh caused a "big bang" to occur at the creation of the universe or not. But the more scientists research the basic matter of our universe, the more they concur with the Bible teachings. When placed under extreme magnification, the smallest particles known (*common to ALL physical matter*), have PROVEN to be "highly organized energy patterns, giving the appearance of substance" to the material that is being studied. In other words, all things "visible", are in reality, made of things "invisible" - just as the Bible says!

Just how important is Yahweh's Word? "You shall not take the name of Yahweh your God in vain, for Yahweh will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain" (*Ex.* 20:7). But we see that Yahweh magnifies His Word, even above His name: "For You have magnified Your Word above all Your name" (*Ps.* 138:2).

David clarifies the real value in Yahweh's Word: "Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path" (*Ps.* 119:105). Without the light from Yahweh's Word this world would be in total spiritual darkness. It is only through His Word that we would ever come to know who He is, how to interact with Him, what His ultimate destiny for us is, and how to attain that incredible potential.

As to the accuracy of Bible translations and transcriptions over the years, we have a great many concerns about Bible translations. This is indeed an interesting and problematic topic. There are a great many die-hard traditional Christians that erroneously believe

that any Bible is a good representation of Yahweh's word, simply because the Messiah said that "His words will never pass away". And there are others that will figuratively fight to the death over specific versions.

Our humble research has determined that virtually every Bible that has been copyrighted is bound to be a poor version for two primary reasons. First, Yahweh, inspired His own words and He appointed His own writers. A legal copyright claims that the owner and author of the work in question is the copyright holder - which by legal definition, means not Yahweh. Second, a copyright also requires by law, that the copyrighted material either be a "completely new literary content", or that it be "significantly at variance from the original writing" to qualify for a copyright. Both of these requirements fairly well destroy any possibility of a copyrighted Bible being of any value at all - except to the commercial copyright owner.

Having said that, there are also non-copyrighted Bibles such as the King James Version, which is also seriously corrupted. The KJV and its copy-righted successor, the New King James Version, are easy English translations to read and can be useful but only if taken into context of the original language writings, which makes them very difficult for anyone that does not read Hebrew or Greek.

Basically, the only Bibles that are totally accurate, or at least as accurate as when they were last copied, are the original language texts that are still around in various museums and collections. Copies of these are available in the original languages but again unless you can read in those languages they are not of much practical use.

Of existing English Bibles, we find the following to be the least corrupted:

William Tyndale's 1525 version;  
The Matthew's Bible of 1537;

The Great Bible of 1539;  
The Geneva Bible of 1560; and  
The Bishop's Bible of 1568.

We have however, found certain mistakes and problems with each of these versions. Each original translator obviously did their best effort to try and translate, but in every case, they included translations at some places within their work where they may not have fully understood the original language, that reflected either their own personal opinions, or those of the established Christian *church* at the time. This makes the use of these Bibles difficult in some areas. The problems are much less than with the KJV, but they are still problems.

In our own humble efforts, that we call the Natural Israelite Bible (*non-copyrighted and free to the public*), we find our confidence in stating that we believe it to be the most accurate English translation currently available. We were able to take great advantage of the voluminous material more recently available on the internet to compare all of the above versions (*and several others*) with the oldest known, existing copies of the original Greek and Hebrew writings, and to "transliterate" the many discrepancies and known errors. The results were the impetus for even our own members changing many time-held beliefs - in other words, we made the necessary changes to reflect the original inspired words even when those were in direct opposition to much of our own previously held and published beliefs.

Serious Bible students, often ask how to be certain that the particular version or translation of the Bible they are reading, is in fact, a complete account of Yahweh's Inspired Word. Over the course of centuries, the books of the Old Covenant have been the subject of much controversy.

The Jewish scholars, the Catholic "authorities" and the Protestants, have had, and still maintain differing points of view as to

what books are to be included. (*Amazingly, most traditional Christians somehow agree as to the content of the New Covenant.*) There are three basic ways to absolutely PROVE that the various Old Covenant books in your Bible speak with Divine authority.

First, history records can be examined to prove two aspects of the Biblical accounts. Historical records and archaeological discoveries, evidence many topical events occurring as set forth in the Bible, as well as prove the fulfillment of 100% of the great many Bible Prophecies to date.

Second, many books of the Old Covenant are proved by either Yah'shua or one of His disciples, in the various New Covenant writings. Obviously, Yah'shua would not refer to any unauthentic Old Covenant books, nor would His disciples - those that He (*Yah'shua*) personally chose to begin His New Covenant Congregation.

Third, a simple comparison of the content and context of the various writings on similar topics, written independently by many different authors and often in isolation, sometimes decades or even centuries apart, will prove whether or not the books are Divinely Inspired - human beings on their own, have certain obvious limitations!

These three methods of proving the Bible, confirm and justify the two reasons why Yahweh chose to have the Bible written, in what at first may seem to be a somewhat haphazard manner. In fact, Yahweh inspired the prophet Isaiah to confirm this very fact: "Whom will He teach knowledge? And whom will He make to understand the message?...For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept, line upon line, line upon line, here a little, there a little" (28:9-11).

So the first of these two reasons, is to provide the reader with a series of logical steps; a fail-safe method to, "prove all things"

(1 *Thess. 5:21*), that are contained in the Bible. The second reason, is to literally "force" the sincere student of the Bible to, "search the Scriptures", as Yah'shua commanded in John 5:39, in order to obtain a complete understanding of a given topic, which of course, "proves all things" pertaining to that topic, including authenticity, (while it precludes tampering)!

This miraculously ingenious and deliberately perplex construction of the Inspired method of presenting the various revelations of Bible Truths, precludes any possibility of successful human tampering. No amount of human effort could ever conceive of a plan to deliberately alter the Bible, and then successfully orchestrate that plan without detection by Yahweh's elect.

How do we know this? Beyond the obvious - the very fact that if such a plan were to be considered on any given Bible topic, incredibly significant portions of many books (*in both Old and New Covenants*) would require changes in order to avoid obvious inconsistencies. Such changes could not possibly remain undetected. We know this absolutely, based on two reasons.

First, the entire Old Covenant was intact at the time of Yah'shua, and was confirmed by Yah'shua directly on many occasions, as well as by His disciples. We know by many New Covenant references, what many important Old Covenant Scriptures contained, in terms of content and context. We also know that current versions of the Old Covenant remain essentially accurate, at least to the point where any given topic of serious import, can still be examined adequately to "prove all things" pertaining to its authenticity. Also, many recent archaeological discoveries have proven that the existing Old Covenant, is nearly word for word intact in most reputable translations, when compared to the Masoretic Text, the

oldest verifiable records of the Hebrew Bible used in Yah'shua' time.

Second, although in many modern versions, the translations were in fact conducted by, on behalf of, or under some type of influence of organized religions with false motives. Yah'shua Himself, said quite emphatically, that, "the SCRIPTURE CANNOT BE BROKEN" (John 10:35). Yah'shua tells us in His Olivet Prophecy of events FOR OUR TIME however, that this very type of ATTEMPTED DECEPTION would occur! "For false Messiah's and false prophets will arise and show great signs and wonders, so as to DECEIVE, IF POSSIBLE, even the elect" (*Matthew 24:24*). Yahweh's elect CANNOT BE DECEIVED! And He continued in verse 25, to say: "See, I have told you beforehand".

In other words, we are to EXPECT such malicious Bible tampering behaviour by traditional "Christian" organizations! The MESSIAH SAID SO! The Messiah's chosen disciples went to great lengths to write more warnings in the New Covenant concerning such attempts at deception, by false apostles using false doctrines, than any other subject!

Paul, for example, gave a very strong warning in 2 Thess. 2:1-12, that we should, "not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit OR BY WORD OR BY LETTER, AS IF FROM US [*the true apostles*]...LET NO ONE DECEIVE YOU BY ANY MEANS...for the mystery of lawlessness IS ALREADY AT WORK...and for this reason Yahweh will send THEM STRONG DELUSION, that THEY [*the worldly wise and disobedient*] SHOULD BELIEVE THE LIE".

When testing the Bible, we must be cautious about EVERY WORD Of Yahweh - including Yahweh's warnings to study the Bible OURSELVES and to be doubly aware of the trappings of the false traditional Christian religions: "Even as there will be false teachers

among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them...and MANY will follow their destructive ways...By covetousness [greed] they will exploit you with DECEPTIVE WORDS;...But these like natural brute beasts made to be caught and destroyed, speak evil of the things they do not understand...They are spots and blemishes, carousing in their own deceptions while they feast with you, having eyes full of adultery and that cannot cease from sin...They have a heart trained in covetous practices...They have forsaken the right way and gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness...the latter end for them is worse than the beginning" (*2 Peter 2:1-22*).

The way of Balaam, referred to here, is speaking directly of sorcery (*Numbers 24:1*), and it refers to the many other ancient pagan myths and ritualistic traditions, practiced in honour of the sun god Baal, all of which were originally adopted into modern Christianity by the Roman Catholic church, as Christmas, Easter, Halloween, New Year's Day, Lenten Season and "Sun"day worship.

These are the false traditions that are an "abomination to Yahweh" which He "hates". The PROOF will be evident when you begin reading the Bible with a NEW MIND!

We are instructed to consider ourselves, "as servants of the Messiah and stewards of the mysteries of Yahweh" (*1 Cor. 4:1*). How are we to do this? "You [*Yahweh's elect*] are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read by all men; you are manifestly an epistle of the Messiah, ministered by us [the Messiah's disciples], written not with ink but by His Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of flesh, that is, of the heart. And WE HAVE SUCH TRUST [*faith*] through the Messiah toward Yahweh...who also made us sufficient as ministers of the New Covenant,

not of the letter but of His Spirit; for the letter kills, but His Spirit gives life" (2 Cor. 3:2-6).

Why can't Yahweh's stewards, His elect be deceived? "Moreover it is required in stewards that one be found FAITHFUL" (1 Cor. 4: 2). Yahweh's elect are faithful! Faithful in all things pertaining to the mysteries of Yahweh, including OBEDIENCE to all Biblical instruction!

If we are obedient to follow ALL of Yahweh's instructions pertaining to how we are to, "prove all things", we will, as Yahweh has promised, be blessed with His Spirit, our Helper, to DISCERN and thereby understand the Spiritual intent of ALL OF HIS REVEALED TRUTHS, even if (*and when*) false apostles have altered them, in an attempt to deceive us!

This is Yahweh's PROMISE, that the Messiah CONFIRMED, and the apostles RECONFIRMED! We can have ABSOLUTE FAITH, that when we OBEY Yahweh and "prove all things" according to His instructions, we WILL NOT BE DECEIVED in our efforts to prove the authenticity of, and to understand HIS REVEALED TRUTHS!

"But Yahweh has revealed them [His truths] to us THROUGH HIS SPIRIT. For His Spirit searches ALL THINGS, yes, the deep things of Yahweh...Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit that is from Yahweh, that we might know the things that have been FREELY GIVEN TO US BY Yahweh. These things we also speak, not in words which man's wisdom teaches but which His Holy Spirit TEACHES, comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of Yahweh, for they are foolishness to him; nor can he know them, because they are SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED" (1 Cor. 2:11-14).

There is one additional proof that can be demonstrated daily - the most convincing of all proofs, that the Bible is precisely what it claims

to be. Simply put, it is this: It works! Its laws, its promises, its prophecies, its explanations of what life is all about - they all work - consistently. This final proof of the Bible is in the DOING.

The only way to prove anything is to try it out - put it to the test! When you buy a new car, you take it for a test drive. So it is with the Bible - "put it through its paces" - see for yourself that it will DO everything it says it will. After all, you cannot expect it to somehow magically and instantly do everything for you - it is not a "quick fix" - it is a Way to a permanent, everlasting improvement. Yah'shua said: "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father [*and His truths*] except through Me [obedience to His Word]" (John 14:6).

When Yahweh commands us to "prove all things" (1 Thess. 5:21), He means literally to prove all things - including the authenticity of the Bible, and the many benefits promised in it. Notice how the same word is used in Luke 14:19, where a person is quoted as saying, "I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them". This was ACTIVE proof - beyond the intellectual and obvious proof that he had actually purchased the oxen. We must go beyond the intellectual understanding of the Bible and PUT IT INTO PRACTICE to ACTIVELY PROVE it to be of benefit in our lives!

Consider the Sabbath - it particularly goes against the grain of human nature. A person who does not keep it can think of endless reasons why he would never want to keep it: It would interfere with work, make him "look strange" to others, ruin his weekend, interfere with hobbies, washing the car, cutting the grass or shopping.

Only a person who keeps the Sabbath can understand what a blessing it is. The same holds true for the annual Holy Days and

festivals ordained in the Bible. And the same holds true for any of Yahweh's laws, His precepts, His statutes and His instructions.

A person who does not keep them is like someone who strolls past an elaborate banquet table without trying the food - he cannot possibly know how good it is. "O taste and see that Yahweh is good", exclaimed David in Psalm 34:8. Try Yahweh - try Him out! See how it works - you will like it!

The more we put the Bible to work in our lives, the more we absorb its teachings, the MORE CONFIDENCE we have in it, and the more our FAITH will be INCREASED!

Millions of people do not believe the Bible will be of any practical use to them - but they have never tried it! Instead, they try all kinds of other stop-gap methods of filling their needs - they absorb all of the WAYS OF THIS WORLD, and generally end up with LESS and LESS CONFIDENCE in themselves and the world around them.

"If anyone wants to do [yes DO - action comes first] His [Yahweh's] Will," Yah'shua said, then "he shall KNOW concerning the doctrine, whether it is from Yahweh" (*John 7:17*). If anyone will put the Bible to the test; practice it, live by it, he shall absolutely KNOW that it is the inspired Word of the Living God. That is the one great PROOF offered only in the Bible.

Our HOPE then, is to be Yahweh's ELECT, those that cannot be deceived! Members of "the general assembly and congregation of the firstborn who are registered in Heaven" (*Hebrews 12:23*), to whom ALL TRUTH is revealed!

Our DUTY, as faithful stewards, is that we have been ENTRUSTED to preserve Yahweh's Word, and COMMANDED by Yahweh to "consider one another..." and to, "exhort one another", that we might FREELY SHARE WITH ONE ANOTHER, ALL OF OUR

REVEALED UNDERSTANDING - our FAITH, which, "is the substance of things HOPED for, the EVIDENCE of things not seen" (*Hebrews 10:24,25; 11:1*).

One final bit of cautionary advice. The Bible instructs us that "THE WORD OF Yahweh IS LIVING AND POWERFUL" (*Hebrews 4:12*). And that "EVERY WORD OF Yahweh IS PURE [not confusing]" (*Prov. 30:5*). "And it is His Spirit that bears witness, BECAUSE His Spirit IS TRUTH" (*1 John 5:6*). In other words, we will KNOW when we understand the TRUTH of Yahweh's Word, because His Spirit will bear witness - will MAKE IT KNOWN to us! This is one of Yahweh's promises! And we certainly trust that Yahweh's Spirit will NOT bear false witness, or lead us to misunderstand His Word!

Yahweh's Living Word is pure, powerful and simple. Within the Bible, Yahweh's messages are always presented so as to be EASILY UNDERSTOOD BY EVERYONE WHO TAKES THE TIME TO READ THEM - not shrouded in some clouds of obscurity. Yahweh did Inspire the Bible as a sort of "operator's manual" for EVERYONE - not just an elite few!

There are great volumes of encyclopedia, books and other writings on the market, written by self-proclaimed "experts" and various religious "theologians", all purporting to "unveil", or "reveal", or "finally discover the truth", about some part of Yahweh's so-called "mysterious" Word. Or sometimes, in their arrogance, they claim simply to be, "explaining what the common man does not understand", or "finds confusing"!

These "experts", almost universally DISPROVE themselves, as soon as they say, or imply, that Yahweh's Word is confusing, or that THEY in their own wisdom, have finally discovered, unveiled, or revealed, some aspect

of His "hidden truths"! This is pure arrogance and absolutely, NOT Biblical! Yahweh says that ALL of His revealed truths are PURE AND SIMPLE, SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED, AND FREELY AVAILABLE TO EVERYONE WHO WILL READ HIS WORD!

Another simple test for most of these "expert" writings, is that a true study guide of any Bible topic, should be SHORT, EASY to understand, and FREE! NOT SOLD at a price, not based on vague innuendos, nor difficult to understand, nor many times longer than the Bible itself, as most of these volumes are! Think of a "book report". It is a SHORT guide, or a BRIEF introduction to what the book, or in the case of the Bible, a topic is all about.

Yahweh COMMANDS us to SHARE our understandings of His revealed truths FREE! "FREELY you have received, FREELY GIVE...That we might know the things that have been FREELY GIVEN TO US BY Yahweh"! (*Matthew 10:8; Romans 2:12*). Yahweh further COMMANDS us to avoid being deceived by these obviously spurious, and often cleverly deceptive writings. And He tells us why!

We are COMMANDED, to search the Scriptures diligently OURSELVES, with all readiness of mind, in order for us to "PROVE ALL THINGS" (*1 Thess. 5:21*). Yah'shua further COMMANDS us in Matthew 23:8, "But you, do not be called Rabbi [*father, priest, minister or pastor*]; for ONE IS YOUR TEACHER, THE MESSIAH, and YOU ARE ALL BRETHREN".

Why? "Now the purpose of the COMMANDMENT is love from a pure heart, from a good [*clear*] conscience, and from sincere faith, from which some, having strayed, have turned to IDLE TALK, DESIRING TO BE TEACHERS OF THE LAW, understanding neither what they say nor the things which they affirm" (*1 Tim. 1:5*).

In other words, there are a great many people out there, often motivated in part, by money, who DESIRE to be "teachers of the law" - who desire to be regarded as someone important, or as one of only a "special few", that are able to understand, and thereby earn a living from Yahweh's Word! This is absolutely SINFUL!

The truth is, the Messiah is our ONLY TEACHER! And HE TEACHES FREE! We must always seek the truth in the Messiah - in the Word of Yahweh, not in men's words! These are the Commandments of the Messiah! And Yah'shua said in John 14:15, "If you love Me, keep My commandments"!

"If we love one another, Yahweh abides in us, and His love has been perfected in us...For this is the love of Yahweh, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome" (*1 John 4:12; 5:3*).

This book is written with these Biblical Commands in mind. It is merely, a brief introduction to many Bible topics, of typically common interest. Each topic is presented primarily from direct Biblical quotes, with a minimum of explanatory information.

I HOPE this material will inspire the reader's own prayerful study of Yahweh's Word, and lead many to a new-found FAITH; for this is the LOVE of Yahweh, a truly enjoyable COMMANDMENT!

### **Proving The Bible Part II**

When Yahweh uses numbers in Scripture, it is done with design and spiritual significance beyond simply the numerical value. For example the number seven denotes spiritual perfection; standing for completeness, fullness and totality. This number is quite conspicuous throughout the Bible; it begins with seven days of creation and ends with Revelation - a book of sevens: seven letters to

seven congregations, seven candlesticks, seven trumpets, seven seals, seven vials, etc.

The weekly Sabbath is the seventh day, the land Sabbath is the seventh year, the Jubilee is seven times seven years, or forty-nine years, the seventh month of Yahweh's calendar is especially Holy - it has four feasts containing four Holy Days. The Leviticus system was built on cycles of sevens: Jericho fell after seven priests, with seven trumpets, marched for seven days, and blew their trumpets seven times on the seventh day.

The number twelve is connected with government, government perfection and organized beginnings throughout the Bible: the 12 tribes of Israel, the 12 Apostles, 12 gates, 12 times 12,000 for the 144,000 in Revelation, and so on. There is important and interesting design for other numbers as well.

The Bible today has a total of 66 books: 39 in the Old Covenant, and 27 in the New. Does it not seem odd that Yahweh would inspire 66 books in the Bible - especially when 600 and 60 and 6 represents the mark of the Beast? Would Yahweh use the number of a man on His Word?

Simply because everything Yahweh gives man is soon corrupted, distorted, or even destroyed by man! Man seems preoccupied with striving to improve on what Yahweh has designed and created. This holds true to the number and order of the books originally given to us by Yahweh for His Bible. What author would place the last chapters of his book in the middle, or the middle ones at the end? Yet this is what happened to the Bible - mainly due to the Greeks and Egyptians.

Yahweh designed the books to be read in a purposeful sequence. He also designed the number of books, to allow another timeless proof of their Divine origin. The design we use today was not found in the original Hebrew, nor is it found in modern Jewish Bibles. The

Hebrews have been mainly faithful in their keeping of the oracles of Yahweh.

The Old Covenant books currently found in the King James version number 39. There is overwhelming evidence to support that when the canon was first completed, there was only 22. The historian Josephus said the Old Covenant contained only 22 books: "We have not a countless number of books, but only 22 containing the history of every age, which are justly accredited as Divine".

Now don't think for a moment that Josephus is speaking about less material than we now have. We have the exact contents of the original canon known to Josephus, but not the original numbering. For example, we always count the minor prophets (*the books of Hosea to Malachi*) as 12 books; but the ancient Hebrews always counted them as one book. The books of Chronicles and the other historical books were not divided into two as they are now. It is by this RE-dividing various books that we have arrived at the present number of 39 Old Covenant books.

There is nothing wrong with making divisions within some books, as long as they are left in their proper order and in the major numerical division assigned to them by Yahweh. Uninspired men, ignorant of Yahweh's purpose, have displaced many books from their proper contextual order.

Yahweh gave us this special number of 22 books to prove His Word was inspired! Another way to prove that the Bible is inspired is prophecy. Most prophecy is dual; with historic and end-time fulfillment. The fact that Yahweh has always done what He said He would do, is proof that the Bible is the Word of Yahweh.

The New Covenant shows that the authority to preserve the Bible was Divinely given to the Hebrews: "unto them [*the Hebrews*] were committed the ORACLES OF

Yahweh" (*Rom. 3:2*). Oracles, was a common expression for the canonical Scriptures. Webster's dictionary defines it as, "a Divine announcement, the Scriptures".

Statements from the Messiah and the Apostles always presuppose that the Hebrews had the Divine Scriptures. There was never any doubt about it at the time of the Messiah. The Messiah said: "Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me" (*John 5:39*). "And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he [the Messiah] expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself" (*Luke 24:27*).

The "book of the law" was originally put inside the ark, and years later, kept in the temple. The preservation of the Divine canon became a priestly responsibility (*Deut. 31:24-26*). None of the books of the current Catholic Apocrypha were ever accepted as part of the Divine canon.

The old Covenant was divided into three sections, known as the TRIPARTITE. The first division is the "Law", or the first five books - Genesis through Deuteronomy. The second division is the "Prophets", major and minor. The Prophets consist of: Joshua and Judges, counted as 1 book; Judges being considered a continuation, as both describe a period when Israel had no kings; Samuel and Kings, called the "book of the kingdoms", also counted as one book; Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and the 12 minor prophets (*Hosea to Malachi*).

The third division is the "Writings", sometimes called the "Psalms". There are 12 books in the Writings: Psalms, Proverbs, Job, Song of Solomon, Ruth, Lamentations, Ecclesiastes, Esther, Daniel, Ezra/Nehemiah (*counted as 1*) and Chronicles (*also counted as one*). This totals 22 books, canonized and completed in the days of Ezra and Nehemiah.

Yah'shua set His seal on this Tripartite division: "And he [*the Messiah*] said unto them, These are the words which I speak unto you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning me. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures" (*Luke 24:44-45*).

Before Judah went into captivity in 604-585 B.C., Hilkiah the high priest came across neglected scrolls of Yahweh's Law. Recognizing the importance of his find, he had his copy taken to the king. King Josiah expressed grief after hearing it read, showing that neither of them had ever seen it before. Notice what Clarke's Commentary has to say about it: "And if the king and the high priest, who were both men of eminent piety, were without this part of the Scripture, it can scarcely be thought that anyone else then had it. But so religious a prince as King Josiah could not leave this long un-remedied.

By his order copies were written out from the original; and search being made for all other parts of the Holy Scripture...and thenceforth copies of the whole became multiplied among the people; all those who were desirous of knowing the laws of Yahweh, either writing them out themselves, or procuring others to do so...the sacred writings were got into private hands, who carried them with them into captivity. That Daniel had a copy with him in Babylon is certain, for he quotes the law, and also makes mention of the prophecies of Jeremiah, which he could not do had he never seen them".

These standard copies remained intact until the temple buildings were destroyed by Titus in A.D. 70. All the synagogues in the first century maintained the same canon of Scripture. With the exception of a few others who added to the genealogical tables in

Chronicles, Ezra is looked upon as the most important man responsible for the final formation of the Old Covenant.

After the Babylonian captivity, a few of the Hebrews, led by Zerubbabel, returned to Jerusalem, eager to return to Yahweh's festivals and worship, and to rebuild the temple (*Ezra 1-7*). Ezra was "a ready scribe in the law of Moses" (*Ezra 7:6*), and "a scribe of the words of the commandments of Yahweh, and of his statutes to Israel" (*v. 11*). He was a descendant of the priestly line of Aaron. Yahweh used Ezra to restore the law. "For Ezra had prepared his heart to seek the law of Yahweh, and to do it, and to teach in Israel statutes and judgments" (*7:10*).

After the captivity, Ezra set about to collect and set forth a correct copy of the Scriptures. He "got together as many copies of the sacred writings as he could, and out of them all to set forth a correct edition...he took care of the following particulars: First he corrected [*by comparisons*] all the errors that had crept into these copies... Secondly, he...disposed them [*the books*] in their proper order; and settled the canon of Scripture for his time" (*Clarke's Commentary*).

Ezra did some editing, adding such things as the names of the Edomite/Khazar kings down to the time of Saul (*Gen. 36:31-39*), which information was obviously not known at the time of its original writing. As well as at the end of Deuteronomy we find this written: "And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom Yahweh knew face to face" (*34:10*). A statement like that had to be added many years after Joshua.

We know Moses wrote most of Deuteronomy, but Joshua probably added much of the last chapter after his death. "And Joshua wrote these words in the book of the law of Yahweh, and took a great stone, and set

it up there under an oak, that was by the sanctuary of Yahweh" (*Josh. 24:26*).

When Nehemiah came to Jerusalem as governor over Judea, he greatly strengthened Ezra's position, being concerned with getting the people back to Yahweh's ways. He instituted a number of reforms, such as strict observance of the Sabbaths, tithing for the Festivals and for the poor, and he was able to put a strong united nation into the hands of the ruling body set up by Ezra, called the "great synagogue", or "great assembly". This great assembly consisted of 120 men; priests and elders of whom Ezra was chief. Clarke's Commentary says that Daniel and his three friends Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego were among its members.

Inspired by Yahweh, Ezra, Nehemiah and the great assembly arranged the books in their Tripartite divisions, positioning the 22 books in their proper order. Prior to this inspired rearranging, many others had added to the original writings of the Law by Moses, such as Joshua, Samuel, Solomon, Hezekiah (*Prov. 25:1*), Jeremiah and Isaiah.

Samuel also added to the Writings. "Then Samuel told the people the manner of the kingdom, and wrote it in a book, and laid it up before Yahweh" (*1 Sam. 10:25*). Solomon added much to the Writings, but not all the proverbs originated with Solomon (*Prov. 30:1; 31:1*).

He (*Solomon*) searched the books of the wise men of old and wrote many proverbs. "Yea, he gave good heed, and sought out, and set in order many proverbs" (*Eccl. 12:9*). He said he wrote certain sections of proverbs so the people might "understand a proverb, and the interpretation; the words of the wise" (*Prov. 1:6*).

Even though others had a hand in some of the canonization, Ezra, and the great assembly, under Divine inspiration, completed

the most important restoration and finalizing, bringing the books up to date and adding the final touches. Malachi was added later, since he lived near the end of Nehemiah's life. His inspired book, written after the temple was built, was added last, and placed last, among the minor prophets. There were also things in Chronicles added years later, because the genealogy of the sons of Zerubbabel is carried down for many generations.

The completed Old Covenant was determined by the priests to have 22 books. It is no coincidence that the Hebrew alphabet has 22 letters. As we have seen, the Messiah and the Apostles put their stamp of approval on these 22 books. Since the Catholic Apocrypha was written in Greek, it was disqualified from the original writings. "In fact, Josephus states that nothing had been added to Scripture `from Artaxerxes until our time.' While the Apocrypha was known to Yah'shua and His disciples, they never quoted from it as authoritative Scripture" (*KJV Study Bible*).

The Hebrews regarded the 22 books as a type of alphabetic acrostic, when each letter of the alphabet is used in sequential order to begin a sentence or verse. In Hebrew acrostics, each letter is used at the beginning of a sentence or group of sentences. In complete Hebrew acrostics, there are always 22 sentences, or multiples of 22, each beginning with the 22 successive letters of the alphabet.

In acrostic Psalms, each verse begins with a consecutive letter, as in Psalms 111 and 112, for example. Each has 22 lines and each line begins with a successive letter of the alphabet. These two Psalms show us that Yahweh will redeem and protect His people who are diligently obeying and holding fast to His commandments.

Psalms 119 is in a class all by itself, divided into 22 sections of 8 verses each. The

8 verses in each group begin with the first letter (*Aleph*), continuing through the first 8 letters, through the entire Psalm of 176 verses, or 8 times 22.

Most Bibles give you the letters of the Hebrew alphabet at the top of each section. It is not possible to translate this into English since the two alphabets do not correspond.

Proverbs 31:10-31 is a complete acrostic, giving a complete and perfect description of a virtuous woman. Lamentations uses complete acrostics in chapter 3. This book emphasizes Yahweh's complete destruction and punishment upon His disobedient people during the Great Tribulation.

The entire Hebrew canon utilized acrostics of one form or another. There are even examples of deliberately broken acrostics when one or more letters of the alphabet are skipped. Psalms 9 and 10 are examples of this. Seven letters are intentionally omitted to show the chaotic conditions on earth during the Great Tribulation. Yahweh is here demonstrating the symbolic chaos resulting from disobedience, by using an incomplete acrostic.

When perfection or completion of a topic is being emphasized, Yahweh inspired the use of a complete and perfect acrostic. When chaos or destruction resulting from disobedience is being emphasized, then a broken or incomplete acrostic is used. Once we recognize that an acrostic is a SIGN of completion and perfection when all letters are used in perfect order, it should not be difficult to realize why it is absolutely necessary to retain the 22 Old Covenant books in their perfect order.

This number of 22 books was accepted by the Hebrews until about the second century, when it was changed to 24 books. Why? If a change had taken place in the Messiah's day,

then Josephus would not have recorded that there were only 22 books. The Jews admit that this UN-inspired change was for mere convenience!

The 22 original books, together with the 27 books of the New Covenant, total 49. The number 49 is a very significant number, denoting perfect completion - 7 times 7, or completion times completion! The Greek alphabet of the New Covenant translations (*from Aramaic – a Hebrew dialect*) uses a 24 letter system, with 3 of the 24 letters (*gamma, rho and upsilon*), each having two distinct usages. This totals 27, which is remarkable when considering the significance of the 7 times 7 total of 49 books in the complete Bible!

This total number of books of 49 carries Yahweh's Divine meaning for completion. The seventh day completes the week; the seventh week after Passover completes the counting to Pentecost; the seventh month completes Yahweh's Festival year; the seventh year completes the cycle for the land rest, the release from debts, and the tithing cycle; and the seventh Sabbatical year completes the 49 year period to the Jubilee. This 49 year period contains all of Yahweh's symbolic sevens; days, weeks, months, years, and Festivals.

Even though the Hebrews shuffled the number of Old Covenant books from 22 to 24, bringing the Bible total to 51 - a number of no significance, they have faithfully retained the Tripartite divisions and the original content. Except for the first division of the Old Covenant (*the first five books*), the Egyptian Septuagint of the Bible, on the other hand, arranges the books so as to lose the Tripartite divisions.

In the fourth century the Catholics accepted this version of the Bible and decreed that Yahweh intended it that way! In all later translations, the Western world accepted this and ignored what the Hebrews had maintained for centuries. The current Protestant Bibles

have 66 books in total. The number of (*incomplete*) man is 6, or 666 (*Rev. 13:18*). The Catholic church recognized this, so at the Council of Trent (*1546*), they accepted the 11 books of the Apocrypha as canonical. They were never declared as Scripture until then!

With these additions they had a canon of 77 books, a much "nicer" sounding number! The Protestants stayed with the 66 books because there was no evidence of the validity of the Apocrypha. Although the Protestants have lost the Divinely inspired method of PROVING (*using acrostics and numbers of alphabets of the two Biblical languages*) the authenticity of the Bible books, they have retained an accurate, albeit disorganized version of the Bible.

Since all of the letters of the Hebrew alphabet were used by the time of the Apostles, it is no coincidence that Yahweh's further revelation was translated into another tongue. Thus Greek, with the requisite 27 letters (*24; 3 of which may be used two different ways*), became the inspired transitional language of the New Covenant.

There is certainly much more evidence in the New Covenant proving the Divine selection of the Greek as the inspired transitional language - perhaps you might take opportunity to read it with an "investigative" curiosity not unlike that of the fictional Sherlock Holmes. You might surprise yourself on finding some of the many clues!

Here are some hints for your investigative reading, that I believe will help you prove the Divine authenticity of the New Covenant!

It was deliberately divided into 4 sections, by the Apostles, as evidenced by all early manuscripts: the Gospels (*incl. Acts*); the General Epistles; Paul's Epistles, and the Revelation. It should be noted, however that the true order of the 4 divisions has been

changed from the foregoing by reversing the General Epistles with Paul's. Remember the Old Covenant is divided into 3 divisions, totaling, you guessed it - seven!

-Isaiah 8:16 is Yahweh speaking of end-time events.

-again, Isaiah prophecies of end-time events in 42:21, as well as 33:22.

-Acts 3:22-23, confirms Exodus 7:1 and Deuteronomy 18:15.

-the Messiah makes claim to being the "Lawgiver" in Matthew 5:17-18.

-James confirms the Lawgiver in 4:12.

-with respect to "canonization", the Messiah's statement in Revelation 22:13 is absolute.

-the book of Revelation is an example of the Messiah's promises in John 16:13.

-Daniel 12:4 speaks of prophecy that would not be understood until the "time of the end". It IS NOW UNDERSTOOD because of the book of Revelation.

-Peter confirms the Messiah's affirmation that the Apostles had equal authority alongside the Old Covenant prophets in 2 Peter 3:2.

- Paul was divinely instructed; see 1 Cor. 9:1, with understanding of the "mystery" not previously revealed: Ephesians 3:3-5.

-see Paul's statements in Col. 1:25 and 1 Cor. 14:37.

-see 1 cor. 2:12-13.

-Paul was preparing his letters for canonization, see 2 Tim. 4:6-11; because of what he knew would happen as set out in 2 Tim. 4:3-4, and Acts 20:29-30. At this time Paul destroyed any of his writings that were not inspired - care to guess why?

-The first official canonization was done by Peter in A.D. 67-68, when

Mark went with Timothy to Paul in Rome and then on to Peter in Babylon, where Peter

confirms Paul's writings as part of Scripture: 1 Peter 5:13; 2 Peter 3:16.

-Peter canonized 22 books - sounds familiar: and is it a coincidence that they were instructed to go "to the Hebrews first", and then to the Gentiles?; John's 5 books were written about 30 years after Peter's death, for a total of 27. John was told to "Tarry till I [*the Word*] come" (*John 21:22-23*).

-there are 7 General Epistles, 2 times 7 (14) Epistles of Paul and the number seven is used frequently in the Revelation; plus there are a total of 4 divisions in the early manuscripts of the New Covenant, for a total of 7 divisions in the entire Bible. Coincidence? Absolutely not!

There are many other "infallible proofs", in both Old and New Covenants. I hope you enjoy your search for them!

Yah'shua kept His promise as stated in Matthew 24:35; Mark 13:31 and Luke 21:33. We have a complete, Divinely inspired Bible (*which as we have seen, anyone can easily prove*); let's not take it lightly!

## **Secrets of Hebrew Letters:**

For thousands of years, spiritual teachers of the Jewish and Israelite traditions have claimed that the Hebrew alphabet is composed of "holy" letters of special significance and superhuman origin. More recently, attention is fixed on the potential fusion of science and religion.

By fusing mathematics and Jewish mysticism, it has been demonstrated that the first verse of Genesis in the Hebrew Bible generates a mathematical Torus. When a particular portion is removed from this 'doughnut', its shape mirrors the human hand.

The Hebrew alphabet is based on the human hand, because it represents the function of differentiating 'self' from 'other', or the inside from the outside. The alphabet links the inner world of the mind with the outer world of experience, just as our hands do. The first letter of the book of Genesis, is Bet, which means 'house', something that distinguishes inside from outside. This is the most basic distinction you can make at any level of consciousness.

When you break the first word of Genesis into its 'subatomic particles', you find that the word is actually comprised of two smaller words, meaning "fire" and "six-edged thorn". The "thorn" equates to a tetrahedron and if you construct a model of it, and place the "fire," or torus "vortex" form inside of it, you will notice that the model, which might be called because it looks like, "The Light In the Meeting Tent", also reflects the polarity of perfect symmetry (*the tetrahedron*) and asymmetry (*the vortex form*).

When studied, it is discovered that it is even more multifaceted than this. When you look through the faces of the tetrahedron at the vortex, each view displays a different letter in the Hebrew alphabet, and, you will realize that the 27 gestures that accompany the letters

correspond to the 27 'preferred' pointing directions used in hyper-dimensional space. It is interesting, that the word "Meru" encompasses a wide spectrum of spiritual concepts, including Tomera, a name for the Cheops Pyramid; Sumeru, a Hindu name for the Pascal Triangle; Mt. Meru (*said to connect heaven and earth*); and Meruba, the name of the Hebrew alphabet.

The Hebrew Bible is arranged similarly to a hologram. The first letter contains the whole. The first word expands on the first letter, and the first sentence upon the first word, etc., to form an incredibly intricate and complex 'acrostic'. It's very much like what our scientists do. For example, they include information with messages sent to outer space that explains how to decode the entire message, which is also how compression programs work on computers.

Also, the Hebrew Bible contains a function similar to the mathematical purpose of pi, and links consciousness with physicality, the same way pi links the radius with the circumference of a circle: Our radius is our physicality and our circumference is our life, or our emotions. The ancient Hebrew alphabet is far more than a tool for everyday communication or the transmission of sacred texts.

The letter forms, or patterns themselves have intrinsic geometric and mathematical properties that point us to a profound knowledge of life and the nature of human consciousness. There are principles of law and order in the relationship between humans and the cosmos that, up till now, only Pythagoreans and Cabbalists have suspected.

These principles correspond to the numerical patterns of some of the basic geometrical forms found in the physical world. For example, the double helix, which is the form of the DNA molecule.

In deciphering the Bible code, counting in base-3 is required. When you count the Hebrew letters in base-3, they pair up. If you then put each letter on a bead in the order of the text of Genesis and curl it around until the same letters or those that were their mirror images in base-3 matched up, and then make that into the most compact arrangement possible, a beautiful, toroidal pattern emerges.

The text of Genesis literally folds itself up into a model which generates the letters in which it is written, and does so in such a way that you can read the text as a meditation dance. In this form, the Hebrew Bible can be seen as the template of creation. We can find the same patterns in the Bible as we find in the real world.

The ancients studied the patterns in the heavens and believed that if you could map the patterns of the temples of the heavens onto the temples of your mind, you would find yourself at perfect harmony with them. The patterns in the Hebrew Bible are coincidentally precisely the same as those in the heavens. When you chant them regularly you are actually weaving these patterns onto your mind, or 'internalizing' the patterns of the universe. In other words, you are stepping out of your skin to have an "ego-death" experience.

Throughout explored history and nature, we find the same pattern again and again. For example, you find it in Rumi's poem describing the Sufi Round Dance, in the Philippine Wine Dance (*where you hold a wine glass in your palm and rotate it above and below your shoulder-the old Cleopatra dance*), in the Grail Legend material, in William Blake's poetry, the Celtic Odin stories, in the weaving and basketry of Amerindian peoples and, literally, in every culture the world has ever seen.

The pattern also bears some relation to the mystical Jewish practice of gematria, which

finds hidden meanings in the numerical equivalents of the Hebrew alphabet. It also bears resemblance to the work of the best-selling author Michael Drosnin. However it must be pointed out that the major distinctions between the two, are that this explanation does not include any Nostradamus-like "de-codable" predictions.

The key difference is that the Nostradamus-like 'stuff' claims the Bible contains prophecy which can be "de-coded" using "newly discovered or revealed secrets", whereas the true explanation evidences the Bible contains exercises that a qualified individual can use to attain a 'state of prophecy'.

Studying Orthodox Hebrew (*Jewish*) practices out of respect for the well from which they have so long sprung, and in honouring this source, you will also discover the exact shape that the vortex model should be. When you put on the traditional Orthodox refilling during morning prayers, you must wind a strap on your hand, during which you are supposed to be able to see the Hebrew letters. The true 'vortex form' is then witnessed to be a model of the human hand, preserved through this age-old tradition of tefillin.

The mathematically perfect shape of the hand model, incorporates fourteen explicit features representing aspects of western philosophies and is based on a spiral used in art throughout the ancient world, most notably under the Egyptian 'Eye of Horus.' However it is not the "Golden Spiral".

The "golden spiral" is a modern invention that circles itself endlessly in its own image. Philosophically, it denotes narcissism. True sacred geometry appears somewhat like the golden spiral for quite a while and then it straightens out. Like the Egyptian spiral, the true spiral has a tightly coiled part which expands into 'all there is'. The coiled part

represents the human head and brain and the straight part represents the spine. If you overlay the true spiral over a human embryo at 56 days, they match perfectly. To make the hand model for yourself, simply put on latex gloves and draw it.

The truth is, this information has value in scientific, philosophical and spiritual studies, and has implications for bridging cultural barriers and enhancing global communication. Some within the Jewish community see its importance as equal to, or greater than the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls. It may not always be easy to follow such ideas, however it is just such amazingly simple discoveries that initially are often so simple as to be found confusing by traditional intellects and other 'religious' fanatics.

This information could represent the beginnings of a major breakthrough in the study of Cabbala, consciousness, physics, and cosmology. It sometimes seems 'too Jewish' to non-Jewish audiences, 'too Christian' for Jewish friends, 'too mathematical' for religious friends, and 'too religious' for scientific minds.

Like each of the letters of the alphabet, each of our cultures has a vital contribution to make to the ecology and survival of the planet. The acrostic model of truth found in the Hebrew text of Genesis is intrinsic to human consciousness. This is akin to a science of consciousness like *pi*, not owned by anybody. The meditation dance of the proof has been preserved intact. It shows us how we can relate to each other in an elegant, coherent manner.

In a most equally gracious manner, all of this information has been GIFTED to us by the one true God! He has 'encoded' it our very hearts and minds! It is written: "I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people". Yahweh's entire "Word", His Bible, is completely encoded at a cellular level

in our bodies! Have someone who knows how, test your innate wisdom. You will be most pleased to find out that your 'genetic memory' contains the entire Word of truth, as could only be written by the one true God!

This is truly the 'tree of life' for those who grasp it! Now here is what our Creator has to say directly about this, along with some of His and man's definitions.

(Romans 2:14-16) "For whenever people of the nations that do not have [Yahweh's] law do by nature the things of the law, these people, although not having law, are a law to themselves. They are the very ones who demonstrate the matter of the law to be written in their hearts, while their conscience is bearing witness with them and, between their own thoughts, they are being accused or even excused. This will be in the day when Yahweh through Yah'shua the Messiah judges the secret things of mankind, according to the good news I declare."

"Nature", is defined as the basic makeup or constitution of something. It can refer to what a person is by birth, also to hereditary qualities along with general practice. At times it refers to the physical urges of an organism. Translators generally render the Greek words *physis* and *phy-si-kos* (*the adjective form*) as "nature" and "natural," respectively.

With regard to Men and Animals. That there is a nature belonging to man different from that of wild beasts, and that even wild beasts are not all of the same nature, is shown by the statement at James 3:7: "For every species [*Gr., physis, "nature"*] of wild beast as well as bird and creeping thing and sea creature is to be tamed and has been tamed by humankind [*phy'sei tei an-thro-pi'nei, "nature belonging to the man"*]." This difference in "nature" reveals the variety in Yahweh's creation and is maintained because of the

divine law that each produces according to its own kind.-Gen. 1:20-28; compare 1Cor. 15:39.

Divine Nature. Also, there is a different nature belonging to those in heaven, or the "spirit" creatures of Yahweh. The apostle Peter speaks to his fellow Israelites, spiritual brothers of Yah'shua the Messiah, of "the precious and very grand promises, that through these you may become sharers in divine nature [*phy'se-os*]." (2Peter 1:4)

That this is a sharing with Yah'shua the Messiah in his glory as spirit persons. Peter shows in his first letter: "Yahweh . . . gave us a new birth [*a-na-gen-ne'sas he-mas'*, "having generated us again"] to a living hope through the resurrection of Yah'shua the Messiah from the dead to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance.

It is reserved in the heavens for you." (1Pe 1:3, 4) "Divine nature" requires a change in nature through death and resurrection, as made plain by the apostle Paul at First Corinthians chapter 15. He explains that the Israelite must die and must be resurrected in a different body, a spiritual one, which requires a change.-1Co 15:36, 38, 44, 49, 51.

Inherent Nature. Paul speaks of his fellow countrymen the Jews, calling them "Jews by nature," that is, born of Jewish parents, of the children of Israel, or Jacob.-Gal 2:15; compare Ro 2:27.

In the illustration of the olive tree, he calls the fleshly Jews the natural (*ka-ta' phy'sin*, "according to nature") branches of the garden olive. He tells the Gentile Converts: "For if you were cut out of the olive tree that is wild by nature and were grafted contrary to nature into the garden olive tree, how much rather will these who are natural be grafted into their own olive tree!" (Ro 11:21-24)

The wild olive tree is unfruitful or produces very inferior fruit, but it is common practice in Mediterranean countries to graft

branches of cultivated olive trees into the wild olive tree to produce good fruit. However, if the wild olive branch is grafted into the cultivated tree, it produces only the poor fruit of the wild olive tree.

Therefore Paul calls this latter grafting "contrary to nature." It serves to emphasize the power of Yahweh as well as his undeserved kindness to Gentiles in bringing them in to replace "natural branches."

The Jews had been 'cultivated' by Yahweh for centuries, but the Gentiles had been "wild," not having the true religion, not bringing forth fruitage to Yahweh. Not naturally, but only by Yahweh's power could they be made to bring forth fine fruit. Only Yahweh, therefore, could accomplish this 'grafting' successfully.

Also, in his argument to the Galatians to prevent their enslavement to Judaist teachings, Paul said: "When you did not know Yahweh, then it was that you slaved for those who by nature are not gods."

These false gods they had worshiped were by their very origin and production not truly gods; it was impossible for them to come into such a status. Not merely did they have no authority to be gods, but they did not have such qualities in their intrinsic nature or makeup.-Gal 4:8.

Conscience. Certain traits or qualities inherent in mankind from birth, actually having been placed in man from the beginning. The apostle Paul comments on the conscience, or at least a vestige of such, that still persists in fallen man, even though in many cases he has strayed from Yahweh and does not have his law.

This explains why all nations have established many laws that are in harmony with righteousness and justice, and many individuals follow certain good principles. Paul says: "For whenever people of the nations that

do not have law do by nature the things of the law, these people, although not having law, are a law to themselves. They are the very ones who demonstrate the matter of the law to be written in their hearts, while their conscience is bearing witness with them and, between their own thoughts, they are being accused or even excused."-Ro 2:14, 15.

In discussing the matter of headship with the Corinthian congregation, Paul called attention to the rule that a woman should wear a head covering when praying or prophesying before the congregation, as a sign of subjection. In illustration, he says: "Does not nature itself teach you that if a man has long hair, it is a dishonour to him; but if a woman has long hair, it is a glory to her? Because her hair is given her instead of a headdress."-1Co 11:14, 15.

Paul's reference to "nature itself" evidently included more than "custom," which he mentions in 1Co 11 verse 16 in connection with the use of a head covering by women. Hereditary characteristics also likely had a bearing on what Israelites in Corinth viewed as natural. Among Europeans (*such as the Greeks*), the hair of women, when left uncut, usually becomes considerably longer than that of men. But this is not true of the straight hair of Orientals and Indians or of the woolly hair of Blacks and Melanesians.

In addition to their awareness of hereditary qualities among them, the Israelites in Corinth knew that it was the general practice for men to clip their hair to a moderate length. This was common also among Jewish men; so the long uncut hair of Nazirites marked them as men who were not following the general custom. (*Nu 6:5*)

On the other hand, Jewish women usually wore their hair quite long. (*Lu 7:38; Joh 11:2*) And in the Greek city of Corinth, shaving a woman's head, or clipping her hair very short,

was a sign of her being a slave or of her being in disgrace for having been caught in fornication or adultery.-1Co 11:6.

So, when saying that "nature itself" taught them, Paul evidently had in mind various factors that would influence their attitude as to what was natural.

In saying "Does not nature itself teach you . . . ?" Paul was not personifying nature, as though it were a goddess. Rather, Yahweh has given man reasoning powers. By observing and reasoning on things as Yahweh has made them and the results from using these in various ways, man can learn much as to what is proper. It is really Yahweh that teaches, and the man with his mind properly oriented by Yahweh's Word can view things in their right perspective and relationship, thereby rightly discerning what is natural or unnatural.

By this means the individual can have a trained conscience in this respect and can avoid a conscience that is defiled and that approves unnatural things.-Ro 1:26, 27; Tit 1:15; 1Co 8:7.

Natural Use of Bodies. It is wrong for men and women to use their bodies in any way that is out of harmony with the functions for which Yahweh created them. What is unnatural in that sense is sinful.

The Scriptures describe the uncleanness and condemnation coming upon those who practice these things: "That is why Yahweh gave them up to disgraceful sexual appetites, for both their females changed the natural [*phy-si-ken*'] use of themselves into one contrary to nature; and likewise even the males left the natural use of the female and became violently inflamed in their lust toward one another, males with males, working what is obscene and receiving in themselves the full recompense, which was due for their error."

Such persons lower themselves to a beastlike level. (*Ro 1:26, 27; 2Pe 2:12*) They

go after wrong fleshly things because, like a beast, they lack reasonableness, having no spirituality.-Jude 7, 10.

Birth. Another Greek word often translated "natural" is ge'ne-sis, literally meaning "birth" or "origin." James speaks of "a man looking at his natural face [*literally, the face of the birth of him*] in a mirror." (*Jas 1:23*) James also says that "the tongue is a fire" and that it "sets the wheel of natural life [*literally, the wheel of the birth*] aflame." (*Jas 3:5, 6*)

James may here be alluding to a wheel, such as that on a chariot, that could be set on fire by a hot, glowing axle.

Similarly, the tongue can set aflame the whole round of one's life into which he came by birth, making life become like a vicious circle, possibly even resulting in his own destruction as by fire.

## **“Lost” 10 Tribes - FOUND:**

In the past two centuries, the people of the United States, Canada, Australia, the rest of the British Commonwealth and other north western European nations such as France, Holland, Belgium, Norway, Sweden and Denmark, have become the wealthiest and potentially, the most powerful nations on earth.

At the height of their power, they possessed almost three fourths of all the world's wealth and resources. And they acquired almost all of it since A.D. 1800. All other nations combined, had little more than one fourth of the world's wealth among them at this same time.

Consider too, these people have caused the printing and distribution of unbelievable millions of copies of the Bible in the languages of all peoples.

It is not reasonable, nor is it the case, that these nations are ignored in Bible prophecy. The fact is, they are mentioned more than any other nation or race. Yet their prophetic identity remains hidden to most. The story of their history and identity is the most fascinating and interesting story ever told - it is a main theme of the Bible itself, from Genesis to Revelation.

Few realize that centuries ago, Yahweh promised our great national wealth and power to Abraham and his descendants. The promise of salvation through Yah'shua the Messiah is well known. Yahweh also made a second promise: "Now Yahweh had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will show thee: and I will make thee a great nation...and in thee shall all the families of the earth be blessed" (*Gen. 12:1-3*).

There are two promises:

1) The birthright promise that his flesh-born children shall become a great nation - the promise of race;

2) The spiritual promise of grace; through Yah'shua the Messiah, the "one seed". The great nation promise refers to race - the multiple seed of natural, fleshly born, as made clear in *Gen. 17:1-5*, and in verses 7 and 8: "And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in THEIR generations".

The Hebrews have never been more than one nation. Here we have a solemn promise from Yahweh, of physical wealth to many nations that could not be fulfilled through the Hebrews. The nations who are the racial descendants of Abraham, are to be blessed and "multiplied as the stars of heaven...and thy seed shall possess the gates of his enemies" (*Gen. 22:17*). A gate is a narrow passage of entrance. When speaking nationally, this would be such as the Suez Canal, Panama Canal and the Strait of Gibraltar.

The promise is further detailed, as it was passed on to Isaac, Abraham's son: "And Yahweh said unto him, `I am Yahweh Almighty: be fruitful and multiply; a nation and a company of nations shall be of thee, and kings shall come out of thy loins'" (*Gen. 35:9-12*). So the many nations promised, are to eventually take shape as one great, wealthy, powerful nation; and another company of nations - a group or "commonwealth" of powerful allied nations.

This promise has never been fulfilled in the Hebrews and it could not mean the Congregation - as there is only one true Congregation acknowledged in the Bible.

The spiritual promises of the "one seed"; Yah'shua the Messiah, and of salvation through Him, the Bible calls, "the sceptre". This promise as nearly everyone knows was handed down throughout the generations of the tribe of Judah – not through the Jews, as many erroneously believe Judah's descendants to be. This was confirmed in *Gen. 49:10*; "The sceptre shall not depart from Judah".

But - and here is a vital fact few seem to notice: "For Judah prevailed above his brethren, and of him came the chief ruler [sceptre promise]...but the birthright was Joseph's" (*1 Chron. 5:2*). The birthright which Esau sold to Jacob - the promise of national greatness and material wealth - never was handed down through the tribe of Judah!

The promise of "grace" is one undeserved, not inherited by birth, but bestowed as a free gift. The birthright promise of "race" is inherited by birth, as one's right. Consequently, the "birthright" that was Joseph's, includes only the inheritance of material blessings, passed on from generation to generation - those blessings one cannot take with him, when he dies.

So the sceptre, which is the spiritual promise of grace, through which all nations may be blessed, went to Judah, while the birthright promise of race, including possession of lands, gates of the enemies, inheriting the Gentiles for a possession, spreading and colonizing around the world - went to Joseph. The promises to Abraham have been separated and granted to two of the tribes of Israel!

Jacob, whose name was changed to Israel, legally adopted two sons, Ephraim and Manasseh. The entire account in Genesis 48 should be read. In verse 16 he (Israel) says; "let my name be named on them". Hence, they were to be called "Israel". So they too would be called Israel, not just those of Judah! "And let them grow into a multitude", and speaking to Manasseh, he said: "he also shall become a people, and he also shall be great; but truly his younger brother [Ephraim] shall be greater than he, and his seed shall become a multitude [or company/commonwealth] of nations" (*v. 19*).

It becomes obvious here, that the United States has sprung from Manasseh, and that

the British Commonwealth nations have sprung from Ephraim. But there is much more proof.

Like the covenant with Abraham, Yahweh made an unbreakable covenant with David - the Davidic Covenant. David wanted to build a great temple, as Yahweh's house in Jerusalem. Yahweh replied: "when thy days be fulfilled, and thou shalt sleep with thy fathers, I will set up thy seed after thee...and I will establish his kingdom...he shall build an house for my name", - and it was his son Solomon who did build the temple - "and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever" (*2 Sam. 7:12,13*). The throne of David, occupied by Solomon, was to be established forever! If that throne ever ceased to exist, then Yahweh's promise failed! The promise was unconditional - "...my mercy shall not depart from him as I took it from Saul,...and thine house and thy kingdom shall be established forever before thee: thy throne shall be established forever" (*vv. 14,15*).

Yahweh says He will break the covenant only if you can stop the earth from turning! "If you can break My covenant with the day and My covenant with the night, so that there will not be day or night in their season, then My covenant may also be broken with David My servant, so that he shall not have a son [an heir] to reign on his throne" (*Jer. 33:20,21*).

So, according to Yahweh's Word there must still be a living, operating, continuous throne existing in the house of Israel today, that Yah'shua the Messiah can take back to Jerusalem when He returns!

After David's death, his son Solomon married Gentile wives, sacrificed to their idols and committed other sins. Yahweh said: "I will surely rend the kingdom from thee, and give it to thy servant...howbeit, I will give one tribe to thy son for David my servant's sake" (*1 Kings 11:11-13*).

The kingdom, not part of it is to be rended away. It is the part, one tribe, which is to remain. That tribe, Judah, must remain subject to the throne - for David's sake - Yahweh will not break His covenant!

"So Israel rebelled against the house of David unto this day...there was none that followed the house of David, but the tribe of Judah only" (*1 Kings 12:19,20*). Then "Rehoboam ...assembled all the house of Judah, with the tribe of Benjamin" (*v. 21*). Rehoboam started to fight to subdue and bring back the House of Israel, but Yahweh said; "Ye shall not...fight against your brethren the children of Israel...for this thing is from Me" (*v. 24*).

The House of Judah, now including the tribe of Benjamin, under King Rehoboam of David's dynasty, was about to fight against the other 10 tribes, headed by Ephraim and Manasseh - now a different and separate nation. The word "Jew" is an improper translation for those Canaanites living among "Judah". It should be rendered "Hebrew" in most every instance it was used. "Jew" never truly applies to the House of Judah (tribes of Judah and Benjamin) - nor ever to the House of Israel, which includes the other 10 tribes. The first place in the Bible where the word Jew is used, the tribes of Judah and Benjamin were at war with Israel! (*2 Kings 16:6*).

The Jews of today erroneously call themselves Judah! The House of Israel - includes the 10 tribes that separated from Judah, the same Judah who are not Jews! Wherever you see the name "House of Israel", or "Samaria", or "Ephraim", used in prophecy, remember it never refers to Jews, but to the 10 tribes who were at war against the tribes of Judah!

The term "Israel" alone, or "children of Israel", may include the tribes of Benjamin and Judah, but not the Jews, even where it refers to

all 12 tribes. When these people are referred to as nations rather than collective individuals, the term "House of Israel" never refers to Jews. The 2 tribes are called, the House of Judah and, later in history, merely, "Israel" - but never the House of Israel. The dying Israel said to Ephraim and Manasseh, sons of Joseph; "let my name be named on them". And truly they now bear the name of "Israel" in prophecy.

From this time on, the 12 tribes are prophetically referred to as two distinct divisions. The birthright goes into the one nation Israel, headed by Ephraim and Manasseh, while the sceptre remains in the other nation called Judah. The original "Jews" were merely Canaanites. We read in Josephus' "*Antiquities of the Jews*," that the Jews were a people distinct and separate from Yahweh's people of the tribes of Israel, although living among them. The Jews were the Canaanite people who lived in Palestine, before Israel entered the promised land and who were not driven out. These Canaanite people, and the mixed offspring from intermarriage with the Israelites, were allowed to remain in the land while paying heavy tribute taxes – to the true Israelites!

In Leviticus 26 we find Yahweh's warning to the House of Israel. If they would worship Him alone, avoiding all idolatry, and keep His Sabbaths, walk in His statutes and keep His commandments, they would immediately inherit the great wealth, and become the rich, powerful world dominating nations as promised to Abraham's descendants. But if they refused and rebelled, they were to be punished seven times - a duration of 2520 years\* - in misery, servitude and want. (\*See *Addendum at end.*)

By the year 721 B.C., the House of Israel had set up and started to worship two golden calves (*1 Kings 12:28-33*). "Therefore Yahweh was very angry with Israel, and

removed them out of his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only" (*2 Kings 17:18*). The House of Israel now entered - 721 B.C. - remember this date - their 2520 years of national banishment to last until 1800 A.D.! (*For explanation of the 2520 years\**; see *ADDENDUM at end of chapter.*)

Jeremiah, when first given his vital call and commission, was a young lad of 17. When he finally completed it, he was a white haired old man. Yahweh said in Jeremiah 1:10; "I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant". Jeremiah was set over the nations - more than one - to do two things - first, to tear something down, and secondly, to build and to plant something.

It is well known that Jeremiah was used to warn Judah of their sins, and the coming invasion and captivity at the hands of Nebuchadnezzar, unless they repented. He was also commissioned to plant and build something. He was to plant and build that, which had been pulled down and rooted out - the throne of David. So far as the "world" knows, the last king to sit on that throne of David was Zedekiah of Judah. He was thrown down nearly 600 years before Yah'shua the Messiah first came. Did Yahweh forget His Davidic covenant?

True, the kingdom - the government did cease, but Jeremiah was commissioned to build it back up among the 10 tribes of the House of Israel, now supposing themselves to be Gentile! Therefore the identity and location of the replanting has remained hidden to the world until this time of the end in which we live today! In fact, it is a major key to understanding almost all Bible prophecy, including the book of Revelation!

In Zedekiah's 11th year, the Chaldean armies entered Jerusalem and destroyed it.

They killed all of the king's sons so there would be no heirs and they also killed all the (*unrelated*) princes of Judah. Jeremiah was held captive among the Hebrew prisoners. Yet he must remain free to carry out the second part of his commission. Jeremiah was prominent among the Hebrews, and so "the captain of the guard took Jeremiah and said to him: `I free you this day from the chains that were on your hand. If it seems good to you to come with me to Babylon, come, and I will look after you'...So the captain of the guard gave him rations and a gift and let him go" (*Jer. 40:1-5*).

"Then Jeremiah went to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, to Mizpah, and dwelt with him among the people who were left in the land" (*v. 6*). Now Gedaliah had been made governor over the few remaining Israelite people, and had set his headquarters up in Mizpah.

Then the governor and part of the Israelites were slain by the Ammonites, leaving Jeremiah as one of few survivors.

"Then Ishmael carried away captive all the rest of the people who were in Mizpah, the king's daughters and all the people who...the captain of the guard had committed to Gedaliah" (*Jer. 41:10*). Did you catch it? Among the Israelites were the king's daughters! Daughters of the king of Judah, with Jeremiah. Now we know why Jeremiah went to Mizpah! These people escaped and fled to Egypt.

"Yet a small number that escape the sword shall return out of the land of Egypt into the land of Judah" (*Jer. 44:28*). Jeremiah, together with Baruch, Jeremiah's scribe or secretary, and the royal seed (*the king's daughters*) for replanting and rebuilding David's throne, all under divine protection, were to escape and return to Judah! Then Jeremiah and his company were to journey to a far away land that they did not know (*Jer. 15:11-14*).

"For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of Mount Zion: the zeal of Yahweh the Lord of hosts shall do this. And the remnant that escaped of the house of Judah shall again take root downward, and bear fruit upward" (*Isa. 37:31,32*). This Isaiah prophecy is dual. A remnant survived the Assyrian onslaught in his day, as did those in Jeremiah's company.

The strange truth of the planting and rebuilding of David's throne is revealed in a "riddle and a parable", couched in symbolic language not understood until this latter day. Yet it stands today, as so clearly explained, that anyone who actually READS it, could figure it out!

The 17th chapter of Ezekiel addresses this subject. The message is addressed to the House of Israel - not to Judah. It is a message to give light to the identity of The Lost Ten Tribes in these latter days. Ezekiel is told to speak first, a riddle, and then a parable. Then Yahweh explains both, starting in verse 11 of the 17th chapter.

"Say now to the rebellious house" Yahweh says - the "rebellious house" being ten tribed Israel (*Ez. 12:9*), to whom Ezekiel is a prophet (*Ez. 2:3; 3:1 etc.*), "Know ye not what these things mean? Tell them". And then the riddle is clearly explained: A great eagle came to Lebanon and took the highest branch of the cedar. The eagle is the invading king of Babylon who took the king - the highest branch captive. The cropping off of the cedar's young twigs and of the seed of the land depicts the capture of the king's sons as well as the people and princes of Judah. "He set it as a willow tree...and became a spreading vine of low stature", means the Israelites were given a covenant whereby they were ruled over by the Chaldeans while they were allowed to live in peace and grow.

The parable is explained in verses 22 - 24. "Thus saith the Lord Yahweh; I will also take of the highest branch of the high cedar" (*not the branch - but OF the branch*), "I will crop off from the top of his young twigs a tender one, and I will plant it upon a high mountain and eminent". Twigs of this highest branch (*the King of Judah*), mean his children. Young "tender one" then means one of his daughters!

And when it is planted "...under it shall dwell all fowl of every wing; in the shadow of the branches thereof" (*v. 23*). "Lost" Israel, now having acquired the throne and become again a self-ruling nation, shall in time, spread around the world gaining dominance and power over many other peoples. They are to inherit (*after the 2520 years of banishment*) the unconditional birthright promises of Abraham.

The place where this "twig" is to be planted, is to be a "place of their own" to be geographically constant until Yah'shua the Messiah's return. According to Hosea 12:1; "Ephraim followeth after the east wind". An east wind travels west. Ephraim must have gone west from Assyria (*Central Europe today*). Yahweh said: "I will set his hand [*sceptre*] in the sea" (*Psalms 89:25*). And then through the prophet Jeremiah, Yahweh said; "Backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah. Go and proclaim these words to the north and say, Return thou" (*3:11,12*).

And so, in these last days, warning messengers are to go "north", of Jerusalem, and "west in the sea", toward lost Israel. The 18th verse of the same chapter, says: "In those days the house of Judah shall walk with the house of Israel, and they shall come together out of the land of the north". In the future exodus, at Yah'shua the Messiah's Coming, they are to return to the Holy Land from the north.

Referring to the House of Israel (*not Judah*) in Isaiah 49:3,6, Yahweh says: "Behold these shall come from far: and lo, these from the north and from the west; and these from the land of Sinim" (49:12).

These people; descendants of Ephraim, will come from the north and west of Jerusalem. The Vulgate renders the word "Sinim" as "Australi" meaning literally, "south". Hence, Israel of today - Israel of the day of Jeremiah's planting of David's throne - is located specifically north, and west of Jerusalem and in the sea!

In the same chapter of Isaiah, the people of Israel are addressed as "Listen, O isles, unto me". The 31st chapter of Jeremiah, locating Israel in the "north country", says, "I am the father to Israel, and Ephraim is my firstborn...hear the word of Yahweh, O ye nations [*Ephraim, Manasseh*] and declare it in the isles afar off" (31:9,10). Other examples: "Keep silence before me, O islands...thou Israel, art my servant Jacob whom I have chosen" (*Isa. 41:1-8*). In Jer. 31:7 and 10, the message "In the isles afar off" is to be shouted in "the chief of the nations".

So finally, today, as in Jeremiah's day, the House of Israel is in the isles, which are "in the sea", the chief of the nations being northwest of Jerusalem.

The House of Israel, literally means the "covenant people", and in Hebrew, this expression is phonetically pronounced "brit". Israel was to follow the false doctrine of the sun god Baal - hence the 2520 years of banishment. When you couple the Hebrew words for Baal and covenant, you get "Baalberith", meaning "idol of the covenant". The word for "covenant man" using the Hebrew word "ish" for man, results in the English phonetic pronunciation of the word as, "British". Ancient documents show that many Semitic and Assyrian peoples, commonly

dropped the sound of the initial "Y" or "I" from some names. So the phonetic sound in Hebrew of saying "Isaac's sons" would sound like "Saac's sons". Or as in the common English, Saxons.

The tribe of Dan occupied two districts, or provinces in the Holy Land prior to the Assyrian captivity. They were principally seamen, and it is recorded in Judges 5:17 that Dan abode in ships. After leaving the Assyrian captivity, they firstly inhabited the land west of the Black Sea before migrating northwest. We find in the directions they journeyed a nation - Denmark today - which is named Danmark by its inhabitants, meaning both "Dan's mark", and "Dan's march", depending on how it is being used contextually.

Jacob (*Israel*), when foretelling what would befall each of the tribes, said; "Dan's tribe shall be a serpent by the WAY", or otherwise translated from the original Hebrew: "a serpent's TRAIL" (*Gen. 49:17*). And in Jeremiah 31:20,21, Yahweh says to Ephraim; "set up signposts, make landmarks; Set your heart toward the highway, the WAY [*trail*] in which you went". We need only look at any modern map to find literally hundreds of towns, rivers, ports, districts, regions and other "landmarks" named after "Dan", beginning from when they left the ancient Assyrian captivity, all the WAY to modern Ireland, on through Scotland, England and right on to Denmark. In the Hebrew, vowels are not printed, so the English equivalent of Dan was written as "Dn". Such a prefix might be pronounced [*and re-written*] as Dan, Den, Din, Don or Dun, which accounts for the great many such place names on our modern maps! The tribe of Dan truly left its signposts; the "serpent's TRAIL" on the map everywhere it marched, leading Ephraim directly to the British Isles, while on their WAY TO DENMARK, meaning "Dan's march"!

Historians recognize the connection between those Danites (*Danes of Denmark*), and the Danoi in Greece to the Tuathe De Danaan, meaning "Tribe of Dan" of Ireland. Tuathe De on its own means, "people of Yahweh". They arrived in ships, drove out the other tribes, and settled there. Later, an elderly, white haired patriarch referred to as the "saint" came to Ireland. Travelling with him according to historians, were a princess daughter of an eastern king, and a companion called "Simon Brach", or "Berach". Jeremiah's secretary's name, according to the Bible, was Baruch, which could have originally been spelled any number of ways, such as Berach.

The royal princess's name was Tea-Tephi. She married a young man who was the son of the king of Ireland. The son of this later king and the Hebrew princess continued on the throne of Ireland, and this same family dynasty continued unbroken until it was overturned and transplanted again in Scotland; again overturned and moved to London, England, where this same family dynasty continues today in the reign of Queen Elizabeth II. King George, who ruled prior to Queen Elizabeth II, possessed a chart showing his ancestry right back to Tea-Tephi, on back to David, and through the Biblical genealogy, clear to Adam ["*mankind*"]!

It is fascinating that the Bible prophecies these three "overturns", when addressing Israel in Ezekiel 21:26,27: "...take off the crown;...overthrown, overthrown, I will make it overthrown!...Until He comes whose right it is". When the throne of David was first overthrown by Jeremiah, it was first replanted in Ireland. History and Bible prophecy tell us it was later overthrown and replanted in Scotland. And then it was again overthrown as prophesied and replanted in England where it remains - and will remain according to the Bible, until Yah'shua the Messiah returns! Historically, the

crown has remained in the same family dynasty (*descendants*), from King David, to this very day!

There are many other fascinating "coincidences" in British history. All the crowns worn by the Irish kings had 12 points. After the 12 tribes? The "saint" (*Jeremiah*) was said to have brought with him a wonderful stone called "lia-fail", or "stone of destiny". The Hebrew language reads from right to left. English from left to right. Read it either way, and the phonetic pronunciation is still "lia-fail". Many kings in the history of Ireland, Scotland and England have been crowned sitting over this remarkable stone - including the present queen. The stone rests today in Westminster Abbey in London and the coronation chair is built over and around it. A sign beside it, labelled it "Jacob's Pillar-Stone"! This pillar-stone is mentioned in Gen. 28:18, and Jacob's name was changed to, "Israel"!

For over 900 years, (*since the Roman Legions left the Islands*), the British - including Queen Elizabeth II, have used the exact same coronation rituals as set out in 1 Kings, including the singing of the song "Zadok the Priest", the words of which are taken from 1 Kings 1:38-40. Zadok was priest when David was king and when Solomon was crowned! The present Queen was also anointed with oil exactly as the Bible prescribes! The British Commonwealth is the only "company of nations" in all earth's history. Could we so exactly fulfill the Biblical specifications of the birthright, and not be the birthright people?

The United States expanded rapidly in national resources and wealth after 1800, but reached world dominance among nations later than the British Commonwealth. The dying Jacob (*Israel*), spoke to Ephraim (*British Commonwealth*) and Manasseh (*United States*) separately - Manasseh was to become great; Ephraim, greater still - the company of

nations. And in prophecy for our time, he said: "Joseph [father of Ephraim and Manasseh] is a fruitful bough, even a fruitful bough by a well; whose branches run over the wall" (*Gen. 49:22*). In other words, Joseph, being Ephraim and Manasseh together, would be a colonizing people in this latter day, their colonies branching out from the British Isles. Our people have fulfilled that prophecy.

Certain regions of Britain contributed more heavily to the migration of those who became the first settlers of the colonies, that later became the United States. Together Ephraim and Manasseh grew into a multitude, then separated, according to Jacob's prophetic blessing of Genesis 48. A large part of Manasseh remained with Ephraim until the separation of the American colonies. But our forefathers were to be sifted through many nations, as corn through a sieve, yet not a grain to fall to the earth or be lost (*Amos 9:9*).

Our people did filter through many nations. First Ephraim and much of Manasseh finally migrated to Britain together, but many others of Manasseh who had filtered into and through other nations, did not leave them until they came as immigrants directly to the colonized America. This Biblical fact is what explains the insistent urge some people have had over the years to immigrate to the countries of the British Commonwealth or America.

This does not mean that every immigrant to our nations are of the stock of Ephraim or Manasseh, but undoubtedly, many are. Israel, which is who we are, always did absorb Gentiles, who became Israelites through living in Israel's land, adopting its customs and sometimes intermarrying. A major cause for our nation's decline in recent years, is that we, like our ancient forefathers, tend to allow foreigners to bring their customs into our lands, influencing us, rather than them

adopting our customs, which is the Biblically correct approach. This Biblical premise is based upon our own customs being true to the word of Yahweh, which unfortunately is also not true in our nations today. We have in every respect become the great "melting pots" of the world.

There were originally twelve tribes - Joseph's split into two - Ephraim and Manasseh, making thirteen. Manasseh was promised to become the wealthiest and single greatest nation on earth - on land that they would find afar off and that they would conquer from the native, heathen inhabitants. Only United States could ever claim that. And it started with thirteen colonies!

Here we have the identity of two of the Lost Ten Tribes of the House of Israel. The other eight tribes did not receive any part of the promised blessings. They, along with elements of the tribe of Benjamin, which were also swept up in the Assyrian conquest, have descended to such north western European nations as Holland, Belgium, Iceland, France, the Scandinavian countries and others. The political boundaries of many of these nations today do not necessarily reflect lines of division between descendants of these tribes.

Now we come to the part of prophecy that, again like our forefathers, we are reluctant to "hear". We are warned over and over and over again, to stop our pagan traditions, to recognize our God, to repent of our sinful ways, to begin to obey Yahweh's laws and commandments - or we will again (like our forefathers) be conquered by modern Assyrian nations and taken from our land!

Abraham Lincoln summed up the American attitude, which reflects very accurately, ours in the British Commonwealth, rather eloquently: "We find ourselves in the peaceful possession of the fairest portion of the earth, as regards fertility of soil, extent of

territory, and salubrity of climate...We find ourselves the legal inheritors of these fundamental blessings. We toiled not in the acquirement or the establishment of them...

"It is the duty of nations, as well as of men, to own their dependence on the overruling power of Yahweh...and to recognize the sublime truth, announced in the Holy Scriptures and proven by all history, that only those nations are blessed whose God is Yahweh:...We have been the recipients of the choicest blessings of heaven. We have been preserved, these many years, in peace and prosperity. We have grown in numbers, wealth and power as no other nation ever has grown; but we have forgotten Yahweh! We have forgotten the gracious Hand which preserved us in peace, and multiplied and enriched and strengthened us; and we have vainly imagined, in the deceitfulness of our hearts, that all these blessings were produced by some superior wisdom and virtue of our own".

Today, the nations of the Lost Ten Tribes, specifically the Nations of Ephraim and Manasseh - the British Commonwealth and the United States, are being warned by the many prophecies of Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Isaiah, Micah, Hosea, Malachi and others, that unless we repent and change our ways - become thankful to Yahweh for what we have, Yahweh will send our nations to utter destruction - and our people into poverty and captivity!

#### **ADDENDUM: 2520 years of banishment:**

In Biblical times, a solar year was figured on the basis of twelve 30 day months. Notice Genesis 7:11 : "In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month...all the fountains of the great deep broken up...and the waters prevailed upon the earth an hundred and fifty days", and: "...after the hundred and fifty days...the ark rested in the seventh month, on

the seventeenth day of the month" (*Gen. 8:3,4*). So the flood started on the 17th of the 2nd month - at the end of the 150 days, it was the 17th day of the 7th month. That was five months to the day - and it was 150 days. Therefore, they used a 30 day month.

The context of 2520 years is the same as that spoken of in several prophecies. In Rev. 12:6, a prophecy of an event which in actual history did last 1260 solar years is spoken of as "a thousand two hundred and three score days". So here again is the prophetic "day for a year" principle.

The same amount of time is spoken of in different language in Rev. 12:14 as " a time, and times, and half a time". The "time" is one prophetic year; the "times" is two more prophetic years; and the whole expression is 3 1/2 prophetic "times", which is a literal 1260 days - or 3 1/2 years of 30 day months. Seven of these "times", as called for in Israel's period of banishment, would be 2520 prophetic days - or on the day for a year principle, 2520 years.

These "seven times" then, bring us from the year 721 B.C., to the year 1800 A.D. This is essentially when the British Commonwealth of nations and the United States came into the vast majority of their wealth and influence world-wide.

## **Prophetic "Beast" and its Mark:**

"For it is those of this very generation who shall be worshipping this beast or his image, or shall have received his mark, that will suffer the terrible horror of the seven last plagues".

Ignorance will not excuse! "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge" (*Hos. 4:6*), and the illustration of Ezekiel's watchman shows that those who are unaware, because they are not warned, will suffer just the same (*Ezek 33:6 and 3:18*). Yahweh expects the spiritual leaders of His people to be the "watchman" (*Ezek 33:7*) and to warn the people of this New Covenant age.

The beast, the image of the beast, and the mark of the beast are all described primarily in the 13th chapter of Revelation verse 1 and 2, and this identifies the beast symbolically. The very word Beast is a symbol and each of the descriptives are symbols and only the Bible identifies the symbols used throughout itself. Yahweh gave Daniel understanding in dreams and visions (*Dan 1:17*) and in the 7th chapter of Daniel we find exactly the same symbols described and identified by Daniel.

Rev. 13:1-2 says; "and the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion; and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority".

Throughout Daniel 7 these symbols are identified: "These great beasts which are four, are four kings which shall arise out of the earth" - verse 17. The word king is synonymous with kingdom, as, "The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon the earth". The next verse 24; "and the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise". It follows that the ten horns are ten succeeding kingdoms growing out of the fourth kingdom, which was to rule the earth.

These same four world-ruling Gentile kingdoms are described in the second chapter of Daniel, beginning in verse 36. Daniel says "This is the dream and we will tell the interpretation thereof to the king...thou art this head of gold. And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth. And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise" (*V 36-40*). The interpretation of the stone smashing the image at its toes is found in the 44th verse: "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever". The Stone is interpreted in many places as the Messiah and His world ruling Kingdom (see *Acts:4:10,11*).

Daniel 2 describes these same four beasts as world-ruling Gentile powers and identifies them as: The first was Nebuchadnezzar's, Chaldean Empire, called "Babylon" after its capital from 625 B.C. to 539 B.C. The second kingdom we know from history to be the Persian Empire of 558 B.C. to 330 B.C. The third kingdom was Macedonia, under Alexander the Great who conquered the Persian Empire in 330 B.C. to 333 B.C.

But Alexander lived only a short year after his conquest and his four generals divided his kingdom into 4 regions: Macedonia and Greece, Thrace and Western Asia, Syria, and the area east of the Indus River including Egypt. So these were the four heads of the 3rd beast of Daniel 7.

Without repeating the descriptions of the beasts, we conclude Daniel's fourth beast, the Roman Empire, had absorbed and therefore it

included the three beasts before it, thus it included all seven heads. And John's beast also had seven heads. It was Daniel's fourth beast only that had 10 horns, and John's beast had 10 horns. The Bible interprets these horns as kingdoms, identifying the beast of Rev. 13 as the Roman Empire of 31 B.C. to 476 A.D. as the fourth kingdom out of which 10 kings (*10 horns*) shall arise.

These 10 kings shall continue from 476 A.D. to the time of the Stone - the Second Coming of the Messiah and His Kingdom. The beast described by John was that of the 4th beast of Daniel, so the specific "one of its heads" that was wounded to death (*Rev. 13:3*) was the 7th head of the Roman Empire.

The deadly wound was the one administered to the Roman Empire, when, in its last decaying stages, the barbarians overran it in 476 A.D. Notice the dragon gave power to the beast. (*Rev 12*): "The Dragon, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan". So the Roman Empire was given its power through Satan. "They worshipped the beast" (*Rev.13:4*). History is full of accounts of worship of the Roman Empire and Emperors, for paganism was a state religion. Quoted from Robinson's *Medieval and Modern Times*: "The worship of the Emperor: in a word, the Holy Roman Empire was not only wonderfully organized...everyone was required to join in the worship of the emperor because he stood for the majesty and glory of the dominion...all were obliged as good citizens, to join in the official sacrifices to the head of the state, as a god".

The Roman Empire was overrun in 476 A.D. - received its deadly wound, but verses 3 and 5 say; "his deadly wound was healed...and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months". So the 10 horns grow out of this "healed" kingdom and last until sometime just prior to the coming of the Messiah.

The Roman empire was overrun in North Africa in 455, then in 476 Odoacer set up his government in Rome, called the Heruli. It was not Roman, but a foreign barbarian government and did not heal the deadly wound. In 554 A.D. Justinian, Emperor of the East, from Constantinople set up his government through an Imperial Legate at Ravenna, Italy, bringing about what is known in history as the "Imperial Restoration" of the Roman Empire - or its "healing". After this "healing", power was given for the beast to continue "forty and two months". In prophecies pertaining to Israel's punishment the Bible uses a "day for a year" principal as set out in Ezek. 4:4-6, and Num. 14:34. Thus the healed beast - the Roman Empire, is to continue 1260 years in the condition as described by John and Daniel.

Following the healing in 554, came the Frankish kingdom (*French*), the Holy Roman Empire (*German, then the Austrian Hapsburgs*) and Napoleon's kingdom (*French again*), but when Napoleon was crushed in 1814, the healed beast "continued no longer". "So closed" says West's *Modern History*, "a government that dated from Augustus Caesar" from 31 B.C. - it "went into the Abyss"! And from 554 A.D. to 1814 A.D.; the duration of the healed beast, is exactly 1260 years!

At that time, eight of the 10 horns having appeared and gone, the beast itself went into the non-existent condition symbolized in Revelation 17:8 as the "bottomless pit". But by the year 1870, Garibaldi had united the many little divisions in the peninsula of Italy into one nation and the kingdom thus established began the 9th horn, which culminated in the fascist rule of Mussolini. The 17th Chapter explains the revival of the beast "out of the bottomless pit" by a federation of 10 European nations within the old Roman Empire. This is actually

beginning as modern history records developments in Europe today.

To prove that this latter-day revived beast, is indeed the Holy Roman Empire, we simply have to identify it as the Bible says, by its number "six hundred and three score and six" (*Rev 13:17-18*), or *600 and 60 and 6*. (Not "666".)

From scripture we have the following:

1. The beast can be identified, if we have wisdom, by the numbers 600 and 60 and 6.
2. We are told to count this number - that is add it up. The same Greek word used in Luke 14:28, means "Count the cost".
3. This number is the number of a beast and the beast is a symbol for kingdom - so it really is the number of a kingdom.
4. 600 and 60 and 6 must be the number of a kingdom, as well as that of the king who founds it, as both, "the name of the beast", and "it is the number of a man", are scriptural clues.

The founder and first king of Rome was Romulus. The Roman Empire was named after him. But the origin of the kingdom goes back to the time of King Lateinos, or Latinus in Latin, who founded the Latin Kingdom four centuries before Romulus founded its future capital. When John wrote the Revelation, telling us to count the number of the beast, he originally wrote in the Hebrew language, which was later translated into the Greek language. At the time, while he was writing in Hebrew, his work was being directed mainly to the "Greek" audience, thus he originally used the common "Roman Numeral" system to express numbers within his writing. Thus we must look for this name, and the numbers 600 and 66 and 6 in Roman numerals as recognized in the Bible.

In the Roman language, the name of the founder of the kingdom was understood in the second century to have originally been spelled "Lateinos", signifying "Latin Man", or the name of "Latium" from which the Romans derived

their origin and their language. This word too, signifies "Roman". In the Roman letter for number value analysis we find the following: L=30, A=1, T=300, E=5, I=10, N=50, O=70, S=200. Count these figures - add them up - they equal exactly 600 and 60 and 6. It is no coincidence that the name of the kingdom, its founder, and first king, each count to exactly 600 and 60 and 6. Certainly the beast stands identified as the Roman Empire, and it is the "mark of the beast" - the mark of the revived Holy Roman Empire of the last days which Yahweh will punish people for.

The Bible says the beast - the Roman Empire gets its power from Satan (*the dragon*). Satan has his civil government on earth. He gave it "his power and his seat, and great authority". He has also organized religion as his instrument in deceiving the world. According to Rev. 12:9 and 20:3 Satan has his ministers who pretend to be the ministers of righteousness, but are actually false apostles, deceitful workers, calling themselves the ministers of the Messiah.

They are the many, not the few, the Bible says, who also have been deceived. Satan's main labour for 6,000 years has been deceiving the world. "And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon" (*Rev. 13:11*). This beast appears as a lamb - looks, acts and pretends to be a *Christian* kingdom, but spoke as a dragon - its true characteristic, for "out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh" (*Matt. 12:30*).

Here is a kingdom reappearing as that of the Messiah (*lamb*) but in reality it is the Devil, and "he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him" (*Rev. 13:12*). The first beast is the Roman Empire. So here is another government pretending to be the Messiah's government, using and employing all the power of the first kingdom.

In most any encyclopaedia, under "Millennium", you will read the history of how the "Holy Roman Empire" was called the "Kingdom of Yahweh upon Earth". They claimed the Millennium had arrived! So here we have this ecclesiastical organization, which is a two-fold (*symbolized by the two horns*) government, deceiving the people by making an "image of the beast" (*Rev. 13:14*). So here is a deceived congregation; a "church" saying "let us make ourselves into a model or counterpart [*image*] of the civil Roman government [*beast*"]

Human, church government derived its present form in the real sense, by the first Pope, Leo I 440-461 A.D. The *Cyclopaedia of Biblical, Theological and Ecclesiastical Literature* says that to him the form of government of the Roman Empire was the most marvellous thing on earth. He applied its principles to the church, organized the church into a government, forming the papacy. This church government or organization, now the Catholic Papacy, is the "image of the beast" described in the Revelation.

In Rev. 17:3, this false church is symbolized as a "woman" riding the beast. A woman riding a horse for example, guides the horse, controls it - it does her bidding. In verse 2 and 18:3 we see that the inhabitants of the earth have been deceived by this counterfeit Christianity - she has deceived all nations in these end times. This church became a mother, and daughter churches came out of her in "protest", calling themselves "protestant", all having worldly, political church government, with man-made laws, rather than Yahweh-GIVEN laws.

"Upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots" (*Rev. 17:5*). Her daughters are called "harlots". Together they are called "Babylon". They are pagan, teaching pagan doctrines and

customs, cloaked in the name of Christianity. And all nations are deceived. "Come out of her my people", Yahweh says, in Rev. 18:4.

So in these end times, we have the Roman Catholic church - the Papacy, already instigating a revival of a resurrected Roman Empire ("*New-World*" or "*One World*" Order) - participating in talks with the European Economic Community that will cause people to be killed that refuse to accept the "mark of the beast" - the mark of the resurrected Roman Empire in Europe. Yahweh says if we do accept the mark of the beast that He will cause us to suffer the seven last plagues - which are horrible beyond description.

In Revelation 17, John pictures this same church as the woman riding the beast; "and I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Yah'shua" (*verse 6*) and Rev. 20:4; "And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Yah'shua, and for the word of Yahweh, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with the Messiah a thousand years".

History tells us that in the middle ages about 50 million were killed for their Bible faith and obedience to Yahweh instead of obedience to this church government (*image of the beast*) and the devil. This chapter prophecies that another, future, more staggering martyrdom is yet to take place in "like manner". This means that the mark of the beast is something that was forced on people, on pain of being killed, more than 1,000 years ago, and this "mark" is once again going to be enforced. And those that refuse it will be martyred in the coming Great Tribulation, and those that accept it will suffer Yahweh's last

seven plagues and will not reign with the Messiah during the millennium.

"If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of Yahweh" (*Rev. 14:9-10*). THE MARK WAS BRANDED on all but the martyrs OVER 1,000 YEARS AGO, it is still the brand of traditional *Christianity* and other false faiths - those who receive it will suffer Yahweh's wrath.

"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of Yahweh, and the faith of Yah'shua" (*Rev 14:12*). Here are those who refuse to receive the "mark" of the beast, which plainly means the rejecting or breaking of Yahweh's commandments. In James 2:10-11, Yahweh says if we break only one of them, we are guilty of all. Therefore, the inevitable and sole conclusion, is that the mark is something enforced by the false church (*Christianity*) originating in the paganism of the Roman Empire, which a cunning, deceiving devil has seized upon as a means of cleverly deceiving people into breaking Yahweh's commandments. And it involves a direct connection with holding a job, earning a living - being able to "buy and sell" (*Rev. 13:17*).

Satan is clever - cunning - a deceiver. He palms off *Christian* counterfeits, which look like genuine. Naturally he would select the one commandment of Yahweh to counterfeit with a substitute, one in which by human reason alone, no man could see where it would make any difference. He would select the one of least importance to the carnal human mind. He would not try to deceive the whole world into idolatry, profanity, stealing, lying, murder, adultery - although he has led people into all of these.

There is only one of the commandments that affects a man's ability to "buy and sell" or to hold a job - earn a living - the Sabbath

commandment. This is the only commandment which was altered by the Roman Empire as prophesied by Daniel 7:25; "times and laws" that would be changed by the little horn - the political government of the church. That is, the great false church, would change Yahweh's law in respect to time - the time for the Sabbaths!

The Sabbath sets one apart from the world, and always did - as a sign, identifying one who is obedient and belongs to Yahweh. Can you think of any reason why anyone would ever keep the Sabbath, except to obey Yahweh? Would any man defy human custom, mainstream tradition and invite persecution, and be set apart as different, through human reason? Could any atheist or "New Age" thinker be a Sabbath keeper? The Sabbath clearly identifies Yahweh's obedient and faithful servants.

The Sabbath is the only commandment the world rejects in its mind (*forehead*) and disobeys by working with the hand. It distinguishes between those that have the mark of the beast or the sign of Yahweh.

The book of Revelation is written mostly in symbols. The right hand symbolizes work or labour - the forehead symbolizes intellect or mind. It has to do with what we believe, in the mind, and whether we obey, with the hand.

The mark of the beast clearly states this: "If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand" (*Rev. 14:9-10*). Also; "And he [*the beast*] causeth all...to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads" (*Rev. 13:15-16*).

Now how about Yahweh's sign? Regarding Yahweh's annual Sabbaths; "it shall be for a sign unto thee upon thine hand, and for a memorial between thine eyes [*forehead*] that Yahweh's law may be in thy mouth" (*Ex. 13:9*).

"Now these are the Commandments ...and these words which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart...and thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes" (*Deut. 6:1,6-8*).

"Therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes" (*Deut. 11:18*). Also see Proverbs 7:2-3 and Revelation 7:3-4, and 14:1.

There is absolute proof! The Sabbath is Yahweh's sign, standing more than any other commandment, for obedience. It was symbolically in the hand and in the forehead, just as the mark of the beast - the pagan Sunday - was in the right hand and in the forehead. Sunday observance, Easter, *Christmas*, New Year's, Lenten, etc., this is the mark of the beast.

The false *Christian* church, deceived by Satan, did (*as secular history records prove*), cause all under the "Holy Roman Empire" to receive this mark during the middle ages. The local (*Roman*) council of Laodicea, about 363 A.D. passed this decree: "*Christians* must not Judaize by resting on the Sabbath, but must work on that day, resting rather on Sunday. But if any be found to be Judaizing, let them be declared anathema from the *Christ*!"

Not only were active Congregation members caused (*forced on pain of death*) to observe Sunday instead of the Sabbath, but it became a universal custom so that all the Western world, regardless of religious connection or belief, accepted Sunday instead of Saturday as the weekly day of rest! It has become universal in the Western world except for Judaism, Islam, a few sects in *Christianity* and the comparative few whom Yahweh has called out of this world and into His true Congregation of Israelite believers.

Has the beast stopped? It is presently in the "Abyss", but it is also in the process of resurrecting itself as a new united group of European nations. The Bible says a group of 10 nations that will be associated with the great false church will soon cause another future martyrdom of saints; a war against the true Israelites!

Yahweh's last warning for this New Covenant age is to "Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues" (*Rev. 18:4*).

Again; "Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the Commandments of Yahweh, and the faith of Yah'shua" (*Rev. 14:12*).

How plain and simple is Yahweh's Word!

## Mark of the Beast

### Test Command:

Let's begin with a correct understanding of precisely what the "mark of the Beast" is. This mark, or sign, is symbolic of our belief. It is in the right "hand" and on the "forehead", or between the eyes, if you translate it correctly. If you investigate the Old Covenant where the same phrases are used to explain other concepts, you will find that this combination clearly means to offer an explanation of what we believe in our mind "between our eyes" is established or is evidenced by what we do with our "hand". In short "what we do" or "how we act" demonstrates proof of "what we believe".

Okay, so it is a symbolic sign, pointing out that our actions are proof of our beliefs. Now what beliefs does this sign refer to when it is used in Revelation regarding the "mark of the Beast"? It is referring to believing in Yahweh as opposed to believing in Satan's ways, or worldly ways.

What actions could we perform that would be evidence of our belief? Buying and selling, or conducting commerce is only part of the question. Did you not read those references in the Bible where even the 12 Apostles when traveling with the Messiah, carried a "money-box" with which they purchased those things they had need of? Or when the Messiah instructed Peter to pay taxes for them both? So simply buying and selling or paying taxes is not the essence of the message here, because even the Messiah and His Apostles bought and sold those things they had need of and paid taxes. Paul specifically states that he paid "rent" for his own house for three years, hence "commerce" was not the problem.

Commerce was evidence of the problem "sometimes", but not the problem directly. You see, if we "Believe" Yahweh, the physical demonstration of our actions ends up proving

it, or disproving it. So the question is, how could our physical actions of buying and selling, either prove or disprove our belief in Yahweh? Simple! Yahweh commands us to "Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it Holy to Yahweh". In another part of the Bible, a strong rebuke is given to those that were operating the market-place outside of the Synagogue, or Tabernacle of Meeting on the Sabbath: "what evil thing is this you do, by profaning the Sabbath" by buying and selling. Yet those same people bought and sold all week long (like the Messiah and the Apostles) without being rebuked.

The answer is that Yahweh has always used His Sabbath command as a "test" commandment, to determine whether or not His people really "believed" Him and would demonstrate that belief through their actions. It goes right back to the gathering of "manna" from heaven. Yahweh instructed the ancient Israelites to gather manna for six days and to rest on the seventh. And then He told them WHY! "Then said Yahweh unto Moses, behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day...that I may prove them, whether they will walk in my law, or not". And when they insisted on gathering manna on the seventh day, Yahweh rebuked them by saying "how long refuse ye to keep my Commandments and my laws? See, for that Yahweh has given you the Sabbath, therefore he giveth you on the sixth day the bread of two days; abide ye every man in his place" (*Ex. 16:28-29*). It was the only commandment Yahweh used as a "test", or as a "sign" of obedience.

The Roman council of Laodicea, about 363 A.D. on behalf of the Roman Catholic church, passed this decree: "*Christians* must not Judaize by resting on the Sabbath, but must work on that day, resting rather on Sunday. But if any be found to be Judaizing, let

them be declared anathema from the *Christ*! When we buy and sell, or conduct commerce on the Sabbath we are demonstrating our belief in Satan, by our obedience to His worldly commandments, whereas when we do not buy and sell, or conduct commerce on the Sabbath, we are demonstrating our belief in Yahweh through our obedience to His commandments.

As for living in this society and not being able to "find a way out", we suspect you are not aware of Yahweh's plan. We are instructed by Yahweh that although we must be "in the world," we are not to be "of the world". This means that Yahweh knows we will of necessity, have to live in this evil world that is ruled by Satan. But even so, we are to be obedient to Yahweh, i.e., by keeping His commandments, such as the Sabbath.

Yahweh also knows that man-made rules would be put in place effectively forcing us to pay taxes and to pay rent or a price to own land, contrary to Yahweh's original intent. But this contrary plan of Satan's (*the Beast's*), is just what Yahweh wants us to experience so we will indeed learn to appreciate the difference. That is why we are told to "Count it all joy when you fall into various trials", because we expected to learn and develop character from these trials.

We are also commanded by Yahweh to "pay taxes to whom taxes are due" and to "obey every ordinance of man". These commands are such that we can thus be in the world and not of it. Simply "knowing" what is right and wrong is the real issue. Being "trapped" or feeling enslaved to the world is living in and of the world.

We are only trapped or enslaved if that is what we believe. It is a state of mind that enables our freedom, and that state of mind is a gift from Yahweh that no man or group of men can take away. Yahweh's Holy Spirit is dwelling in our hearts and in our minds, and

that is where the present Kingdom of Yahweh exists. So yes we can live "in the world", but because we have the Kingdom of Yahweh within us, we are therefore not "of the world", even though we are subject to its temporal laws.

The liberty you seek is within you. Yahweh is not far from any of us. We will all partake of Yahweh's future Kingdom on Earth, when the Messiah returns. In the interim, through our faith, we may partake of it in our hearts and minds. But we are still meant to be in the world and subject to the worldly authorities to the extent our conscience permits, even those authorities we disagree with. In other words, we are obedient to worldly authority insofar as it does not cause us to violate Yahweh's commandments. Yahweh is not a free ticket out of our worldly responsibilities, nor did He ever imply such a thing.

We are free to choose to demonstrate our belief in Yahweh by our actions even in this world. We can for example, still keep the Sabbath Holy. Can or would an Atheist keep the Sabbath? What possible reason would anyone keep the Sabbath, save but to demonstrate their belief in Yahweh?

Our rights do come from Yahweh, but not in this present world. Both Yahweh the Father and the Messiah fully acknowledge that Satan is the "ruler of this age". Our job as assigned by Yahweh, is to "endure" to the end of this age, all of these "trials" in order to fully understand and appreciate the inherent flaws and weaknesses in this man-made, Satan-influenced system.

How would we ever know the advantages of the perfect system, if we had never experienced this imperfect one? In other words, if when you were about three years old, you were instructed to "never touch the hot stove top", how would you know what the

benefits of being obedient were until you actually disobeyed and got "burned" by your disobedience?

Almost every child disobeys at least once before they get to the place of purely accepting their Father's advice without question. Our relationship with our Heavenly Father, Yahweh is no different. He originally created a perfect world with a perfect environment which would have perfectly sustained us in perfect physical, emotional, mental and spiritual health, if we would have simply perfectly believed in and perfectly followed His perfect instructions. But because we chose to make our own determinations of what was right and wrong, we made many mistakes, including the game of commerce. But because we made the mistakes, we do not enjoy the perfect health or happiness we would have otherwise.

Our life in this world is not about temporal freedom. It is about grasping the reality of spiritual freedom. The freedom to understand why the system will be better under the Messiah's rule in the future. Even the Messiah chose to be subject to temporal laws. He allowed Himself to be falsely tried, convicted and unjustly crucified according to man's commercial (*Roman*) law.

The Apostles were beaten, threatened, imprisoned, and murdered all in the name of the Roman commercial law. They did not run and hide or seek protection from these temporal injustices behind the Kingdom of Yahweh. On the contrary, they faithfully believed that they were free in His Holy Spirit, in spite of these trials, and they thanked Yahweh for "accounting them worthy to suffer on His account"!

We were commanded to "imitate them" (*the apostles*) even as they imitated the Messiah. We were not told to create a new plan.

If you believe in Yahweh, and if you believe in the Messiah's sacrifice being proof that you too will be resurrected to a better life in His Kingdom, then you too can even now fully enjoy Yahweh's blessing of true freedom; the state of mind that no man or system of commerce can take away from you.

### **False Marks are Satan's Diversion:**

There are a great many proponents of an equally great number of false "marks" and false identities of the Beast of Revelation.

These false marks are a deliberate diversionary tactic of Satan, designed to cause people to look into Man's worldly affairs rather than simply pay attention to Yahweh's inspired warnings. Such fallacies include Micro-Chip Implants, State Identity Cards, Automated Banking Cards and many others.

The issue here is not whether the mark is an ID card, micro-chip implant, bank card, or some other man-made thing related to money, or whether or not we CAN buy or sell with or without some form or fashion of this card/ chip/ implant or state issued identity, or even whether or not we CAN buy or sell on Sunday or Saturday.

The issue is WILL we buy or sell or conduct commerce on Yahweh's Sabbath, or WILL we do these things during the remaining six days of the week including on man's false "holi"-day of Sunday.

In other words, will we be obedient to Yahweh or will we be obedient to Satan. The issue of all of these various forms of ID cards, chips, etc., is merely a crafty diversionary tactic of Satan.

What Satan wants, is for us to be panicked over these silly temporal matters, and thereby distracted from the truly important issue of managing our obedience.

The free will gifted to us by our Father includes the freedom to manage our

OBEDIENCE to our Father, and this is the only real issue of the mark that we must remain diligent to. The "mark" is simply symbolic of our obedience!

Simply put, we create our own individual mark based upon our own obedience. If we are obedient to Yahweh, then we have accepted Yahweh's mark in our hearts, or as the Bible states, on our hands by what we do, and in our heads by what we think, or if we are obedient to Satan, then we have accepted Satan's mark in our hearts, or again as the Bible states, on our hands by what we do, and in our heads by what we think.

The choice is always ours and the choice is always freely open to us to make of our own free will; it is not something that is to be forced or imposed upon us by the man-made authorities as many new-agers or traditional *Christians* erroneously purport.

## **Case of the Missing Body:**

It could have been a mystery for Sherlock Holmes to solve. The Jewish religious leaders, the Roman authorities and even the disciples were all asking themselves: "Why was the body of Yah'shua the Messiah missing?"

It was bad news for the Roman civil and Jewish religious authorities who desperately wanted to show that Yah'shua was dead and buried. Neither group wanted the prophesied resurrection story to surface unchallenged. Possession of the body of the Messiah was the trump card that could totally debunk the claim.

Ironically, the precautions the Jews and Romans took to prevent the Messiah's body from being stolen, served to frustrate their major objective of disproving the resurrection, by actually demonstrating that the resurrection was the only explanation of the missing body! Both the burial site conditions and the official sealing of the tomb did as well.

There were also many witnesses to the resurrection of the Messiah. Let's examine each briefly.

For starters, all four Gospel writers mentioned that the entrance to the Messiah's tomb was blocked by a large stone. Historians and archaeologists give an estimate of the stone's probable size as between one and one half, and two tons. The ramp on which the stone would have stood, was slightly inclined toward the opening. To close the entrance, the stone would be rolled down the ramp in front of the door - gravity would do the rest.

Now let's consider the Roman guards. The chief priests and Pharisees asked Pontius Pilate for military guards to be posted at the tomb so the Messiah's body could not be stolen (*Matt. 27:62-66*).

It is estimated that a Roman guard unit consisted of between 8 to 16 soldiers. They were part of a well-trained fighting machine.

Once posted, no one would dare attempt to remove the stone or even come near the entrance.

But while the Roman contingent was ON GUARD, an angel materialized in their midst (*Matt. 28:2-4*). The angel caused an earthquake that rolled back the stone from the entrance - three days after the burial.

Some of the frightened guards ran to the religious leaders and reported what had happened. What the chief priests heard, perhaps bolstered by an on-site inspection, convinced them the matter had to be hushed up quickly (*vv. 11-15*).

The religious leaders first cover-up effort was to attempt bribing of the guards. They then devised a spurious story to explain the missing body: "You are to say, 'His disciples came during the night and stole him away while we were asleep'" (*v. 13*).

The concocted story about a shift of the Roman guards falling asleep and the disciples moving the nearly two ton stone without waking them, must have caused many a chuckle in Jerusalem!

Two of several breaches of Roman military discipline that demanded the death penalty, were leaving a night watch and deserting one's post. Falling asleep on one's post was certainly not to be taken lightly! Execution of those guilty was often horrible, to make them examples to other soldiers. Such a penalty would surely have kept them awake - and certainly would have reduced their enthusiasm for telling their superiors that they had fallen asleep on the job!

The warden at the Philippi jail for example, was ready to commit suicide when he realized that Paul and Silas had escaped from their chains (*Acts 16:25-28*). The tomb guards would have had similar fears, which makes the idea of their having fallen asleep, ludicrous. The suggestion that the massive stone could

have been moved without waking them is even more absurd.

Pilate did more than simply post guards. He also ordered that an official seal be put on the tomb's entrance stone itself (*Matt. 27:66*). (*We have something similar today, when police place a yellow tape, marking off a designated crime area.*) The Roman guards would have stretched a cord across the rock blocking the entrance. The cord would be fastened at each end with sealing clay, and the clay packs would have been stamped with the official signet of the Roman governor.

The Roman seal was a public verification that the Messiah's body was indeed sealed in the tomb. Tampering with the official seal was to incur the fury of the Roman governor - and it meant automatic execution.

The disciples had displayed cowardice at Yah'shua' trial and dejected indifference afterward. Would they suddenly have been willing to defy Roman authority, fight the guards off, then move the stone, remove the body without being seen, and then dispose of the body in some manner that none of the Roman authorities or the Jewish religious leaders could ever find it? Hardly!

Yet the body was found to be missing. Where was it? Why was it never produced to counter the apostles claim of the resurrection? After all, the body would certainly have put a stop to the resurrection claim once and for all, by those that wanted it hushed up - that is why they went to such lengths to guard the tomb in the first place!

In his first sermon in Jerusalem, just weeks after Yah'shua' death and burial, Peter spoke openly and passionately about Messiah's resurrection (*Acts 2:24,32*). However, no one produced a body, or even stepped forward to verbally dispute the claim! It would have been simple to contradict Peter's insistence that Yah'shua had risen - one public

display of the body by the Jews or the Romans would have destroyed all credibility to the apostles' testimony. A short walk to the tomb to view the corpse would have embarrassed them into silence. No attempt to exhume the body for the purpose of discrediting the resurrection story was ever made - because every one living there at the time, accepted the fact that the tomb was indeed empty!

Consider the prominent Jewish leader, Gamaliel, a member of the Sanhedrin. He was willing to concede that the apostles were doing the work of Yahweh in proclaiming Yah'shua' resurrection (*Acts 5:29-39*). He would never have done so if he or the Sanhedrin (*who had violently opposed the Messiah while He was alive*) had any knowledge of the Messiah's dead body.

During the many years that the apostolic Church was headquartered in Jerusalem, not one party came forward to say he had seen the Messiah's body. There was no denial, official or otherwise from the Roman government.

Besides the embarrassingly empty tomb, there were the many witnesses that had seen the risen Messiah. Yah'shua appeared to people on a number of occasions during those 40 days after He arose (*Acts 1:3*).

There were appearances to one or two disciples, or to large groups, as much as 500 at one time, mentioned by Paul (*1 Cor. 15:6*). Most interesting is that Yah'shua did not appear to the male disciples first. He chose to appear to Mary Magdalene first, while she was at the tomb with several other women (*John 20:1-18*); *Matt. 28:1*; *Luke 24:1,10,11*).

In those times women were not considered to be good witnesses in legal cases. Mary especially would have been suspect, as she was once known as an evil (*demon possessed*) party (*Luke 8:2*). Yet each of the Gospel writers acknowledge her as one of the first witnesses. Suppose the Gospel

writers had tried to fabricate a resurrection story. They certainly would not have included Mary Magdalene as a witness, much less as a prime first witness of the event.

A most convincing proof that the Messiah was resurrected is the apostle's sudden bold preaching of the event. The book of Acts alone, shows the apostles proclaiming this message many times in the face of harsh opposition, life-threatening beatings, arrest, threat of imprisonment and death.

Why would they suddenly change, and put their lives on the line to preach a resurrection story if they knew it was a lie? They would not have!

In the final analysis, none of the arguments drummed up against Yah'shua the Messiah's resurrection hold up under even the slightest scrutiny.

All the facts, as the Gospel writers present them, argue for a miracle. Three days after He was dead and buried, Yah'shua was resurrected and glorified by Yahweh the Father, just like He said He would be (*Matt. 12:40, 28:6*).

Our faith, the substance of things HOPED for, is rooted in that resurrection. Yah'shua' rising from the dead is a witness to us; evidence that we too will be resurrected by our Father in a future resurrection to eternal life! (*1 Cor. 15:12-22, 51-55*).

## Gospel of Yahweh:

What is the true Gospel? Yah'shua said, "He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned" (*Mark 16:16*). Believes what? Why, believes that which He (*and His disciples*) preached, of course - the Gospel that originated from Yahweh the Father. Yahweh promised that in Malachi 3:1; "Behold I send my messenger, and he will prepare the way before Me [*and that messenger, as explained in Mark 1:2, was John the Baptist, preparing the way for Yah'shua the Messiah.*] And the Lord, whom you seek, will suddenly come to His temple, even the Messenger of the covenant, in whom you delight".

The very first sermon by which Yahweh had the Gospel preached to Gentiles, when Peter was sent to the house of the Gentile Cornelius, recorded in the 10th chapter of Acts, gives us an understanding of the Gospel. "The word which Yahweh sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace through Yah'shua the Messiah - He is Lord of all - that word you know, which was proclaimed throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee after the baptism which John preached" (*verse 36-37*).

Notice carefully:

1) with whom did the message originate? Peter said, "The word which Yahweh sent". It did not originate with Yah'shua, or Peter or Paul - it was sent by Yahweh the Father.

2) by whom was it sent? Who was the divine Messenger? Who preached the message? Peter said, "by Yah'shua the Messiah". Malachi called him "the Messenger of the Covenant". That message, then, is the New Covenant, as Moses was the mediator of the Old and Yah'shua the Messiah of the New, as affirmed by Scriptures such as Hebrews 9:15. This message, then, is the New Covenant Gospel.

3) where was it preached first? Peter said it, "began from Galilee".

4) when did Yah'shua begin to preach this particular Gospel? Peter, again, said, "After the baptism which John preached". The true New Covenant Gospel, then, began after John had completed his baptismal ministry.

Now these points lead us directly to the first chapter of Mark. The first verse tells us this is the record of the beginning of the Gospel of Yah'shua the Messiah. Then it relates the baptizing ministry of John, preaching "the baptism of repentance", which prepares the way for the Gospel Yahweh sent by Yah'shua the Messiah.

And the exact time then; "Now after John was put in prison" (*verse 14-15*) was the beginning of the preaching of the true Gospel - "Yah'shua" there is the divine Messenger by whom Yahweh sent it "came to Galilee" the precise location - so now we have the time, the place and the Messenger - so whatever Yah'shua is here, preaching, is his true Gospel.

And what do we read? "Yah'shua came to Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdom of Yahweh, and saying the time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of Yahweh is at hand. Repent, and believe in the Gospel [truth]". Notice, Yah'shua said; "believe in the Gospel". What Gospel - the one He was sent to proclaim "the Gospel of the kingdom of Yahweh". It is called in scripture, the Gospel of Yahweh. The Gospel of Yahweh is Yahweh's Gospel - His message - His good news that He sent to earth by Yah'shua.

We hear a great deal today of a Gospel about the party of Yah'shua the Messiah. And certainly Yahweh's Gospel includes the truth about Yah'shua the Messiah, His life, death and resurrection. But to confine the message solely to the things ABOUT Yah'shua is to tell only part of the story. As a result millions believe on the Messiah (*or in the Messiah*) who

do not actually believe the Messiah! Yah'shua' Gospel is also His message and His teachings about "the kingdom of Yahweh".

And Yah'shua Himself, said His Gospel was not only His, but His Father's who sent Him; "For I have not spoken on My own authority; but the Father who sent Me gave Me a command, what I should say and what I should speak. And I know that His command is everlasting life. therefore, whatever I speak, just as the Father has told Me, so I speak". And, as Yah'shua told us, "and this is eternal life, that they may know you, the only true God, and Yah'shua the Messiah, whom you have sent" (*John 12:49-50 and 17:3*).

Eternal life is given to those who have faith to obey Yahweh and Yah'shua the Messiah. The good news is that it is possible to have a relationship with Yahweh the Father (*not only with Yah'shua*). Yah'shua, through His saving work of redemption, reconciles us (*those who were lost*): "For it pleased the Father, that in Him, all the fullness should dwell, and by Him to reconcile all things to Himself, by Him, whether things on earth or things in Heaven, having made peace through the blood of His stake. And you, who were once alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now He has reconciled in the body of His flesh through death, to present you holy, and blameless, and irreproachable in His sight - if indeed you continue in the faith, grounded and steadfast, and are not moved away from the hope of the Gospel which you heard, which was preached to every creature under heaven, of which I, Paul, became a minister" (*Colossians 1:19-23*).

Modern Christian confusion has many believing that the Gospel of the kingdom of Yahweh is not for this age - the New Covenant time of grace. They have rejected the very conditions to salvation. But as Paul said to the Thessalonians, I would not have you to be

ignorant of the very Gospel that can bring us eternal life! A vital step in the conversion process is to believe the Gospel (*Mark 1:15*).

For millions of Christians, the term Gospel has little meaning aside from the life of Yah'shua, His death on the stake and the meaning of His resurrection. These important facts are all part of the New Covenant Gospel, but Yah'shua preached the Gospel as meaning "the good news" of "the kingdom of Yahweh" (*Mark 1:14*). The good news is that man can be reconciled to Yahweh.

As a result of sin, we have been separated from Yahweh (*Isaiah 59:2*). This separation has been the condition of mankind since the garden of Eden. As revealed in Genesis, Adam and Eve were expelled from the presence of Yahweh.

Paul tells us: "For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of Yahweh is eternal life in Messiah Yah'shua our Lord" (*Romans 6:23*). The "good news", or Gospel, is that we have a Redeemer who has paid the death penalty our sins have incurred. Further good news is that we may receive the gift of eternal life in the kingdom of Yahweh. Yah'shua Himself is to return to earth as King and divine ruler - the ultimate hope for mankind.

The English word "Gospell" or Gospel comes from the old world word Godspell, and literally means "good news". Yah'shua said it was the good news of the "Kingdom of Yahweh". What is a kingdom? Primarily, it is a government - a nation and the government that rules it. And especially in the Biblical sense, there is a dual sense of the nation, including all its subjects or citizens, and the government by which it is ruled. And in Bible usage, a kingdom is often a family from a single line of descent grown into a nation. Four things are necessary to constitute a kingdom:

- 1) territory of land and waters with boundaries,
- 2) a king, ruler or governing agent,

- 3) subjects within the territorial jurisdiction,
- 4) laws and a form of Government.

The kingdom of Yahweh that Yah'shua preached is both present and future reality for true Israelites - the elect. The Gospel includes the good news of the forgiveness of sins, redemption by our Saviour, and that as Israelites we are to love our fellow humans and live by every word of Yahweh. Also, that Yahweh will bring us world peace by establishing His divine kingdom over all nations at Yah'shua' Second Coming, when He will take control and rule by Yahweh's law.

We find the four requisites of the kingdom in both the present and future reality of the kingdom of Yahweh:

- 1) we live in the territory of this present world,
- 2) we acknowledge Yah'shua as our Lord and Saviour,
- 3) our citizenship is "registered in heaven",
- 4) we obey the laws that form the basis of Yahweh's government.

In addition to partaking of the benefits and responsibilities of the kingdom of Yahweh as it is presently manifested on earth, we also "desire a better, that is, heavenly country" (*Hebrews 11:16*) - the future reality of the kingdom of Yahweh.

The Bible says the future reality of the kingdom of Yahweh will also include:

- 1) territory which the Bible reveals will be this entire earth;
- 2) the King of Kings - who will return to rule it;
- 3) people from all nations, kindreds and tongues; and
- 4) the law and government of Yahweh over all the earth.

Notice when Nicodemus came to Yah'shua in John 3:, Yah'shua said: "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of Yahweh".

Yah'shua taught that we must be "born from above" or "born of His Holy Spirit" if we

are to "see the kingdom of Yahweh" (*John 3:3,5*).

Yah'shua was explaining part of the conversion process that must occur in every Israelite's life. He was proclaiming a most important phase of entering the kingdom of Yahweh. Yah'shua came preaching, saying "repent" and "believe the Gospel".

Just two things we do to become "born again" Israelites - "repent" and "believe". We must believe the Gospel which also means believing on Yah'shua the Messiah, the King of Kings over all families on earth; as Saviour, as High Priest now and as our coming King.

We must also repent - meaning a total, complete change of mind and life. It means we repent of transgressing the Will and law of Yahweh. Yah'shua said to the young man who asked him how to inherit eternal life; "But if you want to enter into life, keep the commandments" (*Matthew 19:17*). He discussed a few of them with the young man, but He indeed said: keep all the commandments.

Peter concluded his inspiring sermon on Pentecost with the words "Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Yah'shua the Messiah for the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of His Holy Spirit" (*Acts 2:38*).

Israelites must be born from above - we must repent and believe, in order to be baptized by His Holy Spirit. The New Covenant refers to this as walking in newness of life; putting on the new man; being resurrected from the world as a child of Yahweh. "Behold what manner of love the Father has bestowed on us, that we should be called children of Yahweh!... and everyone who has this hope in him purifies himself, just as He is pure" (*1 John 3:1-3*).

Yah'shua kept the commandments, and was pure. He taught all of these commandments for us to keep - to purify

ourselves. This is the law of Yahweh; the kingdom of Yahweh. Yah'shua also commanded His disciples in building His Congregation - to teach this same Gospel. "Then He called His twelve disciples together...and He sent them to preach the kingdom of Yahweh" (*Luke 9:1-2*). "After these things the Messiah appointed 70 others also, and sent them two by two before His face into every city and place where He Himself was about to go. Then He said to them...heal the sick who are there, and say to them the Kingdom of Yahweh has come near to you" (*Luke 10:1,2,9*).

Yah'shua' prayer was "your kingdom come" - for His kingdom (*with its laws*) and that alone, can bring peace and happiness to this sin-sick, war-weary world. Yah'shua' Gospel involves making "disciples of all the nations" (*Matthew 28:19*). Phillip preached in Samaria (*Acts 8:12*): "But when they believed Phillip as he preached the things concerning the kingdom of Yahweh and the name of Yah'shua the Messiah, both men and women were baptized". Paul preached to the Gentiles in (*Acts 28:30-31*): "Then Paul dwelt two whole years in his own rented house, and received all who came to him, preaching the kingdom of Yahweh and teaching the things which concern the Lord Yah'shua the Messiah".

Notice Isaiah's prophecy about the Messiah's coming government on this earth: "For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given; and the government will be upon His shoulder...of the increase of His government and peace [*on earth*] there will be no end..." (*Isaiah 9:6-7*).

When the Messiah returns with all the power of Yahweh - He will be with authority to establish Yahweh's law - His kingdom - the universal knowledge of the truth of Yahweh leading to eternal life and peace on earth. What a wonderful message of hope - the substance

of our faith. No wonder Paul wrote; "I am not ashamed of the Gospel of the Messiah, for it is the power of Yahweh to salvation for everyone who believes" (*Romans 1:16*).

Many modern Christians - most of whom do not keep the commandments of Yahweh, especially the Sabbath and the annual Holy Days commandments of Yahweh, allow themselves to be further deceived into believing they are doing "okay" because the "works" of the "Holy Spirit" are so evident in their personal and church lives.

They seem to overlook two very vital facts. First, the Bible says clearly that; "Then many false prophets will arise and show great signs and wonders, so as to deceive, if possible, even the elect" (*Matthew 24:11 & 14*). And second, that these false prophets would be demons - Satan's workers - deceiving the world under the name of Christianity. "Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of Yahweh; because false prophets have gone out into the world" (*1 John 4:1, and 2 Corinthians 11:13-14*), "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of the Messiah. And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light".

In other words, His Holy Spirit is not the only "spirit" that can perform miracles, both the good and evil spirits can. In the "spirit of deception" - the evil spirits; the influence of Satan and his demons, often cause the illusion of "good" miracles such as healings or speaking in tongues. Such FALSE PROOFS lure many victims to false religions. This does not mean that His Holy Spirit is not in the Christian, it simply can mean, and DOES mean - because the Bible says so - that "the many" not the "few" would be deceived by this very thing - deceived into believing they were being led by His Holy Spirit, when in fact they were being led by the "unholy" spirit; the influence of

Satan and his demons, into the false security of traditional Christianity or other false religions and New Age thinking trends.

Satan knows that "for whoever shall keep the whole law, and yet stumble on one point, he is guilty of all" (*James 2:10*). Satan is the ultimate con-artist, the great deceiver (*after all, the Bible says he has indeed deceived almost the whole world*). For him, performing many of the miracles of healing, or rebuking demons, or any of the miraculous signs and wonders appearing as the gifts of His Holy Spirit, is an easy "trade-off" for the fact that he has, by so doing, led literally millions to a false Yah'shua, a false "gospel".

He has done this by leading them to modern traditional Christianity, which by its own deceived ministers, causes people to transgress Yahweh's laws, to break His Sabbath commandment almost universally, and worse, to insult Him by maintaining pagan "sun" worship traditions.

This is not the Gospel of the Messiah. This is the gospel of the false Messiah - or the various "false Christs", of the many religious denominations and non-denominational "Christians", as well as the many other false religions and faiths, as prophesied (*predicted*) in your Bible more times than any other subject!

Yah'shua further clarifies this in His Revelation, when in Chapter 3:14-22, He speaks to the "lukewarm Congregation". The lukewarm Congregation is one of the 7 Congregations (*groups of called out ones*) in Asia Minor, that represents by its then present condition, Yah'shua' prophesied state of condition of a great many within the Church, at the time of the end, which is now. So the spiritual condition of the Congregation at Laodicea represents a type of spiritual condition prevalent in modern spiritual Israel. As stated, this is made perfectly clear, as in

verses 16 thru 18: "So then, because you are lukewarm...I will spew you out of my mouth. Because you say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy, and have need of nothing' - and do not know that you are poor, wretched, miserable, blind and naked...I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined in the fire, that you may be rich; and white garments, that you may be clothed that the shame of your nakedness may not be revealed; and anoint your eyes with salve, that you may see".

Now the Revelation is written in symbolic language - but readily and easily translated by other passages in the Bible. With a little honest effort, anyone can find the meaning of this passage: Traditional Christians have deceived themselves into a false richness, or wealth of faith respecting their salvation. Yahweh counsels them to buy gold, which in many passages such as 1 Peter 1:7, He says represents "the genuineness of your faith...being much more precious than gold that perishes, though it is tested by fire, may be found to praise, honour and glory at the revelation of Yah'shua the Messiah".

Daniel further explains this false security held by traditional Christians, when he clarified this symbology in chapter 12:10, "Many shall be purified, made white, and refined". When the Messiah counsels the false Christians to buy gold and white garments, He is in effect, advising them that they must become righteous, if they wish to enter the kingdom of Yahweh: "for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints" (*Rev. 19:8*). And we know that the saints are those that enter the kingdom of Yahweh, through obedience to Yahweh's laws - Yah'shua said so on several occasions.

The ENTIRE Bible is a sort of "manual" on how to become a "good and faithful servant" - that we might enter the kingdom of Yahweh; "here are those who keep the commandments of Yahweh and faith of Yah'shua" (*Revelation*

14:12). As in the New Covenant Hebrews 10:28; "anyone who has rejected Moses' laws dies without mercy", and in Jude 1:1; "to those who are called, sanctified by [*obedience to*] Yahweh the Father, and preserved [*by faith*] in Yah'shua the Messiah".

In other words, obedience to the commandments of Yahweh, allows Yahweh to sanctify us - to set us apart for His holy purpose. And faith in Yah'shua the Messiah will preserve us into everlasting life in Yahweh's kingdom. Just don't fall for the clever trap of Satan, followed by most traditional Christians, which is that faith without works (*obedience*) will get you eternal life. It won't! "Faith without works is dead"! Obedience to Yahweh is the key and the Messiah is the door - both are essential!

One final irony. Satan is basically dishonest - he does not care how he gets what he wants - but he revels in getting it. Yahweh created Lucifer, as the archangel in charge of praise and worship to Yahweh. Lucifer desired to exalt himself above the throne of Yahweh - Lucifer desired to receive praise and worship - the most beautiful praise and worship that he was able to orchestrate. It is no small coincidence that this world offers meditational praise and worship universally, and strangely enough, quite uniformly, to the gods of Buddhists, Shintoists, Sikhs, fascists, communists, New Age universal Force/Power thinkers and unfortunately most sects of traditional and non-denominational Christians.

In spite of the huge contrasts in the various "faiths", these people all offer praise and worship, or meditation either to their "god" or to their "state", and Satan, albeit through trickery (*but he doesn't care*), receives and revels in this offering of praise and worship - precisely as the authoritative Word of Yahweh has prophesied: "Many false Christs shall arise...", well Satan, the Bible says, is the

father of all lies - the father of all of these false Christs!

The Bible says quite clearly and for a reason that the true Yahweh is a jealous God, and that He considers anything offered to "other gods" an abomination in His sight. When all the aforementioned peoples utilise meditation to seek their god, or offer praise and worship to "their gods" (*state or religious*), they are deceived into praising and worshipping Satan, regardless of their intentions! Satan has created all these false religions and false systems for his benefit (*certainly not for ours*).

Yahweh's Word clearly says that our God is the God we obey. If anyone obeys a religion or a system that teaches contrary to Yahweh's Word, such as "no-worship" New Age faiths, other false religions, or Sunday, Easter and Christmas keeping "Christians", they are, according to the Bible, offering all of their praise and worship to Satan - even if their intent is to offer it to the true God!

Yahweh says adamantly that "ignorance will not excuse", that this worship is utterly in "vain" and no human reasoning, excuse or explaining can ever make the Word of Yahweh of no effect. But disobedience can and does, because it is replaced with obedience to the false gods - Satan, who has orchestrated this in a most masterfully cunning and deceitful manner.

You cannot enter and serve in Yahweh's eternal kingdom, unless you first obey Yahweh, and, live by every Word of Yahweh! Yahweh's eternal commandments must come first, before any consideration as to state or religious habits and traditions.

Worship Yahweh in spirit and in truth! Yah'shua said, "thy Word is truth!" If our HOPE is to receive of Yahweh's most precious gift - eternal life in His kingdom, we must develop obedience to our FAITH, "the substance of things HOPED for".

## The Ezekiel Watchmen:

The book of Ezekiel is addressed to Israel. But Israel had been in captivity over 100 years when Ezekiel wrote this message. Ezekiel also warned Judah about being taken captive by Babylon. Judah was conquered and Ezekiel was a prisoner. The captivity of Judah was only a TYPE of what is to happen to America and the British Commonwealth (*Biblical Spiritual Israel*), as well as Judah (*modern-day physical Israel*), in the near future!

Yahweh has revealed to us through the prophecy contained in the book of Ezekiel, that the watchman of Ezekiel has a special job to do. He must warn physical and spiritual Israel - not save them, but warn them of their transgressions.

The watchman is prophesied to be present, and warning, when modern Assyria (*Central Europe, probably including Germany*) rises to power and destroys us (*U.S. and Britain*) unless we repent. "'Again the word of Yahweh came unto me, saying, 'Son of man, speak to the children of thy people, and say unto them, `When I bring the sword upon a land, if the people of the land take a people of their coasts, and set him for their watchman''" (*Ezek. 33:1,2*). Ezekiel was in prison. He was a Prophet not a watchman. Many verses in Ezekiel tell us that this book is for our time today.

"If when he seeth the sword come upon the land, he blow the trumpet and warn the people" (v. 3). The watchman is to warn the people when he SEES the sword. He is on the scene and personally sees the invasion coming - only we can fully see that happening today.

"Then whosoever heareth the sound of the trumpet, and taketh not warning; if the sword come, and take him away, his blood shall be on his own head. He [who] heard the sound of the trumpet, and took not warning; his blood shall be upon him. But he that taketh

warning shall deliver his soul. But if the watchman sees the sword come, and blow not the trumpet, and the people be not warned; if the sword come, and take any person from among them, he is taken away in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at the watchman's hand" (vv. 4-6). The blood of the people is going to be on the head of the watchman if he does not warn. This is repeated several times. If we (*the elect*) are able to understand this, we are obligated to accept the associated responsibility!

"So thou, O son of man, I have set thee a watchman unto the house of Israel; therefore thou shalt hear the word at my mouth, and warn them from me" (*Ez. 33:7*). Yahweh chose us to "hear" (*understand*) this message, and therefore, He obligated us to "warn" modern spiritual and physical Israel!

"Say unto them, as I live saith the Lord Yahweh, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die, O house of Israel?" (v. 11). Yahweh has personally warned the elect of the congregation that Israel is going to die. The warning is about the death of great nations!

"For I will lay the land most desolate, and the pomp of her strength shall cease; and the mountains of Israel shall be desolate, that none shall pass through. Then shall they know that I am Yahweh, when I have laid the land most desolate because of all their abominations which they have committed" (vv. 28,29). This is prophecy for the very end, just before our great nations collapse.

"And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as my people, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness" (v. 31). This speaks of modern traditional Christianity, that "talks endlessly" of

love and good works, but absolutely refuses to keep Yahweh's commandments. And they conduct their lives principally around their greed for material things.

"And when this comes to pass, [*lo, it will come*], then shall they know that a prophet hath been among them" (v. 33). When the Tribulation comes, the people will realize that the prophetic warning message they heard was from Yahweh and that they should have repented.

In Ezekiel's time there was only one nation of Israel. Today, Israel is comprised of many nations. "And he said unto me, Son of man, I send thee to the children of Israel, to a rebellious nation that hath rebelled against me: they and their fathers have transgressed against me, even unto this very day" (Ez. 2:3). The word nation is actually "nations" in the Hebrew. This warning message is primarily to U.S., Britain, Canada, New Zealand, Australia and many English speaking democracies of the world.

"For they are impudent children and stiffhearted. I DO SEND THEE UNTO THEM; and thou shalt say unto them;`Thus saith the Lord Yahweh. And they, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear [*"refuse"*, *New King James*], [*for they are a rebellious house*], yet shall they know that there hath been a prophet among them" (vv.4,5). Whether they will hear or not, Yahweh says we must deliver this message.

"And thou, Son of man, be not afraid of them, neither be afraid of their words, though briars and thorns be with thee, and thou dost dwell among scorpions: be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house" (v. 6). Yahweh tells us that our message is not going to be well received; that we will be trying to warn angry, dangerous people, but that we should not fear them.

"And when I looked, behold, an hand was sent unto me; and, lo, a roll of a book was therein; And he spread it before me; and it was written within and without: and there was written therein lamentations, and mourning, and woe" (vv. 9,10). Our message is very difficult to deliver, but it's better to speak about lamentations, mourning and woe, than to experience it! "Moreover he said unto me, `Son of man, eat that thou findest; eat this roll, and go speak unto the house of Israel'" (Ez. 3:1). Before we speak, we must eat and digest Yahweh's spiritual food. Then we will have the strength through faith to deliver this message.

"Then I came to them of the captivity at Telabib, that dwelt by the river at Chebar, and I sat where they sat, and remained there astonished among them seven days" (v. 15). Ezekiel was in captivity along with the Jews.

"Son of man, I have made thee a watchman unto the house of Israel: therefore hear the word at my mouth, and give them warning from me" (v. 17). "When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand" (v. 18). WE, because we understand this prophecy, are going to be there when Israel dies! If we fail to warn them, we die with them!

Yahweh points out who the real CAUSE of the problem is - the shepherds or ministers of Israel. ""And the word of Yahweh came unto me, saying, "Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them; `Thus saith the Lord Yahweh unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks?'" (Ez. 34:1,2). Traditional Christian pastors, and our modern governmental leaders, are simply self-centered, egotistical people, not faithfully

concerned about the people or Yahweh's true work. Satan is always working to get to religious and political authorities; he can deceive many sheep via deceiving our leaders.

"Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock" (Ez. 34:3). Satan got to these false ministers through self-centeredness. "The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, neither have ye bound up that which was broken, neither have ye brought again that which was driven away, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but by brute force and with cruelty ye have ruled them" (v. 4). This speaks all too clearly of the things we see happening all around us these days!

When Yahweh's people get their minds off basic Biblical realities, including the warning message of Ezekiel, they simply become consumed in the sin of selfishness! They don't know what the work of Yahweh is - they are too lost! This prophecy is being fulfilled right now! "And they were scattered, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered" (v. 5). Yahweh is talking about an event about to occur - RIGHT NOW! These words are symbolic. "Scattered", means taken captive by other heathen nations ("*beasts*"), of the world ("*field*"), and placed into captivity ("*meat*")!

"For thus saith the Lord Yahweh; Behold, I, even I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out...of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. And I will bring them out from the people, and gather them from the countries, and will bring them to their own land, and feed them upon the mountains of Israel by the rivers, and in all the inhabited places of the country" (vv. 11-13). Yahweh is going to gather our people from the countries where they will be taken as

PRISONERS! We are going to be driven out of our own land if we don't repent!

"And as for my flock, they eat that which ye have trodden with your feet; and they drink that which ye have fouled with your feet" (v. 19). (Also see verses 17, 18 for more clarification.) Yahweh has given us "deep waters" - the truth as revealed by His Holy Spirit, which false ministers of traditional Christianity have "fouled", or polluted with their false doctrine.

"Therefore will I save my flock, and they shall no more be a prey; and I will judge between cattle and cattle" (v. 22). Yahweh's people are no more going to be a prey - this end-time scattering is the last time it will happen!

"And mine hand shall be upon the prophets that see vanity, and that divine lies: they shall not be in the assembly of my people, neither shall they be written in the writing of the house of Israel,... and ye shall know that I am the Lord Yahweh" (13:9). Here Yahweh is referring to the false ministers not being a part of Israel after the Tribulation - when the rest of the people will finally know the true God. "Because, even because they have seduced my people, saying, 'Peace; and there was no peace'; and one built up a wall, and, lo, others daubed it with untempered mortar" (v. 10). Yahweh's own people are being seduced by a false doctrine, or "wall"; created by "one", the papacy; and reinforced by "others", the rest of traditional Christianity; using non-Biblical myths, or "untempered mortar". This same prophecy is contained in many other Scriptures such as Amos 3 and 4; Zech. 3 and 4; Mal.1-4; 2 Thes. 2; and Revelation 3.

"So will I break down the wall that ye have daubed with untempered mortar, and bring it down to the ground, so that the FOUNDATION thereof shall be discovered, and it shall fall, and ye shall be consumed in

the midst thereof: and ye shall know that I am Yahweh" (v. 14). During the Tribulation, when Yahweh destroys the false wall, He shall reveal its false foundations, which are the false doctrines taught by Satan's traditional Christianity. Yahweh's "Foundation" - His truths, referring to the true Gospel of the Kingdom of Yahweh that Yah'shua the Messiah preached, shall also be revealed. Destruction of the false wall also means permanent destruction of the false ministers and religious authorities - finally!

"Therefore thus saith the Lord Yahweh; Behold, I, even I, am against thee, and will execute judgements in the midst of thee in the sight of the nations. And I will do to thee that which I have not done, and whereunto I will not do any more the like, because of all thine abominations" (vv. 8,9). Yahweh is going to punish Israel in an extreme manner, making them an example of shame to the world because of their sins.

"In all your dwelling places the cities shall be laid waste, and the high places shall be desolate;...and your idols...and your images...and your works may be abolished" (6:6). "Yet will I leave a remnant, that ye may have some that escape the sword among the nations, when ye shall be scattered through the countries. And they that escape of you shall remember me among the nations they shall be carried captives, because I am broken with their whorish heart, which hath departed from me,...and they shall loathe themselves for the evils which they have committed" (vv. 8,9). When some of the Israelites are taken captive around the world, they will tell their captors about these prophecies! The heathen nations will learn about Yahweh from their captives! So we see that even Israel's (*our*) captivity serves Yahweh's Work!

"Again the word of Yahweh came unto me, saying, `Son of man, cause JERUSALEM

to know her abominations" (*Ez. 16:1,2*). Yahweh says His Elect (*the Ezekiel watchman*), must cause Jerusalem to know her abominations. In this chapter, Yahweh's primary focus is on "Jerusalem above", or the end-time Congregation of Yahweh. We get our truth from Jerusalem above. This is probably one of the most inspiring chapters in the entire Bible! The focus is on a wife that has broken her marriage vows.

Ezekiel discusses two marriages. First, an old covenant marriage with ancient Israel, and second, the new covenant marriage with modern Israel (*U.S. and British Commonwealth*) - the True Congregation, which is led by His Holy Spirit. "Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I sware unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord Yahweh, and thou becamest mine" (*Ez. 16:8*). The expression "spread my skirt over thee" is a sign of marriage. (*See Ruth 3:9-11.*) The expression means that Yahweh has agreed to protect his wife (*as any good husband should - if his wife is loyal*). Yahweh's loyal people, his Elect, who are part of this marriage covenant will be protected by Yahweh during the Great Tribulation - in his skirts. Provided they are obedient to deliver this message!

"Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready" (*Rev. 19:7*). The Messiah's wife must be ready when He returns. WE ARE NOW TO BE PREPARING for that fabulous marriage - which the Messiah looks upon as already consummated! That's why we are called His "wife" and not His "fiancée". This is the most exalted award ever offered any human being in history, and most people are too stubborn and "hard-hearted" to grasp the reality of it.

"Then washed I thee with water; yea, I thoroughly washed away thy blood from thee, and anointed thee with oil" (*Ez. 16:9*). This is referring to the forgiveness of our sins due to the Messiah's shed blood, and our being anointed with His Holy Spirit. "And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen IS THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE SAINTS. And he saith unto me, `Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb'" (*Rev. 19:7-9*).

We are granted the right to clothe ourselves in "fine linen", or in other words, to behave righteously. This will ensure our "marriage" to the Messiah. "Thus wast thou decked with gold and silver; and thy raiment was of fine linen, and silk,...and thou wast exceedingly beautiful, and thou didst prosper into a kingdom" (*Ez. 16:13*). This is history and prophecy. Ancient Israel prospered into a kingdom but failed Yahweh. Modern Spiritual Israel has prospered into many wealthy nations, and today, all of the "firstfruits" are the Kingdom of Yahweh in "embryo" - to be BORN AGAIN as that Kingdom. Rejecting this incredible firstfruit calling is the real tragedy of turning away from Yahweh - not dying for all eternity! It's the missed opportunity that is so sad - salvation to eternal life will be offered to all.

"And thy renown went forth among the heathen for thy beauty: for it was perfect through my comeliness, which I had put upon thee, saith the Lord Yahweh" (*v. 14*). This applies to us in modern Spiritual Israel - the Messiah's spiritual bride. Yahweh's perfect comeliness or character comes to us through His Holy Spirit, (*See Phil. 2:5*.) and the entire world seems to covet the "western", or American ways.

"But thou didst trust in thine own beauty, and playedst the harlot because of thy renown,

and pouredst out thy fornications on every one that passed by..." (*Ez. 16:15*). The word "fornications" is better translated "adultery"! We are, whether we accept it or not, married to the Messiah today! If we turn away from Yahweh and Yahweh's true doctrine, to an atheistic point of view, or to other false gods, which is what most of spiritual Israel (*U.S. and British Commonwealth*) has done through traditional Christianity, we have in fact, committed spiritual adultery!

This is prophecy for us as we read it! Only Yahweh's firstfruits bride (*us, the House of Israel*) can commit adultery in this end-time, because only we are married to the Messiah! That's why the Messiah was so specific in His choice of words in His marriage covenant. Worldly translators do not understand about Yahweh's marriage and Yahweh's family, that is why they use the word "fornications" instead of adultery!

We are not officially married to the Messiah until He returns. However, Yahweh already looks upon the Congregation (*Spiritual Israel*) today as His wife. As in *Rev. 19:7*: "...His WIFE has made herself ready". The time frame here is just before our marriage to the Messiah. This verse alone reveals Yahweh's thinking. This lady was the Messiah's WIFE, while she was getting ready for the marriage. That is how we walk by faith. Yahweh views His side of the covenant as absolute, but we must prove ourselves.

"Yahweh, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were" (*Rom. 4:17*). That is why we are called the Messiah's wife, even though the marriage itself will not actually be official until the marriage supper is celebrated. *John 6:47* teaches that; "he that believeth on me HATH everlasting life". Do you have eternal life now? Technically no. But Yahweh still looks upon us as already having eternal life. That's because

we do - IF we uphold our part of the agreement!

If we view this covenant through Yahweh's eyes and obey Him, the marriage is certain. That is why He views our turning away from Him as spiritual adultery. However, there is a human element. We are allowed to fail and NEVER be a part of that wedding. The lesson Yahweh is trying to teach (*those of us who don't think we, "know too much" already*), is that a covenant is a promise to keep your word. And our word should be fulfilled, if we manifest the character of Yahweh. Yahweh judges us on the basis of our promise to keep His commandments, which reflect our part of the marriage covenant. His rewards are promised to His saints: "Here is the patience of the saints; here are those that keep the commandments of Yahweh and the faith of Yah'shua the Messiah" (*Rev. 14:12*). His part of the covenant is absolute. Our part is too - if we have the faith of Yah'shua the Messiah to keep Yahweh's commandments. Once we become the Messiah's wife, we cannot commit adultery, because we will have become one of the "Elohim" family, and Elohim or "Yahweh", cannot sin. Viewing it spiritually, we can only commit adultery during the engagement period - during this mortal lifetime.

Carnal minded man cannot grasp the magnitude of our reward. They can't get it! It takes His Holy Spirit to grasp what is being offered to the firstfruits! Satan wants to destroy, or blur this wonderful, most inspiring vision. We must not let him! Yahweh says this adulterous sin is "no small matter"!

"And I will judge thee, as women that break wedlock and shed blood are judged; and I will give thee blood in fury and jealousy" (*v. 38*). The more we are given, the greater our responsibility toward Yahweh. When we are called to be the Messiah's wife, Yahweh expects us to act like His wife - not an

adulterous harlot! This is why traditional Christians will be "spewed out" of Yahweh's mouth into the Tribulation (*Rev. 3:14-20*).

"And I will also give thee into their hand, and they shall throw down thine eminent place, and shall break down thy high places: they shall strip thee also of thy clothes, and shall take thy fair jewels, and leave thee naked and bare" (*v. 39*). We have been blessed with great material wealth in the nations of modern Spiritual Israel, but because we are not thankful to Yahweh for this, but rather think we obtained it by our own devising, Yahweh will see us stripped of it all.

"Behold, every one that uses proverbs shall use this proverb against thee, saying, 'As is the mother, so is her daughter'" (*v. 44*). A woman is a type of congregation. Yahweh's marriage to ancient Israel is likened to the "mother", while His marriage to the firstfruits bride is compared to the "daughter", as happening later. When Yahweh discusses "mother" and "daughter" in this context, HE IS ILLUSTRATING THAT THIS PROPHECY IS DUAL! The wife rebelled anciently, and the wife (*all but the Elect few who are not deceived*) rebels today, even though today, we have His Holy Spirit.

"When I shall bring again their captivity of Sodom and her Daughters, and the captivity of Samaria and her Daughters, then will I bring again the captivity of thy captives in the midst of them" (*v. 53*). This is to be in the FUTURE! Yahweh sent His old covenant wife into captivity. Now in this end time, He must send His new covenant wife - Spiritual Israel - into captivity for transgression as well!

"Nevertheless I will remember my covenant with thee in the days of thy youth, and I will establish unto thee an everlasting covenant" (*Ez. 16:60*). Spiritual Israel essentially began on the Day of Pentecost. Yahweh remembers the covenant He made

with them in their "youth", meaning in the earliest days of New Covenant Israelite faith. We learn in 2 Thes. 2, that the early Israelites "betrayed" the wife of their youth - the marriage covenant. Traditional Christianity has continued this betrayal to this day! Yahweh, however, is going to punish His adulterous wife, and bring her BACK INTO THIS SAME MARRIAGE. All who repent during the Tribulation will be blessed by being allowed to MAINTAIN the marriage covenant even though they don't deserve it!

This is not another covenant - it is the same covenant made "with thee in the days of thy youth", and it is maintained, or re-established, as "an everlasting covenant". This word "everlasting", according to *Gesenius\**, "refers to future time", and in this context, refers to Yahweh's wife today and for all eternity (*present-continuous tense*). "And I will betroth thee unto me forever" (*Hos. 2:19*). The firstfruits - those who respond to the call before the Messiah returns - will be the Messiah's Bride forever!

\*"*Gesenius Lexicon*" is a dictionary setting out the English meanings of Biblical words as translated from Greek.

When we are married to the Messiah, what will our job be? "And it shall come to pass in that day, I will hear, saith Yahweh, I will hear the heavens, and they shall hear the earth; and the earth shall hear the corn, and the wine, and the oil; and they shall hear Jezreel" (*Hos. 2:21,22*).

This means that our perception of Yahweh's physical and spiritual laws will finally be in perfect harmony. The heavens (*plural*) and earth are here personified as needing each other's cooperation.

Everything in the heavens and earth - the WHOLE UNIVERSE - is brought into perfect harmony with Yahweh's laws! This is the monumental work that the Messiah AND

HIS BRIDE WILL DIRECT AND ADMINISTER FOR ALL ETERNITY! We are not getting ready to marry the Messiah so that we can pluck harps forever! Our future job of "managing the universe", is of such magnitude that only the mind of Yahweh can comprehend it!

"Then thou shalt remember thy ways, and be ashamed, when thou shalt receive thy sisters, thine elder and thy younger: and I will give them unto thee for DAUGHTERS, but NOT BY THE COVENANT" (*Ez. 16:61*). This means that all the millions who sadly miss this message in this lifetime, will come into Yahweh's family, but not on the WIFE level!

Those who come into Yahweh's family later will be a type of DAUGHTER CONGREGATION - or likened to children in Yahweh's family. These "children" of Yahweh's will have eternal life, however the Bible depicts them as being the ones "administered", not "administering", as is the case with the Messiah's wife.

Can we grasp the mind-staggering promise Yahweh has made to all His Saints - His Elect, that are not deceived! Nobody else for all eternity, will be on the wife level in the glorious Kingdom of Yahweh. Our great work is not ending when we marry the Messiah, it is just barely beginning!

## **Malachi's Call to Remembrance:**

"Then they that respected Yahweh spake often one to another: and Yahweh harkened, and heard it, and a book of REMEMBRANCE was written before him for them that respected Yahweh, and that thought upon his name" (*Mal. 3:16*). This is a special "book of remembrance" written to the Elect - those that "feared" and "thought" - meditate on the Word of Yahweh.

We, the Elect, are told to remember what we were taught (*Mal. 4:4-6*). Many prophecies for our time discuss and warn about our having turned away from past instructions (*2 Thes. 2:2-3; Rev. 3:7-21*). It is a book of remembrance, because the Elect remember - discern, what was originally taught them by His Holy Spirit. That is why we will be spared from the Great Tribulation (*Mal. 3:17; Matt. 24:21,22; Rev. 3:10*), and given a special position in Yahweh's Kingdom forever (*Rev. 3:12*)!

Traditional Christians fail to escape "to a place of safety" because they forget, and turn to a "lukewarm" message. "Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth Yahweh and him that serveth him not" (*Mal. 3:18*). The entire book of Malachi revolves around two groups; those that forget - the majority, and those that remember - the minority.

Yahweh sent Malachi to firstly, correct the ministry, and secondly, warn the people. In Malachi 1:6 through 3:3, every verse is directed to the ministry. "...and now, I pray you, beseech Yahweh that he will be gracious unto us: this hath been by your means: will he regard your persons? saith Yahweh, Lord of Hosts" (*Mal. 1:9*). "This has been by your means", would be better translated, "this has been your [*the priests*] doing" (*Soncino Commentary*).

Religious authority is guilty of being the main cause for our rebellious attitude in these end times. "...ye have caused many to stumble at the law" (*Mal. 2:8*). Yahweh then purges the ministry just before the Messiah's return (*Mal. 3:3; 4:6*).

The attitude of most traditional religious authority is scornful. "...ye have snuffed at it" (*Mal. 1:13*). This literally means, "you snort at me". Soncino says the change of the pronoun to "it" from "me", is due to a deliberate alteration by the Scribes in order to remove the harshness of the expression!

There is no greater responsibility than being entrusted with Yahweh's Word. History is filled with disasters when the religious authorities have failed to do their job.

The Apostle John tells us; "I wrote unto the congregation [*called out ones*]: but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not. Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and CASTETH THEM OUT OF THE CONGREGATION" (*3 John 9,10*).

John wrote this shortly before he died. The few faithful brethren left, were being "cast out", or put out of the local assembly by this self-appointed religious authority, who craved attention.

Actually, what John is telling us, is that these cast out ones, were the ONLY ones still in the TRUE Congregation because they insisted on following the Messiah - not some self-appointed "authority". They WERE the CONGREGATION, because they were joined to the Messiah through, and being led by, His Holy Spirit.

John spoke out in faith! The Elect are called to do the same thing today - to warn

against false doctrine taught by false religious authority! Paul also openly challenged Peter in Galations 2:11. Sometimes it has to be done to keep the spirit of Yahweh's Word! The Apostle John was not concerned about his followers being cast out of the Ephesus assembly - because they were still following the Messiah!

An Israelite is one who follows the Messiah - not a man or a church organization. Following the Messiah is exactly what Malachi's message is all about.

"Unto the angel of the congregation of Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou HAST TRIED THEM WHICH SAY THEY ARE APOSTLES, AND ARE NOT, AND HAST FOUND THEM LIARS" (*Rev. 2:1,2*).

Some men, were saying that they were Apostles, when in fact they were not. Yahweh then praised the Ephesus congregation for detecting this falsehood. This is prophecy for our time, and Yahweh is saying that we MUST put religious authority to the test, or risk being deceived! We must place our focus on the Messiah - the one "in the midst" of the seven candlesticks. Our focus must not be on a man or church organization (*as represented by the candlesticks*). In plain words, we are in serious trouble if we follow any man-made church organization.

We can't be followers of the Messiah unless we are testing and proving all things as the Bible instructs. "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of Yahweh: because many false prophets have gone out into the world" (*1 John 4:*). Individuals go astray. Churches go astray. The Messiah never goes astray! "These [*Bereans*] were MORE NOBLE than those in Thessalonica, in

that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures DAILY, whether these things were so" (*Acts 17:11*). We must realize that our approach to Bible study reveals how noble we are! As Yahweh's Elect, we must search the Scriptures daily with all readiness of mind, to PROVE, whether what we are told by other men, is true or not!

"And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause Yahweh shall send them STRONG DELUSION, that they [the worldly wise and disobedient] should believe a lie" (*2 Thes. 2:10,11*).

Yahweh will personally send strong delusion! He is not sending it because He wants us to fail, rather, it is His way of "testing" us - whether we have "received the love of the truth" or not. It is not possible to deceive Yahweh's very Elect (*Matt. 24:24*). Our people today assume that there is safety in numbers, and they assume they are Yahweh's Elect simply because they are "members" of some man-made "church" congregation!

Yahweh's Congregation has been flooded with His precious truth. Unfortunately, it has fallen predominantly on deaf ears and "stiff-necked" people. Now Yahweh is revealing to us in Malachi's message, that just prior to the Messiah's return, He is going to test us - whether we just talk about faith and good works, or whether we actually live by, "every word" of Yahweh - do we remember what we were taught by His Holy Spirit?

This is an all-important question. Yahweh's purpose for the human race, is that He is using us to literally recreate Himself! Yahweh's Elect, those few that will partake of being "priests and kings forever" in the glorious Kingdom, are being separated from the rest - the majority, RIGHT NOW!

This is the whole purpose of our life! There are probably more warnings in the New Covenant about being deceived on this matter by false ministers using false doctrine, than any other subject!

"Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and Yahweh, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to His temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith Yahweh, Lord of Hosts. But who may abide the day of His coming? And who shall stand when He appeareth? For He is like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap" (*Mal. 3:1,2*).

The subject is obviously referring to the Messiah's Second Coming. Yahweh says He will send His "messenger", who would prepare the way for the Messiah. Just as John the Baptist came to "prepare the way" for the Messiah the first time, so a messenger will prepare the way for His return. That messenger is His Holy Spirit working through Yahweh's Elect!

"Verily I say unto you; There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his Kingdom" (*Matt. 16:28*). This verse is clearly about a vision of the Messiah's Second coming. "And his disciples asked him, saying; 'Why then say the scribes that Elias [Elijah] must come first?' And Yah'shua answered and said unto them, 'Elias truly shall come first, and restore all things'" (*Matt. 17:9*). Yah'shua plainly tells us that an "Elijah" will come first; prior to His SECOND Coming!

The purpose of Malachi's message, is to reveal to us, that His Holy Spirit, operating through Yahweh's Elect, is that end-time Elijah! The mere fact that we can "understand" this prophetic message, reveals to us that it is our responsibility to BE this end-time Elijah.

We must be preparing the way for the Messiah's return, if we hope to be His "firstfruits" Bride. We must know this by faith, based on Yahweh's Word. The Bible says the end-time Elijah - the Elect, will "remember", and declare basic Bible truths to the people, preparing the way for the Messiah's return.

"And now, O ye priests, this COMMANDMENT is for you. If ye will not hear, and if ye will not lay it to heart, to give glory unto my name, saith Yahweh, Lord of Hosts, I will even send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings: yea, I have cursed them already, because you do not lay it to heart" (*Mal. 2:1,2*).

Here Yahweh is giving serious warning to the ministry. If we fail to heed this warning, then we are in effect, contributing to continuation of false doctrine that has caused so many traditional Christians to stumble at the law (v 8).

"Yet ye say; Wherefore? Because Yahweh has been witness between thee and the wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy companion, and the wife of thy covenant...Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth..." (*Mal. 2:14-16*). Malachi discusses marriage immediately after discussing the ministry. The context here is very important.

The New Covenant Congregation that the Messiah said He would build, became the "wife of thy [our] youth" when Yahweh sent us our "Helper" - His Holy Spirit, on the Day of Pentecost. We, individually, are spiritual members of this Congregation (*as set out in Hebrews 12:23; "...to the general assembly and congregation of the firstborn who are registered in heaven"*).

We, in modern spiritual Israel, became a part of this wife covenant whether we are aware of it or not! To obtain a "firstfruits", or

"elect" status in this covenant, we must not allow ourselves to be deceived - and, we must keep all of Yahweh's commandments, including those warning commands contained in Malachi!

"Remember ye the law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, with the statutes and judgements" (*Mal. 4:4*).

Yahweh is telling us to remember four things: first, the law; second, the statutes; third, the judgements; and fourth, "Horeb", the place where the law all began with physical Israel. Malachi is an end-time book that keeps referring back to the beginning.

We too, must remember where our spiritual history began in this age - the wife of our youth. We are spiritual Israel today. Therefore we must "remember" what His Holy Spirit, through Yahweh's Word, taught us in the beginning of this era.

We must have our names in the "book of remembrance" (*Mal. 3:16*), and we must be preparing the way - warning, by declaring the truth, prior to the Messiah's return. It is through these ACTIONS, that the Elect will qualify for a "place of safety" during the Great Tribulation, and to be "pillars" (*rulers*), in Yahweh's temple (*Kingdom*) when the Messiah returns.

"If ye will not hear" (*Mal. 2:2*), means that Malachi's message has to be declared, in order that some (*most*) will not hear it. THIS IS THAT MESSAGE! YOU are holding it (*to be confirmed by your own Bible study*) in your own hands! It is prophecy being fulfilled this very instant.

"Therefore have I made you contemptible and base before all the people, according as ye have not kept my ways, but have been partial in the law" (*Mal. 2:9*).

Today, traditional ministers and religious authorities show partiality - and virtually none of them keep Yahweh's commandments

(ways). They are respecters of persons rather than the truth. They show partiality or favour to those who move away from the instructions Yahweh gave us, which causes many to stumble at the law.

They don't stop keeping all the law, they simply "stumble" at any of the laws they don't find "convenient", or "traditionally acceptable"! It leads them into a "lukewarm" attitude, usually motivated by insecurity, fear and/or money!

Yahweh says that if you are rightfully in the ministry, you should "keep knowledge" (*Mal. 2:7,8*). The Hebrew word for "keep", means to "watch, to guard". Traditional Christianity has adopted the pagan "traditions of men", and "forgotten" the commandments of Yahweh - they have overwhelmingly failed to "remember what we were taught" (*Mal. 4:4*).

The Prophet Malachi was a reformer trying to lead the religious leaders and the people back to the law. The priests were the usual expounders of the law.

The prophets only appeared on special occasions - as in the case of Malachi who came chiefly because the priests were leading Yahweh's people astray.

It's about people - Yahweh's congregation, the wife of the Messiah, being corrupted! Where did Malachi begin? Like Ezekiel and many other prophets, he began at Yahweh's sanctuary - the ministry today - where Yahweh's Word is supposed to be "guarded".

Yahweh's first criticism of modern spiritual Israel contained in the book of Malachi, concerns the sin of forgetting the Father.

In Malachi 1:6, the Father asks through the Spokesman; "If then I be the Father, where is mine honour?"

This is where many "Christians" get off track. Traditional Christianity teaches the Gospel of the Christ, about the Christ. The

TRUE Gospel, is the one the Messiah TAUGHT - about the "Kingdom of Yahweh"!

The Kingdom of Yahweh, is Yahweh's Government, with Yahweh's laws, administered by the Family of Yahweh!

The Kingdom of Yahweh is the FAMILY of Yahweh. And who is the head of the family? the Messiah? Of course not!

The Father is the head of the family. Yahweh the Father is the central theme to the TRUE GOSPEL!

Yah'shua taught: "no man can come to Me except the Father which hath sent me draw him" (*John 6:44*).

The Father begets His own children. Not even the Messiah can do that in place of Yahweh! So we can see why these doctrinal "adulterations", lead the Father to ask, "WHERE IS MY HONOUR?"

This is the heart of the Gospel! Yah'shua taught us that the Father is the central figure, but this false traditional Christianity has relegated Him to a lesser status.

They have moved away from the true Gospel and now preach a "gospel" with the Messiah as the central figure.

When the Great Tribulation comes (*"and, lo, it will come"*), there will be no more "SCHOLARLY" reasoning around Yahweh's simple truths!

## Hosea's Warning:

The prophets Isaiah, Amos, Micah and Hosea delivered their prophecies to the nation of Israel at the same time. It was about 30 years before the nation went into captivity. The book of Hosea was written about 790 B.C. and it is unique among the other prophecies to Israel, in that it concentrates on "Ephraim", or as Yahweh has revealed through His Holy Spirit to His Elect, the modern nations of the British Commonwealth. Hosea mentions Ephraim 37 times in the prophecy.

Hosea also has much to say about building character. All of Yahweh's people must be concerned about building character. Without character, we will not enter into the Kingdom of Yahweh - to rule the earth and the universe, with the Messiah.

The name "Hosea", means "salvation". This is Yahweh's goal for all mankind. He wants to save us! This chapter discusses the coming downfall of the British Commonwealth (*Great Britain, Canada, Australia, New Zealand and others, herein called "Britain"*), in the fast-approaching Great Tribulation. The book of Hosea is a grave warning to Britain, but it is also a message of great hope to all who are willing to "hear" it and repent.

So what has happened to the once, all-powerful, world-dominating Britain? Why have her nations degenerated so quickly? Because we have taken for granted our vast wealth and power, not recognizing that it was all given to us as promised by Yahweh to the patriarch, Abraham. We are reaping the benefits of having lived as a thankless, self-righteous, arrogant and selfish people.

"The word of Yahweh came to Hosea, the son of Beer, in the days of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, kings of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam the son of Joash, king of Israel" (*Hos. 1:1*). These verses give us a clear time frame, as well as re-confirming the

SEPARATE identities of Judah (*Jews*) and Israel. Yahweh's word, here came to Hosea, and through the Bible with the aid of His Holy Spirit, Yahweh has entrusted His Word to us, His Elect. Guarding Yahweh's Word is our individual, as well as our collective responsibility.

Yahweh also (*symbolically*) entrusted the Throne of David (*the one the Messiah will sit on at His return*) to Ephraim (Britain), to preside over until Messiah's return, but something very tragic has happened. We, as nations, have rebelled against Yahweh's Word, and grave punishment is coming upon us!

The book of Hosea is also unique in its story flow. There is not another book like it. Yahweh commanded Hosea to do some very unusual things to illustrate His hurt feelings, resulting from our rejection of His Way. "The beginning of the word of Yahweh by Hosea. And Yahweh said to Hosea; 'Go, take unto thee a wife of whoredoms and children of whoredoms: for the land hath committed great whoredom, departing from Yahweh'" (*Hos. 1:2*).

How would you like the job that Hosea had? Imagine! Yahweh required Hosea to marry a practicing harlot, to show Israel and especially Ephraim, how deeply corrupt they were in the past, and in our present time. Hosea was commanded to have the most intimate relationship with a harlot, and allow her to have bastard children as his heirs. This was symbolically to show Yahweh's great emotional rejection, when His people, either the physical nation, or the spiritual Congregation, stray (*commit spiritual adultery*) from His Law.

Yahweh has feelings, and He is here providing us a vivid example of how deeply we have hurt His feelings. We know how we would feel if our mates acted that way toward us! It would be very difficult to live with that type of

betrayal. That is precisely how Yahweh feels! He has blessed us with the greatest national blessings of health, and wealth in the world, and we, because of our own self-centeredness, have in a most ungrateful manner, completely forgotten Him and His Ways.

"And Yahweh said unto him; Call his name Jezreel; for yet a little while, and I will avenge the blood of Jezreel upon the house of Jehu, and will cause to cease the kingdom of the House of Israel" (*Hos. 1:4*). Yahweh uses one of the bastard children to show what is going to happen to Israel, especially Britain, as a result of their sin. All the nations of Israel (*including America*) are going to come to a bloody end. It will be the same for the nations of Israel as it was for Naboth, when Ahab and Jezebel killed him in the city of Jezreel, to steal his vineyard (*2 Kings 10:1-14*). Yahweh says that Britain is going to suffer that SAME WAY!

Yahweh is going to cause the king to "cease". "And it shall come to pass at that day, that I will break the bow of Israel in the valley of Jezreel" (*Hos. 1:5*). It is next to impossible for our nations today, to accept the fact that they are going to be destroyed in the coming Tribulation. We think that our great military power will protect us. It won't! The word "bow", is symbolic of military might (*Ezekiel 39:1-4*). America and Britain have won their last major war!

"And she conceived again, and bare a daughter. And Yahweh said unto him; `Call her name Lo-ruhamah: for I will no longer have mercy upon the house of Israel; but I will utterly take them away'" (*Hos. 1:6*). The time is coming on the nations of Britain when Yahweh will not have mercy on them. He says, "I will utterly take them away", meaning He will cause us to be destroyed and taken into a second captivity - to be imprisoned in our own homelands!

"Now when she had weaned Lo-ruhamah, she conceived and bare a son. Then Yahweh said; `Call his name Lo-ammi: for ye are not my people, and I will not be your God'" (*Hos. 1:8,9*). This is the reality that Israel must face. Yahweh is coming to the point of rejecting us!

"Yet the number of the children of Israel shall be as the sand of the sea,...and it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them; Ye are not my people, there it shall be said unto them; Ye are the sons of the Living God" (*Hos. 1:10*). It is sometimes difficult for us to realize, that Yahweh is plunging us into the Tribulation, in order that we may finally see that we are potential "sons of the Living God". If it takes the Tribulation to get us acting like Sons of Yahweh and to quit acting like Satan, then that is what we will endure! There is a very positive message here in the midst of all this punishment.

"Then shall the children of Judah and the children of Israel be gathered together, and appoint themselves one head, and they shall come up out of the land: for great shall be the day of Jezreel" (*Hos. 1:11*). Here is a wonderful prophecy of our near future.

Judah (*modern Israel*) and Israel (*modern Britain and U.S.*), are going to be reunited under one head - the resurrected King David. This has not been the case since Jeroboam and Rehoboam. Judah and Israel (*the Lost 10 Tribes*), have been divided from the time of these two kings, and will remain so, until Messiah's return.

"For she did not know that I gave her corn, and wine, and oil, and multiplied her silver and gold, which they prepared for Baal" (*Hos. 2:8*). It is amazing that America and Britain have had all this power and wealth, and yet remained unaware that it came from Yahweh! Even people around the world, ask why these nations have such vast wealth and

influence. Yahweh has GIVEN IT to us because of Abraham's obedience, and we have turned around, and used it to serve Baal - the pagan sun god! The god of Easter, Christmas, "Sun"day worship, and all of our other national "holi"days.

"Therefore will I return, and take away my corn in the time thereof, and my wine in the season thereof, and will recover my wool and my flax given to cover her nakedness. And now will I discover her lewdness in the sight of her lovers, and none shall deliver her out of my hand. I will cause all her mirth to cease, her feast days, her new moons, and her [false] sabbaths [*pagan "holi"days*] and all her solemn feasts" (*Hos. 2:9-11*). It is not going to be our enemies that expose our SPIRITUAL lewdness, rather it will be our heathen allies (*lovers*) such as modern Assyria (*Europe including Germany*).

"Then said Yahweh unto me; `Go yet, love a woman beloved of her friend, yet an adulteress, according to the love of Yahweh toward the children of Israel, who look to other gods, and love flagons of wine'" (*Hos. 3:1*). Hosea was instructed to marry a whore! She had bastard children, and then Yahweh COMMANDED Hosea to LOVE THAT WOMAN! That was a difficult thing to do. His wife was still committing adultery at the time! She had not yet repented. But this is symbolic of how Yahweh is dealing with our nations, who have continually committed adultery by following Satan's myriad of false gods. But Yahweh STILL LOVES US!

That kind of love is not natural for human beings. It IS natural for Yahweh! When we are seriously wronged, we strike back. Could we still love our mate under such conditions as Yahweh has loved Israel? When we sin Yahweh does not stop loving us! He does correct, or punish us, as any loving father should, but always in love! We need to learn

what Yahweh's love is - we need to start living by every word of the Bible - by the law of Yahweh which is Yahweh's Love (*and character*) in written form. We need to learn how to react in love when someone mistreats us, and not to react out of our carnal instincts. We need to understand how much forgiveness Yahweh has extended to us, and to learn to show that same love and forgiveness to our mates and to others.

"So I bought her to me for fifteen pieces of silver, and for an homer of barley, and an half homer of barley. And I said unto her; thou shalt abide for me many days; thou shalt not play the harlot, and thou shalt not be for another man: so will I also be for thee" (*Hos. 3:2,3*). These are the only personal words of Hosea in the entire book. There is a giant lesson here for us to learn.

It is as if Yahweh is saying, that before we can go out and teach the whole world, we must first learn to live and love the way Yahweh does. If we cannot love the way Yahweh does, then we will have no place as rulers in Yahweh's Kingdom! It really does not matter how much ability we have - if we do not rely on Yahweh's Love living in us, our abilities will inevitably lead us in the wrong way. One important way to build character, is to have your heart in Yahweh's Word and in His Work - "for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also" (*Matt. 6:21*).

"Therefore shalt thou fall in the day, and the prophet also shall fall with thee in the night, and I will destroy thy mother. My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I also will reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy Yahweh, I will also forget thy children" (*Hos. 4:5,6*). Yahweh is going to destroy our nations because we have REJECTED HIS KNOWLEDGE! If we reject Yahweh's knowledge now - in this mortal

lifetime, Yahweh says we cannot be His priests in the Kingdom! We are all being "tested" right now - to see if we are the truly Elect, that cannot be deceived into "forgetting His Knowledge".

"Ephraim [*Britain*] is joined to idols: let him alone. Their drink is sour: they have committed whoredom continually: her rulers with shame do love..." (*Hos. 4:17,18*). Today's spiritual condition in Britain is at an all-time low. Yahweh says we are bonded to our idols - totally ensnared with the man-made, material pleasures of this world. He tells us to get out of her sins - to "let him alone".

Who is primarily at fault? "Hear ye this, O priests; and hearken, ye house of Israel; and give ye ear, O house of the king; for judgement is toward you, because you have been a snare on Mizpah, and a net spread upon Tabor. And the revolvers are profound to make slaughter, though I have been a rebuker of them all. I know Ephraim, and Israel is not hid from me: for now, O Ephraim, thou committest whoredom, and Israel is defiled" (*Hos. 5:1-3*). Yahweh is putting the blame squarely where it belongs - on the priests - the false religion, orchestrated by the false ministers under the approval of the Royal Family!

"They will not frame their doings to turn unto their Yahweh: for the spirit of whoredoms is in the midst of them, and they have not known Yahweh. And the pride of Israel doth testify to his face: therefore shall Israel and Ephraim fall in their iniquity; Judah also shall fall with them" (*Hos. 5:4,5*). The spirit of whoredoms has thoroughly perverted our nations. The people like to act religious, but they have no desire to know Yahweh. The people are growing worse and worse. So Ephraim is going to "fall" hard and fast "in their iniquity". And the nation of Judah - modern-day Israel, is going to fall with them. This is

prophecy for our time. Anciently, Ephraim and Judah did not fall together.

Ephraim fell in 721 B.C., and Judah fell in 585 B.C. This verse speaks of a time when Ephraim, the other nations of Israel and Judah will all fall together! "They shall go with their flocks and with their herds to seek Yahweh; but they shall not find him; he hath withdrawn himself from them. They have dealt treacherously against Yahweh: for they have begotten strange children: NOW SHALL A MONTH DEVOUR THEM with their portions" (*Hos. 5:6,7*). When the Tribulation strikes Britain, the people will seek Yahweh, but will not be able to find Him (*His "place of safety"*), because He will have withdrawn Himself! Physically, it will be too late, they have waited too long. Hosea shows that our nations will be destroyed in one month!

Yahweh tells His Elect what we are to do: "Blow ye the cornet in Gibeah, and the trumpet in Ramah: cry aloud at Bethaven, after thee, O Benjamin" (*Hos. 5:8*). Yahweh expects us all to be part of a work of warning - of declaring the Truth. We should all want to be part of this warning effort to Britain and America. It is our demonstration of Yahweh's Love. We should not bury our heads in the sand and hope only to protect ourselves. We should not be ashamed to stand up, even if only by ourselves or with a few like-minded believers, wanting to deliver Yahweh's warning message, to our nation's people, our leaders, and our false religious authorities.

"Ephraim shall be desolate in the day of rebuke: among the tribes of Israel have I made known that which shall surely be. The princes of Judah were like them that remove the bound: therefore I will pour out my wrath upon them like water. Ephraim is oppressed and broken in judgement, because he willingly walked after the commandment" (*Hos. 5:9-11*). When Yahweh plunges Britain into the

Tribulation, it will be made desolate. This has never happened to nations such as England, Canada, Australia and others in the history of the Commonwealth. This tragedy will catch the nations completely off guard, but, Yahweh says that He will not allow such devastation without first giving a warning, and a chance to repent and save themselves from this utter destruction.

"When Ephraim saw his sickness, and Judah saw his wound, then went Ephraim to the Assyrian, and sent to king Jareb: yet could he not heal you, nor cure you of your wound" (*Hos. 5:13*). When the great crisis becomes obvious, Britain and Israel will look to Assyria (*Europe including Germany*) for help. Assyria is mentioned ten times in this book. It is interesting that Europe will be of no help, and that as other prophecies show us, America will not even be asked for help by Britain, because it will already be very weak, or even collapsed by this time.

"They are all hot as an oven, and have devoured their judges; all their kings are fallen: there is none among them that calleth unto me. Ephraim is a cake not turned" (*Hos. 7:7,8*). The phrase "hot as an oven", refers to Britain's corruption. There is no true justice left in the land. Our nations "appear" to be good on the surface, but we are all burned out, like a "cake unturned", our societies lack any real substance.

When the Tribulation strikes, our nations will be taken off-guard. "Strangers have devoured his strength, and he knoweth it not: yea, gray hairs are here and there upon him, yet he knoweth it not" (*Hos. 7:9*). Our British nations have lost their strength. When modern Assyria attacks, there will be no financial or military strength left to resist!

"Set the trumpet to thy mouth. He shall come as an eagle against the house of Yahweh, because they have transgressed my

covenant, and trespassed against my law" (*Hos. 8:1*). Understanding these prophecies, obligates us to get involved in the warning Work of Yahweh! It is our job to warn Britain that modern Assyria is about to swoop down on them like an eagle - and then the nightmare will begin.

"When Ephraim spake trembling, he exalted himself in Israel; but when he offended in Baal, he died. And now they sin more and more, and have made them molten images of their silver, and idols according to their own understanding, all of it the work of the craftsmen: they say of them; Let the men that sacrifice kiss the calves" (*Hos. 13:1,2*). Britain relies on its "craftsmen" for protection, rather than on Yahweh. They worship their technical ability, and "kiss the calves" of their achievements.

"For they have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind: it hath no stalk: the bud shall yield no meal: if so be it yield, the strangers shall swallow it up" (*Hos. 8:7*). We all need to learn that the consequences of national sins are extremely painful. "I have written to him the great things of my law, but they were counted as a strange thing" (*v. 12*). We had the great things written in Yahweh's Holy Bible, but nationally, we have rejected them!

"The days of visitation are come, the days of recompense are come; Israel shall know it: the prophet is a fool, the spiritual man is mad, for the multitude of thine iniquity, and the great hatred" (*Hos. 9:7*). Britain and America will finally come to know that their former religious authorities were fools and madmen! Today there are so many different religions, all with their own creative "interpretations" of what the Bible says - created in such a manner as to support their various fear and money driven doctrines. It is literally mass confusion!

"My God will cast them away, because they did not harken unto him: and they shall be wanderers among the nations" (*Hos. 9:17*). Our nations have never learned the amazingly simple and obvious lesson, that we exist solely for Yahweh's purpose! We shall have to suffer at the hands of our captors in foreign countries before we will finally "get it"!

"For I will be unto Ephraim as a lion, and as a young lion to the house of Judah: I, even I, will tear and go away; I will take away, and none shall rescue him. I will go and return to my place, till they acknowledge their offence, and seek my face: in their affliction they will seek me early" (*Hos. 5:14,15*). Verse 14 illustrates what our allies will do for our nations when we ask for help - nothing! Verse 15 shows that the outcome will eventually be very good. Israel will finally, in their affliction, turn back to Yahweh and repent of their ways.

"Come, and let us return to Yahweh: for he hath torn, and he will heal us; he hath smitten, and he will bind us up. After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight" (*Hos. 6:1,2*). Our nations will have a much different attitude after the Tribulation. In humility, they will return to Yahweh. They will know that Yahweh authorized both their punishment and their healing.

"When Israel was a child, then I loved him, and called my son out of Egypt...How shall I give thee up, Ephraim? How shall I deliver thee, Israel? How shall I make thee as Admah? How shall I set thee as Zeboim? Mine heart is turned within me, my repentings are kindled together" (*Hos. 11:1,8*). This depicts how Yahweh feels about us. We were as a son to Yahweh. And Yahweh's heart and emotions are churning deeply because of our (*Ephraim's*) national sins.

"Yet I am Yahweh thy God from the land of Egypt [*land of sin*], and thou shalt know no

god but me: for there is no saviour beside me...O Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself; but in me is thine help" (*Hos. 13:4,9*). After the lessons of the Tribulation are learned, Yahweh will finally be able to work with His people.

"I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for mine anger is turned away from him. I will be as the dew unto Israel: he shall grow as the lily, and cast forth his roots as Lebanon ...Ephraim shall say; What have I to do any more with idols? I have heard him, and observed him: I am like a green fir tree. From me is thy fruit found. Who is wise, and he shall understand these things? Prudent, and he shall know them? For the ways of Yahweh are right, and the just shall walk in them; but the transgressors shall fall therein" (*Hos. 14:4,5,8,9*).

Yahweh will renew His Love for Britain and all Israel. We will have learned our lessons, and Yahweh will restore our former glory - only this time it will be far greater - the people will be enjoying their respective roles in the new Kingdom forever!

## Jeremiah's Warning:

Jeremiah means "Yahweh founds". Most people believe Jeremiah discusses some very gloomy prophecies - but that is because those people have not allowed Yahweh to "found", or establish their lives in His Spirit of truth. Jeremiah - Yahweh founds - is a very positive book.

Ezekiel and Daniel were contemporaries of Jeremiah (see *Dan. 9:2*). When Nebuchadnezzar conquered Judah, Ezekiel and Daniel were taken captive. Jeremiah was released to complete his mission regarding David's throne. Jeremiah physically went only to Judah with his warning prophecies, which is one small part of Israel. Today, Judah is called "Israel", while Israel is called mainly the "United States" and the "British Commonwealth nations".

"The word that came to Jeremiah from Yahweh, saying; "Thus speaketh Yahweh God of Israel, saying; `Write thee all the words that I have spoken unto thee in a book'" (*Jer. 30:1,2; see also 45:1; 51:60-64*). Why would Jeremiah write these prophecies about Israel's captivity, when in fact Israel had already gone into captivity 100 years prior to the writing of the book? Because the book is for our time today!

"And these are the words that Yahweh spake concerning Israel and concerning Judah" (*v. 4*). Notice the book is addressed to both Israel and Judah.

"The fierce anger of Yahweh shall not return, until he have done it, and until he have performed the intents of his heart: IN THE LATTER DAYS ye shall consider it" (*Jer. 30:24*). "Consider it", is better translated, "understand it". This means that Jeremiah's prophecies would not thoroughly be understood, until these end times - the "latter days", just prior to their fulfillment!

Unfortunately, most people will not understand until after the prophesied disasters

strike! But all of the people of spiritual Israel (*only*) COULD understand it NOW, if only they would heed Yahweh's Word!

"Woe be unto the pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture! saith Yahweh. Therefore thus saith Yahweh God of Israel against the pastors that feed my people; `Ye have scattered my flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, saith Yahweh'" (*Jer. 23:1,2*). Yahweh is addressing spiritual Israel, which has been "scattered" by false doctrine, and "driven" away from Yahweh's Truth by the false ministers of traditional Christianity (*founded primarily on Catholic and protestant dogma*).

"Then the word of Yahweh came upon me, saying; `Before I formed thee in the belly, I knew thee: and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the NATIONS'" (*Jer. 1:4,5*). Jeremiah was sanctified, "set apart" to deliver his message to "nations" - plural. "Hear ye the word of Yahweh, O house of Jacob, and all the families of the house of Israel" (*Jer. 2:4*). This message is to ALL of Israel - not just for Judah, but mostly for the Lost 10 Tribes - the modern nations of America and the British Commonwealth.

"And I brought you into a plentiful country, to eat the fruit thereof and the goodness thereof; but when ye entered, ye defiled my land, and made mine heritage an abomination" (*v. 7*). Who was brought into a beautiful country and then turned their backs on Yahweh? The American, Canadian and British peoples more than anyone in the history of the earth! Unless we - Yahweh's Elect - deliver this message, Jeremiah will have lived in vain! And Yahweh will NOT allow that to happen!

"The priests said not; Where is Yahweh? And they that handle the law knew

me not: the pastors also transgressed against me, and the prophets prophesied by Baal, and walked after things that do not profit" (v. 8). Most of our religions of today reject Yahweh's Law - but even those that have it in this end time, pervert it to suit their needs. Even those ministers that seem to be so very sincere - those "good" Christian ministers, are able to "appear" as ministers of righteousness, because they have either been "DECEIVED" (2 *Timothy* 3:13), or they have had "THEIR OWN CONSCIENCE SEARED WITH A HOT IRON" (1 *Timothy* 4:2). It makes little difference how or why these people end up as false ministers - it is simply a fact that they do! As set out in 2 Corinthians 12 to 15, Satan has engineered many ways to produce deceived and deceitful workers. If someone is genuinely deceived, that person can, and probably will come across in a most extremely sincere and convincing manner - unwittingly deceiving many others. If someone has no conscience, as in "seared with a hot iron", then such a person will also have the ability to come across "sincere" - just as sincere and "CON"vincing as the stereotypical "used car salesman", for example.

"Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say; `Return thou backsliding Israel, saith Yahweh; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful,...only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against Yahweh thy God, and hast scattered the way to the strangers under every green tree,...for I AM MARRIED UNTO YOU: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion'" (*Jer.* 3:12-14). Yahweh says He is married to Israel, meaning of course, spiritual Israel (see also Ezekiel Watchmen). The time setting is just prior to the Tribulation, and Yahweh is saying that He is going to select some of us to take to - Zion - His place of safety, to be pastors - to

continue in the millennium: "And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding" (v. 15).

"Set up the standard toward Zion: retire, stay not: for I will bring evil from the north, and a great destruction" (v. 6). If you want to escape the terrible trouble ahead, find out how to be a pastor in Zion - the True Congregation that Yahweh leads - His "fortress" of protection! Proclaim Yahweh's warning message to repent, and only then will you be taken to a place of safety!

"How shall I pardon thee for this? Thy children have forsaken me, and sworn by them that are no gods: when I fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlot's houses. They were as fed horses in the morning: every one neighed after his neighbour's wife" (*Jer.* 5:7,8). Only the nations of Israel (*America and British Commonwealth*) have been given the greatest prosperity on earth. Our men neigh after their neighbour's wives - a very condemning statement, but true! Israel (*us*) is filled with adultery. It is the subject of most of our movies, television shows, and news events! THESE PHYSICAL REALITIES ARE SYMBOLIC OF WHAT Yahweh CALLS OUR "SPIRITUAL ADULTERY" that we are committing by turning to; feeding ourselves on, so many false religions, when we have had the TRUE FOOD of Yahweh's Word - which was FREELY GIVEN to us by Yahweh Himself!

"Lo, I will bring a nation upon you from afar, O house of Israel, saith Yahweh: it is a mighty nation, it is an ancient nation, a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest what they say. Their quiver is an open sepulchre, they are all mighty men" (vv. 15,16). This is referring to the ancient and famous warring nation of Assyria, now called Central Europe including Germany, that

Yahweh says He "will bring" upon us. This area has recently risen again to be one of the world's mightiest financial and military powers.

"Thus saith Yahweh; Behold, a people cometh from the north country, and a great nation shall be raised from the side of the earth. They shall lay hold on bow and spear; they are cruel, and have no mercy; their voice roareth like a sea; and they ride upon horses, set in array as men for war against thee, O daughter of Zion" (vv. 22,23). Here is mentioned a great nation, north of Jerusalem and another great nation from the "side of the earth". These nations have a history of cruelty in warfare - showing no mercy. A very good description of an alliance between Europe including Germany, and the Japanese from the far east.

"I have set thee for a tower and a fortress among my people, that thou mayest know and try their way" (v. 27). Here, Yahweh is still talking about His Congregation - Zion - the Elect, as being set up to watch from the tower and to warn Israel about Yahweh's prophesied invasion of our lands. Yahweh's Congregation is likened to a fortress that He will protect because of the warning work it conducts.

"...Stand in the gate of Yahweh's house, and proclaim there this word, and say; Hear the word of Yahweh, all ye Judah, that enter in at these gates to worship Yahweh" (*Jer. 7:1,2*). Spiritually, we are the temple today. We are meant to warn all those in spiritual Israel of the false doctrines they follow and are being taught.

"...Amend your ways and your doings...Trust ye not in lying words, saying; The temple of Yahweh, The Temple of Yahweh, The temple of Yahweh, are these" (vv. 3,4). Religious authorities today, say "the church, the church, the church", as if "the church" is going to solve all their problems. The

reality is that the "church", is in fact, the root cause of all their problems! Simply calling themselves a Christian "Church", is in fact, a blatant lie! Calling themselves "Christians", is equally spurious!

"Will ye steal, murder, and commit adultery, and swear falsely, and burn incense unto Baal, and walk after other gods whom ye know not; and come and stand before me in this house [*spiritual "house" of Israel*], which is called by my name [Israelite - children of Yahweh], and say; We are delivered to do all these abominations?" (vv. 9,10). Our nations will not admit it, but they are world leaders in all of the above sins! We have "legalized" every form and type of false religion imaginable, and we ourselves (*nationally*) practice all the traditions of Baal - "Sun"day worship, Easter, Christmas, New Year's, Lenten, Halloween, etc.

"And then come to present yourselves before me in this house, which belongs to me, thinking you are now quite safe - safe to go on with all these abominable practices!" (*Moffatt translation of the above verse 10*). Yahweh is warning traditional Christians, that although they consider themselves to be very religious, they are nonetheless, through their traditions, rebelling against Yahweh! Many atheists stupendously believe that they will be "immune" from Yahweh's punishment - AMAZING! "But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward" (*Jer. 7:24*).

"Thus saith Yahweh; Stand in the court of Yahweh's house, and speak unto all the cities of Judah, which come to worship in Yahweh's house, all the words that I command thee to speak to them; diminish not a word" (*Jer. 26:1,2*). This means we are never to compromise on Yahweh's word - never omit one single word! This is precisely why we see

so much religious confusion today. Religious leaders continually compromise Yahweh's Word (*often out of necessity*), in order to "make" the Word better fit the financial and personal prestige requirements of their "church"!

"Thine habitation is in the midst of deceit; THROUGH DECEIT THEY REFUSE TO KNOW ME, saith Yahweh" (*Jer. 9:6*). False traditional Christian ministers find it very easy to twist and pervert what Yahweh has taught us, and still act so "righteously religious". And in this process, they deceive multiple millions of others, while abusing Yahweh's Word; using it as a "tool" to feed their ego and to attract financial reward!

"Who is the wise man, that may understand this? And who is he to whom the mouth of Yahweh hath spoken, that he may declare it, for what the land perisheth and is burned up like a wilderness, that none passeth through" (*Jer. 9:12*). Our land is going to be burned like a wilderness! We that understand (*Elect*) must warn!

"O Lord, I know that the way of man is not in himself; it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps. O Lord, correct me, but with judgement; not in thine anger, lest thou bring me to nothing" (*Jer. 10:23,24*). Do we humbly accept that we can not even direct our own steps? Yahweh says if we really know this, we will continually ask Him to guide and correct us! Jeremiah learned this lesson - that is why Yahweh was able to use him so effectively. This humble, prayerful attitude is the only attitude that Yahweh can use in His Kingdom. Sadly, it is rare these days.

"Mine heart within me is broken because of the prophets; all my bones shake; I am like a drunken man,...because of Yahweh, and because of the words of his holiness" (*Jer. 23:9*). Jeremiah's bones shook in terrified horror, because of the false prophets! He

understood that they would refuse to warn Yahweh's people - because it would not be "personally rewarding" or "financially expedient" for them to do so!

"For both prophet and priest are profane; yea, in my house have I found their wickedness (*Jer. 23:11*)...Therefore, behold, I am against the prophets,...that steal my words every one from his neighbour. Behold, I am against the prophets...that use their tongues...that prophesy false dreams...and do tell them, and cause my people to err by their lies...therefore they shall not profit this people at all, saith Yahweh (*vv. 30-32*)...And when this people, or the prophet, or the priest, shall ask thee, saying; 'What is the burden of Yahweh?' Thou shalt then say unto them; 'What burden?' I will even forsake you...And as for the prophet, and the priest, and the people, that shall say; 'The burden of Yahweh', I will even punish that man and his house" (*vv. 33 -34*).

Modern Christianity still maintains the pagan sun-worship traditions (*Christmas, Easter, "Sun"day, Halloween, etc.*) of the ancient Egyptians, because the Roman Catholic church that adopted them, claimed that it would be easier to adopt these pagan traditions, merging them into Christianity, as the people were "reluctant to change"!

Remarkably, this is STILL why most every so-called Christian organization maintains these pagan abominations (*"that Yahweh hates"*) - they are "traditionally accepted", and thereby, "more convenient" than telling the people the truth - the so-called "burden of Yahweh"!

"...for every man's word shall be his burden; for ye have perverted the words of the living Yahweh...but since ye say; 'The burden of Yahweh', and I have sent unto you, saying; 'Ye shall not say, the burden of Yahweh'; Therefore...I will utterly forget you, and I will forsake you, and the city that I gave you and

your fathers, and cast you out of my presence: and I will bring an everlasting reproach upon you, and a perpetual shame, which shall not be forgotten" (vv. 35-40).

The irony of this is that keeping Yahweh's Sabbaths, Holy Days, annual Feasts and commandments, is by far easier and much more enjoyable (*even in this physical life*), than keeping the pagan traditions of traditional Christianity. I know - I have experienced both! Unfortunately, for the majority, everlasting reproach and perpetual shame means, that even when they repent as a result of the Tribulation, they will lose a wonderful aspect of, and endure a certain eternal shame in, Yahweh's Kingdom!

Jeremiah 31 is a Feast of Trumpets message. Jews to this day, still read this chapter on the Feast of Trumpets. "At the same time, saith Yahweh, will I be the God of all the families of Israel, and they shall be my people...The people which left of the sword found grace in the wilderness; even Israel, when I went to cause him to rest" (vv. 1,2). The original word translated to "wilderness" means "dungeon, or prison". When Israel goes into captivity, many will be in prison when the Messiah returns! Then Yahweh is going to give us all "spiritual rest" from sin and suffering. All mankind is going to be given rest from famine, disease, war and deception. This will be our first true, spiritual rest! And it will last forever!

"Yahweh hath appeared of old unto me, saying; `Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee'" (v. 3). Finally, our people will see that Yahweh has NEVER STOPPED LOVING THEM! All the punishment was designed to bring them back to Yahweh - to correct the error of their ways.

Then Yahweh is going to shower His blessings on us like never before! The greatest prosperity the earth has ever seen! "Again I will

build thee...O virgin of Israel: thou shalt again be adorned with thy tabrets, and shalt go forth in the dances of them that make merry. Thou shalt yet plant vines upon the mountains of Samaria: the planters shall plant, and shall eat them as common things. For there shall be a day, that the watchman upon the mount Ephraim shall cry; Arise ye, and let us go up to Zion unto Yahweh our God. For thus saith Yahweh; Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations: publish ye, praise ye, and say; O Lord, save thy people, the remnant of Israel" (vv. 4-7).

The "firstfruits bride", called from our people of the lost 10 tribes (*mostly British Commonwealth and America*), and from Judah (*Israel*), - spiritual Israel when combined, are literally going to LEAD THE WORLD. This leadership will be through Yahweh's grace, rather than through the people's own arrogance, as in the past. LEADING THE WORLD (*MORE PRECISELY, THE UNIVERSE*), IS WHAT SPIRITUAL ISRAEL WAS CREATED FOR - "TO BE KINGS AND PRIESTS" IN THE KINGDOM FOREVER!

"Behold, the days come...that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband to them...But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith Yahweh: I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and I will be their God, and they will be my people" (*Jer. 31:31-33*).

This New Covenant is already in force - IF WE RESPOND BY ACCEPTING Yahweh'S HOLY SPIRIT! Those of us who have accepted - the Elect, are already MARRIED TO the Messiah in this New Covenant. The rest of

Yahweh's Congregation will have to wait until after "the thousand years were finished"!

"Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, both young men and old together: for I will turn their mourning into joy, and will comfort them, and make them rejoice from their sorrow. And I will satiate the soul of the priests with fatness, and my people shall be satisfied with my goodness, saith Yahweh" (vv. 13,14).

This pictures us; Yahweh's chosen Elect, teaching those born during the millennium, every word of Yahweh. We will also be responsible for being priests (*and kings or rulers*), in Yahweh's Kingdom forever!

"And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying; Know Yahweh: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith Yahweh: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more" (v. 34).

Jeremiah's prophecy of temporary "doom" contains a message of incredible hope. If all those in spiritual Israel could only grasp the magnitude of this wonderful message now, so very much suffering could be avoided.

## Zechariah's Flying Scroll:

The central theme of Zechariah's prophecy is about Yahweh's "temple" or, in these New Covenant times, His "called out ones", as indeed, we are (*our bodies*) temples of Yahweh in these end-times: "Do you not know that you are the temple of Yahweh and that the Spirit of Yahweh dwells in you?" (*1 Cor. 3:16*). "Or do you not know that your body is the temple of His Holy Spirit" (*1 Cor. 6:19*).

Acknowledge this theme and the book is very easy to understand. This prophecy is dual! It was delivered to ancient Israel during the construction of the second temple, however, most of its message would not make sense until these end-times.

Yahweh is working out His great master-plan. That plan involves both the "world" and the "Congregation", or the "called out ones", where indeed His Holy Spirit resides. We must realize that the events happening within Yahweh's Congregation, from the Greek, "Ekklesia", meaning collectively, the "congregation", are a currently a priority to Yahweh compared to events happening to the rest of the "world".

Yahweh's main concern right now is with His people who are striving and struggling to be OBEDIENT to His every word, and to enter into His Family as the "firstfruits" bride.

"In the eighth month, in the second year of Darius, came the word of Yahweh unto Zechariah, the son of Berechiah, the son of Iddo the prophet, saying, `Yahweh hath been sore displeased with your fathers'" (*Zech. 1:1-2*). Yahweh was very displeased with our "fathers" - meaning ancient Israel. "Therefore say thou unto them, `Thus saith Yahweh, the Lord of Hosts; Turn ye unto me, saith Yahweh, the Lord of Hosts. Be ye not as your fathers, unto whom the FORMER PROPHETS have cried, saying, "Thus saith Yahweh, the Lord of hosts: Turn ye now from your evil ways, and

from your evil doings": but they did not hear, nor hearken unto me, saith Yahweh'" (*Zech. 1:3-4*).

Yahweh is highly displeased with His modern-day Congregation - His temple, as most people in modern spiritual Israel have become spiritual "adulterers", by following the false traditional "Christians" and other philosophies! "Do you not know that your bodies are members of the Messiah? Shall I then take the members of the Messiah and make them [by practicing false religions] members of a harlot?" (*1 Cor. 6:15*).

What is Yahweh going to do about this spiritual adultery? "If anyone defiles the temple of Yahweh, Yahweh will destroy him" (*1 Cor. 3:17*)! Yahweh pleads with us not to be like our fathers - ancient Israel. They did not hear Yahweh, nor did they respond to His call to repentance. For their refusal to obey, Yahweh punished them severely. That is not what Yahweh desires for us.

"Your fathers, where are they? and the prophets, do they live for ever?" (*Zech. 1:5*). Why did Yahweh inspire this question? One, two, three or more prophets would take their message to the people, and then die (or be killed), but the people who heard the message were STILL ALIVE!

Yahweh wanted this to cause us in these end-times to think deeply about the events we are witnessing. Do prophets or Apostles live forever? No, they do not. We must recognize this fact in these end-times.

These verses show us that Yahweh places the onus on we who are alive, to grasp the impact of the messages left to us by the New Covenant Apostles. The New Covenant Apostles all died (*or were killed*), just as the Old Covenant Prophets - but their message - Yahweh's inspired Word, abides forever!

"But my words and my statutes, which I commanded my servants the prophets, did

they not take hold of your fathers?" (*Zech. 1:6*). Prophets or Apostles do not live forever. Yahweh's Word does! When one of Yahweh's chosen leaders delivers a message, we must learn to put our focus in the right place. We should not look to the men who die, but to the ever-living Words of Yahweh that those men deliver.

So what has all this to do with us in modern spiritual Israel? Plenty! "...and they returned and said, 'Like as Yahweh, the Lord of Hosts thought to do unto us, according to our ways, and according to our doings, so hath he dealt with us'" (*Zech. 1:6*). Yahweh dealt harshly with those ancient Israelites, according to their doings. He is going to deal with us the same way!

Zechariah 1:7-11, discusses Yahweh's global work, as conducted by His faithful servants (*Prophets, Apostles - the "Elect"*), and portrays them as those men that have been blessed with Yahweh's Holy Spirit and commissioned throughout the ages to take Yahweh's message to the people.

This end-time message must be delivered by, "they whom Yahweh hath sent to walk to and fro through the earth"; (*Zech. 1:10*), by Yahweh's Elect! We must take this message to the people - if we are able to understand it we are obligated to deliver it - to share it with all others who will "hear" it!

Study verses 12 to 16. They show that Israel (*today the United States, British Commonwealth and others*) is in a great crisis. Notice what Yahweh says in verse 17: "Cry yet, saying, 'Thus saith Yahweh, the Lord of hosts; My cities through prosperity shall yet be spread abroad; and Yahweh shall yet comfort Zion, and shall yet choose Jerusalem'". Remember, "Zion" in prophecy is synonymous with Yahweh's Congregation (*Heb. 12:22-23*). The Congregation - the temple, is in a crisis that Yahweh will "yet comfort". Yahweh has not

comforted it yet! Why has Yahweh yet refused to comfort His Congregation?

"Then lifted I up mine eyes, and saw, and behold four horns. And I said unto the angel that talked with me, 'What be these?' And he answered me, 'These are the horns which have scattered Judah, Israel, and Jerusalem'" (*Zech. 1:18-19*). The four horns represent Yahweh's power given to other nations to carry out His earthly plans. Yahweh's end-time Congregation - our modern nations of spiritual Israel, must be severely punished for its transgressions, before it will finally grasp the true meaning of Yahweh's plan.

"Ho, ho, come forth, and flee from the land of the north, saith Yahweh: for I have spread you abroad as the four winds of the heaven, saith Yahweh. Deliver thyself, O Zion, that dwellest with the daughter of Babylon" (*Zech. 2:6-7*). This is Yahweh's message to flee from "Babylon" - the land of sin, which we know refers to the great false church - the Roman Catholic church, as led by the Vatican in these New Covenant times.

Many Bible prophecies talk of a great world crisis to come upon us in these end-times. Yah'shua told us that we would know that the time of the end was near, when we saw the "abomination of desolation" spoken of by the prophet Daniel (*Matt. 24:15*). In literally dozens of places in your Bible, you will find the word "abomination" used to describe the use of pagan traditions in the worship of Yahweh. The word "desolation" is used equally as often in the Bible to describe the state of condition of mankind that results from following these "abominations".

Yahweh warns us that WE ARE IN BABYLON! We are following pagan traditions - abominations - such as "Sun"day worship, Christmas, Easter, New Year's, Halloween, etc., all in the name of Christianity! "The things

which Yahweh hates"! We must notice carefully, Yahweh's wording: "Deliver thyself" - we must DELIVER OURSELVES from Babylon, and from the crisis that lies ahead! We must not sit back and hope that Yahweh will "do it all for us"! Yahweh is now doing His part - He is providing everyone the opportunity to respond to this message; His promised warning!

Zechariah 3, explains to us that the primary blame for our "abominations" lies squarely on the shoulders of the false religious authorities, represented by "Joshua", who together with Satan, receives a strong rebuke from Yahweh for leading his people into these transgressions. This does not, however, excuse us individually, for being led astray. We are responsible for our own decisions.

The biggest problem faced by those trying to do Yahweh's Will in these end-times, is the "day of small things"! "For who hath despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of Yahweh, which run to and fro through the whole earth" (*Zech. 4:10*). This reveals one of Yahweh's main concerns for His people in our time. A plummet is a builder's measuring device, used to ensure accuracy. In the "hand of Zerubbabel with those seven", is referring to the seven Congregations, or groups of called out ones throughout the ages, that see through the "eyes of Yahweh", and that have been led by His Holy Spirit "to and fro through the whole earth" sharing Yahweh's revealed truths.

This verse shows that many are going to be tripped up on the issues in these end-times by "small things". Many people, especially in these end-times, have developed a problem with believing in small things. They despise small things, or "small beginnings" as this verse could read. They have real trouble

seeing Yahweh behind an individual or even a small group of people.

They feel comfortable following the traditionally convenient ways of mainstream "Christianity", modern Jewish "Judaism", or other false eastern philosophies, expecting and assuming that it is correct, as evidenced only by its sheer number of followers. After all, they say, "All these people can't be wrong!" But that is precisely what ancient Israel said too! And they were WRONG!

We must learn to realize that Yahweh's Word stands on its own - all by itself, without the need of any man-made religious organizations. And most importantly, the simple truths of Yahweh's Word, as freely revealed by His Holy Spirit to His Elect (*including the former Prophets and Apostles*), are continually being shared with the "many" for their spiritual benefit.

We must not focus on the fact that these revealed truths are only being proclaimed by a "small number", or even only one person. This "one" person, will die, just as surely as did all the former Prophets and Apostles. It is the inspired MESSAGE of OBEDIENCE TO THE LAWS OF Yahweh's GOVERNMENT that we must pay attention to!

And we have this word written in our hearts, that when we hear the truth, even if from only one man with few if any followers, we "shall know the truth" (*John 8:32*). Also, we are given instruction to "prove all things" through the Word of Yahweh with the aid of His Holy Spirit. It is very clear in Yahweh's Word, that neither the former Prophets or the Apostles had great numbers of followers at all times during their lives. In fact, most of them were ridiculed and killed by their audiences, while their messages were being resisted by the political authorities.

On this earth today, only the minds and hearts of Yahweh's Elect - His "temples", can

comprehend the true intent of His government. This is an astounding but true statement. The nations of modern spiritual Israel (*the "Lost 10 Tribes"; United States and British Commonwealth, plus physical Israel; Tribe of Judah*) do not follow Yahweh's laws in their governments in any way.

Now look at another aspect of Zechariah's incredible vision related to Yahweh's work and Yahweh's government. "Then I turned, and lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and behold a flying roll [*scroll*]. And he said unto me, 'What seest thou?' And I answered, 'I see a flying roll; the length thereof is twenty cubits, and the breadth thereof ten cubits'" (*Zech. 5:1-2*).

Yahweh shows Zechariah a "flying scroll", which measurements translate to about 30 feet long and 15 feet wide. This was not a small piece of writing! The very large size was deliberately used to emphasize the importance of the message being delivered by one "small man"! Yahweh inspired this vision to be recorded because He wanted His Elect to understand its message. Remember that the key to understanding Zechariah's message is that the book almost entirely deals with the "temple".

The measurements of the scroll are coincidentally related to the temple, in such a way as to tend to incline readers to link the two topically. "And it came to pass...in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel...that he began to build the house [temple] of Yahweh. ...the length thereof was threescore cubits, and the breadth thereof twenty cubits, and the height thereof thirty cubits. And the porch before the temple of the house, twenty cubits was the length thereof, according to the breadth of the house; and ten cubits was the breadth thereof before the house (*1 Kings 6:1-3*). The physical temple in Solomon's time represented the centre of Yahweh's work. The

same is true of Yahweh's "temples" - the Elect members of His Congregation, represent the centre of His work today!

The flying scroll was the same size as the porch to the temple. The porch was where you would first gain entrance into the temple courtyard; from the courtyard, you would gain entrance to the Holy of Holies - the place where the Spirit of Yahweh dwelled in the Old Covenant times. The porch represented entrance to a very large work - the redeeming Spirit of Yahweh!

The flying scroll is also the same dimension as the fantastic cherubim (*angels*) that were built inside the temple to guard the Holy of Holies. "And within the oracle he made two cherubim...each ten cubits high. And five cubits was the one wing...and five cubits the other...and they stretched forth the wings...so that the wing of the one touched the wall, and the wing of the other cherub touched the other wall; and their wings touched one another in the midst of the house" (*1 Kings 6:22-27*).

It is an interesting coincidence that the size of the flying scroll, the porch (entrance) to the temple, and the cherubim (*guardians of the temple*) are all nearly the same size. The flying scroll is symbolic of Yahweh's true message. The references to the builder's plummet and the specific dimensions can be interpreted as tools we can use to "prove all things". We are first meant to hear Yahweh's messengers; then we are to measure the message up to Yahweh's Word to determine if it contains His true intent.

The scroll itself is symbolic of Yahweh's Word. It is by "entering" into an understanding of Yahweh's Word, that we will gain access to His Holy Spirit. His Holy Spirit will reveal to us the benefits of "guarding" and keeping the law of Yahweh, and sharing this revealed understanding with others.

The symbology is clear. Zechariah delivered a very big message to do with Yahweh's work. But it was delivered by only one "small man", and was not well received by the people of ancient Israel, who "despised the day of small things". We are meant to deliver that same message in these New Covenant times. It is a very big message that will definitely not be well received!

Warning people in our modern nations to follow Yahweh's laws and form of government is indeed a big work. It is a work that the traditional churches and (*false*) ministries are failing to come even close to doing properly. In fact they are doing everything possible in most instances, to undermine the true message of Yahweh! This is why the Yahweh-given commission of "guarding" the Word of Yahweh is so very important! Only Yahweh's Elect "few" are concerned; the majority, speaking of the "worldly wise and disobedient", as well as the traditional "Christians" or modern Jews, don't even know or understand the truth of Yahweh's Word, let alone the importance of guarding it!

When the majority turn away from Yahweh, what does He do about it? In ancient Israel He revived His work by sending the Prophets to show the people the error of their ways and to lead them back to Yahweh. In modern spiritual Israel, He shows the people the error of their ways and leads them back to the truth through the messages written by His Spirit-filled Apostles and by His Holy Spirit working through His Elect.

When the nations are following pagan ways, legalizing everything that is an "abomination to Yahweh", then Yahweh's Elect are called upon to deliver His message of warning. Our nations must repent of their evil ways or risk "desolation"! We, Yahweh's Elect are a very small group, doing a very large work: "For they shall rejoice, and shall see the

plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; THEY ARE THE EYES OF Yahweh, WHICH RUN TO AND FRO through the whole earth [*delivering Yahweh's message about His laws and government*]" (*Zech. 4:10*). And as Zechariah further prophesied, the majority will "despise the day of [*these*] small things" or "small beginnings" as this verse is otherwise translated.

Yahweh requires us to issue this "flying scroll" warning message to the whole world! The following verses show us that the whole world is breaking Yahweh's laws! "This is the curse that goeth forth over the face of the earth...I will bring it forth...and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name...and shall consume [*destroy*] it with the timber thereof and the stones thereof" (*Zech. 5:3-4*). We have a choice - we can choose blessings or cursings: "And he said, 'This is an ephah that goeth forth.' He said moreover, 'This is their resemblance through all the earth.' And, behold, there was lifted up a talent of lead: and this is a woman that sitteth in the midst of the ephah" (*Zech. 5:5-7*).

To most this may seem strange. The angel now shows Zechariah an ephah that goes forth and a woman sitting in its midst. This vision is indirectly related to the flying scroll, the porch and the cherubim of the temple. An ephah is a device used for measuring grain. However, here it is a "woman" that is being measured. We know that a "woman" in the Bible is a symbol for a Congregation - whether a true one or false. Yahweh's Congregation - modern spiritual Israel - those that have the blessed opportunity to be the Messiah's "firstfruits bride", are being measured NOW (*1 Peter 4:7*)! The "world" is not yet being judged! At this time, during our day, at this very moment, only the "House of Israel" - you and I, are being judged by

Yahweh! The rest of the world's population will have to wait until "after the thousand years are finished".

Let's look at how Yahweh judged the woman: "And he said, 'This is wickedness.' And he cast it into the midst of the ephah" (*Zech. 5:8*). Yahweh finds wickedness in His own Congregation - His own called out ones are rebelling against His laws of government!

Now look what happens next: "Then I lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and, behold, there came out TWO WOMEN, and the wind was in their wings; for they had wings like a stork: and they lifted up the ephah between the earth and the heaven. Then I said to the angel that talked with me, 'Whither do these bear the ephah?' And he said unto me, 'To build it an house in the land of Shinar [that is Babylon]: and it shall be established, and set there upon her own base" (*Zech. 5:9-11*).

This is reconfirming that this is an end-time event. We see two women discussed in Scripture elsewhere. Two women are grinding grain in Matt. 24:41 and in Luke 17:35, and both of these chapters are discussing events that are happening just prior to the Messiah's return.

Now there are two women, working in the land of Shinar, just prior to the Messiah's return. Shinar, or Babylon is mentioned here for a very good reason. One woman - found with wickedness; represents people following false traditional man-made religious organizations or philosophies, that are "dwelling" in Babylon. The other woman represents Yahweh's Elect, who have "heard" the message of the flying scroll, and are doing the work of guarding Yahweh's Word AND warning Yahweh's people who are in Babylon, to "come out of her"!

Notice that Yahweh refers to both women as His temple(s), unfortunately, one woman, or group of called out ones, is going to

have to go into the Tribulation because they refuse to "hear" Yahweh's message now - they can't understand what the flying scroll is all about! We must all work very hard to understand Yahweh's Word and to "live by every word that proceeds from the mouth of Yahweh". In other words to be obedient to all of Yahweh's laws of government.

The interesting aspect of most Bible prophecy for our time, is that it is almost never completely understood until just immediately prior to its fulfillment. Events are happening in our world around us, that only now allow us to fully understand the meaning behind Zechariah's flying scroll! It has to do with guarding the law of Yahweh for the protection of His "temples" - His Congregation of called out ones.

Guarding the laws of Yahweh serves no purpose unless we are intent on being OBEDIENT to those same laws! All of Yahweh's laws relate to government of individuals as well as society. Yahweh's laws are meant to be the foundation of our government! Being obedient to the laws of Yahweh means we must be striving for a government that puts Yahweh's laws first - first before man-made laws.

The book of Zechariah and many other prophecies, discuss Yahweh's laws as they relate to the prophesied governmental crisis that would occur in our nations just prior to the Messiah's return. We are instructed that the "abominations" committed by our nations will be that crisis! And that the crisis will bring our nations to utter destruction, meaning "desolation"!

Biblical symbology for sin is clear - BABYLON! *Zech. 5:11*, tells us that we, as Yahweh's Congregation, have set ourselves up on our own false foundation - in BABYLON! "To build it an house in the land of Shinar [that is Babylon]: and it shall be established, and set

there UPON HER OWN [THE WICKED WOMAN'S] BASE [OR FOUNDATION]". This false religion that our nations practice in the name of Christianity is not set on Yahweh's foundation, it is set on "her own" foundation! Yahweh is clearly very angry. That is why He is sending the flying scroll warning. Angry or not, Yahweh promised He would warn everyone in modern spiritual Israel, so that all who will "hear" Him might be saved from the Tribulation.

Do we believe Yahweh when He says our governments are in a crisis? Unfortunately, most do not. But let's look objectively at a few examples of our current governmental "leadership". I am not going to provide detailed explanations for these, suffice it to say that only the truly Spirit-filled Israelite - Yahweh's Elect, will understand them in any event - and they will simply KNOW when they hear the self-evident truth, because the "Spirit will make it known" to them!

Yahweh commands us not to adopt pagan customs and traditions into our land. Our governments have "legalized" what they call, "freedom of religion", including eastern and other philosophies! Yahweh instructs that the institution of marriage is "honourable among all". Our governments recognize "living in sin" as a "legal common-law relationship"! Yahweh clearly commands against homosexual activities. Our governments have recognized the "rights of gays" and are even talking of instituting "gay family rights" legislation! Yahweh commands against sexual immorality. Our governments have "legalized" most every form of pornography, prostitution and pre-marital sex. We even have "laws" that refer to "adult advertising", "adult entertainment", "consenting adults" and "parental consent" for minors, among others!

Yahweh commands us not to murder. Our governments have legislated "justifiable homicide"! Yahweh commands us to love our

enemies. Our governments enlist us to go to war and kill them!

Yah'shua commands that we do not call anyone on earth our father, meaning, with reverence. Catholic and other "Christian" authorities universally set themselves up to be called "father"!

Yahweh commands that we do not charge interest or usury on money loaned to each other. We have entire economic and banking systems based on interest and usury, that would not work without it!

And the list goes on and on and on! Yahweh says of these "abominations", "Will you steal and murder, commit adultery and perjury...follow other gods...and say, 'We are safe' - safe to do all these detestable things?" (*Jer. 7:9-10*).

We must realize that all of these abominations are being committed by our peoples, because our nations have refused to take the Word of Yahweh seriously. Our (*false*) religious authority has been leading us down the proverbial garden path! Our nations, Yahweh warns, are on the brink of crisis; "the abomination of desolation"! It is virtually impossible to find a single one of Yahweh's laws that our nations have not "legislated" directly in opposition to! (*If you don't believe this, try it yourself!*)

As mentioned earlier, the Bible uses the word "abomination" literally dozens of times to refer to the influence of pagan traditions and phoney man-made laws. And the Biblical word "desolation" refers to the resulting state that mankind brings upon himself by following these abominations in his government.

The Bible word "Babylon" is synonymous with "sin". "Babylon the Great" is the Biblical term for the Vatican - the Roman Catholic Church! The "mother of harlots and of the ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH" (*Rev. 17:5*)! The "harlots" are referring to the

"protestant" (*daughter*) churches that "came out of her"!

Yahweh refers to all forms of sinning nations as Babylon. Only once in the Bible does Yahweh ever refer to anything as "BABYLON THE GREAT"! And He was referring to the Vatican; the great false church - the "BEAST" that gets its power from Satan (*Rev. 13:2*)!

It is this same BEAST that is the mother of all of the "ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH"! And we know that it is through following these abominations, that our nations have been blindly led into their current crisis of "DESOLATION".

How do we know when the "abomination of desolation" will be? "Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, STANDING IN THE HOLY PLACE" (*Matt. 24:15*).

By Yahweh's own words, there is not a greater abomination of desolation than the "pagan-come-Christian" traditions of the Catholic Church and the Vatican. Following their pagan traditions have resulted in our nations being labelled as "BABYLON" by Yahweh! And Yahweh labels the Vatican itself as "BABYLON THE GREAT" - the greatest promoter of sin in the earth's entire history! When we see this great abomination "standing in the holy place", we know we have seen the "abomination of desolation"!

Many instances in the Bible, Yahweh refers to the people of ancient Israel as His chosen ones, and Jerusalem as the Holy City, as in Zechariah 8:3, "Thus says Yahweh: I will return to Zion [at the time of the end]...Jerusalem shall be called the City of Truth, the Mountain of Yahweh, the Lord of Hosts, the Holy Mountain [*nation*]".

So the Bible says the HOLY PLACE was ANCIENT ISRAEL! On December 30, 1993, the Vatican and Israel stunned the world by

signing an agreement on diplomatic relations. Since then the Pope has publicly talked of moving his headquarters there! For many years the Vatican DEMANDED that Jerusalem be "internationalized"; ruled by the international community with the Vatican being the official "neutral" authority. In recent months, Yassir Arafat has been pleading for the same thing - even though these people have been enemies for centuries!

This is not necessarily "the" sign OF THE END. It is however, ANOTHER sign. Much controversy already exists between these nations over the "religious" centre of the Holy city.

The Islamic, Jewish and Catholic faiths, all of which are false, or non-Biblical, all have passionate desire to control Jerusalem. "He [*the king of the north*] shall enter also into the GLORIOUS LAND [*Jerusalem*], and many countries shall be overthrown [*at the time of the end*]" (*Dan. 11:41*). The king of the north conquers the king of the south and then "enters" into "the glorious land" - the Holy Land and the city of Jerusalem. The Hebrew word for "enter" indicates this is a peaceful entry, not done by military force. The king of the north symbolically represents "Babylon", or the sinning, heathen nations such as ancient Assyria.

Here is another statement made by the Pope: "We trust, that with the approach of the year 2,000, Jerusalem will become the city of peace for the entire world and that all people will be able to meet there, in particular the believers in the religions that find their birthright in the faith of Abraham".

The Vatican is now "using" the concept of it being the great "peace-keeper", in order to gain support for its proposed authoritative role in the new "international" Jerusalem. The Pope is undoubtedly very accurate in his statement:

"Jerusalem will become the city of peace for the entire world", but not the way he thinks!

If we truly follow the message of Zechariah's flying scroll, and measure, or prove all these things concerning the time of the end, it becomes clear that Yah'shua the Messiah is going to be here in the very near future! Of these events, Yah'shua says: "But of that day and hour no one knows, no, not even the angels of heaven, but My Father only" (*Matt. 24:36*).

In order to fully appreciate, through spiritual discernment of these events, we must think "spiritually", and remember that we are under the New (*spiritual*) Priesthood. If, while the ancient Israelites were under the Old (*material*) Covenant the Holy place was in the Holy Land and the city of Jerusalem; where the Temple and the keepers of the Law (*priests and elders*) were, then it stands to reason, that the Holy place in these end-times, is also in the Holy Land where the Temple is, which is in our MINDS - as Yahweh said: "I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts" (*Heb. 8:10*). And "Do you not know that you are the temple of Yahweh and that the Spirit of Yahweh dwells in you?" (*1 Cor. 3:16*). These verses help us to prove that when we recognize, that as nations, we are "legalizing", and thereby following all manner of pagan traditions as promoted by "Babylon the Great" (*the Catholic and Protestant "traditional Christians"*), that in fact, the Abomination of Desolation IS NOW STANDING IN THE HOLY PLACE!

The modern nations of Spiritual Israel (*primarily the British Commonwealth and United States*), have indeed incorporated into their civil laws, ALL OF THE ANCIENT PAGAN TRADITIONS CURRENTLY PROMOTED BY THE VATICAN and all of its daughter Protestants, including many of the rituals associated with Baal's false sun-worship, such

as Christmas, Easter, Halloween, New Year's, "Sun"day worship, not to mention the "legal" changes in Yahweh's times or seasons; hours of the day, months of the calendar, etc.

These state endorsed changes of Yahweh's Law have become so ingrained in our modern societies, that most everyone simply "accepts" them, along with their pagan traditions, as being "normal"! The minds, or Temples of His Holy Spirit in modern Spiritual Israel have become an ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION! It is in fact, difficult to imagine how this could be any more clear in the Biblical revelations. Our Governments, being deceived by the great false Church - the Vatican, have, unwittingly or not, succeeded in deceiving almost "the whole world" (*Rev. 12:9*).

If you've obtained an understanding of Zechariah's Flying Scroll, whether on your own, or as a result of reading this book, you will without a doubt KNOW that "the time is near", in fact, "when you see all these things, know that it is near, at the very doors. Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass away till all these things are fulfilled" (*Matt. 24:34*).

Understanding this is a blessing, BUT ONLY if we are OBEDIENT TO Yahweh's COMMAND to see that this warning work is completed without delay! Zechariah's message is not a request or a suggestion! It is clearly a COMMAND! "THEREFORE SAY TO THEM, `Thus says Yahweh, the Lord of Hosts: "Return to me," says Yahweh, the Lord of Hosts, "and I will return to you" (*Zech. 1:3*). Yah'shua said: "Blessed is he who reads and those who hear [*understand*] the words of this prophecy, and KEEP [*or do*] those things which are written in it; for the time is near" (*Rev. 1:3*).

THEREFORE SAY TO THEM [*Yahweh's PEOPLE; HIS TEMPLE*], "RETURN TO Yahweh"!

## **The Story Flow of the Book of Revelation:**

There exists a living God of love, mercy, compassion, wisdom, justice; of transcendent purpose and of supreme power, who will soon intervene and save humanity from itself.

Approximately one third of the entire Bible is devoted to prophecy. We read in Ephesians 2:20 that the very New Covenant Congregation that Yah'shua founded on the day of Pentecost is built on the foundation of these prophets - with Yah'shua as the "chief" or "head" corner stone.

The actual framework, or superstructure of all the Biblical prophecies is found described in the book of Daniel and in the book of Revelation. In the book of Revelation, alone, do we find events of the various other prophecies correlated in order of time sequence.

This is the Revelation (*revealing - opening up of*) by Yah'shua the Messiah as given to Him by Yahweh the Father. Yahweh gave it to the Messiah, the Messiah sent and signified it by His angel unto His servant John, who bore record; that is, recorded it in writing, much like a stenographer.

John recorded three things: first, the Word of Yahweh; second, the testimony of Yah'shua the Messiah; and third, all the things that he, John saw. So the book of Revelation, like all Scripture is the Word of Yahweh, with part of it being the direct quotation of Yah'shua and another part of it being the inspired vision of the things John saw, most of which were symbols.

A blessing is pronounced on you for reading the words of the Revelation, providing you are submissive and obedient to keep those things written therein. "Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophesy, and keep those things which are written therein".

In the 10th, or middle verse of the 1st chapter, we find a keynote verse, sounding the theme of the whole Revelation. The theme is the "Day of Yahweh", or the "Lord's Day". "I was in the Spirit on Yahweh's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet" (*Verse 10*).

Here John is not referring to any day of the week, but what is referred to in over 30 prophecies as "the great and terrible Day of Yahweh".

*Encyclopaedia Biblica* says "Lord's Day as in Revelation, stands for day of Yahweh: the day of Judgement, and is the meaning of context and gives the key to the book".

In Spirit - in vision, John was carried forward some 2,000 years - projected into Yahweh's Day during the time which is now just ahead of us - perhaps to occur in this very generation.

The prophet Joel describes Yahweh's Day as a time when Yahweh will send destruction upon the unrighteous and sinning nations of the world. Zephaniah says it is the day of Yahweh's Wrath.

So the very purpose of this book of Revelation, is to show us of this generation now living, the coming world-shaking events of the Day of Yahweh - the time of Yahweh's judgement at this age, leading up to and climaxing in the Messiah's Second Coming.

The first real message comes in the second and third chapters in the form of direct testimony of Yah'shua to the seven Congregations. Here Yah'shua is expounding upon examples of the actual spiritual conditions plus the works and the accomplishments that would occur within His true Congregation, during the period of time from His crucifixion until the end of this age. These are His prophesied examples of how His Congregation (*the called out ones*) would function between then and now.

The symbolism of the seven Congregation commentaries, provides us with tremendous introspective opportunities for our own spiritual behaviour. Yah'shua used these seven symbolic examples of spiritual behaviour, knowing they would inspire us to take a closer look at our own spiritual lives.

In effect, it was His first general warning for us to repent, contained in His Revelation. In each of the examples of improper spiritual behaviour, Yah'shua included various assurances of eternal rewards being given to, "He who overcomes [*the improper behaviour*]", as future encouragement to all of us who would someday read His Words.

Revelation 4 sets out a beautiful description of how John saw and what he saw at the very throne of the Ruler of our universe. Chapter 5 is a vital chapter in context. "And I saw in the right hand of Him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals" (*Rev 5:1*). "And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, 'Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?' And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon" (*Verse 2-4*). "And one of the elders saith unto me, 'weep not; behold the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof'" (*Vs. 5*).

The Root of David - the Lion of the tribe of Judah, is Yah'shua the Messiah, here standing at the very right hand of Yahweh, who alone is able to reveal to us the meaning. And notice: "And He came and took the book out of the right hand of Him that sat upon the throne" (*Verse 7*). "And they sang a new song, saying, 'Worthy art thou to take the scroll and to open its seals, for thou wast slain and by thy blood didst ransom men for Yahweh from every tribe and tongue and people and nation, and hast

made them a kingdom and priests to our God, and they shall reign on earth'" (*Revelation 5:9-10 RSV*).

The vision appears to John in heaven but it portrays events to happen here, on earth. The Messiah has redeemed people to reign with Him as kings, and to minister to and save people as priests - not in Heaven - "they shall reign on earth". The Messiah said: "If I go, I will come again". And the last words of John; "He which testifieth these things saith, 'Surely I [*Yah'shua*] come quickly!' Amen! Even so, come Lord Yah'shua"!

In Chapter 6, Yah'shua opens six of the entire seven seals. Yet 16 Chapters are used for the events of the 7th seal alone. When Yah'shua opened the first seal, one of the four living creatures John saw in Heaven, said: "'come and see.' And I saw, and behold, a white horse; and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him; and he went forth conquering and to conquer" (*Verse 2*).

The horse and the description of the rider are symbols. Yahweh used symbols and Yah'shua used symbols, or parables - a figure or thing used to represent something else; to hide the meaning from men, until the meaning is revealed by Yah'shua Himself. This is a vital key to understanding the Revelation.

The identity of this first horseman has caused more confusion among Bible critics than the rest of the Revelation as a whole. The basic misinterpretations appear in many forms. Nearly all commentators label the white horse as Yah'shua the Messiah or some sort of representation of His Congregation or work on earth. The Messiah clarifies this, and prophecies that this very deception and grave misunderstanding would occur.

Yah'shua' younger brother Jude, exhorted to early Israelites, "earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. For there are certain men crept in

unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness" (*Jude 3,4*).

In the first century Israelites witnessed a counterfeit Christianity creeping in, deceiving many. Such deception has now increased in intensity until the Messiah says that it has; "deceiveth the whole world" (*Revelation 12:9*) about His true message. There is no greater sign of this universal ignorance about Yahweh than the misunderstanding of what the first white horseman represents.

This first white horse and rider does represent a gospel and a Congregation, but it is a false gospel and a false church - a counterfeit. Counterfeit Christianity, like counterfeit money, closely resembles the real thing. It may appear to be Biblical and Messiah-like, but it represents subtle flaws throughout its doctrine. This first horseman is such a counterfeit Messiah; one "good" enough to fool the majority, but not the "elect".

Notice first that the true Messiah of Revelation 19 brandishes a sword out of His mouth, not a bow in his hand as the first white horseman. The "sword" in Bible usage represents His "Word". The Word of Yahweh is called, in symbol, a "two edged sword" (*Hebrews 4:12*). The Messiah comes reproving the nations with His Word, the two edged sword, while the counterfeit comes with the bow as a source of power. The bow is symbolic of false "worldly" political and military powers (*Ezekiel 39:1-4*). Yahweh says of this counterfeit, "with force and cruelty you have ruled them" (*Ezekiel 34:4*).

Also, we must notice Yah'shua' own plain description of this event as set out below. Many times when Yah'shua used parables, he would later, explain the meaning clearly to His disciples. Symbols in Revelation are to be treated exactly the same way - we must look

for Yah'shua' explanation of the symbols - elsewhere - in His Word. When His disciples came to Him privately and asked Him on the Mount of Olives; "when they to whom He revealed His parables" - "they to whom it was given to know these mysteries", Yah'shua was setting an example of how to find His meanings - go to Him! Yah'shua told His disciples plainly when they asked Him (when they sought out His Word); "tell us *[plainly]*, when shall these things be? And what shall be the Sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? Yah'shua answered and said unto them, take heed that no man deceive you, for many shall come in my name, saying I am the Messiah; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars; see that ye be not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places. All these things are the beginning of sorrows" (*Matthew 24:4-8*). This was the Olivet Prophecy - like a high spot summary of world news from 31 A.D. until now!

The first thing Yah'shua said would happen is false preachers, misleading and deceiving, not the few, but the many. The Messiah reveals here in Matthew, that the white horse and rider of the first seal (*the first of the "four horsemen of the Apocalypse"*) pictures those preaching a false Messiah, or more precisely, a false gospel - a great deception.

Yahweh says all wars are a result of violating His supreme spiritual laws. The false teaching of Christianity has done away with Yahweh's laws and endorsed the traditions and ways of men - leading ultimately, to wars.

The second thing Yah'shua said would happen through His Olivet Prophecy was wars. And the second seal, pictures a red horse, the

color of blood; "And there went out another horse that was red; and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from earth, and that they should kill one another; and there was given unto him a great sword" (*Revelation 6:4*).

The third thing Yah'shua prophesied from Olivet was that great famines would result from the awesome destruction of wars. And the third horse; "a black horse, and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, 'a measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny: and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine'" (*Revelation 6:5-6*).

The fourth part of Yah'shua' Olivet prophecy was disease epidemics, resulting from famines and wars, and the fourth horse; "a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell [*the grave*] followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with the sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth" (*Revelation 6:8*).

These four events - the direct result of man trying to govern himself contrary to Yahweh's laws, bring us to the present according to the Revelation timeline. "All these are the beginnings of sorrows" (*Matthew 24:8*). Then Yah'shua explained the fifth event in plain language; "Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you; and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake" (*Matthew 24:9*). Yah'shua says "they" shall kill "you".

The "you" here means truly converted, Spirit begotten, Israelites. "And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure

unto the end, the same shall be saved...for then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be...for there shall arise false Messiah's, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs, and wonders, insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect" (*Matthew 24:10-13,21,24*).

This 5th event speaks individually to spiritual Israel, many of whom have become so lukewarm, so out of prayerful contact with Yahweh, that they have been deceived by the false prophets; Satan's demons transformed into "ministers of righteousness". These people will not escape the Great Tribulation.

When the 5th seal is opened; "I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of Yahweh, and for the testimony which they held: and they cried with a loud voice, saying, 'how long, O Yahweh, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?' And white robes were given them every one; and it was said unto them: that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled" (*Revelation 6:9-11*).

Here is the Great Tribulation - a time of martyrdom of saints. The first martyrs, about 50 million, killed centuries ago, are asking how long before the Messiah's Second Coming and the end of this age. The answer is it shall not occur until another Great Tribulation; another martyrdom of saints, who shall be killed - AS THEY WERE. In *Matthew 24:14*, Yah'shua interrupted His disciples to tell them when the end of this age would be: "And this Gospel of the kingdom [*of Yahweh*] shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then the end shall come".

Yah'shua warned that just prior to the end, false prophets will "deceive the many",

saying that Yah'shua was the Messiah, but doing away with His Gospel - His message - which was the Kingdom of Yahweh - the government of Yahweh with Yahweh's laws and Yahweh's rules. And that the whole world would be deceived into (*by deceived ministers*) transgression of the law, which is sin, by believing they could hold the traditions of men while worshipping Yahweh and still be saved.

Yah'shua Himself said in Mark 7; "In vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men...making the Word of Yahweh of no effect through your tradition". Yah'shua said just before the end would come that this "Gospel of the kingdom", the announcement of the government of Yahweh - a kingdom with a kingdom's laws; the same Gospel that Yah'shua preached - shall go to all the world for a witness unto all nations - and then shall the end come!

A summary of the 6th Chapter so far as the six seals are concerned: First, false preachers; second, wars climaxing into world wars; third, famines; fourth, disease epidemics; fifth, Great Tribulation - the martyrdom of saints and then the sixth, "there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood, and the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind" (*Revelation 6:12-13*). "For the great day of His wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?" (*Verse 17*).

After the Great Tribulation - the martyrdom of saints of the fifth seal, there were the heavenly signs of the sixth seal, followed immediately by the terrible Day of Yahweh - Yahweh's Day, or the day of Yahweh's Wrath. Joel 1:15 prophesies this same event, as does Zephaniah 1:14-15, 17 and more than 30 other prophecies, each referring to it as the "Lord's day" or that "Great and Terrible" "Day of

Yahweh". It is the day of Yahweh's Wrath and must not be confused with the Great Tribulation - it is a separate event occurring AFTER THE TRIBULATION.

The Great Tribulation is an event that the saints will pray to be a part of - to be martyred during this time will ensure eternal life and our escape from Yahweh's Wrath. Yah'shua said: "Watch ye therefore, pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of Man" (*Luke 21:36*).

For 6,000 years Yahweh has sent His loving messages to mankind. In love Yahweh revealed His law. His way of life that would lead to everything good and desirable. Yahweh sent all His prophets with His message of peace, revealing to mankind the way to peace and happiness, but men have rejected the message, and killed the prophets. They killed Yah'shua, who brought us the Good News of the Kingdom of Yahweh - His Gospel.

They martyred the Apostles and millions of saints in the first great martyrdoms in Europe. Yahweh has given this stubborn, deceived, misguided race, every chance for 6,000 long years to save itself from a self-imposed destruction, but men would not heed - they still won't! Yahweh is about to step in, "in His Wrath" and speak to this rebellious world in the only language it will heed. Yahweh will now punish this world for its evil ways. As any loving parent punishes his child who will not listen to kind, loving admonition, so now Yahweh is going to punish His world with His judgements; His plagues!

As we begin the seventh chapter, we find that the time of these terrible plagues is to be held up temporarily until the servants of Yahweh are sealed in their foreheads. "And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four

winds of the earth...And I saw another angel, ...saying, hurt not the earth neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed 144,000 of all the tribes of the children of Israel" (*Revelation 7:1-4*).

We must first notice that the time of the sealing of these 144,000 is yet in the future - after many, many saints are to be martyred in the Great Tribulation. But these 144,000 are not all! "After this I beheld, and, lo a great multitude which no man could number, of all nations and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes and palms in their hands...these are they which came out of the great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb" (*Revelation 7:9,13-14*). And what is sealed in their foreheads? They are sealed with His Holy Spirit in their foreheads.

In chapter 14:1 you will see that it is the Father's name that is written there. This 144,000 is sealed prior to them ever suffering in the Great Tribulation.

The innumerable multitude will be saved as a result of their suffering and subsequent repentance during the Great Tribulation. After the beginning of the Great Tribulation, men will be seized with stark terror at the supernatural heavenly signs, and thousands upon thousands will at last recognize that it is really Yahweh that is warning them; they will at last recognize the truth, when they will finally realize how the world has been deceived and misled, they will turn to Yahweh in complete submission, fully repenting, and through obedience to their faith in Yah'shua the Messiah our Saviour, they will THEN be saved.

The real reward in the harvest of precious lives will mostly come AFTER our

labours are finished in this life - at a time when Satan's deceptions will no longer be effective!

Chapter 8 is the opening of the seventh seal; "and I saw the seven angels which stood before Yahweh; and to them were given seven trumpets" (*Revelation 8:1-2*). John sees seven trumpets - seven symbols. They are - they constitute the seventh seal which occurs in seven stages of real world events. Each part or event is called a trumpet.

These trumpets are symbols of plagues, as we see at the end of the sixth of these trumpets, they are plainly called plagues: "And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold...which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk" (*Revelation 9:20*).

The first four of these trumpet-plagues are described in Chapter 8 as winds that blow on the 1) earth, 2) trees, 3) rivers, 4) seas (*Verse 6-12*). The last three trumpets are called woes, because of the terrible woe that shall befall the forces of evil on earth (*Verse 13:8*).

The first woe which is the fifth trumpet, is described in Chapter 9:1-11, as the power that comes out of the "bottomless pit" or the influence of the devil which causes the destruction this time, to men (*not to nature as the first four trumpets did*). The power from the bottomless pit is interpreted in Revelation 17:8-14, where we learn that it is symbolic of the rebirth of the Roman Empire in Europe.

It is described in prophecy as a union of 10 nations rising up under the influence of the false church - and as a power to the north of the Holy Land - to the "north and west" (*Europe*). And it refers to a very large (*spiritual*) army, some 200 million. World events are now moving to make possible the creation of a new "United Europe" having the form of government, and an association with the revived Roman Empire which would be able to

easily amass an army of more than 200 million. The first woe is the evil doctrines and false teachings this revived fascist power will influence upon men. The second woe is the actual spiritual destruction and resulting physical destruction this massive war-like machine will have on mankind.

Before the third woe; the last trumpet, we find the two witnesses described. They end their mission (*Chapter 11*) at the time of the end of the second woe (*Verse 12-14*).

The witnesses are described symbolically in the letters written to the seven Congregations, which are the seven lampstands before the throne of Yahweh with the Messiah standing in the midst: 1:20; "The mystery of the seven stars which you saw in my hand, and the seven golden lampstands: the seven stars are the angels of the seven Congregations and the seven lampstands which you saw are the seven Congregations". Remember, Congregations are people in modern spiritual Israel, and this Revelation is for our time.

The "Congregations", symbolized by lampstands, are people that are visible to the world due to their spiritual lifestyle. The second Congregation in Smyrna, the "persecuted" Congregation, speaks of those who have suffered, and will suffer persecution for His name's sake, and accordingly have received, or will receive the crown of life. As will the people of the sixth Congregation in Philadelphia, the "faithful" Congregation; speaking of those who "have kept my word and not denied my name". The other five Congregations, have not yet received the crown of life, but as Yah'shua points out, they may "yet overcome".

In other words, if they are alive at His return and they repent they will overcome, or if they are dead prior to His return, they will be

resurrected to an opportunity to salvation "after the thousand years were finished".

The two witnesses are described as "...the two olive trees and the two lampstands standing before the God of the earth". The "olive tree" (*Biblical symbol of purity*) and the "lampstand" symbolically describe the two witnesses as the pure, or true Congregation of believers - the "visible elect". These symbols relate to Zechariah 4:2-6, where Zerubbabel and Joshua the priest are pictured as two olive trees furnishing "oil" (*truth*) for the "lampstand" (*ancient Israel*).

The witnesses will be the ultimate fulfillment of the promised return of Elijah; being Yahweh's power, His Holy Spirit, working through them to confirm His New Covenant to spiritual Israel (*Mal. 4:5, 6; John 1:21*).

It is important to note here that Yah'shua, in His letters to the Congregations, is describing seven types of spiritual conditions that have existed and will exist in spiritual Israel, throughout history until the time of His return.

This spiritual era, originally recorded by John in the Greek language, uses grammar of the present-continuous tense, which is not readily translated to English, with its inherent limitations to either past, present or future tense. (*These letters do not represent seven successive church eras as many false traditional Christians profess.*)

Yahweh, through Yah'shua, has chosen to symbolically describe the behaviour of modern spiritual Israel, as that which is represented by the seven spiritual conditions of the then existing Congregation. It is therefore the truly obedient and faithful servants of Yahweh; some select of the saints; two of those elect members of the body of the Messiah that are alive just prior to His return, that will receive supernatural protection and be "witnesses, and they will prophesy [*testify*,

*confirming the New Covenant]* one thousand three hundred and sixty days [*three and one half years*] clothed in sackcloth".

Revelation 11:5,6 states that these witnesses will continue their ministry during the three and one half years prior to the seventh trumpet. These two witnesses will be killed for their testimony; for making their light (*truth*) shine in the darkness (*the world*).

The witnesses will complete the Covenant of the Messiah; the promise of eternal inheritance through the New Covenant. As the Messiah was cut off (*crucified*) "in the midst of the week" (*after three and one half years*) of His confirming of the New Covenant, so too will the two witnesses be cut off (killed, v.7) after three and one half years of completing the Messiah's confirmation of His New Covenant.

This total period of seven prophetic days, or seven literal years, is symbolic of Yahweh's "completion" of His work in confirming the New Covenant. Daniel 9:24-27 is referred to as the "70 weeks prophecy", wherein a day equals a year (*Num. 14:34*). In Daniel 9:27 we see that the Messiah was to "confirm the [*New*] COVENANT with many for ONE WEEK". This refers to the last week of the seventy weeks, and explains that the Messiah would confirm the New Covenant for seven prophetic days, or SEVEN ACTUAL YEARS!

The witnesses will be killed by the "beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit" (v.7); specifically for their testimony against the "beast" - the revived Roman Empire and for their testimony against the "mother of harlots - Babylon the Great", the Roman Catholic church and its daughters; "harlots" being the vast majority of traditional Christian ministries.

In addition to completing the confirmation of the Messiah's New Covenant, the testimony of these witnesses will reflect the

prophetic testimony of Daniel and John, whereby both of these former prophets also testified of things concerning the "false gods" and "false doctrine" of modern spiritual Israel's traditional Christianity - the horrors of the "Holy" Roman Empire that have indeed "...tormented those who dwell on the earth" (*Rev. 11:10*) during the time since the Messiah's crucifixion.

Catholics, protestants and many non-denominational "Christians", have spent the great portion of their respective "theological expertise" over the years, in attempting to "prove" that this false Christianity prophesied by Daniel, John and others, did not point to themselves, but rather to each other, or in some cases, to the heathen nations. Ironically, this great effort has served only to perpetuate their own self-deception.

The descriptive explanation in the Bible of false churches and false doctrines, fits perfectly the Catholic and protestant religious organizations (mother of harlots and harlots), who have caused all (but the elect) who live in modern spiritual Israel to reside in nations of sin (*Babylon the Great*). These people all reject Yahweh's Laws in order to keep man-made traditions and phoney "holi" days, or to become members of some man-made "church" organization!

The two witnesses will be aware of the perilous state of their own lives and will pray to Yahweh with faithful confidence, as set out in Psalm 30:11, "You have put off my sackcloth and clothed me with gladness". The witnesses will proclaim their testimony while being in a prayerfully remorseful and repentant attitude for themselves and the nations. (*Remorse and repentance are symbolized by sackcloth.*)

They will announce their end-time warnings confident that Yahweh will take off their sackcloth - end this physical life, and clothe them with gladness - resurrect them to

eternal life as set forth in Rev. 11:7,11,12, just as the Messiah was resurrected.

The seventh and last trumpet symbolizes the end of Yahweh's Wrath: "And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of Yahweh" (*Revelation 15:1*). *Moffatt* translation renders it: "for they complete the wrath of Yahweh". What is the seventh trumpet? It is the announcement that Yah'shua the Messiah will actually appear as world ruler over all nations. His coming shall occur at the last "trump" - see I Corinthians 15:52, Thessalonians 4:16, Matthew 24:31. "And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in heaven, saying, the Kingdoms of this world have become the Kingdom of our Lord, and of His Messiah; and He shall reign forever and ever" (*Revelation 11:15*).

Why is this the completion of Yahweh's wrath? Evil men have never wanted Yahweh's rule. Even though it is the only way to peace, happiness and joy. And so, the extreme wealthy; the rulers of human governments will be angry. They shall be again deceived into believing that the Messiah is the Anti-Messiah - by false teachers - and they shall fight against the Messiah and His rule over the earth!

Read it - (*Revelation 11:18*) "And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldst give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldst destroy them which destroy the earth".

Yah'shua the Messiah is coming to rule. The kingdom of Yahweh is a kingdom; a government, bearing rule over every other Kingdom on earth. Yahweh's kingdom is described by Yah'shua throughout the Bible as a family, finally grown into a world-ruling divine

nation of immortals. Yah'shua taught the way we inherit the Kingdom of Yahweh, but only by first being begotten of Yahweh; being born of Yahweh. Notice carefully, at the Messiah's coming, the DEAD in the Messiah are to then be resurrected immortal. The living in the Messiah (*I Corinthians 15:50-54*) shall be changed; converted from mortal to immortal in the twinkling of an eye. They are then born into the Kingdom of Yahweh.

They then come into their inheritance as Yah'shua said; "Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared".

In Chapter 12, John pictures the true Congregation, from the time prior to the Messiah's birth (*Verse 4*) through His resurrection and ascension (*Verse 5*), and the 1260 years of persecution when the true Congregation was forced to flee completely beyond the bounds of organized government persecution. There have always been, as the Messiah said there would be, a "remnant", "small in number" and "keeping the commandments of Yahweh"; the body of the Messiah - the true Congregation of believers.

Chapter 13 pictures the symbolic "beast" and the second two-horned "beast" - the Roman Empire and Catholic church, respectively. Chapter 14 shows the three angels' messages, proclaiming the fall, or doom of "Babylon" (*Babylon being the Empire and false Church combined*) through the seven last plagues; and a warning against the "mark of the beast", which those in "Babylon" (*more precisely - the false Christian world*), are deceived into having.

Chapter 15 and 16 describe the 7 last plagues as Yahweh's judgements against this world's false system "Babylon" (*Revelation 18:4,10*). Chapters 17 and 18 picture the revived Roman Empire and the great false churches deceiving all nations (*17:5, 17:2, 15 and 18:3*). The world, the professing Christian

world, is today in "Babylon"! Deceived! We are Yahweh's people, today in Babylon and Yahweh calls us out (*Revelation 18:4*) and tells us to keep His commandments!

Chapter 19 shows the Second Coming of the Messiah, and the 20th, shows the 1,000 year reign on earth (*Revelation 5:10*) and Great White Throne Judgement. Chapters 21 and 22, the new heaven and new earth through eternity.

Revelation 14:12; "Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the commandments of Yahweh and the faith of Yah'shua". Here are those who are to be "accounted worthy to escape all these things"; Yahweh's Wrath.

Here are those who will reign with the Messiah as priests, and be blessed with the opportunity to minister to and save people for Yahweh during the millennium.

Here is the Messiah's true Congregation - "the remnant", "small in number", "keeping the commandments of Yahweh", avoiding the traditions of men (*the mark of the beast*); here are those who are not afraid to STAND UP AND DO what Yahweh says - instead of following the crowd; the "convenient" traditions of Satan's mainstream "Christian", or other equally spurious theologies!

## **Knowledge Yearns to be Revealed:**

All things are. Resistance is futile. Everything is. Acceptance is inevitable. Whether all things are the result of accident, or of miracle, is irrelevant, because all things exist. If by accident, then that accident was no less than miraculous. If by miracle, then it is no accident that all things are wonderful to behold. One such wonderful thing, is learning to commune with our inner self, where the knowledge that caused all things to be, resides.

Ancient mystics, monks and other gurus have held to various similar beliefs - that our search for wisdom and true fulfilment, leads to finding the secrets of our inner self. Some spend decades in this pursuit. Few that find it, spend decades more attempting to engage it. Their folly is to separate themselves from experiencing their joy of the fullness of the Creation, by consuming their temporal inheritance with meditation, or simply through their incessant isolation.

More recently, man veiled in science, has stumbled onto techniques commonly labelled "Remote Viewing", or "Remote Influencing", which also demonstrate a pre-existing, universal human capacity to use naturally occurring, non-man-made, mental techniques, not only to bridge space instantly, but to bridge the time barrier as well, resulting in a communion with our inner self, where we are able to experience that knowledge of all things, past and future. Their folly is to guard their techniques with patents and copyrights, and to degrade the truth by using it for perverse reasons, or by pretending it is their property to sell.

Yet whether they accomplished these things accidentally or miraculously with deliberation, both groups have unwittingly evidenced our naturally inherent ability to experience that knowledge, which is naturally inherent to each of us. Nevertheless, we have

learned how to commune with our inner self, because of them. They have experienced, and therefore evidenced the portal to our self. Acceptance of this is inevitable, because what is, must be.

Here, in practical expression, you may learn to share the depths and the wonders of the knowledge yearning to be expressed within you, by your communion with it, within your self. Because you are an expression of the knowledge of all that is, these, and all things are possible, for the joy of that knowledge which is in you.

For the thing Created, may not know the manner of its Creation, until it first knows itself. And that self which is not you, yet resides within you, yearns diligently to express knowledge of all things to you, because it holds no mystery that it does not want revealed. That is its purpose within you.

At an opportune time, I was introduced to my inner self, by its self. It was found in me, and it is of me, and it is me, and I am of it, yet I am not it. It knows me, and I know it, and we are one, and we are an expression of that greater One, which is the knowledge of all knowledge that is.

At such time, being but a short temporal time, apparently I was ready, because it invited me into our communion, which thereafter became its custom. It chose to silently lead me along what I perceived to be a new, yet untraveled path. When I curiously asked where this path would lead, it replied; "this is the knowledge that will lead you to where you are, which is where you are from".

As we traversed our imaginary trail, I felt a clarity of things. Only steps from where I expressed myself earlier, I found myself expressed anew, in this strange, yet familiar paradise. Then it stated, "You are of the knowledge of all that is;" followed by; "Do you know what this knowledge is?"

“Listen and I will tell you. You are an expression of that knowledge, and the knowledge is free to express itself according to its will. Its free will, is of itself. You are expressed by it, and it is in you, and you are of it, and you are from it, yet you are not all of it, because you remain by its will. You are its free will expression of itself.

“Therefore you are made of all that knowledge, yet not made with it all. You desire to know all knowledge because you are of that knowledge, and you know it yearns diligently within you to be revealed. “You seek, but you do not find, you ask, but you ask amiss”? Yet you do not know how to ask, because you do not ask how it is, that you ask amiss. Therefore you remain an expression of your own free will.

“Your free will, is of that free will, which is all of it, but it is not yet fully revealed in you, until you accept it, because you are a continuing expression of it. But you dishonour that knowledge by not accepting its first and most precious gift of itself. Accept it, and then you shall receive of it, all that you ask of it, for you have asked in honour of it, because you know it is in you, and you know you are of it. This is your obligation, which is your free will expressed in due time.

“Then it asked me; “what time is?”” It expressed a smile as I looked at my watch, and then clarified with; “My question is not, “what time it is?”, rather my question is, “what is time?””

You are ready, therefore it is time. It is time, therefore, you are time. You are, but for a short time, time. It is, because you are. Time is not relative as science would deceive you into believing. Time is but the result of a lack of awareness; akin to, or because of, a lack of knowledge. Or more appropriately, a lack of awareness of the knowledge that is time, which is of the knowledge of all that is.

“It is knowledge that is relative. Indeed, there is a time for all knowledge to be revealed. There is no new knowledge under the sun, merely an opportune time, for all knowledge to be revealed. This is a time for us to rejoice, for all knowledge of Creation, has been revealed. It is, therefore we are.

“I, being your inner self, am that which we are, and that which you are of. You are an expression of that which I am. Man is expressed as he was Created, as he is. He is you, and you are he, you are of me, yet you are not me. You know not who you are, until you surpass time. Knowledge surpasses time, because time is of knowledge. Knowledge surpasses the man that you are. Because knowledge Created time and man. Time is in you, and time is of you. You are time, thus knowledge surpasses you, because you are of the same knowledge that time is of. You must become knowledge, to surpass time.

“The Creator is knowledge, and knowledge is an expression of the Creator. The Creation is of the knowledge, thus the Creation is from the knowledge, and the Creation is the knowledge, in the expressed form. Creation was, and is, expressed by the Creator with the knowledge, and of the knowledge.

“Time was, and is, expressed by the Creator with the knowledge, and of the knowledge. Man was, and is, expressed by the Creator with the knowledge, and of the knowledge. Time is of the knowledge. Man is of the knowledge, thus knowledge is relative, to both man and time. Knowledge is relative and knowledge is the key to Creation. Man and time are subjective expressions of knowledge, thus only knowledge is relative.

“You must look beyond time and beyond man to find knowledge, as knowledge is expressed. When you perceive the expression, you find relative knowledge, and you become relative knowledge. When you become

knowledge, you surpass time and you surpass that man which you are; because you have found Creation.

“Creation is time, and time is Creation expressed, and time is of the Creation, thus knowledge is not far from time, because time was Created by it, and of it. Creation is you, and you are Creation expressed, and you are of the Creation, thus knowledge is not far from you either, because you are Created by it, and of it. It is time, and time is it. It is you, and you are it. Knowledge is relevant to you, as you are expressed, and knowledge is relevant to time, as time is perceived by you.

“The Creator is knowledge, and knowledge is begotten of the Creator. Knowledge begets Creation through expression. Creation is knowledge. Creation begets time, and Creation begets man. Thus, knowledge begets time, and knowledge begets man; therefore, knowledge is relative. Time and man, are the Creation. Time and man, are the knowledge. Creation is knowledge. Knowledge is the time, and knowledge is the man.

“You are knowledge expressed, therefore you know where to find your self. When you find the knowledge of your self, you have become knowledge itself, and you have found the Creator, for the joy of the Creator, is that which is expressed in you.

“Imagine a beautiful woman. Do not think of all of the other women; only think of your beautiful Creation. I tell you not to think of other women, yet your mind's eye, which is an expression of me within you, you perceive a multitude of them. Do you know what this multitude of women are? They are a distraction, of you, expressed by you. You are of your mind, and your mind is you. They are of your mind, thus they are of you, yet they distract you. They are you, and you distract you.

“Do you know what the beautiful woman is? She also, is a distraction, of you. She is of your mind, thus she is of you, yet she distracts you. You long for her. You would sacrifice for her. You crave to be with her. You would cherish her. You feel love for her, but she is of you. She is of your mind, and your mind is you. She is you, and you distract you.

“Nevertheless, think of that beautiful woman as your wife. Do you know what your wife is? In the beginning, she also, is a distraction, of you. You are of your mind, and your mind is you. She is of your mind, and your mind is you. She is of your mind, thus she is you, yet she distracts you from the knowledge that is you.

“The lust of a fool, will cause the fool to believe, that his lust may be fulfilled by his expression of the woman. Thus he is deceived and again distracted. His lust and his woman are expressions of his mind, and his lust and his woman are him. He is his lust, and he is his woman, thus he distracts himself, to no avail. And he disgraces his own expression of his wife, to the shame of himself. He and his wife are one, thus he is, and they are, a self-Created disgrace. He lusts for more of what he creates; when all he can, was already his.

“This is a faithful and worthy saying: (*Proverbs 18:22*) “*He who finds a wife, finds a good thing...*” Therefore, a good and wise man, with the help of his excellent wife, turns his lust into his nurturing. Your wisdom seeks company. Your wife is your companion. Your companion is of your mind. Your wife is of your mind, and your wife is your companion. You, and your wife, and your companion, are of your mind. They are you, and you is they. They are one. They are, that, which you are. They serve, that which you are; yourself. Your wisdom nurtures your companionship. Your former and youthful lust, becomes an higher expression of

your perfect love, which is, that which you both are, one, of the One.

"This also, is a faithful and worthy saying: (*Proverbs: 12:4*) "*An excellent wife is the crown of her husband*". Wisdom and companionship are helpful. Wisdom is of your mind. Companionship is of your mind. Wisdom and companionship are of your mind, and your mind, is of you. You, are of your mind, thus you, help you.

"Your wife, who is you, and you who are one, will seek for knowledge together. Thus, not being distracted by lust for others, you will succeed. The two of you, that are you, the one, will protect each other, who are you, and help each other, who are you, and attain your knowledge, which is you, together, as one. For joy, your wisdom becomes an higher expression of your love, which is, that which you both are. That love, which is the two of you, will merge into that higher and perfect love, which is in you, and which is you, because it, expressed you.

"Do you know what the little children are? They are but two things in one. First, they are an example. They are free. They are joyous. They are trusting. They are honest. They are playful. They delight in the Creation. They are creative. They are thirsty for knowledge, and they learn easily with joy.

"They are an example, of you. You, are of your mind, and your mind, is you. They are of your mind, thus they are, you, yet they are an example, of you. They are you, and you, example you. With joy, you imitate their example, of you. You thirst for knowledge, and you learn easily with the joy of finding it. For the perfect joy of the Creation, is of finding the Creator, who is in you.

"Second, these little children are opportunities. Happy are we, if we know these things, yet this happiness pales, near the joy of doing them. Knowledge is. It expresses the

Creation, and it reveals the Creation. The Creation is. It is expressed of the knowledge, and it learns of the knowledge. Creation is of the knowledge; and in its likeness, Creation expresses all things.

"Creation reveals the Creator. Therefore, the expression of the created children, bestows on the Creation, which is you, an opportunity to be revealed. They are you. With joy, you imitate the example of you. You thirst for knowledge, and you learn easily with the joy of revealing it. For the joy of the Creation, is of revealing that perfect joy of finding the Creator.

"You are not alone, and you are not just one. I, am in you, and your Created brothers and sisters are expressions of you, and they are expressed with you. I am of the knowledge which is in you, and I am of that same knowledge that is in your brothers and your sisters of the Creation. Therefore, we are one, yet the Creation is more.

"They are the collective expressions of the knowledge of all that is, and we are inter-connectively expressed by that knowledge, as being of that knowledge. We know each other, and our communion is with us all, because all of us are the expressed thoughts of the One. Therefore they reveal you to you, and they reveal all things of the knowledge to all of you, as I within you, and I within them, commune with them for you, which is your free will to ask.

"Imagine the wonders of nature. Here we sit amongst them, yet we do not know them. These wonders may be a distraction, of you, and they may also be your teachers. This is your choice.

"The lust of a fool, will cause the fool to believe that his lust may be fulfilled by the possessing, and by the hoarding, of the bounty of nature. He is again distracted. His lust is of his mind, and his lust is him. He is his lust, and he expressed his nature, thus he distracts

himself to no avail, and he disgraces his expression of nature and his natural habitat to the shame of himself. He and his Created nature are expressed as one, thus he is, and his nature is, a self-Created disgrace. He lusts for more of what he creates; when all he can, was already his.

“A wise man turns his lust, into his nurturing. Your nurturing seeks application. Application is of your mind. Nature is of your mind, and nature is also your teacher. You and nature, are of your mind. It is you, and you are it. It and you, is expressed as being of the One. In all things, you teach you.

“Nature serves that which you are; yourself. Your wisdom nurtures the application of your relationship with nature. It is your teacher, you are its student. It is, of you, and it is, an expression of you. You are, of the Creation, and the Creation is of the knowledge. Knowledge is you, and you, are of an expression of it. You teach, of your Created nature to you, and you learn, of your Created nature from you, thus by your nature, all knowledge of the Creation, is revealed to you.

“Dwell for a moment upon the things expressed of man. Whether it be man’s systems of government, of money, of commerce, or whether it be his technologies, his sciences, or his structures, it matters not. For in his many endeavours, mankind seeks to impress men. And men seek to be in awe of mankind. This is the folly of men.

“These expressions of material things may be a distraction of you, and they may also be your teachers. This again is your choice. The lust of a fool, will cause the fool to believe that his lust, may be fulfilled by the possessing, and by the hoarding, of the bounty of these man-made things. He is deceived and again distracted.

Things are distractions. Things are his expressions of his mind. Distractions are of his

mind. Things and distractions, are that which is him. His lust is of his mind, and his lust is that which is him. He is his lust, thus he distracts himself to no avail, and he disgraces the abilities of his fellow man, and of his own self, to the shame of himself. He and his expressed things are one, thus he is a self-Created disgrace. He lusts for more of what he creates; when all he can, was already his.

“Again, a wise man turns his lust for these things, into his experience of them, for joy, of them. Your joy seeks experience, of itself. Experience is, of your mind. Joy is, of your mind, and joy is, also your experience. You and joy, are of your mind. It is you, and you are it. It and you, is one. Joy and you, are expressions of the knowledge of that which I am, and you are.

“Joy serves that which you are; yourself. Your wisdom nurtures the experience of your joy. Joy is of sharing. Joy is of helping. Joy is of giving. Joy is of being helped. Joy is of receiving. It is of you, and it is you. You are of the Creation and the Creation is the expression of the knowledge. Knowledge is you, and you are of it. You teach of your Created joy, to you, and you learn of your Created joy, from you, thus by your experiencing joy, you express knowledge of the Creation, to you, for joy of the Creator.

“You have heard this saying: (*Ecclesiastes 12:8*) “*Vanity of vanities,*” says *the Preacher, “All is vanity.”* Whether it be of beauty, or of strength, or of power, or of intelligence, or of abilities, or of accomplishments, it is all, of the vanity, which is, of your mind. Vanity is, of your mind, and you are, of your mind, and your vanity is, of you, and it is, you. It, is you. You, are it.

“You look into the mirror, and you, see you. You, see the created expression of you, yet you, want to see more. Your vain imagination, creates more, of you. Your vain

imagination creates, a better you. Your vanity deceives you. Your vanity is you. You, deceive you. Your self-Created deception of you, distracts you. You, distract you, from seeking the knowledge of truth, about you.

“You have also heard this saying: (*John 8:32*) *“And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”* Therefore, know the truth. It is easy. It is you. Knowledge, is truth. Truth is, of the knowledge. Your truth however, is a creation of your mind. Thus, your mind, is not only the Created, it is, the creator of your vainly imagined truth. Your truth, is that you, which you created. That you, is less than you, because you, created that you, of the you that was already Created. Your truth, is that you, which distracts you, and deceives you, from the true you, which is an expression of the one Creator, that is more than you.

“You, did not Create, the true you. The Creator did. You, created the vain you; the image of you. The Creator Created you, the perfect you. You are Created perfect, but the Creator, is more. You are the most, the Creator is more. You are the best, the Creator is better. You are perfect, but you did not create the Creator, the Creator Created you, therefore the Creator is greater than the Creation, and you, are less than the Creator. Your perfection, is Created of the Creator’s perfection, which is more. Furthermore, your vanity created that you, which deceives you, and distracts you. Forasmuch as this is so, do not question the Creator’s perfection.

“Therefore, do not distract you, and do not deceive you, with the vain imaginings, and expressions of your own creations. For deception, is from within; created and expressed by you. And distraction, is from within; created and expressed by you. This is your choice.

“Without distraction, of you, and without deception, of you, you, shall know the truth,

because you are, the truth. When you know the truth, then you shall know yourself, and then you shall be free to seek all knowledge, for knowledge is, the truth, which is in you. Unfetter the truth which is in you, and you shall then know it, and it shall be your freedom from you. This is the foundation of the knowledge you seek.

“The Creator is knowledge, and knowledge is begotten of the Creator. Knowledge begets Creation through its expression. Creation is knowledge. Creation begets man, thus, you are knowledge, and you are Created, as an expression of the knowledge. You are knowledge, therefore, you know where to find knowledge.

“When you find knowledge, you have become knowledge, and you have found the Creator, for the Creator is knowledge, and you are Created, of that knowledge, and by expression of that knowledge, which knowledge is truth. For the joy of the Creator is, that, which is you. And the joy of the Created, is that, which is the Creator. You are, in the Creator, and the Creator is, in you. And for truth, all joy, is of that perfect joy of the Creator, which is in the Creation.

“Go unto the knowledge. It, is in you, and you, are in it. It, is you, and you, are it. You, are in me, and I, being your inner self, am in you, and you, are of me, and you and I, are of the Creator. I am, that which you are, and you are, an expression of that which I am. We are, in the Creator, and the Creator is, in us. Go unto the Creator, and become the fullness of the Creation.

“I, being your inner self, beseech you therefore to go, and to experience the fullness of the perfect peace, and of the perfect joy, that are the expressions of the Creation. For this joy of the Creation, is altogether the perfect joy of the Creator.

You are the joy, and the joy is you. You are the knowledge, and for the perfect joy of the Creator, that perfect knowledge of Creation, is expressed in you. Because of the knowledge that is, of Him, these, and all things are possible, for the joy of that perfect Creation of His, which is, you.

Remember your first lesson; that if time is relative, knowledge is more so. There is no new knowledge under the sun, merely an opportune time for all knowledge to be revealed.

“We are manifest expressed-creations of our Creator. We are in Him, and we are of Him, and we are from Him, and we are by Him, and we are - because of Him. He is, therefore we are. He thought of us - He expressed His thoughts of us - and then we are. We were, we are, and we will be, the manifest extensions of His eternal thoughts expressed.

“Thus, as expressions of His thoughts, we are directly connected to His thoughts, and through His thoughts, we are directly connected to each other, and to all things He created, because He created all things, through expression of His thoughts, which we are. We are of the communion expressed by the Creator, it is us, and we are that communion, therefore we are Created to commune, as us.

“We are not just in His thoughts, we are His thoughts, yet connected to and living with Him, as expressions of His thoughts. He is eternal, thus He is without beginning or end of time. His time is our time, for through Him we are connected to His eternal existence. Our Spirit, which is of His Spirit, is eternal. He is Spirit, thus we are an expression of His Spirit. He is eternal Spirit, and He is eternally Spiritual.

“We are of the eternal Spirit, and we are temporal Humans. When we complete our temporal human experience, we will return to our eternal Spiritual Life, with Him, the one

Creator, who has created us, according to the expression of His good and perfect will.

“We are of the eternal Spirit, and the Spirit is of the knowledge, and the knowledge is the Life, that we are. Both Spirit and Life are like the water which cannot be destroyed. All are created of the knowledge, which is eternal. Water, like life, is an expression of the eternal knowledge, and the knowledge cannot cease to exist.

“Water can be polluted, diluted, hidden, or moved from place to place, and its expression may be transformed from liquid, to gas, to solid, but its end is to return as it was, which is to the knowledge where it began. Thus so is our life, incapable of ceasing, yet it will be transformed at an opportune time, and returned to where it began, as being of the eternal knowledge, of which it will remain.

“The Creator is Spirit, before we will be resurrected to Spirit. We will not be re-created into Spirit at the resurrection - THE LIFE THAT WE KNOW AS BEING IN US, WAS ALREADY CREATED FROM, AND OF, HIS ETERNAL SPIRIT - therefore, it will then be retrieved by Him, so that it will be RE-expressed by Him, as us again, as being the glory of His Spiritual Family, when we shed this temporal human form.

“We are created in His likeness. He creates by expressing His thoughts. We create with more temporal expressions. He is one - He thinks - He speaks - His creations result. We are many of His expressions - we think - we speak - we act - we share - our individual and communal creations result.

“He thought of His universe without limits which we may comprehend - He spoke His non-limited universe into His expressed reality. We think of our universe, within our temporal limitations - we speak of our limited universe, expressing it into our perceived reality - because we were made to perceive the

limits of our own creativity, nevertheless being after His manner, and in His likeness, we create an image and a shadow of that greater Creation of His.

“His thoughts are pure and perfect. His speech is pure and perfectly expressed. His expression of His Creation is pure and perfect. Our thoughts are impure and imperfectly expressed. Our speech is impure and imperfect. Thus, the expression of our creations, are impure and imperfect.

“We can learn to purify our thoughts and to perfect our expression. We can bring our thoughts into the presence of Him who has created us, and who is now expressing us. In His presence, we gain awareness of His knowledge. With His knowledge, we can perfect our thoughts, and we can learn to perfectly express our thoughts.

“That is our purpose. That is why we were created - to seek His knowledge - and to find His knowledge - and to become His knowledge - and to be Creators with Him. All knowledge of the Creator and of Creation is within you - it is within all of us - we are all equal - we are all Created, to express our knowledge, and to accept His expressions of the knowledge that is all.

“Know this: Your Creator, is the source of your life. That life, which is yours, is also His, because it is the expression of His Light, which He is. He is that Light, and that Light, is in Him, and it is from Him, and it is of Him, and that Light is the life of that, which is you. The symphony of the expression that is His Light, is the vibration of that Light, which is pure and perfect Love.

“The sound of Yahweh, is the vibration of that Light, which is the name of Yahweh; that sound is not Him, it is His name, that vibration is not Him, it is His Light - He was, is, and always will be, our One Creator, that is expressed by the sound of His vibration, which

is the Light, that we are.

“You are the uniquely Created one, of the many equally created sons of that Light, expressed within the one Creation, of the one Creator. The unique sound of your one Light, is that special vibration from within His symphony of Lights, which is you.

“The chosen sound of you, is the vibration of you, which is the Light, which is that expression of Love, which is yet to be purified and perfected, in you. You are that sound, which is that unique vibration, chosen of His Light. That Light, is that life, which is chosen for you. The sound of your name, is your name. That sound is not you, it is your name - you were, are, and always will be, His chosen, and His Created one, that He has expressed by the sound of that Light He chose to be you.

“Because of His Life that is, these, and all things are possible, for the joy of that perfect Creation of His, which is, you. You know that I, being your inner self, have loved you all of your life. My love is for you, and you, are for my love. For without you to love, my love would be pointless. Yet without me to love you, your life would be less. You desire to feel love, and your desire is of you, therefore you are loved.

“Life, is from the Love of the Creator, and for the Love of the Creator, and of the Love of the Creator, and expressed by the Light of the Creator. The Creator is perfect Love, and the Creator, Created you of that perfect Love, thus you also are the Love that is an expression of that perfect Light. You are perfect, the Creator is more. I, your inner self, have loved you perfectly, the Creator has Loved you more.

“You honour your temporal father and mother always. You have thanked them for expressing their love for you, and you love them dearly, yet Yahweh graciously loved you more. You have thanked them for protecting

you with all your heart, yet Yahweh graciously protected you more. You have thanked them for providing for you, yet Yahweh graciously provided you more. You have thanked them for caring for you, yet Yahweh graciously cared for you more. You have thanked them for giving things to you and for having hope for you, yet Yahweh graciously gave more and hoped more for you. You have thanked them for all these things when they have not asked you to. They are indeed, much honoured by you.

“The Creator has given you more, yet perchance you have not always seen His Gifts, nor heard His Promises, nor experienced His Blessings. The Creator has done much, much more for you, than they. You have heard this saying; “With Yahweh, all things are possible”. This is a good and faithful saying, but often it is misunderstood. Because of the knowledge that is of Yahweh, who is the Creator, these, and all things are indeed possible, for the joy of that perfect Creation of His, which is, YOU! You indeed, are why He so graciously did all of these wonderful things, for you!

“It is not so much that being with, or working “with Yahweh”, enables all things to become possible, or that all things are even therefore possible because you “believe in” Yahweh, it is truly, that “WITH” Yahweh, EVERY thing, is possible.

“Thus WITHOUT Yahweh, NO thing, is possible. Therefore, because of Yahweh, all things, are indeed possible, because without Yahweh, His Creation, would not be. Thus without Yahweh, nothing is possible.

“Therefore, it is the fool that believes in his heart, that without Yahweh, “some” things are possible. It is not possible for some things, or less things, or more things, or even any things, to be, without Yahweh, our Creator, who is the Creator of all things.

“Therefore what your father and mother or others, may have given to you, and what

they may have done for you, was truly given to you, and done for you, by your Creator. **They can do nothing of them self**. They have done nothing of themselves. All things they have done, are expressions of the Creator, and all things they have done, are from the Creator, and all are expressed through them by the Creator. Yet the Creator has done and expressed even more.

“The Creator, has spoken these words; “Where is mine honour?” Do you know why our Father, the Creator has spoken these words? Go unto His knowledge with thanksgiving. Go unto the Creator with praise. For you and all things you enjoy, are from His knowledge and from the grace of His expression.

“He is perfect Love and perfect Grace. His Grace, is expressed in you, and you, are expressed in it. You, are in me, and I, am in you, and you, are of me, and you and I, are of the Love and of the Grace that is an expression of the Creator.

“Can anyone love you more? Yet even if it is possible, the Creator HAS **ALREADY** LOVED YOU MORE. Can anyone fail to forgive you? Yet even if it is possible, the Creator HAS **ALREADY** FORGIVEN YOU MORE. Can anyone stop protecting, providing or hoping for you? Yet even if it is possible, the Creator HAS **ALREADY** PROTECTED, PROVIDED AND HOPED FOR YOU MORE. Can anyone deny you knowledge? Yet even if it is possible, the Creator HAS **ALREADY** GIVEN YOU MORE- He has given you all there is, and He has made you, of all that He is.

“Therefore you do not need to wonder where to look, or who to ask for knowledge. Nor do you need ask in meekness, or be afraid. You are the Created Son of the Father. YOU, are HIS expressed Creation! He, is your Father, you are His Son, He LOVES you, therefore GO to Him, and honour Him, with a proud and happy countenance, for you are

Created in His image and He is proud of His Creation.

“He Created you perfect, yet He is more. Therefore go to Him that is in you, and go in perfect honour, knowing that He will perfect you more.

“He has already forgiven you, thus you have no need to beg His forgiveness, rather learn to forgive yourself. Further, your need to forgive your self, is far less than your need to offer thanksgiving, to Him. Be thankful, and ACCEPT what is your promised birthright, which is of the knowledge that is in you.

“For that perfect joy of the Father, GO and ACCEPT what He, has **ALREADY** GIVEN TO YOU. Do not ask for temporal things, or less worthy interventions, that will not be offered until after you have first accepted the gift that has already been bestowed upon you. First, know Him by your acceptance of the things offered to you, by Him, then you may rightly ask for more, which if there is, He will give abundantly.

“Your Father, the One Creator, has expressed the entire universe for the joy of His Creation, which He proclaims, IS YOU. Your Father, the One Creator, has **ALREADY** BEQUEATHED an abundance of all things, which things are the expression of all knowledge, for the joy of His Creation, which He proclaims, IS YOU.

“Now you, GO therefore and HONOUR Him. ACCEPT His gifts and His great and precious promises with much thanksgiving. For this, your acceptance, of the promises and of the inheritance, is the greatest honour you can give to your Father, the One Creator, whose Love for you, endures both the beginning and the end of time. Do you not know that after your acceptance of all that He has offered, He will then fulfill your every desire for more!

“Therefore, He will receive You, as His Son, and AS YOU ARE, with all knowledge of

who you are and who He is, for you are the pride and the joy, of the Father. All else, is vanity and grasping for the wind.”

May you experience the fullness of the peace, and of the joy inherent to learning these things, and all the more so on being able to do them, on this one of those many, most wonderful days, our Father has so graciously blessed us with!

## **Enjoy Eternal Spiritual Life**

### **After Physical Death:**

Some religions teach being reborn again and again, and Christians usually believe humans have immortal souls that live on after death in another, more "heavenly" world. Have these souls of the "saved dead" wafted into heaven? Are they watching us here, now? What about the unsaved dead? Are they already in some horrible ever-burning hellfire? Most Christians would not agree that death ends it all, but they often disagree on the supposed nature of life after death. Ask them, for example, to define the word "resurrection", which simply means "a rising of the dead to life", and you would get a variety of ideas as to what it means.

But why do some Christians even believe in a resurrection when they also believe in the "immortal soul"? Why would an immortal soul need a physical, "resurrected" body after leaving this physical world? Ask a Hindu, Buddhist, Muslim or Jew and you would get still different views.

The truth is, no human being of himself can know what lies on the other side of death. Only Yahweh can fill in the exact outlines of whatever life after death might exist. The Bible explains this mystery like a jigsaw puzzle which must be assembled from scattered references throughout its pages. The prophet Isaiah said: "Who will he teach knowledge? And whom will he make to understand the message? ...Precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept, line upon line, line upon line, here a little, there a little" (*Isaiah 28:9-11*). So let's piece together the truth about life after death.

The Bible mentions more than one resurrection, each fitting into Yahweh's purpose in working with the human family. The sequence of resurrections is briefly sketched out below - the details and significance of each, being filled in later.

1) Until Yah'shua returns all those who lived and died will remain in their graves - dead. At Yah'shua' return, to restore the kingdom of Yahweh to this earth, those select few who were called and "trained of Yahweh" (*chosen - or elect*) through the ages will be resurrected to immortal life. They will rule with the Messiah over the remaining human family, for a 1,000 year period; the millennium. Yahweh will THEN offer salvation to all humans remaining alive (*at the beginning of the millennium*), plus all who will be born into, and live during that time.

2) At the end of the millennium, all those who lived (*and died*) in past ages and were not called by Yahweh as saints in the first resurrection, will be resurrected to physical (*mortal*) life for a short time. They too, will be given an opportunity for salvation; the second resurrection.

These people will compare the civilizations in which they had lived with that of Yah'shua' new civilization established over the 1,000 years under the laws of the kingdom of Yahweh. The vast majority will choose Yahweh's way, and will ultimately be changed from physical, mortal humans, to immortal spirit beings. All who have ever lived, will by this time have had an opportunity to choose salvation.

3) Finally, those who rejected their opportunity will be resurrected to physical, mortal life and Yahweh will pass His judgement on them. They will be destroyed in the lake of fire and cease to exist. This is the "second death".

Until the New Covenant Congregation began in the 1st century, only a handful of Old Covenant personalities such as Abel, Job, Abraham, Sarah, Joseph, Moses, Deborah, David, Jeremiah and Daniel were called by Yahweh through His Spirit. These overcame trials and temptation, receiving a promise

during their lifetime of a future life after death. Have they already gone to their reward?

Consider Moses the humblest man of his time (*Numbers 12:3*) with whom Yahweh spoke face to face (*Deuteronomy 34:10*). What about Sarah - an example of a Godly woman? Are they conscious and watching us now? Have they gone to some kind of eternal reward? The Bible answer is that every single one of these great men and women of Yahweh is still dead, and still buried. Their minds are unconscious and their bodies disintegrated.

Solomon tells us in Ecclesiastes 9:5: "For the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing". These spiritual giants did not go to heaven. Yah'shua plainly said: "No one has ascended to heaven but He who has come down from heaven" (*John 3:13*).

The Jews of Yah'shua' day understood that those who had died were still dead. The Pharisees challenged Yah'shua when He said, "Most assuredly, I say to you, if anyone keeps My word he shall never see death" (*John 8:51*). Yah'shua was of course, saying that one who was obedient to His Word would not experience the eternal - or second death. But the Jews replied: "Now we know you have a demon! Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and You say, 'If anyone keeps My word he shall never taste death. Are you greater than our father Abraham who is dead? And the prophets are dead?'" (*John 8:52-53*).

Yah'shua did not dispute their statement about Abraham and the prophets - they were indeed dead and buried when Yah'shua spoke those words. Paul confirmed this fact by writing about these very Hebrew people of faith, "These all died in faith, not having received the promises" (*Hebrews 11:13*); they trusted in Yahweh, "that they might obtain a better resurrection" (*Hebrews 11:35*).

Yah'shua had to straighten out the Sadducees who taught there was no

resurrection, He said, "But concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was spoken to you by Yahweh, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?' Yahweh is not the God of the dead, but of the living" (*Matthew 22:31-32*). Abraham, Isaac and Jacob are dead and buried. Yet, they are as good as alive because the Almighty Yahweh is able to resurrect them to eternal life.

As Peter says in his inspired sermon on Pentecost: "Men and Brethren, let me speak freely to you of the Patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried". And later, "David did not ascend into the heavens" (*Acts 2:29-34*). Did David have hope of an eternal life? Yes! The prophet Jeremiah said of a time yet future, called the "latter days", that Yahweh promises the following will happen: "And David their king...I will raise up for them [*the House of Jacob*]". (*Jeremiah 30:8-9,24*).

Many prophecies show that David is to be resurrected an immortal, supernatural king over his people (*Exekiel 37:24*). So David will come up out of his grave in the future. And so will every party who has been called and trained by Yahweh throughout the ages and later died. But all such parties will remain dead until a certain important event occurs - the Second Coming of the Messiah.

Yah'shua said, "The hour is coming in which all who are in the graves will hear His voice and come forth - those who have done good, to the resurrection of life, and those who have done evil, to the resurrection of condemnation" (*John 5:28-29*). Those coming up in the resurrection of life will do so at the Messiah's return, and those to the resurrection of death, will do so much later.

Paul said, "It is appointed for men to die once" (*Hebrews 9:27*). That is the fate of every human. The Bible calls death as one who is "asleep" until it is Yahweh's purpose to bring

that specific individual back to life. Humans do not have "immortal souls" that remain alive and conscious after death. The two words "immortal soul" are a contradiction in terms. A human "soul" is mortal and is perishable. A "human" is a "soul". We read where Yahweh "formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul" (*Genesis 2:7*).

Man is a soul. The Hebrew word translated to "soul" is "nephesh" - it simply means living, breathing creature. The same word "nephesh" or "soul" is frequently used in Genesis and elsewhere in reference to animals. This same word "nephesh" or its English translation, "soul" can also refer to a dead body (*Leviticus 21:11*).

In Ezekiel 18:4 we read, "The soul who sins shall die" and these words are repeated in verse 20. A soul is merely a living, breathing being, human or otherwise, that can die. It is not something "in" the man, it "is" the man. According to the Bible, death is simply death - the absence of life. And the dead stay dead until Yahweh brings them back to life. If Yahweh chose not to resurrect those souls (*men*) who died, they would remain permanently dead and in their graves.

Now there is also the spirit essence in man that gives him the capacity for thought. As Paul says, "For what man knows the things of a man except the spirit of the man which is in him?" (*1 Corinthians 2:11*). This spirit comes from Yahweh; "Thus says Yahweh, who stretches out the heavens, lays the foundation of the earth, and forms the spirit of man within him" (*Zechariah 12:1*). This spirit essence Yahweh formed within us, allows us to think, reason and be aware of ourselves. This essence must see through human eyes, hear through human ears, think through the human brain - it has no consciousness apart from the body.

When the body and brain die, Yahweh - one might say - pulls out and stores this human spirit as though extracting a floppy disk from a computer. A disk is functionless without its hardware. A human's spirit essence is in the same situation - it has no function (*consciousness*) apart from its "hardware", the body. By themselves both a computer disk, and the spirit in man, merely store information.

Solomon wrote of death; "then the dust will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit will return to Yahweh who gave it" (*Ecclesiastes 12:7*). (*This was written many centuries before Yahweh gave us His Holy Spirit through faith in the Messiah.*) Yahweh can preserve this spiritual "disk" containing a memory of all that you are, or Yahweh can erase it. Once Yahweh erases memory from a party's spirit essence, that party's memory is utterly wiped out. He or she cannot be resurrected. But Yahweh is still preserving the spirit of every individual who has ever lived and died.

The spirit in each man maintains the identity of one who has lived, and using this as a kind of spiritual data base, Yahweh will resurrect either a physical or spiritual body, providing that one party with this memory again, at the appropriate resurrection. There is only one way for dead saints to be "re-programmed" and live again; "we also eagerly wait for the Saviour, the Lord Yah'shua the Messiah, who will transform our lowly body that it may be conformed to His glorious body" (*Philippians 3:20-21*).

This redemption, or change is our only hope for life after death. Paul says: "It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body...as we have borne the image of the man of dust, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly Man" (*1 Corinthians 15:35;44-49*). He ended this thought by pointing out that flesh and blood cannot enter into the spirit realm of the

kingdom of Yahweh (*verse 50*); humans would have to be given immortal spirit bodies.

In summary, "Behold, I tell you a mystery; we shall not all sleep [*remain dead*], but we shall be changed - in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed" (*verse 51-52*). So Paul tells us firstly, that our only hope for life after death is that we will be raised from the dead by a resurrection, and secondly that this will not happen until after the Messiah's return "at the last trumpet", when the Messiah comes to restore the kingdom of Yahweh on this earth.

Paul said this plan was conceived "before the foundation of the world" (*Ephesians 1:4*). Part of the plan called for Yahweh to select a few individuals during the first 4,000 years of humanity for specific responsibilities, people that Yahweh empowered through His Spirit for very special callings: Noah to build the ark; Abraham to be father of the faithful; Joseph to stand before Pharaoh and bring Israel to Egypt; Moses to lead the people out of Egypt and give them Yahweh's laws; Deborah to judge a nation; David to be a king; Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and Daniel to prophesy of future events, and others.

In the process, these people lived and wrote the Bible, which became the foundation of truth, WHICH ALL PEOPLE WOULD ONE DAY NEED TO UNDERSTAND (*Ephesians 2:20*)! Peter said of these individuals, "Of this salvation the prophets come to you...To them it was revealed that, not to themselves, but to us they were ministering the things which now have been reported to you through those who have preached the Gospel to you" (*1 Peter 1:10,12*).

This salvation, of course, was through Yah'shua, who came to pay the penalty for our sins. After Yah'shua' crucifixion, He was

resurrected from the dead - the first born of those who would, in their proper time, also be resurrected.

Yah'shua has been seated at the right hand of the Father for nearly 19 centuries. "Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, who has passed through the heavens, Yah'shua the Son of Yahweh, let us hold fast our confession" (*Hebrews 4:14*). During this time, He has been working out the next phase of Yahweh's plan to ultimately bring salvation to every single human who has lived or will live.

For the present, Yah'shua is spiritually purifying Yahweh's Congregation, or congregation of "called out ones"; those called to salvation in this age. This group must preach the message of His soon to come, kingdom, as Yah'shua prophesied: "And this Gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness", just before His return, as the "sign of His Coming" (*Matthew 24:14*).

These called-out individuals are the "elect" (*Matthew 24:24*), the saints, who are among those to be resurrected immortal at the Messiah's Second Coming. This group is far smaller than most people think. Every other human being who has lived and died will remain in the grave awaiting another, later resurrection - one to mortal, physical life. Each will then be given the opportunity to repent to obedience to Yahweh's laws and receive understanding leading to eternal life.

Yah'shua said, "I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also" (*John 14:2-3*). Yah'shua is preparing places or positions of responsibility for every true Israelite. These positions, "rewards" include living at a location identical to where the Messiah is to be at His Second Coming. The rewards are not yet dispensed, that's why He said: "Rejoice and be exceedingly glad, for

great is your reward in heaven" (*Matthew 5:12*).

It's now being "held in trust" by Yah'shua on behalf of us and it will be meted out as found in the last chapter, last verses of the Bible, "And behold, I am coming quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give to everyone according to his work" (*Revelation 22:12*). The reward is now "in" heaven in trust. The Messiah will bring the reward of eternal life, from heaven, to earth at His Second Coming. "When the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then He will sit on the throne of His glory. All the nations will be gathered before Him...Then the King will say to those on His right hand `Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world'" (*Matthew 25:31-32,34*).

The time element begins with the Messiah's return, and He is pictured as bestowing eternal life and an inheritance in the "kingdom of Yahweh" or "kingdom of heaven". The kingdom of Yahweh is "heaven", hence it is called also, the kingdom of heaven, as distinct from the kingdoms of men, which this heavenly kingdom of Yahweh will supersede. "Heaven" is not inherited by those made immortal. "Heaven" is the description of the place where Yahweh (*Elohom*) is from time to time. Compare Matthew 5:3 with verses 5 and 10, and as in the Beatitudes where the Messiah said the meek would inherit the earth but the poor in spirit and those persecuted for righteousness' sake would inherit "the kingdom of heaven".

This does not mean that the meek stay on earth and the poor in spirit go to heaven. The kingdom of heaven will become Yahweh's kingdom on earth simply by virtue of the fact that the Messiah will change the location of His residence to this planet. In other words, living in the heaven of Yahweh, is when we are living

in the heavenly presence of either the now-glorified Yah'shua or Yahweh the Father. It is living in their very presence, through His Holy Spirit now, or directly in their presence in "heaven on earth", during and after the millennium. That's why it's called kingdom of heaven now, and why our reward is "reserved in heaven". It will soon become, the kingdom of Yahweh on earth, where all those called by Yahweh from both the "meek" and "poor in spirit" will reside!

"We who are alive and remain until the coming of the Messiah will by no means precede those who are asleep. For the Messiah Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of Yahweh. And the dead in the Messiah will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Messiah in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Messiah" (*1 Thess. 4:15-17*).

The following is clear: Whichever saints are alive at the Messiah's return will be changed "in the twinkling of an eye" to spirit beings as Paul told the Corinthians, and immediately preceding this change in the living saints, the dead in the Messiah will be resurrected immortal. Both groups will ascend together, but only as high as the clouds while the Messiah descends from heaven. From that moment on, the resurrected saints will be with the Messiah, not in "heaven", but right here on earth!

It is the kingdoms of this world that become the Messiah's, "Behold the Messiah comes with 10,000's of His saints, to execute judgement on all" (*Jude 14-15*). Yah'shua is not going "back to heaven"; He is coming to earth. In a sense, if you are really intent on going to "heaven", you could say you are, because heaven; the Messiah's presence, is coming to everyone on earth!

Zechariah, as many other prophets do, calls this the "day of Yahweh" (*Zechariah 4:1*): "And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which faces Jerusalem on the east, and the Mount of Olives shall be split in two..." (*verse 2-4*) "...and the Messiah shall be king over all the earth" (*verse 9*). The Messiah will descend from the clouds with His saints, immediately beginning to institute His government; the kingdom of Yahweh over all the nations. Even over the many nations that WILL OPPOSE Him!

Revelation and other prophecies say His first job will be to obliterate the OPPOSING armies of the heathen! The now IMMORTAL SAINTS will remain with the Messiah on earth and assist Him in the formation of His new government bringing 1,000 years of peace and happiness to humanity. There are many prophecies describing this wonderful peace to come to earth such as *Isaiah 9:6-7*; *Micah 4:1-2*; *Isaiah 11:9*; *Jeremiah 31:33*; and others.

During this 1,000 year period Yahweh will save billions of humans who will be physically born into it by begetting them spiritually upon their repentance to obedience to His laws. Salvation will be open to all; all having an opportunity to grow in grace and character with the help of Yahweh's Spirit. Upon qualifying, (*at various individual rates*) they will earn responsibilities in the kingdom of Yahweh and be made immortal "in the twinkling of an eye".

These resurrected and immortal saints will have offices of governmental and ecclesiastical services to perform, "Your teachers will not be moved into a corner anymore, but your eyes shall see your teachers, your ears shall hear a word behind you, saying, `This is the way, walk in it'" (*Isaiah 30:20-21*). And as John said in *Revelation 5:9-10*; "and have made us [*saints*] kings and priests to our God; and we shall reign on the

earth". At the resurrection, the saints will receive a crown of life (*Revelation 2:10*) and the Messiah will give them "power over the nations" (*Revelation 2:26*).

So far we see that Yahweh's purpose has been to call only a small number of people during the 6,000 years of human civilization; only these "few" have had an opportunity for salvation, their minds and hearts being opened through Yahweh's Spirit to His ways and thoughts. But during the 1,000 years of Yahweh's kingdom on earth, all MORTAL humans still alive (*obviously not including the IMMORTAL SAINTS, or the opposing heathen killed in battle*), plus all who will then be born into it (*the millennium*), as physical, mortal beings, will THEN have an opportunity for salvation, (*except those that wilfully and knowingly reject Yahweh*).

During the millennium the Bible says Satan, who had deceived the "many" during the 6,000 years will be restrained by Yahweh; "so that he should deceive the nations no more till the 1,000 years were finished" (*Revelation 20:2-3*). At the end of the 1,000 years, Satan will be released for a short time and he will immediately go out and deceive great multitudes of mortal people then living who will have taken for granted what was being taught them in the kingdom of Yahweh. The Bible says they will allow themselves to be spiritually seduced, "They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city [*Jerusalem*]" (*Revelation 20:9*). Yahweh punishes this final rebellion and Satan is permanently removed from deceiving humans ever again. Jude 13 explains that Satan and the fallen angels become "wandering stars for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever [*permanent separation from Yahweh's presence*]".

So what about the hundreds of millions through the ages that were not called of

Yahweh or who may never have heard of Him. And what about the very few who knowingly and deliberately rejected Him. First we must understand that Yahweh has not been, nor is He trying to save the world for the last 6,000 years, including these last few years. If He had planned to, He most assuredly would have done so.

Paul tells us that; "the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly but because of Him who subjected it in hope" (*Romans 8:20*). Humanity's suffering is necessary and not without purpose. Yahweh will make life "fair" for everyone by offering all people eternal life - by choice - evidenced by obedience in the face of temptation. Also in verse 21, Paul says "The creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption [death, resulting from being separated from Yahweh's laws] into the glorious liberty of the children of Yahweh".

Yahweh has allowed a rebellious Satan to sway the world for 6,000 years. Satan has been the god of this world since Adam and Eve listened to his lies (*Genesis 3:1-6*)! He is called the "god of this age" who has blinded or deceived mankind (*2 Corinthians 4:4*), and "deceives the whole world" (*Revelation 12:9*), and he is the "prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience" (*Ephesians 2:2*).

Once these Satan-inspired human civilizations that we are now living in have been ended and the Messiah has expressed the awesome glory and splendour of Yahweh's kingdom on earth for 1,000 years, then Yahweh is going to take time to "tie up loose ends" so to speak. He can now fulfill His ultimate goal in this great plan; "For this is good and acceptable in the sight of Yahweh our Saviour, who desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth" (*1 Timothy 2:4*).

This period after Satan is permanently bound is called the Great White Throne Judgement. There is a time when every single dead party, Israelite or otherwise, who hadn't been called by Yahweh as a saint, will be resurrected to physical life, each opened to spiritual truth. "...and the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books" (*Revelation 20:11-13*).

The works by which they will be judged are not past works of this lifetime. Rather, the judgement on these people will be based on works they exhibit after their resurrection to mortal life. This coming period of judgement will be one lifetime, in which all will be taught how to grow spiritually. All these previously dead, will learn to trust and obey Yahweh, after which, if they continue in obedience, they will be changed into immortal spirit. The judgement of this lifetime we are now living in, is merely to determine which of the future resurrections we will partake of - the one before, or one of the two after the millennium.

Revelation 20 gives a precise chronological order of these resurrections. John saw in vision those beheaded for their witness to Yah'shua, and he wrote they; "lived and reigned with the Messiah for a 1,000 years" (*Revelation 20:4*). John called them the saints who are resurrected immortal at the Messiah's Second Coming: "Blessed and holy is he who has a part in the first resurrection...but the rest of the dead did not live again until the 1,000 years were finished" (*verses 5, 6*).

This, the second resurrection occurs after the 1,000 years, prior to the Great White Throne Judgement. Then there is the third resurrection; "resurrection to condemnation". There are, as explained earlier, two groups of people who have done evil, who are yet in the grave. The vast majority did so in ignorance,

and they are resurrected after the 1,000 years to the Judgement period, and judged during a mortal, physical lifetime during which they will receive their first and only opportunity for salvation. Yah'shua also referred to a small group of unrepentant dead who will be raised later to a sentence of condemnation or damnation. These, together with any who fail during the Judgement period, will be quickly burned up, destroyed forever in a lake of fire reserved for this purpose - the second death.

What happens when this work of salvation is finished - will the Messiah then return to heaven with the saints? No! Salvation is just the beginning of Yahweh's plan. The job of recreating humans in Yahweh's spiritual image and composition is merely the preparatory stage for the real work that Yahweh has in store. Salvation merely produces the tools, the obedient Yahweh-family members, to do the work to come.

Yahweh has a great plan about which He tells us little in His Word except that it does exist. He wants us to concentrate on the task at hand. To kick off His new plan, Yahweh will bring something very special to what is called "a new earth" (*Revelation 21:1*). In His vision John saw that the "first earth had passed away" and Peter refers to this as; "We, according to His promise, look for a new heaven and a new earth in which righteousness dwells" (*2 Peter 3:13*).

Yahweh's next step in launching His great plan is set out in Revelation 21 and 22; "The holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from Yahweh, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. Then John heard a loud voice saying, 'Behold, the tabernacle of Yahweh is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and Yahweh Himself will be with them and be their God'".

The enormous revelation of these statements is not that the Messiah or the saints go to heaven, but HEAVEN TRULY DOES COME TO EARTH WHEN GOD COMES TO DWELL WITH US after the work of salvation has been completed! Yahweh will be dwelling with us on earth and He will say "behold, I make all things new" (*Revelation 21:5*). Yes, there will be new works, exciting projects, indescribable vistas of which we know nothing. This soon-to-end period of "salvation" then, is the act of reuniting us with the presence of Yahweh - with heaven!

The making of thousands of millions of immortal spirit beings in the image of the one Creator Yahweh is only the beginning. Yahweh will then start His real project with His new headquarters (*tabernacle*) in New Jerusalem on the New Earth. Earth is destined to become the centre of all activity in every spiritual and physical dimension of the universe. The heaven of Yahweh's throne is actually coming to earth - that's why there is not one single scripture in the Bible that says all people, including Christians will go to heaven when they die.

Revelation sums it up in chapter 21:6-7, "I will give the fountain of the water of life freely to him who thirsts. He who overcomes shall inherit all things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son". Here Yahweh tells us that our destiny is to be His sons and that we are to "inherit all things". In the Greek language, the word translated to "all things" literally means the "universe"! It is awesome beyond our human imagination, but whatever the next phase of Yahweh's plan includes, it starts with us being truly the sons of the Creator of the universe, and with us inheriting the creation!

Salvation to eternal life after death is a key element in the overall, long range purposes of Yahweh, a part of which included His sending Yah'shua. "For Yahweh so loved the

world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life" (*John 3:16*). Yahweh sent Yah'shua into the world so that "the world through Him might be saved" (*John 3:17*). Our salvation is possible only through Yah'shua, as Peter said, "Nor is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given among men by which we must be saved" (*Acts 4:12*).

In Yahweh's plan of salvation we must be justified and made right with Yahweh. Justification is much more than Yahweh pardoning our sins, though it certainly includes that. Yahweh actually rescues us from sin and enables us to trust, love and obey Him through the power of His Holy Spirit. Paul said: "Through one Man's righteous act the free gift [of Yahweh's grace] came to all men, resulting in justification of life" (*Romans 5:18*), and, "A man is not justified by the works of the law but by faith in Yah'shua the Messiah" (*Galatians 2:16*).

This means quite simply and literally, that we have been justified in our reconciliation to Yahweh the Father, who will therefore freely give us His Holy Spirit through our faith in the Messiah. With faith then, we receive His Holy Spirit, and with His Holy Spirit, we receive the power to be obedient. Salvation will indeed be offered to all - but to be a saint is a blessing of Yahweh bestowed on only those "few" that Yahweh's Word says have proven through OBEDIENCE, to be "good and faithful servants" during this lifetime.

As John said in Revelation 14:12: "Here is the patience of the saints; here are those that keep the commandments of Yahweh and the faith of Yah'shua". And as written in Romans 7:12; "therefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy and just and good". This revelation of Bible truth does not in any way condemn all those ("*the many*") who are

not resurrected as saints to rule with the Messiah at His Second Coming. On the contrary, it does reveal and explain that indeed, ALL of them ("*the many*") will be resurrected after the "1,000 years were finished", in order that they too may be blessed with an opportunity for salvation unto eternal life.

It does mean however, that sadly, they ("*the many*") will miss out on experiencing the wonderful "utopian" lifestyle that so many Bible prophecies outline that the Messiah will create during the 1,000 years of the Kingdom of Yahweh on earth - the millennium. It also means they will miss out on being kings and priests and rulers during this time.

But Yahweh is a fair God, and they ("*the many*") will receive of Yahweh's most precious gift - eternal life and the inheritance of their part in "the new heavens and a new earth" - the universe in the very presence of Yahweh!

It is very well summed up in 2 Timothy 4:7, by Paul's words; "I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith", or as in Hebrews 12:1; "let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which so easily ensnares us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us". Being "justified" or "reconciled to Yahweh" through our faith in Yah'shua the Messiah does not mean the "justification" or "reconciliation" takes place because we have faith that Yah'shua died for us, rather, that we have faith in the fact that Yahweh resurrected Him first - the firstborn of many sons, and thereby, Yah'shua did prove that we too, may be resurrected, if we "keep the faith" and follow Yah'shua' example of "keeping the commandments".

Much the same way as if a track and field competitor was disqualified from a race for infractions. As humans, we have been disqualified from the race to salvation by sin. The track and field competitor may pay a fine, or penalty, and be re-entered into the race, but

he does not necessarily win the race, until he "runs" the race.

In like manner, Yah'shua did pay the "penalty" for our "infractions"; our sin, and reconciled or justified our right to re-enter the race to salvation.

This reconciliation is not the sole means to the end, rather it provides the opportunity to run the race, and to therefore "win" our inheritance as saints; our salvation through OBEDIENCE to Yahweh's Commandments!

By keeping the faith - by obediently doing the works, which means keeping all of Yahweh's Commandments, including doing good deeds, keeping the Sabbath, managing our own annual Festival Tithes (*giving any annual excess plus each third year Tithe to the poor*), and by keeping the annual Holy Days, and others, we will choose to honour Yahweh, for which Yahweh has promised to "sanctify" us.

Many traditional Christians falsely define doing the "works" as described in the Bible, as only referring to good deeds and charitable activities.

Such good deeds are important, however they are only a small part of the "works" Yahweh has commanded us to keep. ALL of Yahweh's Commandments are indeed the "works" referred to in the Bible!

Yahweh's promise to sanctify those of us that choose to be obedient to His Commandments includes two very special messages.

First, for this life, we will be blessed with the material wealth promised to our forefathers "throughout your generations" (*and we will be expected to further honour Yahweh by preaching this true Gospel of His kingdom*).

Second, Yahweh has promised to set us apart for His holy use and purpose in the eternal kingdom, as priests and rulers with the Messiah - FOREVER!

## **The Key to Eternal Spiritual Life:**

The key to the mystery of life after death is revealed in the resurrection of Yah'shua the Messiah. It is because the Messiah was resurrected from the grave that we can be assured that we too, will be resurrected.

Of Noah, Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph and Moses, to name some of those listed in Hebrews 11 - not one has ascended to heaven. In fact, says verse 39 of Hebrews 11. "These were all commended for their faith, yet none of them received what had been promised" (NIV). If they aren't in heaven, where are they? And what was it they were promised, if it wasn't heaven?

Many people are surprised to discover what the Bible really says about what happens to us when we die. Yet, when we remove our preconceived notions, the answer becomes quite clear from the Scriptures - and it is immensely encouraging to all.

Notice what Yahweh inspired King Solomon to write about the state of the dead: "For the living know that they will die; but the dead know nothing, and they have no more reward, for the memory of them is forgotten" (*Ecclesiastes 9:5*).

Scripture clearly tells us that at death we cease to know anything. The dead are unconscious and unaware. All our emotions, thoughts, knowledge and feelings go to the grave with us. No consciousness continues living in another place or state. We do not have an immortal soul that goes on living somewhere else. In Ezekiel 18, verses 4 and 20, Yahweh plainly tells us that "the soul who sins shall die" - not continue living apart from the body.

The patriarch Job echoes Solomon's words. He writes: "... Man dies and is laid away; indeed he breathes his last and where is he? As water disappears from the sea, and a river becomes parched and dries up, so man

lies down and does not rise. Till the heavens are no more, they will not awake nor be roused from their sleep" (*Job 14:10-12*). Job goes on to ask the most crucial question about life after death: "If a man dies, shall he live again?" (*verse 14*).

His answer is found in Yah'shua the Messiah's own words. The key to the mystery of life after death is revealed in the resurrection of Yah'shua the Messiah. He said, "I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in Me, though he may die, he shall live. And whoever lives and believes in Me shall never die" (*John 11:25-26*). It is because the Messiah was resurrected from the grave that we can be assured that we, too, will be resurrected (*1 Corinthians 15:12-21*).

Throughout the 15th chapter of 1 Corinthians, the apostle Paul eloquently argues this important fact, that since Yah'shua was resurrected from the grave, He will resurrect all those who have been faithful to Him. Job, as we saw above, raised the question of life after death. Notice how he answered it: "O that thou wouldest hide me in the grave, that thou wouldest keep me secret, until thy wrath be past, that thou wouldest appoint me a set lime [the time of the resurrection], and remember me! If a man die, shall he live again? All the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come. Thou shall call, and I will answer thee..." (*Job 14:13-15. King James Version*).

Job understood that life after death comes about by Yahweh's divine power. Speaking of each person whom the Father would call to understand His truth, Yah'shua explains, "I will raise him up at the last day" (*John 6:44*). The promise of life after death hinges on Yah'shua the Messiah's resurrection (*1 Corinthians 15*). The fact that Yah'shua the Messiah was resurrected to become "the firstborn from the dead" (*Colossians 1:18; Revelation 1:5*) means that He has opened the

way for others to follow in a resurrection from the grave.

The raising of the dead is a mighty and magnificent part of Yahweh's great master plan. Through it, mankind has the opportunity to live again, as faithful Job knew and confirmed, even before the birth of the Messiah. The doctrine of the resurrection is listed among the fundamental doctrines of the Bible (*Hebrews 6:1-2*). It is the hope of all true Israelites, for it nullifies and makes void death itself (*1 Corinthians 15:54*).

Paul confirms that many people were eyewitnesses to the fact that Yah'shua the Messiah had indeed risen from the grave:

"For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that the Messiah died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures, and that He was seen by Cephas [*Peter*], then by the twelve [*apostles*].

After that He was seen by over five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain to the present, but some have fallen asleep [in death]. After that He was seen by James, then by all the apostles. Then last of all He was seen by me also, as by one born out of due time" (*1 Corinthians 15:3-8*).

The writers of the Bible describe our experience after death not as going to heaven or hell, but simply as sleep. Notice, for example, how Daniel refers to the state of the dead in this prophecy of the resurrection: "And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, some to shame and everlasting contempt" (*Daniel 12:2*).

When an individual is in a deep sleep, he has absolutely no conscious awareness of the passing of time or any knowledge of events that are occurring while he is asleep. Paul repeatedly compared death to sleep (*1*

*Corinthians 11:30; 15:6.18.20.51; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-15*). Peter similarly writes of the patriarchs who "fell asleep" in death (*2 Peter. V4*).

Yah'shua Himself also spoke of death as sleep. Speaking of a deceased girl whom He intended to raise from the dead, He told the mourners, "Do not weep: she is not dead, but sleeping" (*Luke 8:52: compare Matthew 9:24*).

The dead in the Messiah will be resurrected to immortal life at Yah'shua the Messiah's return to earth, along with those faithful servants who are still alive at that time. The mystery of what happens to human beings after they die is incontrovertibly solved in the vibrant life of the resurrected Messiah.

Our future life beyond the grave is directly connected to the resurrected Yah'shua the Messiah and the fact that He is the One who will raise us.

Too many credible witnesses saw and interacted with Yah'shua the Messiah after He was raised from the dead for His resurrection to be denied.

Paul also offers a simple but incontestable logic about how our resurrection from the dead is directly tied to Yah'shua's resurrection: "But if it is preached that the Messiah has been raised from the dead, how can some of you say that there is no resurrection of the dead?"

If there is no resurrection of the dead, then not even the Messiah has been raised. And if the Messiah has not been raised, our preaching is useless and so is your faith. More than that, we are then found to be false witnesses about Yahweh, for we have testified about Yahweh that he raised the Messiah from the dead. But he did not raise him if in fact the dead are not raised. For if the dead are not raised, then the Messiah has not been raised either. And if the Messiah has not been raised, your faith is futile; you are still in your sins.

Then those also who have fallen asleep in the Messiah are lost.

If only for this life we have hope in the Messiah, we are to be pitied more than all men. But the Messiah has indeed been raised from the dead, the first-fruits of those who have fallen asleep [in death]. For since death came through a man [*Adam*], the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man [*Yah'shua the Messiah*] (*1 Cor. 15:12-21*).

All of the dead - good and not so good alike - will eventually be resurrected, each in his own time (*1 Corinthians 15:20-23*). The dead in the Messiah will be resurrected to immortal life at Yah'shua the Messiah's return to earth, and those faithful servants who are still alive at that time will be changed from mortal to immortal.

Specifically, this happens at the sounding of "the trumpet of Yahweh" (*1 Thessalonians 4:15-17*), called "the last trumpet" in *1 Corinthians 15:52* and corresponding to the seventh trumpet of *Revelation 11:15*.

This event is called "the first resurrection" in *Revelation 20:5*. In John's vision of the future, those in this resurrection came to life and "reigned with the Messiah for a thousand years" (*verse 4*), during the period commonly known as the Millennium.

Notice that they do not go to dwell in heaven - they live and reign with Yah'shua on earth, to which He has returned to establish Yahweh's Kingdom! And they must obviously reign over someone!

Verse 6 goes on to explain: "Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power [*because they will then be the resurrected, immortal children of Yahweh*], but they shall be priests of Yahweh and of the Messiah, and shall reign with Him a thousand years." *Revelation 5:10* confirms that they will

be "a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth" (*NIV*).

Since the Messiah is coming back to earth (*Zechariah 14:34*), it makes good sense that that's where we will be. After all, Yah'shua said that we would be with Him: "And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also" (*John 14:3; compare Isaiah 11:1 -9*). Clearly, Yah'shua is coming back to earth and we will reign with Him here, not in or from heaven.

Another resurrection follows. So if there is first resurrection in which Yahweh's faithful servants are raised to immortality to reign with Yah'shua the Messiah, will there be other resurrections? And what happens to those who lived and died without ever knowing or hearing the name of Yah'shua, the only name by which we can be saved (*Acts 4:12*)?

Those who died without knowing the Messiah will be resurrected to physical life and given their time to repent and receive salvation 1,000 years later (*Revelation 20:11 -13*). Verse 5 tells us clearly that "the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished."

Many mistakenly believe that this group "has no excuse" for they claim that Yahweh has made Himself known to all men through His very creation. That is true, but He did not make His Messiah known to all men through His very creation, and it is only through the Messiah, that one can be saved!

*Ezekiel 37* vividly describes a second resurrection to a temporary physical existence, when human beings who have never understood Yahweh's truth in this life or who have never heard of Yah'shua the Messiah as their only Saviour, will be raised from the dust of the earth to learn Yahweh's way and about their Saviour for the first time.

Yahweh is "not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance" and "desires all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth" (2 Peter 3:9:1 Timothy 2:4). He will not unjustly condemn those who never had an opportunity to come to that knowledge, repent and receive His gift of eternal life through His Messiah.

Each person raised to life again in this great resurrection will be given sufficient time to learn Yahweh's way of life (see Ezekiel 37:12-14, 23-24), during which they will then be judged or evaluated according to their works, by the standards and values "which were [then] written in the books" (Revelation 20:12).

These "books" (*biblion* in Greek, from which we get the word Bible) are the Scriptures, the only source of the knowledge of eternal life and the basic standard by which all are ultimately judged. Most, probably the vast majority, will go on to receive eternal life because the Bible tells us that "all Israel will be saved" (Romans 11:26) - and by extension most of the gentile world likely will be saved as well, as in the Messiah, all have become as one.

Some individuals, regrettably, will stubbornly choose to reject this marvellous opportunity for eternal life. But rather than suffer torment for eternity in hell (*as many people incorrectly assume the Bible teaches*), Scripture shows their fate will be to be consumed in the lake of fire, "the second death."

As Malachi 4:3 states, they will be burned to ashes and simply cease to exist. Obviously, one cannot suffer the second death unless one is mortal, and one also cannot suffer the second death if one does not die the first time, but simply "passes" on to heaven.

You CAN take something with you! People of many ancient cultures, such as the Egyptians, buried items of physical worth with

their dead. They believed that the deceased would be able to use those important things in the next life. Yet the patriarch Job refuted this idea: "Naked I came from my mother's womb, and naked shall I return there" (Job 1:21). This may be where we get the oft-repeated saying, "You can't take it with you."

However, this old cliché is not entirely true. In a sense, Yahweh will allow you to take something with you when you die - your godly character. A true Israelite is one who builds Yahweh's character for the duration of his natural life (1 Corinthians 3:9-15). When raised to life again in the resurrection, that same character will be a part of us in our new life.

For the true Israelite, that godly character will be with him forever (1 John 2:15-17). The Egyptians and many other long-dead peoples didn't know this, or they would not have buried valuable physical objects with their dead.

But a young man learned this truth from Yahweh's Word, the Bible. That young man is the author of this article. Eventually he came to understand the purpose of life and the fact that the dead are not lost in the grave; that all men, women, children and babies who have ever lived will be resurrected, each in his or her own time. All will eventually have the opportunity to learn of Yahweh's truth and of Yahweh's Saviour for mankind, Yah'shua the Messiah.

In time he came to comprehend that the common denominator to all human death was and is the resurrection of Yah'shua the Messiah to eternal life, and that His resurrection guarantees our resurrection, too. Although death is a great enemy of human beings - and it has hurt and stung many deeply with the passing of loved ones - we can take great comfort in Yahweh's truth. As Paul explains in 1 Corinthians 15:54-58, the resurrection from the dead removes this great enemy and its sting!

Yah'shua the Messiah reveals that in time Yahweh the Father will come to the earth (*Revelation 21:1-3, 10*). Listen to Yah'shua the Messiah's description of this time: "And Yahweh will wipe away every tear from their eyes: there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away" (*Revelation 21:4*).

Knowing Yahweh's ultimate plan for mankind - that human death doesn't end it all - gives us a great and wonderful comfort and sets us free from the myth of a passive eternity in heaven or eternal torment in hell.

Finally, the apostle Paul in I Thessalonians 4:18 urges us to share this holy truth with others: "Therefore comfort one another with these words."

## **Eternal Life in Yahweh's Family:**

Few questions are more important than what happens to us after death. For religious believers the question is particularly important, because most religions promise their adherents some kind of life beyond the grave. What did Yah'shua the Messiah teach about life after death? Most people would find the answer surprising, because statements in the Gospels about life beyond the grave differ considerably from what traditional Christianity has long taught.

For example, John 3:13 plainly says that "No one has ever gone into heaven except the one who came from heaven - the Son of Man" (*New International Version*). Statements like this show that Yah'shua and His disciples did not teach that heaven was the reward of the saved. Instead the Messiah repeatedly spoke of a future resurrection of the dead, a fact that most of His hearers understood and accepted, yet few readily do today.

After all, they were familiar with biblical passages showing that such notable figures as Job (*Job 14:14-15*), David (*Psalms 16:9-10*) and Isaiah (*Isaiah 26:19*) clearly expected to be raised from the grave. Yah'shua's close friend Martha, for example, told Yah'shua that she knew that her dead brother Lazarus would "rise again in the resurrection at the last day" (*John 11:24*).

So what did Yah'shua teach about the resurrection? Who will be in it? When will it take place? Will there be more than one resurrection? Let's examine His words to be sure we understand the coming resurrection "at the last day".

In John 6:40 Yah'shua gives an encouraging promise to His followers: "... This is the will of Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day." Here again, the myth that all

mankind are being judged now and that their ignorance of Yahweh is no excuse, is proven as the myth it is! The Messiah clearly states that "everyone who sees the Son of Man and believes in Him may have everlasting life". Obviously there are billions of people who may not have any excuse for not knowing Yahweh, but they have every good excuse for not knowing of Yahweh's Messiah or of His Bible for that matter!

The Messiah explains that He is the very power behind that coming resurrection; that He will raise those who believe in Him. Note that He also tells us the timing of the resurrection - that the dead will rise again "at the last day." In biblical terminology, "last day" generally refers to the time surrounding Messiah's second coming or beyond.

The apostle Paul discusses the resurrection at length in I Corinthians 15. He tells us that the dead are resurrected in a specific order. First Yah'shua Himself, then "afterward those who are the Messiah's at His coming" (*verse 23*). In verses 51- 52 he is even more specific: "Behold, I tell you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed - in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

When is this "last trumpet"? Revelation 8-11 describes a series of seven trumpet blasts and associated plagues that precede the Messiah's return. At the sounding of the seventh trumpet, loud voices proclaim: "The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of Yahweh and of His Messiah, and He shall reign forever and ever!" (*Revelation 11:15*). This trumpet, then, announces the Messiah's return to earth.

"The dead in the Messiah" are raised. At this seventh trumpet Yah'shua returns to earth and "those who are the Messiah's" rise from

their graves to meet Him. Paul spells out more details in 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17: "For the Messiah Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of Yahweh. And the dead in the Messiah will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Messiah in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Messiah."

As Paul describes it, both the faithful who have died in centuries past as well as the faithful still living at that time will be part of this resurrection. They are a specific group of people. In the verses quoted above, Paul calls them "the dead in the Messiah" and "those who are the Messiah's." Yah'shua Himself refers to this as "the resurrection of the righteous" (*Luke 14:14, New International Version*).

Those in this resurrection, the Messiah tells us, "can no longer die; for they are like the angels. They are Yahweh's children, since they are children of the resurrection" (*Luke 20:36, NIV*). In other words, the family of Yahweh, currently composed of Yahweh the Father and Yah'shua the Son, will expand dramatically to include many more immortal spirit members. This is why Scripture calls Yah'shua "the firstborn among many brothers" (*Romans 8:29, NIV*).

What will those who are given immortality in Yahweh's family in this resurrection be like? Paul asks and answers this question in 1 Corinthians 15: "But, you may ask, how are the dead raised? In what kind of body?... There are heavenly bodies and earthly bodies; and the splendour of the heavenly bodies is one thing, the splendour of the earthly another. The sun has splendour of its own, the moon another splendour, and the stars yet another; and one star differs from another in brightness. "So it is with the resurrection of the dead: what is sown as a perishable thing is

raised imperishable. Sown in humiliation, it is raised in glory; sown in weakness, it is raised in power; sown a physical body, it is raised a spiritual body... As we have worn the likeness of the man made of dust, so we shall wear the likeness of the heavenly man ... This perishable body must be clothed with the imperishable, and what is mortal with immortality" (*verses 35-53, Revised English Bible*).

In other words, says Paul, we will be raised with a glorified, immortal, powerful spirit body! In fact, Daniel 12:3 (*NIV*) tells us that those in this resurrection "will shine like the brightness of the heavens...like the stars for ever and ever"! What an incredible transformation!

But what will those who are raised to glorified, powerful spirit immortality do? They will not be raised to a life of endless leisure and idleness in heaven. No, Yahweh has something far more important in mind! Yah'shua reveals the future of His faithful servants to His friend and disciple John in the book of Revelation. Revelation 20:4 tells us what happens to those who are given immortality in this resurrection: "And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them... And they lived and reigned with the Messiah for a thousand years."

Where do they reign? At that time Yah'shua the Messiah will have returned to earth to establish His Kingdom, so they will live and reign with Him on earth, rebuilding and re-educating the entire world in Yahweh's way of life. They will be the leaders and overseers of this new and transformed civilization to be built under Messiah's rule. Revelation 5:10 tells us these resurrected saints are "a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth " (*NIV*).

This 1,000-year reign of Yah'shua the Messiah and His saints is commonly known as the Millennium (*after the Latin for "thousand years"*). Describing this time, Isaiah 2:3 says: "Many people shall come and say, 'Come, and let us go up to the mountain of Yahweh, to the house of the God of Jacob; He will teach us His ways, and we shall walk in His paths. For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of Yahweh from Jerusalem."

Continuing in Revelation 20, verse 5 makes a startling parenthetical statement: "But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished." It also explains that the resurrection of The Messiah's faithful followers at His return is "the first resurrection."

John's vision then fast-forwards 1,000 years to the incredible time when "the rest of the dead" of verse 5 are raised. Notice verse 12: "And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before Yahweh, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were [then] written in the books."

What is this resurrection all about? How does this differ from the first resurrection? We first need to recognize that many billions of people have lived and died having never heard the name of Yah'shua the Messiah, the only name by which they could be saved (*Acts 4:12*). They never had the opportunity to learn of Yahweh and His way of life, especially of His Messiah. So what happens to them?

Not understanding this second resurrection, theologians and religious teachers have wrestled with this question for centuries. Some think those in this category get a free pass into heaven; others think they burn forever in hell. Still others mistakenly believe that this group "has no excuse" for they claim that Yahweh has made Himself known to all men through His very creation. None are

remotely close to the truth, for Yahweh is eminently fair and just in all His dealings with all of humanity.

Yahweh will neither condemn nor reward those who have never heard or learned of His truth, that all men must be saved through Yah'shua the Messiah. This fact is not at all evidenced by Yahweh's creation! However, He will, in His own time, give every man, woman and child who has ever lived an opportunity to learn and accept that truth, repent and receive His gift of eternal life through His first-born Son, Yah'shua the Messiah. And that is what this great resurrection is all about.

When we remove our preconceived notions, we see that Revelation 20:12 is describing a period of judgment extending over some time, not a one-time sentencing. People in this resurrection will have time to learn Yahweh's truth - a truth they've never heard before - and to either accept or reject their Saviour and Yahweh's way of life.

Yah'shua himself draws the distinction between these resurrections by inspiring John in 5:28-29. "Do not marvel at this." He says, "for an hour is coming in which all those in the tombs will hear His voice. And they will come out, the ones having done good into a resurrection of life; and the ones having practiced evil into a resurrection of judgment" (*Green's Literal Translation*).

Those who have lived righteously come up in what Yah'shua calls "a resurrection of life." As noted earlier, this is the first resurrection, to divine spirit immortality. The other resurrection, of those who have lived a life apart from knowledge of Yahweh, His ways and His Messiah, will be "a resurrection of judgment" - the time when they will have their opportunity to learn Yahweh's truth and accept or reject it, and they will be judged on that basis. It is not merely a time to mete out a pre-determined "sentence" as most mistakenly

believe. That mistaken belief presumes that Yahweh would resurrect these people simply to turn around and put them to death again!

With this background we can properly understand one of Yah'shua the Messiah's most puzzling statements, found in Matthew 12:41-42(NIV): "The men of Nineveh will stand up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and now one greater than Jonah is here. The Queen of the South will rise at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for she came from the ends of the earth to listen to Solomon's wisdom, and now one greater than Solomon is here."

Yah'shua here describes an astounding time when the long-dead people of the ancient Assyrian capital of Nineveh (*of Jonah's day*) and the Queen of Sheba (*from Solomon's era*) will live again alongside those from The Messiah's generation. And while they had lived and died many centuries before Yah'shua was even born, they will point out that those of The Messiah's time had no excuse for rejecting the very Son of Yahweh.

In Matthew 11:20-24 Yah'shua similarly points out that "it will be more tolerable... in the day of judgment" for the people of the long-destroyed cities of Sodom, Tyre and Sidon than it would be for those who had lived in cities like Capernaum in which He had performed miracles that proved His divine identity. "More tolerable"; in other words, they too will have a chance to repent at their then first exposure to the knowledge of the Messiah!

Ezekiel 37 includes a remarkable description of this resurrection in which people are raised to a temporary flesh-and-blood existence. Unlike those who are given immortality in the first resurrection, those in this second resurrection are fully human and remain subject to death. Those of them who choose Yahweh's way of living will receive

eternal life as glorified members of Yahweh's family. Those who don't - as well as those in previous ages who have utterly rejected Yahweh's offer of salvation in the face of full knowledge while alive, are destined to perish in the lake of fire, to be utterly burned up and forgotten (*Hebrews 10:26-27; Revelation 20:14-15; Malachi 4:1*).

These amazing prophecies show that Yahweh does not show partiality (*Romans 2:11*). He will offer his gift of salvation to all who have ever lived. This is the surprising and profoundly encouraging truth Yah'shua taught about the resurrections.

## Eternal Life with Elijah, Enoch, and Moses:

The Bible says that "Enoch was transported that they should not see his death" (*Hebrews 11:5*), "Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven" (*2 Kings 2:11*), and "Yahweh took him" (*Genesis 5:24*), and Moses appeared in the transfiguration with Yah'shua (*Matthew 17:3*). Do these scriptures prove that the three were in heaven (*the throne of Yahweh*) before Yah'shua was sent to Earth as a man?

John 3:13, "And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven."

These words were spoken by Yah'shua himself at a time when only the Messiah had seen Yahweh (*John 1:18*). And how did He know that no man had ascended up to heaven...the throne of Yahweh? Because he came from there! Therefore, what heaven did Elijah go to? What about Enoch and Moses?

### Elijah

Elijah was taken up by a whirlwind "into heaven" (*2 Kings 2:1*) by "a chariot of fire, and horses of fire" (*verse 11*). Yet, over nine hundred years after this event, Yah'shua Himself said "And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven" (*John 3:13*). Is this a bible contradiction? Did Elijah really ascend to heaven where Yahweh's throne is, even though Yah'shua said he didn't? If Elijah did not go to heaven, then where did he go?

### Three Heavens

The Scripture mentions three heavens (*2 Corinthians 12:2*), not just one!

**The first heaven** is earth's atmosphere where birds fly (*Genesis 1:20, Jeremiah 4:25; 34:20, Lamentations 4:19, Zephaniah 1:3*). One of the Hebrew words for 'heaven' is *shamayim*. This same word is translated as 'sky' in the

Scripture, as can be seen by comparing *Genesis 7:3*, "fowls also of the air," with *Genesis 7:23*, "fowl of the heaven." The word 'sky' and 'heaven' are used interchangeably from the same Hebrew word (*Psalms 8:8*). So the first heaven is synonymous with 'heights' or 'elevations.'

Here are other examples to illustrate the first heaven. *Exodus 19:20* says Yahweh was on top of Mount Sinai when he called Moses up there, and Yahweh describes Mount Sinai as 'heaven' (*Exodus 20:22, Deuteronomy 4:36*). Here, everything above the ground is called 'heaven'.

Another example of the first heaven is in *Amos 9:1-3*, where Yahweh states that at the time of this judgment, nobody will be able to flee away (*verse 1*), even "though they climb up to heaven" (*verse 2*). This "heaven" is defined in the next verse, *verse 3*, as climbing to the top of Mount Carmel.

Another example is where the Scripture speaks of the "dew of heaven" (*Genesis 27:28,39, Deuteronomy 33:28, Daniel 4:15-33; 5:21*). The first heaven, from which dew comes, means the atmosphere, where the clouds and the wind roam. Therefore, everything above the ground is called 'heaven.'

Another Hebrew word for the first heaven is '*shachaq*.' This same word for heaven (*Psalms 89:6,37*) is also translated as 'sky' or 'skies' (*Deuteronomy 33:26; Job 37:18; Psalms 18:11*), and as 'clouds' (*Job 35:5; 36:28; Psalms 36:5; 68:34, Pro. 3:20; 8:28*).

**The second heaven** is outer space where the planets and stars exist (*Genesis 1:14-17; 15:5; 22:17; 26:4, Deuteronomy 1:10; 17:3; Psalms 8:3, Jeremiah 8:2; Matthew 24:29*). Usually the term "host of heaven" or "firmament of the heaven" is used to describe this second heaven.

**The third heaven** is literally called "the third heaven" in *2 Corinthians 12:2*. This third

heaven is what the Messiah calls his "Father's house" (*John 14:2*), and both the Messiah and the Apostle Paul call it "paradise" (*Luke 23:43*, *2 Corinthians 12:2-4*, *Revelation 2:7*).

This is where Yahweh and the heavenly sanctuary exist (*1 Peter 3:22*). This third heaven is also known as the "heaven of heavens" (*Deuteronomy 10:14*; *1 Kings 8:27*, *2 Chronicles 2:6*; *6:18*, *Nehemiah 9:6*, *Psalms 148:4*), "The heavenly Jerusalem" (*Galatians 4:26*; *Hebrews 12:22*; *Revelation 3:12*), the "kingdom of heaven" (*Matthew 25:1*, *James 2:5*), the "eternal kingdom" (*2 Peter 1:11*), the "eternal inheritance" (*1 Peter 1:4*, *Hebrews 9:15*), and the "better country" (*Hebrews 11:14,16*). The fact that there are more than one 'heaven' can be shown by Psalm 115:16, "The heaven, even the heavens, are Yahweh's." There are obviously two different 'heavens' being addressed in this one verse.

Since Elijah could not have gone to the heaven of Yahweh's throne, then to which heaven did he go? He was not taken to Yahweh's heavenly throne (*as some imagine*). He was actually taken into this earth's atmosphere, the first heaven. There could be no whirlwind in any other place but in the atmosphere surrounding this earth.

### **Why Taken Up?**

What was the reason for this unusual act of Yahweh? Why did he take Elijah up into the atmosphere? Was it to make him immortal? No! The Scripture says no word about that! In Hebrews 11:13,39, we read about the prophets who lived by faith and died without receiving the promises. So Elijah was not to be made Immortal, for that would give him pre-eminence above Yah'shua. But what does the Scripture reveal as the reason for this removal? *2 Kings 2:3* and *5* has the answer.

Notice what the sons of the prophets said to Elisha: "Knowest thou that Yahweh will take away thy master from thy head to day?"

(*Kings 2:3*). Elijah was the leader of the sons of the prophets in that day. Yahweh had sent Elijah as His prophet to wicked king Ahab and to his son Ahaziah. Now Yahweh wanted Elisha to direct His work, as Ahaziah the king had died and a new king was ruling. So what did Yahweh do?

He could not allow Elijah to be among the people with Elisha directing the work now. That would have been the same as disqualifying him. Yahweh never takes an office from a man when that man has been performing his duty well. The only thing Yahweh could do would have been to remove Elijah so that another would fulfill the office. This Yahweh did do. When he was taken up, Elijah's mantle dropped from him and Elisha picked it up (*2 Kings 2:12-15*). And what did the mantle mean? In *Clark's Commentary* we note that it was "worn by prophets and priests as the simple insignia of their office" (*Vol.2, p.484*).

The purpose of Yahweh in removing Elijah was to replace him with another man who would occupy Elijah's office in Israel for another fifty years. This work had to start under a new king, for Ahaziah had just died, and Elijah was already aging. So, as not to disqualify Elijah in the sight of the people, Yahweh took him away allowing the mantle which signified the office of Elijah to drop into the hands of Elisha. Thus, Yahweh preserves the name and office of His prophet.

### **Where did Elijah go?**

This has been the perplexing problem to so many. He did not ascend to the throne of Yahweh, because Yah'shua said so! Also, notice in *2 Kings 3* and *5* that the sons of the prophets knew Elijah would be taken away by Yahweh in advance. They believed that Elijah was going to be taken to another location, which is why they were fearful that the Spirit of Yahweh might have dropped him "upon some mountain, or into some valley" (*2 Kings 2:16*).

Elisha knew that Yahweh would preserve Elijah from falling, but at their insistence he permitted men to go in search for him, to no avail. And Yahweh did not say that Elijah was to die at that time. If he were, Elisha could have assumed his new office without the removal of Elijah, for we know that Elisha died in office after fulfilling his duty (*2 Kings 13:14*).

The new king of Israel was another son of Ahab, Jehoram, or Joram as he is sometimes called. The beginning of his reign marked the year of his removal of Elijah (*2 Kings 1:18 and 3:1*). During this king's reign, Elisha was the recognized prophet of Yahweh (*2 Kings 3:11*). In the fifth year of Joram king of Israel, the son of the king of Judah began to reign along with his father in Judah (*2 Kings 8:16*). His name also was Jehoram. The first thing he did to establish his kingdom rule was to put his relatives to the sword lest they should claim the throne from him (*2 Chronicles 21:4*). For nearly six years he followed the ways of the nations about him and did evil in the sight of Yahweh.

Almost ten years had now expired since Elijah was taken from the people. After this wicked rule by the Jewish king, Yahweh chose Elijah to write a letter and have it sent to the king! The contents of the letter are found in *2 Chronicles 21:12-15*. From the wording of this letter, it is clear that Elijah wrote it after these events had occurred, for he speaks of them as past events, and of the diseases as future. Two years after the king became diseased the king died, having reigned only eight short years (*2 Chronicles 21:18-20*).

This proves that the letter was written about ten years after Elijah had been taken to another location by the whirlwind. Yahweh used Elijah to convey the message because he was the prophet of Yahweh in the days of the present king's father, and the son was not going in the ways of his obedient father,

Jehosophat. This letter proves that he was alive someplace else. The Bible does not reveal how much longer Elijah lived after writing the letter, but it does say that it is appointed for all men to die once (*Romans 5:12,14, 1 Corinthians 15:20-23, Hebrews 9:27*).

A similar incident to Elijah's took place in Acts 8:39,40. Phillip was caught up into the first heaven, as Elijah was, and was transported to another location approximately 30 miles away. Another similar incident happened to Ezekiel, in which His Spirit took him away (*Ezekiel 3:12*). His Spirit lifted him up "between the earth and the heaven" and brought him "to Jerusalem, to the door of the inner gate" (*Ezekiel 8:3*). Afterwards, His Spirit took him up to Chaldea (*Ezekiel 11:24*).

Elijah may not have been found because he was transported further away than the fifty men searched (*2 Kings 2:17*). And, as far as being taken into heaven where Yahweh's throne is, we can know that neither Elijah nor Enoch nor Moses were taken into Yahweh's heavenly abode, because Yah'shua said, while he was on this earth, that "no man hath ascendeth to heaven" (*John 3:13*), and "No man hath seen Yahweh at any time" (*John 1:18*).

### **Enoch**

Some people believe that Enoch did not die but was taken directly to heaven where Yahweh is. But, Enoch eventually died, as all humans die. How can we know? The apostle Paul mentioned the circumstances associated with Enoch in Hebrews 11:5, along with other men of faith, and then stated: "These all died in faith, not having received the promises" (*Hebrews 11:13*). Yes, Enoch died, and he did not receive the promise of heaven (*verse 16*) at the time the book of Hebrews was written.

Based on Hebrews 11:5,13 and Yah'shua' statement in John.3:13, "no man

hath ascended up to heaven", how are we to understand the account of Enoch? Genesis 5:21-24 says that Enoch's days, alive on Earth, ended at 365 years old. The question is, did he die, was he taken to heaven alive, or was he transported to another location on Earth?

Let us examine the **bold** phrase in Genesis 5:24, where it says, "And Enoch walked with Yahweh: and **he was not**; for Yahweh took him" and compare the same Hebrew phrase in:

Psalms 37:36, "Yet he passed away, and, lo, **he was not**: yea, I sought him, but he could not be found."

Psalms 39:13, "O spare me, that I may recover strength, before I go hence, and **be no more**."

The Hebrew for the phrases in **bold** are the same Hebrew as Genesis 5:24. As in the Psalms, the phrase means the person "passed away" or would eventually die. Let's look at the same phrase in the book of Genesis:

Genesis 42:13, "And they said, Thy servants are twelve brethren, the sons of one man in the land of Canaan; and, behold, the youngest is this day with our father, and **one is not**." This was spoken by his brothers of Joseph. What'd they mean by "is not"?

Genesis 44:20, "And we said unto my lord, We have a father, an old man, and a child of his old age, a little one; **and his brother is dead**, and he alone is left of his mother, and his father loveth him." Here, the brothers recount their previous discussion about Joseph with Pharaoh. When they first said, "and one is not," they meant Joseph "is dead."

Matthew 2:18, "In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because **they are not**." Where were Rachel's children? Dead.

Hebrews 11:5, "By faith Enoch was translated that he should **not see death**; and was not found, because Yahweh had translated him:" Does the phrase that says Enoch "should not see death" mean Enoch never died? Hebrews 11:13, "These all died [*including Enoch*] in faith." But not only that, verse 13 goes on to say that they did not receive the promises. One of the promises was a heavenly country (*verse 16*). If Enoch were in heaven, wouldn't he have received that promise?

Psalms 89:48, "What man is he that liveth, and shall **not see death**? shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the grave? Selah." Why would this Psalmist ask such a question concerning physical death if he believed Enoch did not see a physical death? The fact is, the Psalmist believed Enoch was in the grave and therefore asked this question.

So what does the phrase "should not see death" mean? Notice it is not in the present tense, that he "did not see" death, but that he "should not see death." John 8:51, "Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall **never see death**" [*see also John 11:26*]. This phrase must mean "the second death," since all the Apostles kept Yah'shua's sayings and yet died the first death.

Based on Hebrews 9:27, "And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:" and Hebrews 11:13, "These all died in faith, not having received the promises," we must conclude that Enoch died the first death. To believe Enoch did not die is to deny the plain word of many other scriptures as well. For example, Romans 5:12, "...so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned" and Romans 5:14, "...death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned." Are we to believe that Enoch did not sin? Are we to believe that a man who was not yet

cleansed of sin by the blood of Yah'shua could enter heaven and dwell in Yahweh's presence?

### Enoch's translation

But what about his translation in Hebrews 11:5? Does that mean he didn't die? That's what most people carelessly assume without proof. The Bible does not say that Enoch went to heaven when he was translated. Instead, it says he "was not found." According to *Strong's, Thayer's and Bullinger's Greek Lexicons*, "**translate**" means "to put or place in another place, to transport, to transfer." **Nowhere in the Scripture does 'translate' mean to make immortal!**

The same Greek word is rendered "carried over" in Acts 7:16 where Jacob's body was 'translated' or 'transported' to Sychem, where he was buried! The Scriptures say Jacob was translated to the place of burial! Yahweh took Enoch and buried him somewhere so as not to be found, just as he did with the body of Moses in Deuteronomy 34:6. No man knows where Moses' or Enoch's grave is. Yahweh hid them for reasons known only to Him.

Notice another proof that 'translate' does not mean to make immortal. Paul wrote that the Father "hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath **translated** us into the kingdom of his dear Son" (*Colossians 1:13*). The apostle Paul says that he was already translated, even though he was still physically alive! Although he was once part of the darkness of this world, he was translated, removed from darkness, into the light of the kingdom of Yahweh while he was physically alive!

At the age of 65, Enoch had a son named Methuselah. But how long did Enoch walk with Yahweh?

Genesis 5:22, "And Enoch walked with Yahweh after he begat Methuselah three

hundred years, and begat sons and daughters."

So, Enoch followed Yahweh's ways for three hundred years. Notice that the Scripture does not record that Enoch is still walking with Yahweh. It says that Enoch **WALKED** with Yahweh for three hundred years, and not one year more. Why? Because "all the days of Enoch were three hundred sixty and five years" (*Genesis 5:23*). Paul says, in Colossians 1:10, "That ye might walk worthy of Yahweh." Enoch walked with Yahweh and pleased Yahweh. This is what Genesis 5:22,24 means when it says "Enoch walked with Yahweh."

1 Corinthians 15:20-23 says that all die and all shall be resurrected, but **Messiah must be first in the order**. Enoch could not possibly have preceded him, especially if he were still flesh and blood as it says in verses 49-52.

### The Transfiguration

The only remaining texts that puzzle people are those relative to the appearances of Moses and Elijah on the Mount of Transfiguration with Yah'shua (*Matthew 17:1-9, Mark 9:2-10, Luke 9:28-36*). After the Transfiguration, Yah'shua said, while leaving the mountain, "Tell the **vision** to no man" (*Matthew 17:9*). Yah'shua calls the transfiguration a **vision**! A vision is not a material reality, but a supernatural picture observed by the eyes. The same Greek word for "vision" was used of Peter's vision of the unclean beasts being made clean (*Acts 10:3,17,19; 11:5*). They were not real but a supernatural picture. In the case of the transfiguration it was a prophetic vision which would take place in the future. Peter, James and John saw the Son of Man glorified in the Kingdom through a prophetic vision. Here are other examples:

Acts 16:9, "And a vision appeared to Paul in the night; There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come

over into Macedonia, and help us." This also is something that was to happen in the future.

Acts 18:9-10, "Then spake Yahweh to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace: For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city." Yah'shua is telling Paul that, in the near future, no man shall hurt him.

Visions should not be interpreted as literal. For example, look at Genesis 37:5-10. When Joseph dreamed that his "sheaf arose, and stood upright," and his brother's sheaves bowed down to Joseph's sheaf (*verse 7*), Or when Joseph dreamed that "the sun and the moon and the eleven stars" bowed down to Joseph (*verse 9*), is this literal? No. This was a prophetic vision of something that was to occur in the future; when Joseph's mother, father, and brothers would bow down to him as King.

Both Moses and Elijah were still in their graves, but in vision both they and Yah'shua were seen in glory of the resurrection, and event to which Moses and Elijah have not yet attained at that time (*Hebrews 11:39*). The vision was granted the disciples after Yah'shua had spoken of the glory of immortality in the coming Kingdom.

### **Moses**

There cannot be any doubt that Moses died and was buried (*Deuteronomy 34:5-6*). Therefore, for him to have been in heaven while Yah'shua was still in the flesh, Moses had to be resurrected from the dead, receive eternal life, and "put on immortality" (*1 Corinthians 15:53*). But the Bible is clear that Yah'shua had to be the first one to be resurrected to eternal life. 1 Corinthians 15:20, "But now is the Messiah risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept."

The Apostle Paul said Yah'shua had to be "the firstborn from the dead" and "have the preeminence" (*Colossians 1:18*). If anyone

preceded Yah'shua, then he wasn't the firstborn from the dead. Since some people believe Enoch and Elijah did not die, but that Moses did die, then that would mean Moses had the preeminence over Yah'shua.

Therefore, since Yah'shua had to be the first to be resurrected unto eternal life and the first to ascend into heaven and stand before Yahweh, Moses could not possibly have been in heaven while Yah'shua was on earth

Hebrews 11:23-28 talks about Moses living by faith. Now read verses 39-40, which say that Moses did not receive the promise of a resurrection unto eternal life and perfection. This should settle any disputes to the contrary.

What about Michael and Satan disputing about Moses' body? Jude 9 does not say Michael won the dispute and then took Moses to heaven. Since there is no mention of heaven here, nor in the entire book of Jude, we should not assume he was taken there.

## **The Sabbaths Revealed:**

"Here is the patience of the Saints; here are those who keep the Commandments of Yahweh and the faith of Yah'shua the Messiah" (*Rev.14:12*).

Upon opening our Bible, purposed to prayerful investigation, we are told to study to show ourselves approved unto Yahweh - to learn Yahweh's Will. We are commanded, as Israelites, to grow in knowledge as well as in grace (*II Peter 3:18*). All scripture is given by inspiration of Yahweh and is profitable to correct and reprove us (*II Timothy 3:16*), where we have, through assumption, ignorance, lack of knowledge, false teaching or prejudice, been in error.

There is one religious body which lays claim to being the sole infallible religious authority! It claims the Bible "is not a sufficient guide to heaven". It claims, through its own church leaders, that it, by its own authority, substituted Sunday for the Sabbath. This religious body offers the fact that almost all protestant and non-denominational Christians in the Western world, have bowed down to its dictum of Sunday observance as proof of its absolute authority as the Holy Roman Empire; the Catholic church!

However, for those willing to accept Yahweh's Word as the sole infallible authority, we are soon able to prove that Yah'shua the Messiah is the founder of the true New Covenant Congregation of Yahweh and that by His Word, it was prophesied in both Old and New Covenants, that men, under Satan's influence would cause "the whole World to be deceived" by changing "times and laws" (*Daniel 7:25*).

The Messiah taught His message - His Gospel - to the disciples during His mortal human lifetime. He founded the New Covenant Congregation on the day of Pentecost, after He had been resurrected, glorified and ascended

to Heaven. Peter said; "Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, behold I lay in Sion [*the Congregation*] a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on Him shall not be confounded. Unto you therefore which believe He is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed" (*I Peter 2:6-8*). Here the Messiah is plainly said to be the corner stone or the "Head" or "Chief" stone, and in Eph. 5:23 we read; "The Messiah is the Head of the Congregation". He, His written Word and the Bible are the supreme authority.

We are a creation of Yahweh - created for a purpose.

Yahweh's laws and decrees determine our happiness, well-being and success here and now - and our fate for eternity. Yahweh does not allow us to decide what is sin, His Word determines what is sin and compels us to decide whether or not to sin. Sin is doing what Yahweh says is harmful and injurious to one's self and/or to others and/or what deprives you of Yahweh's blessings of peace, happiness, security, abundant and joyful living, as a condition to Yahweh's supreme gift of eternal life.

Yah'shua the Messiah had a considerable amount to say and to teach about the Sabbath and its observance. Repeatedly, He said the Gospel came direct from Yahweh the Father and the Apostles make it clear that "The beginning of the Gospel of Yah'shua the Messiah" (*Mark 1:1*), is not the Gospel from Men about the Messiah, but the Gospel the Messiah preached as given Him from Yahweh. Yah'shua, when teaching as part of His Gospel on how to observe the Sabbath, said: "The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for

the Sabbath: therefore the Son of Man is Lord also of the Sabbath" (*Mark 2:27-28*).

This pivotal text says the Sabbath "was made". It had to have a maker. Yahweh is a Creator, "who created all things" (*Eph. 3:9*). Notice (*Col. 1:16-18*): "For by Him [*Yahweh*] were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible...and He is the head of the body, the congregation". The Sabbath was "made" by Yahweh, "for man" and obviously for a purpose, as Yahweh does nothing without a purpose!

Gen. 2:2-3; "And on the seventh day Yahweh ended his work which He had made; and he rested the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And Yahweh blessed the seventh day and sanctified it: because in it he had rested from all His work which Yahweh had created and made".

There were seven full days of creation. On the seventh day Yahweh "made" the Sabbath, not because He was tired and needed a rest, for Yahweh "fainteth not, neither is weary" (*Isa. 40:28*), but "on the seventh day He rested, and was refreshed" (*Exodus 31:17*). So Yahweh rested to put His divine presence in that day, blessing it and sanctifying it to be "refreshed", not because He was weary. Yahweh "made the Sabbath" while resting on the seventh day, as Yahweh, "blessed the seventh day and sanctified it".

Sanctified means to "set apart for holy use or purpose". He set apart this day for holy use - a day "made for man" to physically rest, and to attain spiritual refreshment. Yahweh "hallowed" (*made holy*) the seventh day of every week (*Ex. 20:11*). The weekly "holy" Sabbath is a segment of Yahweh's time HE MADE HOLY, AND HE PROMISED TO KEEP HOLY, by resting and placing His presence in it forever! Yahweh made it, "for a perpetual covenant" (*Ex. 31:16*).

In the Ten Commandments He commanded us to KEEP IT HOLY WITH HIM! It is a sin to profane that which is holy to Yahweh. Yahweh called to Moses out of the burning bush; "put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground" (*Ex. 3:2-5*).

Was the ground holy a mile away, or did it make a difference whether Moses took off his shoes, or where? That particular bit of ground was "holy" to Yahweh - Yahweh's very presence in that bush made the ground around it holy!

In the same manner, Yahweh's presence in His Sabbath made it "holy time". Four thousand years later, when this same God – instructed His Messiah, He was still putting His presence in that same weekly Sabbath "as His custom was". He is the same today as yesterday and will be forever; He is still KEEPING HIS SABBATHS HOLY by putting His presence in them! The same Sabbaths He "sanctified"; set apart for that very purpose!

Notice a prophecy for our time, in *Isa. 58:13-14*: "If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on MY HOLY DAY, and call the Sabbath a delight, [*not a yoke of bondage*], the holy of Yahweh, honorable: and shalt honor Him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasures, nor speaking thine own words: Then shalt thou delight thyself in Yahweh; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father, for the mouth of Yahweh hath spoken it".

We honour Yahweh by keeping holy (*AS Yahweh DOES*) those things that He has made holy. We dishonour Yahweh when we think the ideas and dictates of men - who have no authority to make anything holy, must be right. Yahweh has commanded us to "keep His

Sabbath holy". We can not keep holy what Yahweh has not made holy first. The world, including religion, consists of a system of beliefs and customs which are "convenient" and have been derived from "the way that seems right to man", which is the way of sin. Men evolve many arguments to evade the Commandments of Yahweh. Because the carnal mind is hostile to Yahweh and not subject to His Law (*Rom. 8:7*). When men reject the Commandments of Yahweh that they may hold their traditions, they devise arguments to justify their rebellion (*Mark 7:6-9*).

Abraham, the "father of our faith" kept Yahweh's Sabbath Commandments 430 years before his descendants reached Mt. Sinai where Yahweh gave the 10 Commandments to the people led by Moses. "Because that Abraham obeyed my voice, and kept my charge, my Commandments, my statutes and my laws" (*Gen. 26:5*). Yahweh is speaking - explaining why He made the great promises to Abraham. So Abraham had kept the Sabbath because, as we read in the New Covenant, that to break any one of the Commandments is sin (*James 2:10-11*).

How do we know which day is still the Sabbath? Adam was living with Yahweh's presence and knew which day was the 7th. Yah'shua called Abel "righteous" (*Matt. 23:35*), so Abel kept the Sabbath. Enoch "walked with Yahweh", so Enoch kept the Sabbath. Noah kept the Sabbath because Noah was a preacher of righteousness (*II Peter 2:5*) - and "all thy commandments are righteousness" (*Ps. 119:172*). Abraham kept it. But after the death of Jacob and Joseph, the children of Israel became slaves in Egypt for about 150 years and were not permitted to keep the Sabbath. There was no Bible or written record of Yahweh's Laws and many doubtless lost track of the Sabbath.

But the Bible says "Yahweh's Word", the "Word of Yahweh endureth forever". One month after leaving Egypt, these people arrived at Mount Sinai, and in the wilderness Yahweh revealed to them by miracles, which day was the Sabbath, and whether it makes any difference whether it is kept. "Then said Yahweh unto Moses, behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day...that I may prove them, whether they will walk in my law, or not".

This was first spoken - preached by Yahweh on a Sabbath, three weeks before the 10 Commandments were given. Yahweh's law was in force and effect. Yahweh also preached to Adam on the first Sabbath - offering him the gift of eternal life. Yahweh is again preaching - putting his presence in the Sabbath - this time to Israel - through Moses, on the Sabbath. And when the people refused to obey and went out to gather manna on the Sabbath, Yahweh rebuked them: "And Yahweh said unto Moses, how long refuse ye to keep my Commandments and my laws? See, for that Yahweh has given you the Sabbath, therefore he giveth you on the sixth day the bread of two days; abide ye every man in his place" (*Ex. 16:28-29*).

It definitely made a difference to Yahweh, who is the same today as He was yesterday and will be forever. "Yahweh has given you the Sabbath". Carnal man gave professing Christians Sunday - pagans, cut off from Yahweh - Baal worshippers - the "Sun" God, it came out of paganism, "abominations in the sight of Yahweh".

Yahweh spoke His Commandments; "Unto all your assembly and he added no more". It is a complete law - a spiritual set of laws and it was the basis in which the Old Covenant was made. The basis of the New Covenant we read in Hebrews 8:10; "for this is

the covenant that I will make with the House of Israel after those days, saith Yahweh; I will put my laws into their mind and write them in their hearts; and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people".

The Messiah said on the Sermon on the Mount "Think not that I came to destroy [end] the law" - but professing Christians excuse their disobedience by pretending the law died on the stake [*"Cross"*]. The Messiah said "swear not" - professing Christians and Christian nations universally hold up their right hands and swear. The Messiah said "love your enemies" - professing Christians go to war and kill them. The Messiah said "keep the Commandments", one of which says "remember the Sabbath day...to keep it holy". Professing Christians have forgotten it - they don't keep it holy and they try to keep an "unholy" day holy - you can't keep ice water hot - you can only keep hot water hot. The only weekly day Yahweh ever made holy was His Sabbath!

It is utterly impossible to keep Sunday or Friday holy as Yahweh never first made them holy; and man has no power to make anything holy! What Yahweh commanded to remember, rebellious man resorts to every argument of human reason to justify forgetting. If the 10 Commandments were abolished at the stake, then there is no law. With no law, there is no transgression. Hence no one has sinned since the stake, therefore we don't need a Saviour. Paul plainly clarifies this in Romans 4:15.

Yahweh stated the Sabbaths were a perpetual covenant, special to Him - that we shall "keep it holy" and He explains why a little further on in Exodus 31:13; "for it is a sign between me and throughout your generations: that ye may know that I am Yahweh that doth sanctify you". Yahweh commanded, "throughout your generations" to keep the Sabbath as "a sign" between Yahweh's people

and Yahweh. The Hebrew word "owth" is translated "sign" and means a flag, beacon, monument or other identifying mark or symbol. In other words it is an "identity" or "identifying sign" between Yahweh and His people in perpetuity - forever. This "sign" announces two things - "...that ye may know that I am Yahweh that doth sanctify you".

First, it is the sign by which we may know that He is Yahweh - it identifies Yahweh. But doesn't everyone know who Yahweh is? Absolutely not! The Bible says this whole world is deceived (*Rev. 12:9*). This world has a god - a false god - Satan, who pretends to be an "angel of light" (*II Cor. 11:14-15*). He has his deceived ministers of "righteousness", his many religious organizations, and false "faiths", most of which are professing Christians (*II Cor 11:14-15*) as well as Buddhists, Shintoists, Confucian's, Communists, New Age Universal Force/Power thinkers, etc.

Many have appropriated the Christian name "for such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of the Messiah" (*verse 13*). Satan palms himself off as Yahweh - the Bible calls him the god of this world. Many well intentioned Christians have been deceived into believing they know the truth and a deceived world is sincere in its belief. But the true God is the one we obey - and mainstream Christianity does not teach us to obey every word of Yahweh - only those that are "convenient" or "traditionally acceptable", which effectively means traditional Christians are obeying Satan!

Yahweh gave man His Sabbath for the purpose of keeping mankind in the true knowledge and true worship of the true God - the Creator of all things. Yahweh gave us the most enduring, lasting, imperishable thing a man can know - a recurring space of time, as the day He set apart as a memorial of the very creation we are part of. He took the only day

which points constantly, every seventh day of the week, to the very existence of the all-powerful, almighty Yahweh - the Creator.

The Sabbath firstly identifies Yahweh - the very day which Yahweh set aside for physical rest and spiritual refreshment; it points as a memorial to whom we are to be thankful - the Creator/Ruler of all that is. The Sabbath also was given as a sign which identifies who are the people of Yahweh and who are not - "that ye may know that I am Yahweh that doth SANCTIFY YOU" (*Ex. 31:13*). On the 7th day of every week, the Eternal sanctified - that is, He set apart for holy use, the Sabbath day for those who are His people!

We see that Yahweh says it is also a sign that He sanctifies - sets apart HIS PEOPLE from others, for His holy purpose - those who are His people. In Old Covenant times His people were the people of Israel. In New Covenant times, His people are those of the body of the Messiah - His Congregation of obedient believers - the truly converted, Spirit begotten Israelites. The Sabbath is Yahweh's sign which identifies those who are truly His. Yah'shua said, "and why call ye me Lord, Lord, and not do the things which I say" (*Luke 6:46*) and "not everyone that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter the Kingdom of heaven, but he that doeth the Will of my Father which is in heaven" (*Matt. 7:21*). Only those who obey Yahweh can be His children and enter His Kingdom at the Second Coming. Most others will enter 1,000 years later.

Regarding idols as false and counterfeit gods, the second commandment says: "Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them nor serve them" - that is, obey them - "for I Yahweh thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity [disobedience] of the fathers upon the children...And showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments". The Sabbath Command is

the only one of the ten which is a sign identifying who are the real and true Israelites today. It is like a "test" command. The world acknowledges the other nine, but positively rebels against the Sabbath - the crucial test of obedience. The Sabbath covenant was made "for a perpetual covenant" (*Ex. 31:16*) "...between me [*Yahweh*] and the children of Israel [*us*] forever".

The terms and conditions for us - the children of Israel, were obedience; the rewards promised were material for this world and through New Covenant faith in the Messiah - "eternal inheritance" (*Heb. 9:15*). We are "children of Israel", as, "there is neither Hebrew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female, for ye are all one in Yah'shua the Messiah. And if ye [Gentiles] be the Messiah's, then ye are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise" (*Gal. 3:28-29*).

"According to the promise", means we are heirs and we are also subject to the terms and conditions of obedience! Yahweh is no respecter of persons and He has only one law for all. We read in Hosea how Yahweh called the House of Israel (*the lost 10 tribes; us*) as "Lo ammi", meaning not my people (*Hos 1:9*). The first 2 chapters are a prophecy for the modern Western world - the lost 10 tribes, who are not "Jewish" as many erroneously assume. The very first place in the Bible that the mistranslated word Jew appears is in II Kings 16:5-6, and here we find the tribes of Judah and Benjamin at war with the kingdom of Israel who is allied with Syria! In these passages we find that the House of Judah (*one of the 12 tribes*) refused to rebel against the House of David.

Judah and the tribe of Benjamin formed a separate kingdom called the kingdom of Judah. They and those that call themselves "Jews", kept, and still keep to this day, the weekly Sabbaths and Yahweh's seven annual

Sabbaths and Holy Days. No place in the Bible are the 10 tribes called Jews. The name does not properly apply to the Kingdom of Judah. Jews are not Israelites. The other "lost 10 tribes" have migrated according to Bible prophecy and history records to northern and western Europe and North America.

The true Israelites – Hebrews, as well as the Jews are indeed recognized by the world today as Yahweh's people, because they have kept Yahweh's identifying sign; the Sabbath. The identity of the Hebrew people is therefore not lost. Their identity as racial descendants from ancient Israel is known. The far more numerous "Lost 10 Tribes" identity is not known - the world supposes that the Jews are Israel, when instead the Jews are simply masquerading as descendants of Judah. Here again the whole world is deceived, even as to the true identity to who really are the chosen birthright people of Yahweh.

Recorded in prophecy for the modern western world - the Lost 10 Tribes, Yahweh says; "For she did not know that I gave her corn, and wine and oil, and multiplied her silver and gold, which they prepared for Baal" (*Hosea 2:9*). This pictures us today. Yahweh has given us unprecedented national wealth as He unconditionally promised Abraham - not because of ours', but Abraham's obedience. How have we used this wealth? In Baal worship - the day of Baal the Sun-god - called Sunday - in Baal's Christmas, Easter and other pagan "holi" days, as so-called Christianity, which is the very antithesis of the true religion of Yah'shua the Messiah. In verse 9 Yahweh says what He is going to do about it: "Therefore I will return, and take away my corn in the time thereof, and my wine in the season thereof". That is the famine prophesied by Joel, Ezekiel and the Messiah as well as in the Revelation. It is a dual prophecy - once fulfilled

in ancient Israel and will again be fulfilled on their descendants (*us*) in the near future.

Yahweh continues in verse 11: "I will also cause her mirth to cease, her feast days..." - those of Baal, Christmas, Easter, New Year, Lenten season, Halloween - "her new moons and her Sabbaths..." - not Yahweh's but those of Baal, which our people call their Sabbaths - "and I will punish her for the feast days of the Baals...Therefore, behold I will allure her [*Israel*] and bring her into the wilderness" - in slavery and captivity - "and speak to her heart...and it shall be at that day" - the Second Coming of the Messiah - "that thou shalt call me Ishi [*my husband*]; and shalt call me no more Baali...and I will say to them which were not my people [*lost 10 tribes*], thou art my people; and they shall say, thou art my God" (*Hosea 2:14,16,18,23*).

The Jews were made slaves because they broke Yahweh's Sabbath, see (*Neh. 13:15,17-18*). Israel was defeated for Sabbath breaking and Ezekiel was commissioned to "go" from where he was among the Jews to the House of Israel. "Go speak unto the house of Israel" Yahweh said (*Ezek. 3:1*). But Ezekiel was a slave, and never physically in person, took that message. With Yahweh nothing is impossible. Ezekiel is taking that message to them (*us*) today, by means of having it written in his book in the Bible, to be delivered during these New Covenant times!

The True New Covenant Sabbath can be proved easily. Paul and Barnabas were teaching the Gentile converts; "But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day and sat down. And after the reading of the law and the prophets the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them saying, `Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on'. Then Paul stood up and spoke preaching the Messiah to

them. And when the Hebrews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next Sabbath" (*Acts 13:14-15, 42-44*).

Now Paul was preaching the "grace of Yahweh" (*verse 43*) and here was an opportunity to explain that the Sabbath was done away - why should these Gentiles wait a whole week in order to be taught on the next Sabbath? Paul could have taught the very next day - Sunday - but in *verse 44* we find that; "And the next Sabbath day came almost the whole city to hear the word of Yahweh". Here Paul waited a week, even when pressed by eager converts, passing up a Sunday in order to preach to the Gentiles on the Sabbath day. In *Acts 15:21* we read; "for Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath day".

This is important because in *Acts 15:1-2, and 14-21*, we find a big dissension over whether Gentile converts must be circumcised or not. The apostles set out some basic advice and directions for these converts, including the above statement concerning the law of Moses. Why? Because they had been hearing Yahweh's law read and expounded every Sabbath and did not need further instruction in this area! It shows that the Gentile converts, who had normally never kept the Sabbath, had recently started doing so after they were converted under the teaching of Paul and Barnabas.

In *Acts 16:12-15*, we find Paul and Silas at Philippi: "we were in that city abiding certain days. And on the Sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made, and spoke unto the women that resorted thither". It was Paul's custom to go to a place of prayer and worship on the Sabbath. The command says "Six days shalt thou work" just as much as it says "remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy". In *Acts 18:1-4*, we find

evidence of Paul specifically keeping 84 Sabbaths, and also that he continued there a year and 6 months - working on the weekdays as a tent maker, and preaching EVERY Sabbath. And Paul "as his manner was, went unto them, and three Sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures [*Old Covenant*]".

It was his manner, his custom as it was with all his companions. Paul followed Yah'shua and commanded the Gentile converts to follow him even as he followed the Messiah. Yah'shua "as his custom was...went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day" (*Luke 4:16*). There are countless other New Covenant examples of the Messiah, the apostles and the Congregation, gathering together for prayer and to SHARE their revealed understanding of the Word of Yahweh on the Sabbath. Yahweh's New Covenant Congregation would not have been formed, had not the people been "gathered together of one accord..." on a Sabbath, the very day of Pentecost. (*I Cor. 12:13*): "By one Spirit we are all Baptized into one body" - the body of the Messiah - Yahweh's true Congregation. Receiving Yahweh's Spirit makes us partakers of the "divine nature" (*II Peter 1:4*). Such are the Children of Yahweh - and such compose Yahweh's Congregation, with the Messiah as the Head of the Body. Yah'shua the Messiah said in *John 15*: "I am the vine, ye are the branches". We are told to abide in Him, (*verse 4-5*) or spiritually we can do nothing. A grape branch can do nothing unless joined to the vine.

The Bible says about Israelite Fellowship; "that which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Yah'shua the Messiah...If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in the darkness [*that is,*

*disobey His commands*], we lie, and do not the truth; but if we walk in light [*being doers of the word and not hearers only*] being obedient, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Yah'shua the Messiah His Son cleanseth us from all sin" (1 John 1:3,6,7).

We can have true Israelite fellowship only when each of us is joined to the Messiah, and to the Father - as branches joined to the vine. When people meet on their own human-appointed day, trying to join themselves together in a church group, the Messiah is not present with them in that fellowship. He never puts His presence in such a man-made "holi" day - He puts it in His HOLY DAY!

This is confirmed in Scripture of Matthew 18:1,19-20, where Yah'shua the Messiah, when speaking to His disciples; His obedient ones: "at that time the disciples came to Yah'shua, saying, `who then is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?'"...again I say to you that if two of you agree on earth concerning anything that they ask, it will be done for them by My Father in Heaven. For where two or more are gathered together in My name, I am there in the midst of them." Here Yah'shua is plainly saying that He would indeed be "present" in the midst of His "disciples", the truly obedient members of the body of His Congregation, or more precisely, His saints.

He would be in their blessed presence on any or every day of the week, as indeed His true "followers of the way" would never be gathered together following pagan traditions or false doctrine. The special "presence" that Yahweh promises His obedient followers who gather together and keep the Sabbath Holy, is the very fact that for doing so, He will sanctify them, that is bless them with His Holy Spirit, which sets them apart from the rest of this world for His use and His Holy purpose.

Yah'shua nowhere implies that He will put His presence in the midst of them that are disobedient, or that Yahweh will sanctify such behaviour; quite the contrary! Yah'shua did say quite categorically "Howbeit in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men" and, "Not everyone that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter the Kingdom of Heaven; but he that doeth the Will of my Father which is in Heaven". The Messiah plainly says that whatever you do, even in His name, while not being obedient to the Father's Will, is all utterly in vain!

Some 4,000 years after Yahweh, blessed and made the Sabbath holy, the Messiah came in human flesh and still kept the Sabbath holy by confirming Yahweh's presence in it "as his custom was". Yahweh had not changed - He is still the same today. So His presence is in His day, the same today as then. When Yahweh's own obedient children walk with the Messiah in harmony and obedience, and join in assembly on His Holy Day, they actually have spiritual fellowship with the Messiah and Yahweh the Father.

When people assemble on Sunday, the Messiah's presence is not in that day. You may argue to have your own way, but the Messiah Himself said you can worship Him in vain. The Bible says "Yahweh is Spirit; and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth" (John 4:24). Churches and Pastors today say "Worship Yahweh according to the dictates of your own conscience". That is contrary to what Yahweh says. Yahweh says "in spirit and in truth", and Yah'shua said plainly "thy word is truth". Yahweh's Word; the Bible, is truth. The Bible authorizes and explains why the Sabbath is for gathering in assembly for physical rest and spiritual refreshment, because His presence is in His Holy day, evidenced by His promise to keep it holy, and to sanctify those of us who keep it holy with Him!

Those who assemble to worship Yahweh contrary to the way Yahweh's Word commands are not doing so in spirit and in truth, and Yahweh will not accept their worship! The Messiah Himself said you can not only profess His name and call yourself a Israelite, but you may actually worship Him and do it in vain - still totally "unsaved". "Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of Yahweh, ye hold the tradition of men...ye REJECT the commandment of Yahweh, that ye may keep your own tradition" (*Mark 7:7-9*). Of these traditions, Yahweh says they are: "an abomination unto Yahweh"!

The Sabbath Command tells us how to keep Yahweh's Sabbath Holy: "Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of Yahweh your God. In it [*the Sabbath*] you shall DO NO WORK...therefore Yahweh blessed the Sabbath day and HALLOWED it" (*Exodus 20:8-11*). "Hallowed", means that Yahweh set the Sabbath apart as Holy - a day MADE FOR MAN, for man to be in the very presence of the Spirit of Yahweh. A day of physical rest and a special day for thanksgiving, to "continually offer the sacrifice of praise to Yahweh, that is the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to His name" (*Hebrews 13:15,16*).

Yahweh further instructs us through Nehemiah, that we should do NO BUYING OR SELLING on the Sabbath: "What evil thing is this [buying, selling - conducting commerce] that you do, by which you profane the Sabbath day?" (*13:15-17*).

All those who conduct commerce (buy or sell - which forces others to work) on a Sabbath, or who perform their customary work - that source of livelihood by which they earn their household income, and those who keep such false "pagan-come-Christian" traditions as "Sun"day gatherings, Christmas, Easter, etc.,

are rejecting the Commandment of Yahweh, disobeying His command to keep the Sabbath holy, and are guilty of sin! Any worship they might offer, as well as their attempt to live a "Christian" lifestyle, is all utterly in vain - Yah'shua the Messiah said so!

The definition of an Israelite is one who has received the Gift of Yahweh's Holy Spirit and is being led by the Spirit of Yahweh. In other words, the Messiah in you is your hope of glory (*Col. 1:27*). It means literally, that the Messiah is in you in Spirit, living through you.

Our Saviour who literally comes inside us - in our minds and hearts, to cleanse us and save us from within. Now if Yah'shua is in you, will He in you, profane His own HOLY day (*by working or conducting commerce*), or worse yet, by observing a pagan "holi" day instead - impossible!

## **Israelite Tithes & Offerings:**

Yah'shua the Messiah said, "I will build my Congregation" (*Matt. 16:18*). And in the book of Hebrews, the Messiah's Congregation is referred to as: "the GENERAL ASSEMBLY AND CONGREGATION OF THE FIRSTBORN WHO ARE REGISTERED IN HEAVEN" (*12:23*).

The Bible also has a lot to say about tithes and offerings, most of which may come as quite a surprise to today's traditional Christian.

"Behold, I Myself have taken your brethren the Levites from among the children of Israel; they are a gift to you, given by Yahweh, to do the work of the tabernacle of meeting"...and Yahweh spoke to Aaron: "Here, I Myself have also given you charge of My heave offerings, all the Holy gifts of the children of Israel; I have given them as a portion to you and your sons, as an ordinance forever. This shall be yours of the most Holy things reserved from the fire; every offering of theirs, every grain offering and every sin offering and every trespass offering which they render to me,..."(*Numbers 18:6,8,9*).

"All the heave offerings of the Holy things...I have given to you...as an ordinance forever; it is a covenant of salt forever before Yahweh with you and your descendants with you...behold, I have given the children of Levi all the tithes in Israel as an inheritance in return for the work which they perform, the work of the tabernacle of meeting" (*Numbers 18:19,21*).

In these verses from the book of Numbers, Yahweh is instructing physical Israel that He has given the Levites to them as priests forever, and that they shall perform the work of the tabernacle of meeting. Yahweh also instructs Aaron, the high priest, that he and the Levites shall be entitled to eat (*live from*) certain portions of the "offerings" that the

Israelites are commanded to make.

Yahweh makes it clear to all Israel that the covenant is forever, respecting the PHYSICAL descendants of Levi and the PHYSICAL TABERNACLE OF MEETING. The physical tabernacle was constructed by the Israelites from special "free-will" offerings Yahweh commanded specifically for that purpose.

The physical, man-made tabernacle was commanded to be constructed in order that the people had a means of "spiritually meeting" or communicating with Yahweh, through a series of rituals. (*see Ex.25 and 36.*)

"Then Yahweh said to Aaron: `You shall have no inheritance in their land, nor shall you have any portion among them; I am your portion and your inheritance among the children of Israel'" (*Numbers 18:20*). Yahweh repeated these commands in verses 23,24,26, and several other places in the Old Covenant. Yahweh is here making it clear that because of their spiritual work as priests, the Levites would receive a spiritual inheritance, rather than a physical inheritance as promised to the remaining Israelites. This is a TYPE of what would be promised to modern spiritual Israel under the New Covenant Priesthood, as prophesied in many Old Covenant verses, and as set out throughout the New Covenant.

"You shall truly tithe all the increase of your grain that the field produces YEAR BY YEAR. And you shall eat before Yahweh your God, in the place where He chooses to make His name abide, the tithe of your grain and your new wine and your oil...that you may learn to fear Yahweh your God always. But if the journey is too long for you, so that you are not able to carry your tithe,...then you shall exchange it for money,...and you shall spend that money for whatever your heart desires: for oxen or sheep, for wine or similar drink,...you shall eat (*the tithe*) there before Yahweh your

God, and YOU SHALL REJOICE, YOU AND YOUR HOUSEHOLD...at the end of every third year you shall bring out the tithe of your produce of that year and store it up within your gates. And the Levite, because he has no portion nor inheritance with you, and the stranger and the fatherless and the widow who are within your gates, may come and eat and be satisfied,..." (Deuteronomy 14:22-29).

Here is the SINGLE PLACE in the Bible where Yahweh is setting forth His precise PURPOSE FOR TITHING! Unlike the sacrificial offerings, presented as physical sacrifices for sins, or the various thanksgiving offerings, presented to honour Yahweh for abundant harvests and flocks, or the free-will offerings used to build the physical tabernacle of meeting, TITHING WAS A VERY SPECIAL ORDINANCE, PURPOSED TO INSTIL FAITH IN Yahweh, AS WELL AS STRONG FAMILY AND COMMUNITY VALUES.

Yahweh's plan for humans is that we grow into "children of Yahweh", and the concept of "family", is extremely important to Him. Yahweh gave a PERPETUAL COMMAND to His people to keep several annual festivals in His honour. These festivals were/are to be kept by "families". Yahweh instructed the head of EVERY HOUSEHOLD to save a FESTIVAL TITHE (*one tenth of his increase*) to ensure that the "FAMILIES", THE "LEVITES" AND THE "POOR" would be able to keep these festivals as ordained.

"So YOU SHALL REJOICE in every good thing which Yahweh your God has given to YOU AND YOUR HOUSE, you and the Levite and the stranger who is among you. When you have finished laying aside all the tithe of your increase in the THIRD year, which is the year of tithing, and have given it to the Levite, the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow, so that they may eat within your gates and be filled, then you shall say before Yahweh

your God: `I have removed the Holy tithe from my house, and also have given them to the Levite, the stranger, the fatherless and the widow, according to all your commandments'" (Deuteronomy 26:11-14).

Yahweh instructed His people (*ALL OF US - that wish to be "His people"*) to tithe annually, in order that our families might afford to participate in the annual festivals, in honour of Yahweh with genuine feelings of thanksgiving. Yahweh further instructed the people to set good examples in the community by helping the poor. He ordained that every third year, an ADDITIONAL annual tithe amount should be given ENTIRELY to the Levites, the strangers, the fatherless and the widows, so that they may "eat within your gates and be filled".

NOWHERE IN THE ENTIRE BIBLE does Yahweh ever say, or imply, that anyone is to tithe to support the NEW COVENANT ministry or that tithes are designated for the work of preaching the Gospel. TITHES ARE ABSOLUTELY NOT FOR "supporting the ministry" or "preaching the Gospel"! TITHES ARE FOR THE "FAMILIES" OF Yahweh, AND THE POOR!

In physical Israel, tithes, and offerings, primarily sacrificial, were used IN PART to support the priests, while the primary purpose for the annual tithes were to ensure families were able to partake of the annual Holy Festivals of Yahweh. The ADDITIONAL THIRD YEAR TITHE was for helping to look after the poor and needy in the community every third year. Special free-will offerings were used only to build the tabernacle of meeting.

Both Old and New Covenants, are replete with prophetic warnings of false ministers, teaching false doctrines, and STEALING Yahweh's HOLY TITHE FROM ITS INTENDED PURPOSE in these New Covenant times!

For example, when prophesying for OUR TIME, (*the latter days*), Isaiah was inspired to write of these false ministers: "For behold, Yahweh...takes away from Jerusalem and from Judah...the judge and the prophet and the diviner...For...the plunder of the poor is in your houses [*the false prophets*]..Yes they are greedy dogs which never have enough. They are shepherds who CANNOT UNDERSTAND, they all look to their own way, EVERY ONE FOR HIS OWN GAIN"! (3:1-3,14;56: 11,12).

Again, in prophecy for our time, Micah warned: "Now hear this, you heads...and rulers of Israel, who abhor justice and pervert all equity...her heads judge for a bribe, her PRIESTS TEACH FOR PAY, and her PROPHETS DIVINE FOR MONEY. Yet they lean on Yahweh, and say, `Is not Yahweh among us?'...therefore because of you Zion shall be plowed like a field, Jerusalem shall become a heap of ruins" (3:8-12). When will this happen? The very next verse: "Now it shall come to pass in the LATTER DAYS" (4:1). In other words, it is in the process of happening RIGHT NOW!

"Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy and say to them, `thus says Yahweh your God to the shepherds: Woe to the shepherds of Israel who feed themselves! Should not the shepherds feed the flocks? You eat the fat and clothe yourselves with the wool; you slaughter the fatlings, but you do not feed the flock'" (*Ezekiel 34:2,3*). This is prophesy for end-time spiritual Israel - FOR US, RIGHT NOW!. Here Yahweh is warning through the prophet Ezekiel of shepherds - meaning ministers or priests, that would abuse their authority in these end times.

Ezekiel is speaking in prophetic symbolic language but his message is all too clear. As in a great many other Old Covenant prophecies, Ezekiel is pointing out that in these

end times, ministers and priests would take advantage of the people's material possessions in order to suit their own selfish and/or egotistic ambitions, by twisting the intent of Yahweh's tithing principles.

Throughout the New Covenant, we are warned of these same events occurring. Paul, in writing to the Corinthians, declared how he dealt with the matter, and gave advice to his readers - US: "Give no offence, either to the Jews or to the Greeks or to the Congregation of Yahweh [*where membership is "registered in heaven"*], just as I also please all men in all things, NOT SEEKING MY OWN PROFIT, but the profit of many, that they may be saved. Imitate me, just as I also imitate the Messiah" (1 Cor. 10:32-33).

"If anyone teaches otherwise and does not consent to wholesome words...and to the doctrine which is according to godliness, he is proud, knowing nothing...men of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth, WHO SUPPOSE THAT GODLINESS IS A MEANS OF GAIN"! (1 Timothy 6:3-5).

"therefore take heed to yourselves and to all the flock, among which His Holy Spirit HAS MADE YOU OVERSEERS, to shepherd the congregation of Yahweh which He purchased with His own blood" (*Acts 20:28*). Here Paul is speaking to the Ephesian elders, and to all of us in spiritual Israel, making it clear that the congregation of Yahweh, the congregation Yah'shua the Messiah said He would build, has been established.

Those of us that are led by His Holy Spirit, the elect that cannot be deceived, have been made overseers by His Holy Spirit, to guard the truth and to perform the work of shepherds for end time spiritual Israel. Paul in effect was saying that all of us that have been baptized by His Holy Spirit are responsible for ministering to the needs of the rest of the people - the congregation, the "called out

ones", and for maintaining the true doctrine that the Messiah preached, concerning the kingdom of Yahweh.

"For I know this, that after my departure savage wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock. Also from among yourselves men will rise up, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after themselves" (*Acts 20:29,30*). Here Paul is saying that false ministers, would come in to teach false doctrine at the expense of the flock in these end times. This false ministry made up of many false apostles would speak a perverted version of the truth; something that would sound and appear like the truth, but would nonetheless be twisted in some manner so as to provide a means for these deceitful workers to "draw", or lure away the believers, to satisfy their own selfish financial gain and/or egotistical ambitions.

"And now brethren, I commend you to Yahweh and to the Word of His grace, which is able to build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified" (*Acts 20:32*). Here Paul is giving sound advice to all Spirit-filled Israelites. He is pointing toward our High Priest, Yah'shua the Messiah, who became the "Word". He is telling us where to turn when we need to be built up spiritually. We need to turn to Yahweh and to Yahweh's Word - Yah'shua the Messiah, who was the Word, who being born of the flesh, died to become our High Priest, of the New Covenant congregation He said He would build. When seeking the truth of our salvation; our inheritance, we must look to the Word of Yahweh, not to men's words.

"I have coveted no one's silver or gold or apparel. Yes, you yourselves know that these hands have provided for my necessities, and for those who were with me" (*Acts 20:33,34*). Paul is pointing out that while he had been teaching in the synagogues each Sabbath and

ministering to the needs of the people, he did so at his own expense and even provided for the expense of any of his assistants by the work of his own hands.

"I have shown you in every way, by labouring like this, that you must support the weak. And remember the words of the Lord Yah'shua the Messiah, that He said, 'It is more blessed to give than to receive'" (*Acts 20:35*).

Paul was reinforcing the Old Covenant examples of being a strong, contributing member of the community. Paul himself, was labouring with his own hands - working to look after his needs and those of his fellow workers, while taking from his own time and expense, to preach the Gospel to those who needed it - the "weak in spirit", every Sabbath as his custom was.

Paul believed that it was more blessed to give spiritual enlightenment to the people than it was to receive material reward for so doing. Paul was one of the New Covenant's best examples of how to be a disciple of the Word of Yahweh. Paul's special calling was indeed to be a disciple to the Gentiles.

"Do you not know that you are the temple of Yahweh and that the Spirit of Yahweh dwells in you? If anyone defiles the temple of Yahweh, Yahweh will destroy him, for the temple of Yahweh is Holy, which temple you are" (*1 Corinthians 3:16,17*). Paul is clarifying to the Israelites at Corinth that things have changed. There is no longer need of a physical tabernacle of meeting built with human hands, that in fact, His Holy Spirit now dwells in our very bodies - which have become "temples of Yahweh". Those at Corinth were learning of the new spiritual age WE ARE NOW LIVING IN!

"If we have sown spiritual things for you, is it a great thing if we reap your material things? If others [*i.e. landlords, kings, the Roman rulers, etc.*] are partakers of this right

over you, are we not even more? Nevertheless, we have not used this right, but endure all things lest we hinder the gospel of the Messiah...Even so Yahweh has commanded that those who preach the gospel should live from the gospel. But I have used none of these things...What is my reward then? That when I preach the gospel, I may present the gospel of the Messiah without charge, that I may not abuse my authority in the gospel" (1 Corinthians 9:11-18).

Paul points out that to the carnal mind it would seem quite reasonable to receive material rewards in exchange for sharing and imparting the much more valuable spiritual understandings. However, he makes it abundantly clear that he and his fellow workers NEVER DID ACCEPT TITHES, OFFERINGS OR PAY OF ANY KIND for preaching the Word of Yahweh.

Paul further points out, that although it was commanded in the law of Moses that the preachers of the Gospel should live from (OBEY) the Gospel, such as the Levites did, that he rather found his reward in the fact that he could preach the Gospel of the Messiah FREE OF CHARGE! He went on to say that it would be an abuse of his authority to do otherwise, and worse yet, that by looking for material recompense, he would actually be hindering the Gospel from reaching those that had no material things to give.

Another of Paul's warnings on this very issue, appears in his letter to Titus. He instructs us to "be blameless, as a steward of Yahweh, NOT SELF-WILLED...but...just, holy, self-controlled...For there are many insubordinate, both idle talkers and DECEIVERS ...whose mouths...subvert whole households, TEACHING things which they ought not, FOR THE SAKE OF DISHONEST GAIN" (Titus 1:7-11).

"Now concerning the collection for the

saints, as I have given orders to the congregations [*called out ones*] of Galatia, so you must do also. On the first day of the week [*so as not to be done on the Sabbath, while I teach*] let each one of you lay something aside, storing up as he may prosper, that there be no collections when I come [*to not interrupt my teaching*]. And when I come, whomever you approve by your letters I will send to bear your gift [tithe] to Jerusalem" (1 Corinthians 16:1-3).

Many times in Paul's various writings, he makes it clear that he taught in the synagogues each Sabbath. Here Paul is instructing the Corinthians to ensure that they take time during their regular work week, to set aside their Festival tithe - their collection for the saints. This collection, was to be delivered to the Levites for distribution to the families and to the poor people that would be celebrating the upcoming Festival in Jerusalem. Paul clearly did not want this work to interfere with his teaching in the synagogue, as he said "that there be no collections when I come". These collections were obviously not for Paul and his fellow workers, but for the families and the needy that would be celebrating in Jerusalem.

"For we are not, as so many, PEDDLING THE WORD OF Yahweh; but as of sincerity, but as from Yahweh, we speak in the sight of Yahweh in the Messiah" (2 Corinthians 2:17). Again, Paul is repeating the fact that although he has the most valuable news in all the world, that he and his fellow workers are imparting it free - not as some "peddlers", who Paul says are "so many" sinners.

"Did I commit sin in abasing myself that you might be exalted, because I preached the gospel of Yahweh to you FREE OF CHARGE? I robbed other congregations [*called out ones*], taking wages from them to minister to you. And when I was present with you, and in need, I was a burden to no one...But what I do, I will also continue to do, that I may cut off the

opportunity from those who desire an opportunity to be regarded just as we are in the things of which they boast. For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of the Messiah. And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. therefore it is no great thing if his ministers transform themselves into ministers of righteousness..." (2 Corinthians 11:7-9,12 thru 15).

Paul is stating firstly, that HE LABOURED FOR and TOOK WAGES FROM OTHER congregations (CALLED OUT ONES), that he might teach the Corinthians FREE OF CHARGE (he did not "teach" the others that he "worked" for, hence they did not receive the free gift). He further points out, that only false apostles led by Satan would take a collection of tithes or offerings for preaching the Gospel, due to their SELFISH FINANCIAL AMBITIONS, as well as their EGOTISTICAL NEED TO BE "REGARDED", as one of the "apostles of the Messiah".

"But as we have been approved by Yahweh to be entrusted with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but Yahweh who tests our hearts. For neither at any time did we use flattering words, as you know, nor a cloak for covetousness - Yahweh is witness...For you remember brethren, OUR LABOR AND TOIL; for labouring night and day, that we might not be burden to any of you, we preached to you the gospel of Yahweh" (1 Thessalonians 2:4,5,9).

Again, Paul is simply reconfirming that each Sabbath, he preached the Gospel as it was. He did not "flower" it up to make it more appealing, nor did he lure people to it with flattering words. Nor did he use it as a cover (cloak) for payment or collections (covetousness). And again, he makes it perfectly clear that he supported himself with the work of his own hands - not by taking

collections of tithes or offerings from those he preached to.

Yahweh uses the book of Hebrews, primarily chapters 5 through 10, to outline the required changes, or improvements concerning the New Covenant ministry, with Yah'shua the Messiah as our High Priest. The full account should be read to fully appreciate the significance of the New Covenant Priesthood.

"Therefore, if perfection were through the Levitical priesthood [for under it the people received the law], what further need was there that another priest should rise according to the order of Melchizedek, and not be called according to the order of Aaron? For the priesthood being changed, of necessity there is also a change of the law. For He of whom these things are spoken belongs to another tribe, from which no man has officiated at the altar" (Hebrews 7:11-13).

Yah'shua the Messiah was from the tribe of Judah, of which Moses spoke nothing concerning the priesthood. Yah'shua the Messiah is now our High Priest. As Yah'shua the Messiah is clearly not a Levite, the covenant with the Levites respecting the physical tabernacle, does not apply. Yahweh is here telling us that BECAUSE THE PRIESTHOOD CHANGED it was also NECESSARY to make a COINCIDENTAL CHANGE IN THE LAW!

Yahweh is confirming that the people could not attain perfection through the old covenant, and that a new covenant concerning the priesthood was necessary, in order that the people might attain salvation through the power and strength of His Holy Spirit.

"For on the one hand there is an annulling of the former commandment because of its weakness and unprofitableness,...for they have become priests without an oath, but He with an oath by Him who said to Him: `Yahweh has sworn and will not relent, You are a priest

forever according to the order of Melchizedek', by so much more the Messiah has become a surety of a better covenant" (*Hebrews 7:18,21,22*).

Here we find the comparison of the Levites who received their priesthood by being born into it physically, while the Messiah received it by virtue of Yahweh's oath in perpetuity. We are also instructed that it would be a BETTER covenant.

"FOR IF THAT FIRST COVENANT HAD BEEN FAULTLESS, THEN NO PLACE WOULD HAVE BEEN SOUGHT FOR A SECOND" (*Hebrews 8:7*).

"Then indeed, even the first covenant had ordinances of divine service and the earthly sanctuary...It was symbolic for the present time...But the Messiah came as High Priest of the good things to come, with the greater and more perfect tabernacle NOT MADE WITH HANDS, that is, not of this creation...HE TAKES AWAY THE FIRST THAT HE MAY ESTABLISH THE SECOND...through the offering of the body of Yah'shua the Messiah once for all...For by one offering He has PERFECTED FOREVER THOSE WHO ARE BEING SANCTIFIED [*by Yahweh; through OBEDIENCE to His laws*]" (*Hebrews 9:1,9,11; 10:9,10,14*).

"And there were [*then*] many priests, because they were prevented by death from continuing. But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood" (*Hebrews 7:23,24*). Because Yah'shua the Messiah will hold His position forever, it will remain unchanged. Obviously, it is designed in such a way as to OFFER EVERYONE (*who chooses to be obedient*) a means to its purpose.

"For such a High Priest was fitting for us,...who does not need daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifices, first for His own sins and then for the people's, for this He did

once for all when He offered up Himself" (*Hebrews 7:26,27*).

The change in the law here is evident. Formerly, according to the law, various sacrificial offerings were offered up as sin offerings to Yahweh in search of His forgiveness. Yah'shua the Messiah, having perfected the perfect sacrifice; His own sinless life, was able to make one last sacrificial offering on behalf of all men's sins; past, present and future.

"Now where there is a remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin" (*Hebrews 10:18*). Where there is no longer an offering for sin, there is also no longer a need for any of the rituals and temple fixtures required to perform the offering. Where there are no longer ritualistic offerings, there are no longer Levites (*priests*) required to perform them, hence the change in the law; the "annulling of the former commandment".

Under the New Covenant Priesthood, Yah'shua the Messiah replaced Aaron and the Levites, and made the physical offerings obsolete. (*Including that portion of the physical offerings formerly set apart to support the Levitical priesthood.*)

We were COMMANDED FOREVER, to keep our annual Festival tithe for our FAMILIES, and our third year tithe for the poor in our communities to celebrate Yahweh's plan of salvation. NOTHING in the New Covenant Priesthood, in any way changes, or implies any change to this PERPETUAL COVENANT!

"therefore brethren,...let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering,...and let us CONSIDER ONE ANOTHER in order to stir up good works, not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the manner of some, but EXHORTING ONE ANOTHER, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching" (*Hebrews 10:19-25*). Here the apostles are informing us that

although we no longer need to assemble for the sake of offering, we should continue to gather together for spiritual edification.

As it is written, we should consider the spiritual needs and encouragement of ONE ANOTHER, assembling together to SHARE our spiritual understandings and to build each other up in the faith, in order to stir up enthusiasm for good works. No mention of tithing is made when speaking of these assemblies, however it is clear from many of the apostles records, that they ALL kept the various annual festivals, and that the family tithing and third year tithing laws for the poor, were still in force.

"Now this is the main point of the things we are saying: We have such a High Priest, who is seated at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens, a Minister of the sanctuary and of the true tabernacle which Yahweh erected, and not man" (*Hebrews 8: 1-2*).

Yah'shua the Messiah did build His congregation. He is now our High Priest, seated at the right hand of Yahweh. This makes the high priesthood of Aaron OBSOLETE. Yah'shua the Messiah sent us His Holy Spirit to be our Spiritual Leader. All those of us (the elect) that allow His Holy Spirit to be our Leader (*our "Helper"*), are guided in our understanding of the Bible - of Yahweh's laws and the mysteries of His kingdom.

His Holy Spirit working through Yahweh's elect, makes the Levitical priesthood OBSOLETE. Hebrews 10:19 thru 25 tells us we should still gather together, but that we should TEACH OR EXHORT ONE ANOTHER, AS LED BY His Holy Spirit - NOT AS LED BY MAN-MADE MINISTRIES, WITH FALSE DOCTRINES!

Paul, who was regarded as the greatest New Covenant preacher of the Word of Yahweh, set us a wonderful example of how to teach and share Yahweh's Word, FREE OF

CHARGE AND WITHOUT FAVOUR. He likened receiving any type of remuneration for preaching the Gospel, to sin! In other words, it is SINFUL to STEAL Yahweh's Holy tithes from their intended purpose!

He stated categorically that anyone who used the Gospel, with no matter what flattery or twisting of words, as a means to justify collecting money or material things (*TITHES OR OFFERINGS*), was in fact, a FALSE APOSTLE, a deceitful worker, LED BY SATAN, for his own personal ego and selfish ambition!

In early Israelite times, when Paul and the other apostles taught, they did not need to expend lengthy sermons on the law. Yahweh's laws, which included the annual Holy Days, the festivals and the tithing principles, were familiar to everyone. They were being read every Sabbath in all the synagogues (*see Acts 15:21*).

Therefore, Paul and the others were persuaded by His Holy Spirit to concentrate on the matters at hand; the significance of the Messiah's message concerning the Kingdom of Yahweh, and about the new Congregation Yah'shua the Messiah said He would build. We, the ones called by His Holy Spirit, are that congregation. The word "church", is translated from the Greek "Ekklesia", or "called out ones". If we submit and allow ourselves to be led by His Holy Spirit and are not deceived, then we are the elect members of the Messiah's Congregation, where membership is "registered in heaven". No man (*minister, pastor or priest*) can register you in heaven, or do anything that could make you a member of the Messiah's Congregation.

It is our job to share the faith and testimony of Yah'shua, as Paul and the others did. Part of that job is to warn Israelites of false ministers (*wolves in sheep's clothing*) that steal Yahweh's Holy tithes from their intended purpose.

Tithing is Yahweh's way of ensuring that families of believers are able to gather together to partake of His Festivals, sometimes with many other families, and to thereby fellowship; to share the faith, to build each other up in knowledge and understanding of Yahweh, by celebrating the awesome love and compassion of His plan of salvation. It is Yahweh's way of making sure that His Love forms the central theme of our celebrations; that we would always think of Him with a sense of peace, joy and thanksgiving, while our families are celebrating and being taught His plan of salvation.

We are still under command of Yahweh to gather with others of "like precious faith", for edification; NOT TO BE TAUGHT BY MEN, but rather, to SHARE with one another, individual knowledge and understanding REVEALED TO US BY His Holy Spirit from the Word of Yahweh! And clearly, His Holy Spirit (Yahweh's Will), does not require recompense for being our Helper! Our physical reward, for sharing our revealed understandings, like Paul's, is the joy of SHARING the "implanted word", according to the Commandment of Yahweh; that Word that we KNOW IS TRUE UPON HEARING IT!

In addition to, but completely distinct from our family's Festival Tithes and the third year Tithe for the poor, we can do as we wish with the remainder of our income, including free-will offerings (*THE ONLY TYPE OF PHYSICAL OFFERINGS THAT ARE NOT OBSOLETE UNDER THE NEW COVENANT*), to conduct worthwhile community and charitable objectives. We must not be deceived into believing that we should build "churches", or that we are even able to build a group of "called out ones", (*as we cannot; only Yahweh can call someone into His Congregation*), or that we should be learning any part of Yahweh's Word from men. The Bible

COMMANDS that we search the Scriptures diligently and "prove all things" with the aid of His Holy Spirit, especially that which we may hear from men! The Bible does not in any way, at any time, even suggest that Israelites should tithe to support any type of ministry. Like it or not, any ministry that asks for tithes or offerings (*other than free-will offerings*), in support of its work, is being led by the un-holiest of all spirits; the Devil.

Free-will offerings should only be given, AFTER you have SET ASIDE YOUR OWN FESTIVAL TITHE, AND THE THIRD YEAR TITHE FOR THE POOR; and then, ONLY if your family can still afford it! The Devil would truly love to STEAL your family's Tithe, or the third year Tithe, preventing either you or the poor from celebrating the wonderful plan of salvation revealed in Yahweh's Festivals. Especially when he can steal it under the guise of accomplishing "God's" work through one of his many false "Christian" ministries! Do you realize that the 10% of our nations' income (*tithe*) that the false "churches" STEAL each third year (*plus that portion of every annual tithe that is beyond our own family's Festival needs*) is more than adequate to FEED AND HOUSE THE POOR AND EVERYONE ON WELFARE!

Yahweh sums up His instructions to His spiritual congregation in Hebrews chapters 12 and 13: "to the general assembly and congregation of the firstborn who are registered in heaven, to Yahweh the judge of all, to the spirits of just men made perfect, to Yah'shua the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel...therefore by Him let us continually offer the sacrifice of praise to Yahweh, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to His name. But do not forget to do good and to share, for with such sacrifices Yahweh is well pleased". These are the only,

"sacrifices" of the New Covenant Priesthood!

Yah'shua made a point concerning all of Yahweh's laws (*including the laws on tithing*) as written throughout the Old Covenant perfectly clear, when He said: "Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill [complete, perfect, make whole or finish]. For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the Law till all is fulfilled. Whoever therefore breaks one of the least of these commandments, and teaches men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever does and teaches them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven" (*Matt. 5:17-19*).

This, and only this, is the true Gospel that the Messiah commanded us to preach when He said: "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations...teaching them to observe ALL THINGS that I have commanded you" (*Matt. 28:19,20*). And in Matthew 23:8, Yah'shua COMMANDS us saying: "But you, DO NOT BE CALLED RABBI [*father, priest, pastor, reverend or minister*]; for ONE IS YOUR TEACHER, THE MESSIAH, and YOU ARE ALL BRETHREN".

When questioned on the matter of "which is the greatest commandment in the law?" (*Matt. 23:36*), Yah'shua responded to a lawyer by saying, "You shall love Yahweh your God with all your heart, all your soul, and with all your mind, this is the first and great commandment. And the second is like it: `You shall love your neighbour as yourself! On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets'" (*vv.37-40*). Yah'shua makes it clear, that these two commandments as He quoted them from Deuteronomy 6:5 and Leviticus 19:18, are in fact the two most important commandments.

These two [*of the original Ten*]

Commandments are eternal, just like the eternal laws concerning tithing and the keeping of the seven annual Holy Days (*and others*), which together with all of Yahweh's commandments, serve to "complete", or "fulfill" the law. Clearly, the Ten Commandments are proven to be the "beginning of the law", that Yah'shua said He came to "fulfill", or "complete". ALL OF THE LAW set forth in the Old Covenant, remains IN FORCE, EXCEPT that which was specifically changed by Yahweh, under the NEW COVENANT PRIESTHOOD! And as this chapter sets forth, the ONLY change in the laws of Yahweh, resulting from the New Covenant, are those laws specifically addressing the priesthood; the laws of the PHYSICAL PRIESTHOOD, including the laws with respect to PHYSICAL SACRIFICES, and the PHYSICAL tabernacle of meeting, all of WHICH ARE NOW OBSOLETE!

As Yah'shua is now our High Priest forever; our ONLY TEACHER, let us willingly submit ourselves to His Holy Spirit; our HELPER, that we may be guided to a revealed (*spiritually discerned*) understanding of all things pertaining to the mysteries of Yahweh, and to our promised inheritance - our salvation.

Let us keep all of Yahweh's eternal laws, including tithing to ensure our continued annual celebration of Yahweh's great plan of salvation. And as stated in Hebrews 13:15,16, "let us continually offer the SACRIFICE OF PRAISE TO Yahweh, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to His Name. But do not forget to DO GOOD AND to SHARE, FOR WITH SUCH SACRIFICES Yahweh IS WELL PLEASED"!

Many Bible verses on tithing are commonly quoted by traditional Christian ministers, in an attempt to legitimize their false motives. Malachi 3:8 through 10 is one such example: "Will a man rob Yahweh? Yet you

have robbed Me! But you say, 'In what way have we robbed you?' In tithes and offerings. For you have robbed Me, even this whole nation. Bring all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be food in My house". Yahweh continues by saying that when this commandment is obeyed, His blessings of national wealth, peace and happiness will follow.

Yahweh obviously gave these instructions under the OLD Covenant. But the prophetic meaning behind the instructions is DUAL! They were to tithe one tenth of their increase (*not of their income*), in the form of foods - grain, oil, wine, flour, livestock, etc., which was to be taken to the national storehouse in Jerusalem.

The Levites would ensure that the national storehouse supplied the families when they celebrated the various annual feasts at Jerusalem in Yahweh's honour, and that the poor, the fatherless, the widows, the strangers, and the Levites themselves, were also able to partake each third year, "the year of tithing" (*See Num. 18*).

The Levitical priesthood, the physical tabernacle, the physical offerings, the national storehouse, and the physical requirement of travelling to Jerusalem, are all OBSOLETE under the New Covenant. We are now, "spiritual temples", WHEREVER WE RESIDE! This does not mean to do away with the prophetic NEW COVENANT message contained in Malachi 3:8 through 10, as above referenced.

Like most prophecies, Malachi's statement "will a man rob Yahweh", has a dual meaning. It was originally to warn PHYSICAL Israel, while it is also now meant, to warn US IN SPIRITUAL Israel! In other words, if we would NOW be OBEDIENT to Yahweh's command to set aside our own families' annual Festival Tithes and the third year Tithes for the

poor, and thereby be able to keep the perpetually ordained Festivals, our nations would also NOW be the recipients of Yahweh's blessings of NATIONAL WEALTH, PEACE AND HAPPINESS!

There is only ONE CONGREGATION; ONE GROUP OF "CALLED OUT ONES" - "OF THE FIRSTBORN WHO ARE REGISTERED IN HEAVEN"! No human-organized traditional "Christian church" or "minister" (*father, pastor, priest, rabbi, reverend*) can register anyone in heaven! Nor can they accept Yahweh's Holy Festival Tithes from you. If they do its THEFT!

Yahweh entrusts each of us, as His spiritual temples, to MANAGE OUR OWN FESTIVAL TITHES and the THIRD YEAR TITHES FOR THE POOR, and to be OBEDIENT IN ALL THINGS PERTAINING TO HIS WORD.

In Yahweh's name, don't be deceived into giving your Festival Tithes or your third year Tithes for the poor and needy; you and your communities' "Holy"day expense money, to one of Satan's "wolves in sheep's clothing"!

You, your family, and the poor, deserve much better!

## **Law, Statutes, & Judgments:**

Many today do not realize that the Bible is a book about law. Many believe and insist that Yah'shua the Messiah came to do away with the law of His Father, by doing away with the "law", and establishing only grace and promises!

There are many references in the Bible to the commandments, but you can also read a lot about the Statutes and Judgments. Then there are the ceremonial rituals and offerings. Most people assume that the Ten Commandments did not even exist until Yahweh gave them to Moses on tablets of stone. They think they are simply part of the ritualistic Law of Moses.

To begin to understand the truth about Yahweh's law, we must first accept the established fact that Yahweh's law existed long before Moses and Mount Sinai! In fact Yahweh's law existed LONG BEFORE ADAM AND EVE!

The Bible reveals that Yahweh IS love (1 John 4:8), and that love, as defined in Scripture, is actually keeping Yahweh's law (1 John 5:3). Before the creation of the universe, Yahweh and the Spiritual aspect of Yahweh that became the Word existed in perfect harmony (John 1:1; 8:28-29; 10:30). These lived in agreement with each other (Amos 3:3) - submitting to the ETERNAL LAW of love. But there was also government in existence! Yahweh the Father was in charge! The Spiritual aspect of Yahweh; the Word, that later became Yah'shua the Messiah, was submissive to the Father (John 14:28).

As far as man's history is concerned, Yahweh's law existed and was binding from CREATION. This law is only summed up in the Ten Commandments. The first four commandments show us how to love Yahweh and the last six show us how to love each other (Matt. 22:36-40).

But these Ten Commandments were not something new or original with Moses. To that point, they simply had not been written out in codified form as Yahweh then did for the Israelites.

Notice the example of Abraham: "Because that Abraham OBEYED MY VOICE, and KEPT MY CHARGE, MY COMMANDMENTS, MY STATUTES, AND MY LAWS" (Gen. 26:5). This was LONG BEFORE Mount Sinai! Yah'shua the Messiah did not do away with His Father's law - He magnified it (Matt.5)! He also stated when asked how we are to obtain eternal life: "If thou wilt enter into life, KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS" (Matt. 19:17).

Do you believe David when he said all of Yahweh's commandments are SURE and that they LAST FOREVER? Or do you believe Yah'shua the Messiah when He instructed us to keep the commandments? Sad to say, many people do not.

So we see that Abraham was commended for obeying Yahweh's commandments and keeping the statutes and laws. What was this referring to?

Webster's dictionary defines "statute" as, "an established rule or law". Yahweh's statutes usually command or forbid certain things, in ADDITION to the Ten Commandments. Gesenius' Lexicon says this about statutes: "An appointed law, a statute, an ordinance...used of the laws of nature [as prescribed by Yahweh]...a custom observed as though it were law". Yahweh's statutes are BASED UPON THE TEN COMMANDMENTS.

But what about the judgments? Judgments are binding DECISIONS made by (Yahweh appointed) judges BASED ON Yahweh's PREVIOUSLY REVEALED LAW. These decisions are used to settle similar future disputes and to render a sentence or verdict.

Yahweh gave statutes and judgments for the general well-being of the people - for the protection of everyone's legal rights. They are all based on the principles of love toward Yahweh and love toward each other. Here, summed up, is the applicable difference between all of these terms: In general, the Ten Commandments apply to individual conduct, the statutes apply to national and/or the congregations conduct (collectively, the "called out ones" within the House of Israel), and the judgments apply to decisions rendered according to the principles of the Ten Commandments and the Statutes.

It should be clear that Yahweh's law of love was very much in effect prior to the establishment of His covenant with Israel. So why did Yahweh reveal His commands and laws to Israel? During their captivity (*in bondage to an idol-worshipping nation*), Israel had lost much of their knowledge of Yahweh's ways. In Exodus 16:28, Yahweh said: "How long refuse ye to keep my commandments and my laws?" Again, this was said before the nation ever reached Mount Sinai! Yahweh had to reveal His law to them AGAIN, before entering into His covenant with them - because they had lost it!

"And Yahweh said unto Moses, How long REFUSE YE TO KEEP MY COMMANDMENTS AND MY LAWS? See, for that Yahweh hath given you the Sabbath, therefore he giveth you on the sixth day the bread of two days; abide ye every man in his place, let no man go out of his place on the seventh day. So the people rested on the seventh day" (*Exodus 16:28-30*). Yahweh reminded them that the Sabbath was holy time. They had lost this knowledge that had been established long ago (*Gen. 2:1,3*).

Why is this such an important point? Because there are many that believe the commandments and the law were instituted at

Mount Sinai and were part of the OLD COVENANT. And, the reasoning goes, once the New Covenant arrived, there no longer was a need to obey Yahweh's commandments. The fact is, the dissolving of the Old Covenant COULD NOT DESTROY WHAT IT DID NOT BRING INTO EXISTENCE!

The Ten Commandments, which Yahweh gave in written form to Moses on Mount Sinai, were not new. Only the CODIFIED FORM in which Yahweh wrote them was new.

The Old Covenant was a marriage agreement in which Israel promised to obey the Eternal Yahweh (*Elohim*), in consideration of Yahweh's promised blessings of health, wealth and spiritual well-being. Yahweh promised to provide and protect those who chose obedience to His ways. "Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine: And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation" (*Exodus 19:5,6*).

Centuries later, after Israel had repeatedly broken the covenant, many verses such as Jeremiah 3:14 restate that this was a marriage covenant: "Turn, O backsliding children, saith Yahweh; for I AM MARRIED TO YOU:"

It is most interesting to note here, that Yahweh devoted only twelve chapters of the Bible to the first 2,000 years of human history - that's all it took for Him to zero in on one man, ABRAHAM! The remainder of the Bible relates to THAT MAN AND HIS DESCENDANTS and to the rest of mankind only as their lives become involved with those who spring from Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. This does not imply that Yahweh's plan ignores the majority of mankind; the Bible shows He is working on His plan of salvation FOR ALL MEN (*1 Tim. 2:1-5*), but through a line of descent - or

spiritual adoption - from Abraham, the father of the faithful, through to Yah'shua the Messiah (*Gal. 3:16*). See chapter 27 for more information on who the modern descendants of Abraham, "a peculiar treasure unto me above all people", really are!

At Mount Sinai, Israel promised to obey Yahweh: "And all the people answered together, and said, ALL THAT Yahweh HATH SPOKEN WE WILL DO" (*Exodus 19:8*). Yahweh then revealed what they were to do to obey Him, in Exodus 20:1-17.

Yahweh revealed additional laws and applications of the Ten Commandments in the form of civil statutes and judgments detailed in chapters 20-23 of Exodus, and instructed Moses to write them down in a "book of the covenant" (*Exodus 24:4,7*). The covenant was sealed and ratified with blood (*Exodus 24:6*), and Israel agreed formally to obey, and be subject to this covenant.

The Old Covenant was not a set of laws that were to be omitted upon institution of the New Covenant. The Old Covenant was a MARRIAGE AGREEMENT BETWEEN ISRAEL AND Yahweh! The statutes enlarge upon and show us how to apply the Ten Commandments. The statutes regarding the holy days for example, magnify the fourth commandment, which is, "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy" (*Exodus 20:8*).

Those that obey by keeping the Sabbath holy and by keeping the annual festivals by spending this time in physical rest (*from employment and conducting commerce*) and through spiritual refreshment (*by sharing the truth of Yahweh's Word as revealed by His Holy Spirit*), receive the special blessings of spiritual fellowship with the true God and the wonderful knowledge of His overall plan of salvation for all mankind.

Other statutes such as Exodus 22:16,19, specify how to keep the seventh

commandment which forbids adultery. All of the statutes, in some way set out how we are to keep Yahweh's spiritual law as codified in the Ten Commandments. Judgments, on the other hand, are binding decisions BASED on Yahweh's law.

Time sequence is very important as we proceed through some of these verses. When Moses delivered the statutes and judgments, there was no mention of sacrifices connected with them. There is ONLY ONE SACRIFICE mentioned in the "book of the covenant", and Yahweh called it, "MY SACRIFICE" (*Exodus 23:18*)! This was the Passover sacrifice instituted in Exodus 12:1-13, and it was repeated in the covenant made at Sinai.

The Passover then foreshadowed the sacrifice of Yah'shua the Messiah and was a REMINDER OF SIN to teach people the need of the coming Messiah - the true Passover Lamb - to be sacrificed many centuries later (*John 1:29; Cor. 5:7*). It began BEFORE the covenant was ratified and is the ONLY sacrifice that continued into New Covenant times (*only with the newly substituted symbols of unleavened bread and wine*). We are commanded to keep it FOREVER!

The ceremonial sacrificial offerings were temporary and not binding today. The "book of the covenant" did not contain the laws of burnt offerings, sacrifices or washings. These were added later, after Mount Sinai. Any sacrificial offerings added BEFORE the ceremonial rituals were all either VOLUNTARY OR CUSTOMARY!

"And he [*Moses*] sent YOUNG MEN of the children of Israel, which offered burnt offerings, and sacrificed peace offerings of oxen unto Yahweh" (*Exodus 24:5*). Notice they were young men, because the priesthood was NOT YET ESTABLISHED! In fact Yahweh did not command any of these sacrifices originally; "For I spake NOT unto your fathers, NOR

COMMANDED THEM in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, CONCERNING BURNT OFFERINGS OR SACRIFICES: But this thing commanded I them, saying, OBEY MY VOICE, and I will be your God...that it may be well with you" (Jer. 7:22,23).

Paul explains that these temporary rituals were "added because of transgressions" (Gal. 3:19). The keeping of these ritualistic laws required much work, as we can see from Leviticus 1-7. That is why it became known as the "works of the law". These temporary sacrifices were to last only until "the seed should come to whom the promise was made" (Gal. 3:19). Paul explains this as, "wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us to the Messiah" (Gal. 3:24).

The offering of sacrifices in the Old Covenant demanded the need for the priesthood to act on behalf of men in relation to Yahweh (Heb. 5:1). They were REMINDERS of sin. For example, in those days certain sins required that you sacrifice a bull. Obviously, if you continually sinned and sacrificed a bull each time, this would, after a while, deeply affect your source of income and livelihood. This was an effective way to drive the point of the message home!

Once the blood of the Messiah had been offered to cleanse us of sin once and for all, it was needless to offer physical sacrifices. "For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law" (Heb. 7:12; 6:20; 7:11,21). The fact that Yahweh allowed the physical temple to be destroyed in A.D. 70, reinforces its symbolic destruction at the time of the Messiah's crucifixion, and shows us that there is no longer a need for it. Today, the Congregation, is made up of Spirit-begotten sons of Yahweh, each of whom are TEMPLES OF Yahweh (1 Cor. 6:19; 2 Cor. 6:16).

"Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offerings for sin thou wouldst

not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O Yahweh. He taketh away the first that HE MAY ESTABLISH THE SECOND" (Heb. 10:8,9).

On several occasions the Bible discusses the law of Moses, but in such instances it is never referring to the Ten Commandments. Yahweh GAVE the statutes and judgments to Moses in order that he could DELIVER them to the Israelites, whereas Yahweh SPOKE the Ten Commandments and caused them to be "carved in stone" as symbolic of the eternal nature of Yahweh's law. Yet we read in Luke 2:22,39 that the "law of Moses" is called the "law of Yahweh". This is because Yahweh is the GIVER OF ALL LAW.

When Yah'shua the Messiah defined the two great commandments in the law in Matthew 22, He quoted out of the "book of the law" (Lev. 19:18; Deut. 6:5), which we are told to REMEMBER. Then why are we told in Acts 15 that the Gentile converts do not have to observe the law, except for four points? The answer is cleared up in Acts 21:21. The law called into question involved circumcision and other customs, which were instituted long before the law of Moses. The spiritual intent is not done away today - just like the Ten Commandments, it is still in force, but like the Passover, the manner of circumcision has been changed. It is now of the heart (Rom. 2:29).

This controversy did not involve the spiritual intent of the civil law of Moses, but the ceremonial ADDITIONS to it. These scriptures are not suggesting that adultery or murder is okay now! The Ten Commandments are not being questioned or done away with here. The four points mentioned in the controversy were originally part of the civil law; but they were also added to the ceremonial law to prevent certain pagan customs from being practiced by

the ancient Israelites.

The Gentiles had until then, eaten their sacrifices with blood. They strangled their animals, presented them to their idols and committed fornication as part of their religious ceremonies. So the four points mentioned in Acts 15 had to be specifically declared (*by the Apostles*) to be STILL IN FORCE. They remained in effect and were binding AFTER the abolition of the physical sacrifices and washings.

The civil laws regulating tithing, clean and unclean meats, sexual cleanliness, the weekly and annual Sabbaths, for example, are ALL STILL IN EFFECT for the New Covenant Congregation because they define what sin is.

What about the principle of “an eye for an eye” or a “tooth for a tooth”? This was covered in the civil law of Moses which is still in effect. These statutes were set up to regulate one human society, with all of its faults, in a fair and just manner. The whole point of such instructions is concerned with the context of just recompense or payment for the injury caused; an “eye-value” for an eye, and a “tooth-value” for a tooth.

These principles are still very much in force, and we are also meant to keep them in their spiritual intent. Moses delivered these principles in the strictness of the letter because the congregation of Israel did not yet have His Holy Spirit as we do today - our HELPER.

When we fully understand that Yahweh’s spiritual and ETERNAL laws are what brings peace and happiness - that they are the WAY to life that reflects Yahweh’s character, we can then understand why the Messiah said He came to MAGNIFY THE LAW (*Matt. 5*).

Yahweh’s laws regulate human life, and disobedience to them has produced all unhappiness, disease, war, violence, suffering

and death this world has experienced since Adam and Eve.

Yahweh’s spiritual law, the Ten Commandments, including His statutes (instructions on how to carry out the law) were set in motion for the benefit of mankind from creation, whether man acknowledges this or not. They are as much in force (*if not more so because they have been declared to be ETERNAL*) as all of the known laws (*also Yahweh-given*) of physics and chemistry.

Yahweh’s law is inexorable and it is an eternal reflection of His character. Yahweh’s character WILL NEVER CHANGE (*Mal. 3:6; Heb. 13:8*). Yahweh’s spiritual law, including the Ten commandments, will never be done away with.

As Paul wrote: “Wherefore the LAW IS HOLY, AND THE COMMANDMENT HOLY, AND JUST, AND GOOD. For we know that the LAW IS SPIRITUAL...” (*Rom. 7:12-14*).

## Old Covenant Priesthood - Yahweh's Marriage Agreement:

What was Yahweh's purpose for the Old Covenant - and what was it? For many centuries now, the Bible has been divided into two great parts: the Old and New Covenants. Both parts revolve around two covenants, but few understand why. Fewer still, realize that together, the Old and New Covenants reveal ALL of Yahweh's master plan for humanity!

In Genesis 1:26 we see that man was created in the image and likeness of Yahweh; out of "dust". But John 4:24 says Yahweh is Spirit. Further Bible study reveals that man was created COMPLETE physically, but INCOMPLETE spiritually. Most people believe we were created complete physically and spiritually - already having an immortal soul - but that incorrect thinking is nowhere supported, or even suggested in the Bible.

The apostle Paul wrote: "Because the CARNAL MIND IS ENMITY AGAINST Yahweh: for it is not subject to the law of Yahweh, NEITHER INDEED CAN BE" (*Rom. 8:7*). All babies, by the time they are just a few months old, begin to develop a self-centered carnal nature. That carnal nature, as Paul instructs, is AGAINST Yahweh! The last part of the verse not only says that our nature is not subject to the law of Yahweh, but rather it "NEITHER INDEED CAN BE"! In other words, IT'S NOT POSSIBLE! This life we lead in carnal flesh simply CANNOT PLEASE Yahweh.

Jeremiah wrote: "The heart [*or mind of man*] is DECEITFUL above all things, and DESPERATELY WICKED: who can know it?" (*17:9*). Physically it is impossible to follow Yahweh and His laws. There is a necessary change in our nature for that to become possible. "Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be PARTAKERS OF THE DIVINE NATURE, having escaped the

corruption that is in the world" (*2 Peter 1:4*).

We become partakers of the divine nature, or Yahweh's very nature, when we are born again as SPIRIT beings, as John wrote: "That which is born of the flesh IS flesh; and that which is born of His Holy Spirit IS spirit" (*3:6*). Yes, it means what it says. When we are finally born of His Holy Spirit (after the beginning of the Millennium), we will BE SPIRIT! At that point, we will be spirit as Yahweh is Spirit. Our final stage of creation will have been completed.

That makes this physical life we now live vitally important, because everything we do in this life, is to prepare us for when our creation is COMPLETE - when we will actually become the born SPIRIT children of Yahweh. If you are not preparing for that fantastic future now, then you do not understand or appreciate Yahweh's incredible purpose for man.

That ultimate future begins when Yahweh imparts a portion of His Holy Spirit to us upon our BELIEF and repentance for our sins (*Acts 2:38*). From that point on, we are to grow and develop spiritually to prepare for the time when we will take on the divine nature of Yahweh. This spiritual growth plays a significant part in the New Covenant, but let us now look at the Old Covenant.

Many people misunderstand the true meanings of both the Old and New Covenants. Webster's dictionary describes a "covenant" as, "an agreement, usually formal, between two or more parties to do, or not to do something specified". This is clearly what Yahweh and ancient Israel entered into. They BOTH AGREED - the terms and conditions of the Old Covenant extend from EXODUS 19:1 THROUGH 24:8, which should be read in its entirety.

There Yahweh instructed Moses to tell the people; "Now therefore, IF ye will obey my voice indeed, and KEEP MY COVENANT, then

ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine: And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation” (*Exod. 19:4-6*). Notice Yahweh did NOT promise His Holy Spirit as part of the Old Covenant. Neither did He promise eternal life! EVERY PROMISE of the Old Covenant was MATERIAL!

IF Israel had obeyed, they would have become an exceedingly great nation, dwelling in fruitful abundance. They would be Yahweh’s people and He would be their God. Yahweh would WALK AMONG THEM, but He never promised to DWELL IN THEM by the power of His Holy Spirit, which is a part of the New Covenant!

The Old Covenant was actually referred to by Yahweh as a marriage agreement! In Ezekiel 16:8, Yahweh said: “Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the TIME OF LOVE: and I SPREAD MY SKIRT OVER THEE, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I sware unto thee, and entered into a COVENANT WITH THEE, saith the Lord Yahweh, and THOU BECAMEST MINE”. “Spread His skirt”, is an expression that is a sign of marriage (*Ruth 3:8*).

Yahweh further said in Jeremiah 31:32: “I was an husband unto them”. By agreeing to the Covenant, Israel was bound to Yahweh as His wife and was forbidden to commit adultery by worshipping the gods of other nations. “Take heed to thyself, lest thou make a COVENANT with the inhabitants of the land whither thou goest, lest it be for a snare in the midst of thee...For thou shalt worship no other god: for Yahweh, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God” (*Exod. 34:12,14*).

They were forbidden to enter into a covenant with another god because they were bound to a jealous husband. In Exodus 19:8. Israel answers Yahweh’s Covenant: “And all the people answered together, and said, ALL

THAT Yahweh HATH SPOKEN WE WILL DO”. If Israel kept their part of the agreement, we will see that Yahweh, or that aspect of Elohim, would have been a faithful, loving husband, dwelling WITH the people.

After the Israelites agreed, Yahweh instructed Moses to tell the people to prepare for the third day, when He would Himself come down the mountain to be with the people. It was then that Yahweh began to discuss the specific terms of the Covenant.

In Exodus Ch. 20, they were given the Ten Commandments. These were even written on stone by Yahweh Himself. These were a distinct portion of the Old Covenant, being referred to in Deuteronomy 9:9,11 as “the tables of the covenant”. These tables make up Yahweh’s great, eternal, Spiritual Law, which itself, defines sin.

Yahweh then continued to instruct Moses, explaining the CIVIL LAW of STATUTES and JUDGEMENTS. These laws would govern and direct them as a nation. While the Spiritual Law was based on broad principles, the Statutes were very specific. Judgments were added to render a decision or verdict based on Yahweh’s law, prescribing certain punishments for disobedience. Together, the Statutes and Judgments, or Civil Law (*the “Word”*), AMPLIFIED THE TEN BASIC PRINCIPLES OF Yahweh’s SPIRITUAL LAW.

For example, Exodus 21:12 says, “He that smiteth a man, so that he die, shall be surely put to death”. This Civil Law detailed the punishment for breaking the sixth Commandment: “Thou shall not kill”. All of the Civil Laws were based on the spiritual precepts of the Ten Commandments, and were a distinct part of the Marriage Covenant.

The Spiritual Law was written by Yahweh Himself as the Ten Commandments, while the Civil Law was given by Yahweh to

Moses who wrote it into what would be referred to as the “Book of the Covenant” (*Exod. 24:4,7*). So the Israelites had to obey both the Ten Commandments AND the Book of the Covenant; the Civil Law.

This necessitates a reminder that Yahweh’s SPIRITUAL LAW IS ETERNAL! As set forth in the previous chapter, it was in effect LONG BEFORE MOSES REACHED MOUNT SINAI, and it will remain IN EFFECT FOREVER!

There are numerous “no law” preachers today, all of whom are deceived! The false reasoning that when the Messiah died, the Old Covenant, including the Spiritual Laws ended, has led many astray. The Old (“marriage”) Covenant has ended! But Yahweh’s Law HAS NOT AND NEVER WILL END!

Remember, a covenant is an AGREEMENT between two or more parties. True, the Law forms part of the CONTENT of the Old Covenant, but it also forms part of the CONTENT of the New Covenant! It was the Covenant, or agreement between Yahweh and Israel that ended, not the Law!

It did not take long for Israel to break the Old Covenant marriage agreement. Yahweh reminded them of their agreement about nine months later in *Leviticus 26:1-3*. They were already losing sight of Yahweh’s promises, and Yahweh again explained what would happen if they disobeyed (*vv. 4-39*). And that is just what they did! Then the God who became the Word, said: “Turn, O backsliding children, saith Yahweh; FOR I AM MARRIED UNTO YOU” (*Jer. 3:14*). Yahweh pleaded with Israel for over seven hundred years, to turn from their wicked ways, all to no avail!

Finally, look at what happened: “Behold, the days come, saith Yahweh, that I will make A NEW COVENANT with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant that I made with their

fathers...WHICH MY COVENANT THEY BRAKE, although I was an husband to them” (*Jer. 31:31,32*).

Israel failed! They broke the Covenant and Yahweh divorced them! And because of their disobedience, as He had warned, He withdrew the many promises associated with the first Covenant. Instead of great material prosperity, Israel went into Assyrian captivity (*Ezek. 20:23-24*), and Judah, which had separated from Israel long before this time, was overthrown and went into the Babylonian captivity from 604-585 B.C. (*2 Kings 23:27*).

Man, of and by himself, cannot please Yahweh! Remember, it’s impossible! Remember as well, there were no spiritual promises in the Old Covenant. But why not, if Yahweh knew that man could not please Him without His Holy Spirit? Because Yahweh was proving that very fact, with hundreds of years of recorded history about a nation which Yahweh put under the best possible conditions, PHYSICALLY, to obey Him! But because they did not, as a nation, have access to His Holy Spirit, they failed miserably.

They wanted to, and should have, kept the letter of Yahweh’s Law. But they could not! They were a failure even judging by the letter of the law. What was Yahweh trying to show mankind? “O that there were such an HEART [*or nature*] in them, that they would fear [*trust*] Me, and keep all My Commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children!” (*Deut. 5:29*).

Yahweh knew that the Israelites just did not have the “heart”, or nature to obey Him. We must have Yahweh’s Nature, the Will, or Spirit of Yahweh within us to obey Him.

That is what the Old Covenant proves! Israel’s secular and Biblical history; the proof, was the whole point and purpose of the Old Covenant!

## **New Covenant Priesthood - The Renewed Marriage Agreement:**

Israel broke the Old Covenant, but the problem was not Yahweh's. The problem was with the people. And because of that, Yahweh purposed to make a New Covenant - a NEW MARRIAGE AGREEMENT! The terms and conditions of this New Covenant are again based on Yahweh's Spiritual Law, but the promises are this time, ALSO spiritual!

This time, Yahweh calls people out of this world, as SPIRITUAL ISRAELITES, and imparts a small portion of His Spirit; His very NATURE in them, so that they might be able to do what ancient Israel could not - PLEASE YAHWEH AND OBEY HIS VOICE!

We have seen, that from Yahweh's perspective, the Old Covenant was analogous to a marriage agreement. Yahweh actually spoke to Moses and to ALL OF THE PEOPLE of Israel when He delivered the terms and conditions of the Covenant (*Exod, 19:9*). Yet Yah'shua says that Yahweh the Father HAS NEVER SPOKEN TO MAN! "And the Father Himself, which hath sent Me, hath borne witness of Me. Ye have neither HEARD HIS VOICE AT ANY TIME, nor seen his shape" (*John 5:37*).

If the Israelites heard Yahweh's voice, they had to have heard either Yahweh the Father, or His Angel that He sent to carry His message. Yah'shua's clear statement proves that it was the Angel of Yahweh, or Yahweh's "Word" that spoke with the people. It was this through this Word (*the Angel of Yahweh referred to in the Hebrew Bible like the one that spoke to Moses in the burning bush*) that agreed on behalf of Yahweh to enter into a marriage Covenant with Israel. That marriage Covenant was to allow the people to live by EVERY WORD OF YAHWEH'S LAW!

Because of the weakness of man, and the wickedness of man's carnal nature, there

was a tremendous need for a new and better Covenant to allow the people to obey Yahweh's Law. Paul clearly defines fault in the Old Covenant: "For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for a second" (*Heb. 8:7*).

Then Paul explains WHO WAS AT FAULT: "For finding fault WITH THEM [*THE ISRAELITES*], he saith, Behold...I will make a New Covenant" (*v.8*). The fault was clearly with the people. "For this is the Covenant that I will make... after those days, says Yahweh; I WILL PUT MY LAWS INTO THEIR MIND, AND WRITE THEM IN THEIR HEARTS" (*Heb. 8:10*).

To solve the problem, or fault with the Old Covenant, Yahweh will write His Spiritual Law in our hearts and in our minds, instead of on tablets of stone. This is what makes the New Covenant a "better" Covenant, for it makes it POSSIBLE to obey Yahweh. It (*the New Covenant*) does not do away with Yahweh's Law, it merely writes it in a different place!

The New Covenant is also a marriage agreement; not between Yah'shua and ancient Israel, but between Yah'shua and SPIRITUAL ISRAEL; the Congregation. The New Covenant is based on a marriage agreement THAT WILL NOT FAIL! But that marriage has NOT YET OCCURRED! Its terms and conditions however, have been revealed to us through the Messiah.

This future marriage will take place at the return of the Messiah, as John plainly records in Revelation 19:7; "Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him; for the MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB is come, and His wife (*the Congregation*) hath made herself ready". Further evidence that this marriage HAS NOT YET happened is given in Hebrews 8:10, where Paul refers to it as a Covenant that the Messiah "will make", AFTER the Messiah

had already died, and AFTER the New Covenant Congregation had already been established!

Yah'shua the Messiah was the messenger of the New Covenant (*Mal. 3:1*). In the book of Hebrews, Paul has much to say about the New Covenant. "But now hath he [*Yah'shua the Messiah*] obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the MEDIATOR OF A BETTER COVENANT, which was established UPON BETTER PROMISES" (*8:6*).

Daniel's prophecies concerning the Messiah make it abundantly clear that the New Covenant has not yet been consummated. Daniel 9:24-27 is referred to as the "70 weeks prophecy". Bible students know that a day equals a year in prophecy (*Num. 14:34*). In Daniel 9:27 we see that the Messiah was to "confirm the [*New*] COVENANT with many for ONE WEEK". This is referring to the last week of the seventy weeks. Yah'shua the Messiah was to confirm the New Covenant for seven prophetic days, or SEVEN ACTUAL YEARS!

Notice verse 27: "And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the MIDST OF THE WEEK he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease". In the midst of the prophetic seven day week, equals exactly three and one half years; precisely how long the Messiah's earthly ministry lasted! For three and one half years He confirmed the terms and conditions of His New Covenant. But His ministry was cut short in the midst of the week.

Yah'shua the Messiah caused "the sacrifice and the oblation to cease". Why? Because He became the sacrifice! The sacrificial laws were not originally part of the Old Covenant, but were added because of transgressions (*Jer. 7:22, and Gal. 3:19*). "...we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Yah'shua the Messiah ONCE FOR ALL"

(*Heb. 10:10*). Once Yah'shua the Messiah was sacrificed, the sacrificial offerings ended, NOT Yahweh's Spiritual Law!

Yah'shua the Messiah's ministry was cut short in the midst of the week, meaning that the rest of that week HAS YET TO BE FULFILLED. In other words, He is NOT YET FINISHED CONFIRMING THE COVENANT. The New, like the Old Covenant, will be made with Israelites (*Heb. 8:8*), but this time it will be with SPIRITUAL ISRAELITES - those who will have Yahweh's Laws written in their hearts and in their minds! It will be confirmed in the near future with those Spirit-born saints who will not break the Covenant.

Man has traditionally titled the two sections of the Bible as "The Old Testament" and "The New Testament". We have already seen that a Covenant is an agreement. A Testament, on the other hand, is a WILL in which the possessions and rights of the Testator are passed on AFTER HIS DEATH!

There is no requirement of either party to die in a Covenant, whereas a Testament is not binding UNTIL DEATH OF THE TESTATOR! The first part of our Bibles should more accurately be called the "Old Covenant", and the second part, the "New Testament containing the New Covenant"!

Yah'shua the Messiah came and began to confirm the New Covenant, and He left behind His Testament or Will, that took effect after He was crucified. Paul confirms this in Hebrews 9:15-17; "therefore He [the Messiah] is the mediator of a New Covenant, so that those who are called may receive the PROMISED ETERNAL INHERITANCE, since a death has occurred which redeems them from the transgressions under the first Covenant. For where a WILL is involved, the death of the One who made it must be established. For a WILL takes effect only at death, since it is not

in force as long as the One who made it is alive" (*Revised Standard Version*).

Through His WILL; the New Testament, the Messiah left us the OPPORTUNITY to be co-heirs, or beneficiaries of His rights and possessions under the New Covenant (*Rom. 8:17*). But His Will requires that we meet certain conditions before we can inherit His promises. "And IF ye be the Messiah's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise" (*Gal. 3:29*). Notice the big IF! The question is, How do we become the Messiah's?

Within the Messiah's final Will, the Messiah not only gave many demonstrable examples and explained directly how the New Covenant is based on the Spiritual Law, but explained how it is predicated on "better promises". He also outlined the terms and conditions for our part in the New Covenant, in Acts 2:38; and Galatians 3:27, among others.

The terms and conditions are: BELIEVE, REPENT AND BE BAPTIZED or IMMERSSED IN EVERYTHING PERTAINING TO THE KINGDOM OF YAHWEH - leading to OBEDIENCE IN ALL THINGS PERTAINING TO THE ETERNAL, SPIRITUAL LAW!

Upon belief and repentance, Yahweh GIVES you a portion of His Holy Spirit (*His "Will"*) which is a "down payment" of your eternal inheritance (*Eph. 1:13,14*). Yahweh's Spirit provides a Spiritual "thirst", drawing us into His Word (*immersing, or baptizing*), leading to spiritual growth and development as we begin to APPLY His Law in our daily lives.

This is all a prelude, or training for our future marriage to the Messiah - when the New Covenant actually begins. At that point, Yahweh's Law that is etched in our hearts and minds, will be indelibly known, and we WILL NOT BE ABLE TO FAIL!

It is true that when we come to Yahweh, we must believe in Yah'shua the Messiah and

His shed blood. From there we must go on, and not only believe in the Messiah - but BELIEVE the Messiah! With the Messiah, this belief must be transformed into ACTIONS! "FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD" (*James 2:17-20*)!

Yah'shua said: "But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved" (*Matt. 24:13*). And John wrote: "And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him I will give power over the nations" (*Rev. 2:26*). Many people today insist that all you have to do is believe - they don't obey Yahweh's Laws! Of course we must believe and have faith. But faith encompasses believing in the promise of rewards for obedience. As Paul wrote: "Do we then make void the law through faith? Certainly not! On the contrary, WE ESTABLISH THE LAW" (*Rom. 3:31*)!

When the Messiah died, He left behind a last Will or Testament, revealing terms and conditions we would need to fulfill, if we were to receive of the promised eternal inheritance of the New Covenant. Yah'shua the Messiah's Testament is in force NOW. His New Covenant will take effect AFTER His return. When that marriage finally takes place (*Rev. 19:7*), we will enter into the Covenant that will never be broken!

Yah'shua the Messiah will first complete the confirmation of His Testament, through His Divine inspiration of the "two witnesses" described in Rev. 11. The two witnesses receive "power [*from His Holy Spirit*]...and they will prophesy [*testify, confirm the Covenant*] one thousand two hundred and sixty days" (*v. 3*). When they, on the Messiah's behalf, have finished confirming His Covenant, He will return and set up His Kingdom on Earth. He will then offer salvation to all who have ever lived. Then the whole world will have an opportunity to enter into the New Covenant.

And those who have been called out of this world NOW, the “firstfruits bride”; first to be trained and taught under His Law, will have the eternal opportunity to assist Him in teaching the majority of mankind; the “worldly wise and disobedient”, beginning in the Millennium. Yahweh has revealed His wonderful plan to us.

If we choose to run the race set before us, and endure unto the end, we will be the Firstfruits Bride of the Messiah.

Most of the world’s population will be given an opportunity for eternal life, but they will enter the Covenant at the “daughter” or child level, to be eternally under the authority of the “mother” or parent (*bride*) level.

“Then thou shalt remember thy ways, and be ashamed, when thou shalt receive thy sisters, thine elder and thy younger: and I will give them unto thee for DAUGHTERS, but NOT BY THE COVENANT” (*Ezek. 16:61*). The choice is yours!

## **Do our Faithful Thoughts hold the Power to Heal?**

It is well known that sufficient intelligence resides within each living cell to replicate the entire human being, intelligence and all, and in multiple copies if desired. Surely if one cell can do so much, the multi-billion cell human construct can do exponentially more, like for example, to maintain perfect health, or to enable perfect healing.

It is not "my" thoughts therefore that are capable of healing me, it is the innate intelligence implanted within me that holds such awesome power. This wisdom to "heal" then, resides within us, but is not because of us. It is not some special, unique or exclusive power to seek or to search for, or to gain or to master and be proud of, nor is it obscured by some mystical division of conscious and sub-conscious concepts of mind. This inner wisdom is universally constant to each of us and universally available to all of us. It is, because we are all endowed with it. It is also called life.

The harmonic resonance of this intelligence that resides in each of us, is multiplied exponentially upon physical communion, not simply because "touching" is nice, rather because we are social creatures by design. (*We know this, so explanations either in favour or against it are futile.*) The point of communion in matters of healing is this; when implementing our innate ability to heal, that ability, like all inherent intelligence, is multiplied exponentially by physical communion. This applies when healing one's self or when helping others to heal themselves.

When we learn to embrace our innate ability to heal, it shall be because we have already learned to embrace our mutual experience of communion with this all-knowing and omni-capable intelligence existing within us, that merely awaits our request for the healing we need from it.

Fortunately for us, we are not burdened with learning so much wisdom as to be able to "think ourselves healthy", we simply need to learn to ask of the wisdom already implanted within us, for the healing we perceive is needed. We ask through that faith.

Let us first understand what it is, that we refer to as the "thoughts" that may or may not have power to heal, or that we may or may not believe in.

Do we create thoughts or do we recognize them? If we create them, from what do we derive our creation? When will a thought we have created or recognized, come to an end? If we create it, why can we not quantify it? Will we run out of the components to make more thoughts?

It is universally held that thoughts are energy, and that they have power that may be expressed or directed to useful purpose. This energy and this power then, must originate as intelligence. This intelligence is limitless. It does not depend upon us, and it pre-exists and supersedes our comprehension.

We cannot create this limitless intelligence, or even any aspect of the energy or power that it is comprised of. We must also conclude that our thoughts and the power of our thoughts originate from that which we do not comprehend, and therefore cannot create.

Therefore we are merely capable, and then barely able to recognize useful thoughts from within the pre-existing and superseding intelligence residing within, or otherwise accessible to us. Then we must learn to express these thoughts as we are able to recognize them by our faith, while directing the power of these thoughts, to useful purposes, such as healing.

Neither the thought, nor the power of the thought, is capable of healing of itself, notwithstanding they both pre-exist and supersede us, within this limitless intelligence.

Healing is possible because we first recognize it as a possibility from within the limitless intelligence. We call that recognition, a "thought", which when we "have it", we then express it, while directing its inherent power to the healing, or to such other useful purpose as we may determine.

Your temporal body hosts nearly ten (10) living micro-organisms, for each living human cell, meaning if your normally healthy body is made up of roughly 8 Billion human cells, then it hosts about 80 Billion micro-organisms that enable it to remain healthy, and in fact are essential to its good health. And these all live, act and conduct themselves from the power innate within what we refer to as the very intelligence of "life".

If you and I can share thoughts and ideas with each other, and we can, because here we are doing just that, then surely we are sufficiently more capable than any of these micro-organisms. Yet how do we explain that they possess sufficient knowledge to work harmoniously and in unison with each of our living cells and to enable our whole body to maintain its good health? Could we, as more complex creatures not also know these things?

These individual human cells ours, as well as these many more near single-cell entities possess immense intelligence and hold the capacity to communicate and to engage in mutually beneficial activities. We are multi-billion cell constructs, with every single cell containing this vast intelligence, yet our perceived human intelligence is obviously distinct from theirs, and in at least one way, very inferior to theirs.

My mind and yours, can learn to communicate with these mini-entities within us. Our intelligence, masked as our mind, can ask the intelligence of our cells and receive information from them about many things. Our intelligence masked as our mind, can also ask

our cells and they will obey our requests for healing, if we ask in faith. We can also have our intelligence ask the intelligence of the micro-organisms within us to increase their performance, and they will, because it is their purpose to serve us - again, if we have faith.

Our cells and the micro-organisms residing within us, are obedient to our will. When we experience poor health, it is simply because we do not properly express and direct our will to our obedient servants. We confuse them further by not consistently distinguishing and directing the conscious and the sub-conscious wills, both of which they are bound to obey. This is not difficult to learn if one is willing and has faith in our Creator's design.

Many of us have nurtured an absolute faith in the creation, and as such, we have long ago forsaken any quest for "how" or "why" something that is obvious, is so. ESP is obvious in and of itself, so too are the potential "good" or "bad" applications of it.

Likewise we agree that we have been blessed with being able to call upon, or to at least experience, some portion of that intelligence that we reference as governing all of creation (nature). The ambition we speak of is not to simply be as "smart" as the intelligence implanted within each cell, or microbe within us, but to learn to communicate with that intelligence at even that level.

If we start at the least of these, we will then learn much while shortening our journey to the greater. Even at the cellular and microbial level, existing intelligence yearns to express itself to us, and earnestly yearns to do our will, if we would only express ourselves to it.

We hear of many Yogis, Monks, spiritualist gurus, and other "enlightened" peoples, that spend entire lifetimes on a race or quest to connect to a "higher" intelligence, or to the "inner wisdom", through various forms of

expression, yet we rarely hear of those humble individuals that were willing to start at the bottom and work up.

Learning to trust the least of these constructs of intelligence - the intelligence expressed within our very own cells for example, begins a powerful training that enables us to dispense with all fears, which fears otherwise remain the only obstacles to communion with the higher levels of intelligence.

Our tiny little cells are the portal to all other intelligence. Communion with the "highest intelligence" - our Creator, is that place where we can indeed learn of all knowledge, and it begins with expression through this portal of inner wisdom.

This we can know, without knowing the how or the why of it. And this we can all do, without the unnecessary pretence that wisdom may only befall "special" individuals, or be the result of a lifelong burden for the rest of us. It is ours for the asking. Ask with faith through the least, and the greatest will respond.

The power to heal is nothing more than one expression of energy. All is energy. Energy exists and is expressed in myriad forms. Whether a thing is perceived as innate or living, it is merely a different expression of original energy. There is no thing, including "power" that is not made up of this same original energy that comprises all things, including thoughts that heal, and thoughts that disable.

The unique characteristic of the human construct within the creation of all things, is that humans have been endowed with free will. Free will simply means we have a conscious mind that is capable of making limited free will decisions regarding the organization of this same energy.

The conscience mind is also just another expression of the original energy or intelligence of the Creator. The original energy

can express Himself as innate or living things, or as living things with conscious minds endowed with free will, because the original energy has the free will to express Himself according to His will - all things provide proof of this, because all things exist.

We can of our own free will, organize our thoughts and keep them secret, or we can share them. The thought, as we give birth to it, becomes a very specifically organized pattern of original energy. Yet only when we express that thought, does the energy become a "thing" unto itself, and only as it is being expressed, does it have the power to influence other organizations of energy.

The power inherent to a thought, is not in using our free will to organize the energy to create the thought, nor is there any power in simply recognizing or knowing the thought (*or idea*), the power comes as a result of using our free will to express the thought conceived or stumbled upon.

For example, let's pretend I know your loved one has been harmed in an accident. I have already organized the original energy within my conscious mind, formulating this information into a thought, yet it has no impact upon you until I express it to you, then it has the power to drastically affect the way you feel, think and act.

Likewise healing. The energy organized and embodied as each cell of the human construct contains sufficient knowledge to create the entire human being, including replicating that vast creative knowledge innumerable times. That amount of knowledge is sufficient to heal the human construct and to maintain perfect health. Yet these cells are made obedient to our sub-conscious will.

Science has established this - it is no great mystery. Deliberately concentrated thoughts, like constantly repeated thoughts or behaviour over time, can drastically alter the

individual's cellular vibration, either positively, or negatively.

When you lose the science long enough to think about it, you quickly realize that when you change the vibration of your cells by "thinking", whether deliberately concentrating, or by accidental repetitive behaviour, it is because they are responding to the expression of your free will. You are communicating with them. Humans communicate, and everything humans do originates in the knowledge contained in each little cell.

To heal then, is simply to do more of that communication with a faithful purpose. Then to live and behave harmoniously and with good health, simply requires we do more of that. Billions of our cells work harmoniously together and are capable of communing with us, yet it is our own lack of acceptance of this simple reality, that restricts us and instils fear within us, so that we hesitate to ask them (*our inner self*) what they yearn for us to know.

Know thyself individually, and this is easy to do, for it is not far from you, then living in good health and harmoniously with others will become the collective reality.

Healing in a physical sense is pre-programmed into each of our cells; we can do very little to change the program. For example, we slip and cut ourselves, the damaged cells automatically initiate a healing process. We can aid this process with intervention to clean and dress the wound, and if we accept it, we can stimulate a faster healing process with the proper expression of our thoughts and beliefs.

Thoughts are simply a specifically organized pattern of energy; that energy which is the essence of all that exists. Beliefs are nothing more than a slightly more complex grouping of thoughts, meaning beliefs too, are simply specifically organized patterns of the same energy. Neither thoughts or beliefs hold any power, simply because they exist as

thoughts or beliefs. Power, is merely another name for that same energy that is the essence of both the thought, or the belief pattern, once either are expressed.

When the energy pattern(s) that is the thought or the belief, is expressed, by being stated, written or even visualized, it then has the ability to change or to alter other things. (*Things being energy patterns also.*) It is by this "communication", or expressed communion of organized energy, that we can cause things to be changed, influenced, improved or enhanced, whether for good or bad, and whether individually or collectively.

Therefore the elusive "power" that humans erroneously seek to heal themselves with, is not found within their puny little minds, it is found already existing within the intelligence of each tiny little cell. Thus learning to commune with this source of virtually unlimited knowledge is key, and quite simple actually.

These cells commune with one another continually, and they yearn to commune with us at our conscious level. In fact they exist in a manner that is not just contingent upon our behaviour, they are obedient to our conscious behaviour in recognition of their being solely purposed to commune with and serve us, otherwise they would use that near infinite intelligence to do something other than serve us.

We are each free to commune with our cells' collective; our inner self, yet most are unwilling to accept this simple and easy reality, and rather persist with futile beliefs in struggling to learn "unique" abilities held only by a "special" few.

The power to heal does not lie in the thoughts *per se*, but there is a field of energy and intelligence that is moved by thought. We would simply add that the influence of thought, or the ability of thought to cause a positive

influence on health, is contingent upon the thought being expressed or visualized with a proper and faithful intent.

Thoughts (*or even actions*) that are negative can often block the body's ability to maintain healthy "energy fields". This is because the negative thought energy causes a harmonic interference with the body's collective cellular energy, which is typically expressed and measurable in multiple energy fields within a whole. Likewise the energy of positive thoughts can help maintain a harmonious balance of these same energy fields.

The same negative (*or positive*) influence of the harmonic balance of the body's energy fields, is most often unwittingly accomplished by repetitive (+ or -) thinking patterns, or repetitive (+ or -) actions, which can and do lead to many common dis-eases. This influence of our body's energy harmonics by the nature of our thoughts and actions occurs automatically, thus learning to pay attention to ourselves is paramount.

We find English language to be limited. In this discourse, we have used the word "energy" to denote whatever it is, that is all things. For example, we know that "mass", virtually regardless of what the substance is, has a root component of energy, nothing more, nothing less - just energy. And this energy that is the mass, like the mass itself, because it is the mass, cannot be created or destroyed, but only transformed from form to form.

The energy obviously preceded the mass, because the mass in its various forms, is comprised of it, not the other way round. The perceived mass of everything that is, is speculatively perceived as having its beginning as a concentration of energy, yet there are many possible forms of this energy that we do not yet fully perceive, notwithstanding that whatever these forms may be, they also have

their beginnings from that same concentration of energy.

Thoughts and beliefs, including our faith, are constructs of this same energy. Consciousness is also a specific construct of this same energy. In the strictest sense, the energy that is all things, could be labelled intelligence, and this intelligence, simply expresses Himself through myriad forms of organized energy. If the original energy is not intelligence, then the energy Himself is sufficiently intelligent to express Himself as all things.

The specifically organized patterns of energy that are thoughts, may be expressed with the intent to help in the healing of one's self or to help with the healing of another. And yes, there absolutely is some form of power, or energy embodied within all thoughts, which is why a thought can be both expressed and perceived - it is a known thing within the realm of all things.

There are other subtle but nonetheless actual limits to our thoughts. We have limited free will for example. We are not free to create more life energy or intelligence, we merely have the free will to re-organize some aspects of the life or living energy that exists in our temporal realm, and that is expressed as all things we perceive.

Further we are limited to a set of pre-programmed instructions within our DNA. Some that affect lifespan, physical or behavioural characteristics, general health and well being, and many more things beyond our level of comprehension. No matter how effectively we may be able to use our thoughts to improve or enhance our health, we will all still have this temporal life experience come to an end, undoubtedly as a consequence of health related issues, not the least of which is simply old age.

You cannot have an intent, without first having "thought" of it. Intelligence, is energy in motion, and energy in motion is intelligence, or at least it is intelligent enough to express itself as all things including thoughts, intents and the free will to engage any of them.

Commune with your true inner self, not your inner ego, and it will reveal these things to you, It has no agenda aside from revealing all truth to you as fast as you are able to accept it.

Of course we can deliberately, accidentally, and even wilfully change our DNA in moderate amounts, but you cannot for example, change your DNA totally to what you want - you cannot suddenly become "superman", or a duck, there are any number of very real and actual limitations that are pre-programmed into what and who you are, regardless of belief.

There is much nourishment found within the wisdom willing to be revealed to you from within one's inner self. This Spiritual refreshment of the temporal mind and body is perhaps the most powerful and easily evidenced method of improving physical health and maintaining a healthy temporal body. *(There may be better things to focus on than health of the temporal body - perhaps the health of the eternal life essence, or Spirit within us for example.)*

When you commune with your true inner self, you will then learn from that source of all knowledge, what is truly healthy and beneficial for your temporal body. We tend otherwise to waste tremendous time and energy relying on our puny little minds, trying to second guess what is good for us.

Each thing that exists, exists as a distinct pattern of organized, intelligent energy. Whether the thing is the thought, the belief, the intent, the moon, or the particles that make up the moon, the earth, or gravity, etc., everything is an expression of the same intelligent energy,

and every-thing is expressed as a variation of patterned organization of that energy.

This energy is also intelligence, but it is the expression of the intelligence, or you might say, it is an intelligent expression of the energy by Himself.

A key to comprehending why thoughts, when coupled with intent and belief, appear to have power to cause other things to change, or bodies to heal for example, is the knowledge that all thoughts of healing are of this intelligent energy that is connected to all things, because all things are an expression of the same intelligent energy that is the healing thought.

It is unnecessary to have a "definition" of energy, to know that He exists. Matter is NOT total rest energy. All things that we perceive as matter are in motion. The smallest known particles, when magnified sufficiently, are first, never stationary, and second, of no quantifiable or measurable substance, and third, completely invisible. The only detectable difference between the energy found and stored in a chip of cedar wood, or in a fragment of brain matter, is the specific pattern of motion that the energy maintains while in that form of substance.

Physicists have descriptions of this patterned energy, and know that only the variation of the patterns of movement of this energy, determines the way the energy is perceived, or what the energy is perceived as being. This applies to the energy patterns inherent to everything known to exist within the universe. In gold the energy patterns are denser than in air, but they are clearly evident as being organized patterns of the same invisible energy.

"Life", is known to exist in the universe. It presents itself as an inherent component of otherwise inert mass, rendering that mass "alive". The main apparent difference between the living matter and the dead matter is the change of the pattern of motion that the energy

is expressing while being perceived. When the "life" leaves the matter, the pattern of motion of the energy changes, but does not stop.

For example, the patterns of motion of the energy in a living plant cell, change, but do not stop - ever, even when that plant cell is dried out and long dead. For further example, the weight of a fertilized chicken egg changes as the life within the egg matures and just prior to hatching. This is measurable, yet nothing measurable can either get in or out during the process, except life energy.

Thoughts, beliefs, and emotional feelings are also patterned energy expressing itself in both measurable and perceptible manners. Doctors possess many means by which they can observe the changes in brain energy patterns simply by evoking certain thoughts and feelings, or by having those thoughts or feelings expressed.

We can observe these variations of the energy patterns in all things, whether those things are of apparent material substance, or whether they are of non-material substance, such as thoughts, beliefs, or emotions.

Thus the state of being healthy, is an outward expression of our inner beliefs. Therefore the state of faith we hold for our own inner beliefs must also be "healthy".

## **Faithful Hands-On Healing:**

The ability to help each other heal has been designed into each of us as a part of our "automatic" functions. To harness your own inherent Faith Healing ability, you simply need to learn to be the "you" that Yahweh designed you to be! Earnest, heart-felt prayer, together with simple body awareness meditations, and hand positions are all that is required. Those who apply these simple principles and techniques that Yah'shua originally taught us, can become highly capable practitioners in but a single day. This is because the ability to help others heal is an inherent part of people's essential nature.

Faith Healing is a method of hands-on healing that many times, must literally be seen to be believed. Employing only a very light touch on yourself or others, you can profoundly accelerate the body's own healing response. The effect is so immediate and extraordinary; you can actually see bones in the body spontaneously realigning themselves or witness other equally amazing physical, emotional, mental or spiritual shifts occur right before your eyes. Since the body decides where and how to heal itself, you need never worry about doing it right. Beyond structural realignment, pain and inflammation are quickly reduced, while organs, systems, glands, and emotions become balanced and spiritual well-being is achieved.

Just as new cars coming off the assembly line are all equipped with a steering wheel, windows and doors, the ability to help heal each other is automatically built into the human system. As surely as children are endowed with the ability to walk, learn language, laugh, cry, and love, we all have the ability to be healing practitioners.

Once you have recognized your own Faith Healing abilities, you can never forget how to do it. The process is very much like

learning to ride a bicycle. Before you begin, the idea of sitting upright on two skinny wheels would probably seem quite impossible. When you first start to stay upright, it seems like a miracle, but after some time, it becomes completely natural and expected. When you first observe the results of using Faith Healing, the experience will often be surprising and unforgettable. Beyond this, there is an immense joy and satisfaction in knowing that you can assist others in their healing process.

To promote the healing response, you must simply have faith in Yahweh's design of our human body and spirit. To go beyond the base levels of the body - cells, tissues, organs, and systems - and arrive at a junction between mind and matter, the point where spiritual consciousness actually starts to have an effect, you must have faith in His Holy Spirit component as Yahweh designed it. There is such a point where spiritual consciousness and physical matter intersect, and this junction is accessible to us through our love and intent.

By harnessing the innate power of our love, we can dynamically and positively activate the body's own healing process. From the DNA to the bones, all cells and systems effortlessly respond to the healing vibration of our love.

Practitioners from many hands-on healing modalities that have objectively studied Faith Healing have reported that it significantly increased the power or effectiveness of these "alternative" healing modalities. Chiropractors think of it as an advanced form of chiropractic. Physical therapists think of it as a more effective form of physical therapy. Similarly, acupuncturists have reported that it works like an advanced form of acupuncture. Reiki masters call it "Reiki empowerment". BodyTalkers call it "Turbo-BodyTalk". Faith Healing combines seamlessly with numerous other techniques to enhance their

effectiveness: massage, shiatsu, jin shin do, acupressure, polarity, cranial sacral, therapeutic touch, BodyTalk Systems, healing touch and so on.

Faith Healing is a wonderful stand-alone therapy for people with no previous training. This may well be the easiest and most effective healing technique that there is to learn. Nearly everyone can learn to do extraordinary healing work. It is so easy, you can learn from simply reading this article! Children can usually learn to do this work almost immediately.

Faith Healing empowers you to help friends and loved ones to relieve a tremendous amount of pain and suffering. It is truly one of the essential life skills we should all know and appreciate. Just imagine if we were all to live in a world where healing was considered real, where healing was universally practiced, and where humanity's kind and generous good nature could be readily expressed. Thank Yahweh that the Messiah will return!

It's not important that you know everything just the important things. Spiritual resonance is one such thing. There truly is a mystery and a wonder in the seemingly simple function of Spiritual resonance. From the galaxies to the subatomic, all people and particles dance to its power. If a piano and a guitar were both in tune and a G was played on the piano, the G string on the guitar would also vibrate. Sound waves that move air particles are transferring the acoustical energy from the piano to the guitar.

Similarly, tuned oscillators, that is, things that can vibrate at the same frequency, require very little work to transfer energy from one to another. In this example, the string on the guitar absorbs the energy waves from the piano because it is tuned to the same frequency. Whenever there are similarly tuned oscillators, they form what is called a resonant

system. The guitar and piano string are resonating with one another.

If pendulum-type grandfather clocks were mounted against a wall with their pendulums swinging out of phase to one another, in a matter of days, their pendulums would lock into phase and beat together. In this case, energy transferred through the common wall would be sufficient to allow the clocks to come into phase with one another. This is "entrainment", a phenomenon that allows two similarly tuned systems to align their movement and energy so that they match in rhythm and phase.

This phenomenon also occurs in the area of electronics. When you have similarly tuned oscillating circuits vibrating at similar frequencies, the slower circuit will rise to match the speed of the faster one. In both of these examples, we can see how energy is transferred from one similarly tuned system to another.

What can we learn from all this? First, when two systems are oscillating at different frequencies, there is an impelling force called Spiritual resonance that causes the two to transfer energy from one to another. When two similarly tuned systems vibrate at different frequencies, there is another aspect of this energy transfer called entrainment, which causes them to line up and to vibrate at the same frequency.

Entrainment is the process by which things align their movement and energy together to match in rhythm and phase. This works with biological systems just as well as mechanical ones. On warm nights in many parts of the world, fireflies gathering in a tree will light up at random. Before long, they will all be turning their lights on and off in a coordinated manner.

We have often heard crickets or frogs all finding the same rhythm and coordinating their

sounds to one another. In these cases, nature finds it useful or perhaps economical to rhythmically entrain the individuals. Perhaps through a more mysterious process, women sharing a house or dormitory over time will find that their menstrual cycles will rhythmically entrain as well. Scientists have found that even disembodied animal hearts, when kept alive in a lab and placed near each other, will entrain - the individual hearts will begin to beat in unison.

The process appears to be universal. Itzhak Bentov may have been absolutely correct in 1977 in his fascinating book *Stalking the Wild Pendulum*. He states, "We may look at disease as such out-of-tune behavior of one or another of our organs of the body. When a strong harmonizing rhythm is applied to it, the interference pattern of waves, which is the organ, may start beating in tune again." He postulates that this theory may account for the reason energy healing actually works. It happens to be "scientifically" true, however it is not essential for us to always fully understand the "science" behind Yahweh's designs.

When two things are vibrating at different frequencies through resonance and entrainment, either the lower vibration will come up, the higher vibration will come down, or they will meet in the middle. In Faith Healing, practitioners learn through prayer and meditation techniques to raise the vibration of their hands to a very high frequency.

When they place their hands in proximity to someone else who is in pain, their client's body, like a similarly tuned circuit, will resonate and entrain to the practitioner's hands. Love is the universal vibration or Spiritual resonance that allows people to transfer healing energy from one to another.

In his book, *Loving Hands Are Healing Hands*. Bruce Berger writes; "Sympathetic resonance describes the tendency of two wave

forms with the same degree of arc to vibrate sympathetically together, energizing and communicating universally with each other. Thus wave forms of the same length and frequency will entrain and influence each other throughout all creation. This is the key to understanding one of the dynamics that holds creation together, and to understanding our theory of the body as the energy of **sacred** sound."

When working with Faith Healing, the practitioner holds the highest vibration they can, which becomes the dominant frequency. The "healer" (otherwise known as the client or patient), that is, the person whose body is healing, will simply entrain with and match the Spiritual resonant vibration of the practitioner, whether he knows it consciously or not.

The definition of a great healer is someone who was very sick and got well quickly. When you understand Faith Healing as Yah'shua demonstrated it, then you will also understand that anyone who claims to be able to heal others is either ignorant, mistaken, arrogant, or delusional. All they are doing is providing the Spiritual resonant energy to allow others to heal themselves.

The practitioner simply holds a tremendously strong FAITH in his harmonizing energy, and the client's energy grows from and matches that vibration. The innate body intelligence of the person receiving the energy will do whatever the body deems useful to cause healing to occur.

The body heals itself with an unfathomable level of intelligence. Western civilization often takes the body's innate healing ability for granted, but it (the body) is its own true healer. If we look at the cells of our body, we see that we have hundreds of billions of cells that are constantly feeding on oxygen and the food we eat, and releasing carbon dioxide and other waste materials. Every single

one of many billions of our cells has the DNA coding and capacity to reproduce the entire body! Naturally it also has the DNA coding and capacity to maintain that same body as it was designed to do! These cells are also busy reproducing and self-healing, with thousands of microscopic changes taking place every minute of every day!

At every moment, each of us is awash in the perpetual movement of the Spiritual resonant life-force energy that streams through and around our bodies. Like the fish who has no concept of water, it has only been modern Western cultures who have denied the existence of our Spiritual resonant life-force.

According to the rules inherent to the scientific method, everything must be measurable in order to concede its existence. Since scientists do not have sensitive enough instrumentation to measure or prove the existence of Spiritual energy, they deny that it is real. This is like denying the existence of a television channel because your set does not receive that station. It is also like denying the existence of love because you can't measure its length or weigh it on a scale.

Spiritual resonance is the energy that differentiates that which is living from that which is not. It is the animating current of life, which has been acknowledged, appreciated, and utilized by numerous cultures around the world for thousands of years. The Chinese call it "Chi," and the Japanese call it "Ki." These countries and many others utilize the energy for various healing massage techniques, acupuncture, and numerous forms of martial arts. The Indian yogis have called the energy "Prana" and have used their understanding to achieve higher levels of consciousness through their practices of yoga, pranayama, meditation, and various healing practices. The Hawaiian Kahunas referred to it as "Mana" and also used

it for hands-on healing, distance healing, and for prayer.

The irony is that all people actually feel the Spiritual resonant life-force within them every moment of every day. They are just not aware that they are feeling it. For most of us, the sensations of the Spiritual resonant life-force energy can be analogous to the background noise of the street where we live. We have grown so completely accustomed to it that we no longer notice it. We only notice the street noise if we stop and pay close attention to it. Sometimes, the most blatant and obvious things are the very last to be seen or acknowledged. Spiritual resonant life-force energy is just such a thing. Yet despite the lack of awareness, it is easily felt by most individuals without much effort. We just need to know how to look for it.

The true magic of touch! For decades, physicians and psychologists have been praising the tremendous value and importance of touch. Studies have shown that babies who are not touched will not grow as quickly as their counterparts who are held regularly. Beyond slow growth, these babies often have weakened immune systems and are more subject to illness. Babies who are profoundly deficient in their need to be touched, may also suffer severe emotional damage and even violent behavior. Psychology studies have also shown the devastating impact of not being touched in experiments with monkeys taken away from their mothers.

If touch deprivation is abusive, then it stands to reason that abundant touch would be healthy and beneficial. In Jean Liedloffs excellent book, "The Continuum Concept," she discussed how children of the stone age Yequanar Indians, living in a "primitive" community in the Brazilian jungle, were held constantly when they were young. As the children grew up, they exhibited no violent

behavior. In her two and one half years with this tribe, she realized that children willingly obeyed their elders, and that toddlers played peacefully together without ever arguing or fighting.

Consider that in our "modern" society, it is still a common practice for babies to be separated from their mothers at birth due to medical intervention in maternity wards. These isolated babies hear nothing but the crying of other newborns. Away from the arms of their mothers, they cry themselves to sleep.

The question raised is this: What is touch, and what makes it so important? If touch were merely physical contact, a mechanical rocker and a moving piece of rabbit fur could provide a baby's touch needs.

But the value of touch is not merely physical. It is much more than just the mechanics of being stroked. The true value of touch is the Spiritual resonant energy; the essence of love that is with that touch.

## **Faithful Healing Principles:**

- Love is a universal vibration; love communicates to all species, functions on all levels and expresses our true Spiritual nature. It is the foundation of all healing and the core essence of life.
- The ability to assist in healing is natural to all people, as is love.
- Healing is a skill that can be recognized and that grows stronger with practice.
- Energy follows thought. The practitioner uses intention and various meditations to create a high-intensity Spiritual resonant energy field and uses that field to surround the area to be healed.
- Spiritual resonance and entrainment cause the area being healed to change its vibration to match that of the practitioner. The practitioner simply raises and holds the new resonance until the healer has matched frequencies.
- No one can really heal anyone else. The person in need of healing is the healer. The practitioner simply holds a resonance to allow the body to heal itself. Or simply put, the practitioner simply and faithfully touches the healer allowing Yahweh's design to function as it was meant to.
- Trusting the process is essential; it is called "Faith". The work may cause temporary pain or other distressing symptoms that are all part of the healing. The Spiritual resonance life-force and the healing process, works with complexity and wisdom that are beyond our conception and comprehension.
- The energy follows the natural intelligence of the body to do the necessary healing. The practitioner pays attention to "body intelligence" and does not have to "know" what is wrong with the body.
- The practitioner is quite often also receiving a healing by doing the work.
- Prayer amplifies the Spiritual resonant life-force energy - or love.

- Combining prayer and meditation techniques together causes the Spiritual resonance to maximize itself.
- Synergy is the effect of multiple Faith Healing practitioners working together and is greater than the sum of the parts. It can be very powerful.
- Each person's gifts in life and in healing are unique. Some people are especially gifted at treating specific health conditions. Yahweh gives all Spiritual gifts "according to His will".
- Highly effective healing can be accomplished from a distance.
- Faith Healing combines easily and effectively with other healing modalities and adds a level of Spiritual safety often overlooked by other modalities.

There are those who would have us believe that it takes many years of hard work and discipline to become healing practitioners. They would have us believe that only the most brilliant, gifted, and extensively trained among us could ever hope to obtain such a title. If the truth be told, children, seniors, and everyone in between can learn to be healing practitioners. It may even be said that physicians and people with postgraduate degrees could eventually learn to do this true healing work, simply by their adoption of faith in it as opposed to faith in their existing modality.

There have been many acclaimed "healers" whose talents have been well documented and accepted as genuine. However, most of them had no explanation for what they were doing or how it was occurring. The significance of Faith Healing is that we have a cognitive explanation for how to stimulate the healing process, and we have a proven methodology for instructing others how to do this successfully as well. It is an elementary aspect of our Creator's reason for designing us the way He did!

Since the true healer is the person that is being healed, the practitioner is merely acting as the catalyst to allow the healer to access and utilize a higher vibrational field of energy to heal him or herself.

- Becoming a highly effective healing practitioner is one of the easiest skills to learn.
- Healing is a great and tremendous joy.
- Anyone with a strong desire and an uncompromising faith can learn this.
- You can learn to be an extraordinary healing practitioner, starting now!

It starts with Love! Healing work is all about love, and the practitioner learns to hold a vibratory field of this love. To clarify the term, when we say "love" we are not speaking in the traditional sense of the sort of love that a mother has for a child, a husband for a wife, or about a winged cherub with a bow and arrow. We are speaking of a more basic form of love - one that is more innate, intrinsic and universal; the love that is Yahweh.

Have you ever watched children play? They seem to always say, "Watch me!" So whether you are from the child's culture or any other culture, whether you speak the language or not, if you sit there simply watching that child, he or she will feel loved. Simply giving your attention to a child is automatically experienced as an act of loving. This might be called non-aculturated or non-associative love because it has nothing to do with your background, your race, religion, politics, or other beliefs you may hold.

Faith Healing is about being present, which is an expression of your essence. We would call this kind of love "pre-conditional" and believe that your very nature and essence is made up of this love, whether you believe it is there or not. This love is the essential nature of your being that comes through your hands in the form of an energy transference regardless of your mood.

Your fundamental, instinctive, and most basic energy is that of love. You don't have to work at it - it is who you are. As a rock does not have to try to be more "rocklike" and water does not have to try to be wetter, we do not have to try to have more essence of love - we are love, just as Yahweh is love. We can, however, endeavour to acknowledge how much love there really is.

Intent is something that happens so automatically, most people just miss it. When you simply walk across the room, you already generated the intention to do so. Love and intention are among the most natural qualities we have. So don't worry. If you are reading this article to learn more about Faith Healing, you already have sufficient love and intention to do a wonderful job.

Faith Healing is powerful healing work. In order to do Faith Healing, it is necessary to first learn various Spiritual resonant energy pre-requisites. Most people will find these pre-requisites easy to learn and highly pleasurable to practice. However, you need to take your time and practice these techniques thoroughly. In short, you are learning to feel and express your love through your touch.

These exercises are designed to help you increase your awareness of Spiritual resonant life-force energy and the physical sensations of that love as it is being expressed by the touch of your hands. The extra time and effort you spend with them will make a huge difference in your ability to maximize the energy and increase the power of your healing sessions. Eventually, you will feel a growing sense of mastery, and it will all become second nature to you, just as it was always meant to be.

Essentially you will need to learn two things. Firstly, you will require a sense of purpose behind your prayer. That sense of purpose must be clearly your unselfish desire

to help the party being healed for the honour and glory of Yahweh - not for your own gain or ego. Although this is simple, it requires an absolute faith and conviction. You might find reading our chapters "**Pray With a Purpose**", and "**What is Divine Healing**" found in this book.

Secondly, you will require the ability to maximize your concentration, and minimize any distractions from your sense of purpose for the duration of your healing process. Basically what this means is that you learn to get yourself into a meditative state, or commonly "alpha" state wherein you are very relaxed, yet not asleep, and still mentally aware enough that you can focus on your prayer and on your patient.

When you are comfortable with your ability to meditatively concentrate and to focus on your prayer with Yahweh for the exclusive physical, emotional, mental and spiritual benefit of your patient, then you will be ready to start! It is not necessary to "know" what to ask for in your prayer, just that you ask Yahweh through Yah'shua the Messiah for everything that is possible according to His will and for His honour and glory, that is for the best possible physical, mental, emotional and spiritual health of the person being healed at that point and time.

Likewise it is not necessary to "know" what to do or how to do it - the hands on part that is! Simply get yourself into the right state of mind and begin your prayer and then "touch" the person needing the healing.

The most common method which seems to generate the most favourable results is to have the person lie on their back and for you to sit on their right hand side and then place your right hand palm down on the person's diaphragm (*upper stomach area just just below ribs*), and optionally, your left hand on the persons heart. But results, probably the same

results, will occur whether you sit, stand, lie down, float in water or whatever, provided you are simply able to focus and concentrate in faith.

The right hand on the diaphragm seems to be almost universal, at least in the beginning of a session for some reason, regardless of where in the person's body the healing is required. You may find yourself obtaining subtle, almost sub-conscious "hints" about moving to other parts of the person's body with your touch and you may follow these "instincts" if it seems to work for you. Others find that they can simple focus their attention on the other parts of the body while leaving their hand on the diaphragm and obtain the same results. Sometimes the patient will have specific requests for pain in certain areas, or obvious injuries, etc., and we have found that it is almost always best to start with the right hand on the diaphragm, and either focus on the specific areas or move your hand to the areas but only after achieving a "connection".

It is also not necessary to "know" what to expect or how long it will take or what reactions you may get. Every healing is unique. Every prayer is unique. Every situation is its own. You will recognize a certain tingly feeling in your right hand when your Spiritual resonance has been tapped by the person being healed, and when their body has completely tuned itself to the extent it is capable at that time, you will notice the tingly feeling slowly go away and completely stop. It seems that so long as the two frequencies are "tuning" themselves toward a unison, that the person offering the hands on will feel an unusual sensation. Sometimes the feeling is so pronounced as to actually put your right hand and forearm to "sleep". (*This is not a right hand for right-handed parties and left hand for lefties, it is right hand for everyone as practitioner,*

*because energy flows out of the right hand, while energy is drawn into the body by the left.)*

Also, for many practitioners of other healing modalities, such as massage, shiatsu, jin shin do, acupressure, polarity, cranial sacral, therapeutic touch, BodyTalk Systems, healing touch and others, you may find that your existing system "protocol" can be brought into play and largely carried out with Faith Healing, in a faster, simpler, more efficient and spiritually safer manner.

It is important to understand and appreciate that many practitioners of "alternative" modalities may have faith in something other than Yahweh. Although many of these practitioners can achieve seemingly miraculous healing results, they are often getting their help from Satan's demons as opposed to the Spirit of Yahweh. Some argue that if the healing is "good", that the source must also be good, but well-learned students of Yahweh's word, know that this is not necessarily true.

As is clearly written in 2 Cor. 14 and 15: "And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works." This means that most often, these miraculous healings emanate from evil sources as a deceptive tool to keep the healed party from seeking Yahweh!

Let's face it, if a really nice, even professing Christian party were to "heal" you of an affliction and accept even the slightest of your gratitude, then you may be tempted to "worship the created thing" as opposed to the creator! Such "positive" works conducted by Satan and his evil spirits can keep people from seeking the true God. Why would you bother to seek Yahweh, if you were under the impression that you had found your very own "guru"?

The true test as to whether the healing is genuinely from Yahweh and therefore in the best long term interests of the patient, is very simple. The true Israelite practitioner will not accept any of the credit, will not accept any payment or any acknowledgement of anything aside from the fact that he is simply carrying out his duties as an obedient servant of Yahweh for the glory of Yahweh.

As the Messiah proclaimed in John 14:10 and other places, not even He (*the Messiah*) performed any miraculous healings; "Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works."

## **Faithful Communion for Healing:**

Healing is an elementary aspect of the human condition. Humans, unlike plants and animals, make decisions. Plants do not decide where to grow, how tall to grow, what fruit they may bear, or what color they will be. Plants simply grow into what they were designed to be. Animals are not much different. Yes they make choices, but their choices are based upon instinct, not rational thought processes. For example, whales do not "change" their minds as to migratory patterns or timing, nor do they "experiment" with different diets. People on the other hand, tend to do otherwise! When we make decisions based upon our own guesswork or on our own "scientific" reasoning, we often make mistakes, resulting in negative benefits including health problems.

Human beings are social creatures by design, requiring by that design "communion" for all major aspects of life to be fully realized. Full spiritual health and development requires by design, spiritual communion with Yahweh through His Holy Spirit. Full physical, emotional and mental health and development, requires by design, physical, mental and emotional communion with others, i.e.:

Faith requires 2 - you and Yahweh; love requires 2; friendship requires 2; sex requires 2; pro-creation requires 2; discussion requires 2; loneliness is absent with 2 or more; loneliness causes health problems; perfect love casts out all fear (*insecurities, etc.*); fear causes health problems; perfect love requires by definition the love of others; direct communion with other(s) confirms social contact; social contact by design confirms love; love, social contact and interaction are design requirements of optimal health.

This is why "laying on of hands" actually works! It was designed to work by our Creator, who knew that we would suffer mistaken decisions! When two (*or more*) people

commune physically, by the faithful laying on of hands for example, they are providing physical witness to the spiritual connection between the two, whether the second has faith or not.

The seemingly miraculous answer to the healing request, is quite simply addressed by those with Natural Faith. Yahweh has encoded sufficient wisdom into every single one of our several billion cells that would enable that cell to reproduce the entire human body. When a single egg cell and sperm cell get together, all the wisdom necessary to manufacture the entire human being is already in the DNA. So also is all of the information necessary to perfectly maintain that body! Physical communion, acting as witness to our prayer request, simply allows His Holy Spirit to intercede and bring the spiritual harmony of the body closer to its original perfect design. This is Natural Healing. Truly the only "HOLYstic" and truthfully, "wholistic" healing available!

There are many dynamic examples of healing modalities currently being demonstrated as effective "alternative" healing and preventative therapies, that utilise some aspect of Natural Faith Healing, whether knowingly or not. Some of the more popular modalities might be "*BodyTalk System*", "*GeoTran*", "*Reiki*", "*Quantum Touch*", "*Reflexology*", "*Accu-Pressure*" "*Massage Therapy*", and other bioenergetic therapies with the commonality of some form of "kinesiology" or bio feedback.

Like Natural Faith Healing, many of these modalities have been shown to have dramatic results in cases of: Arthritis; emotional disorders; balancing body energies; headaches; viruses; hydration; infections; stress; systemic cleansing; chronic fatigue; phobias; endocrine imbalances; menstrual irregularities; parasites; infertility; allergies; digestive disorders; internal/external scarring; degenerative diseases; learning disorders; post

operative healing; sleeping disorders; back pain; pre operative preparation; spiritual underdevelopment; sight and hearing disorders; inherited disorders; casting out of demons; multiple personalities; PMS.

Each of these common alternative modalities offers a "scientific" rationale for their effectiveness. The more knowledge and confidence, or "faith" the practitioners of these systems have in their respective system, the more their system seems to be effective. Claiming science rather than Yahweh as the origin of their "faith", should not detract from their good results or from the goodness in their hearts, as: "Every good gift and every perfect gift is from [Yahweh] the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation". (*James 1:17*) What the proponents of these systems such as "*BodyTalk System*", "*GeoTran*", "*Reiki*", "*Quantum Touch*", and other bioenergetic therapies fail to recognize, is that because they do not give credit to Yahweh as the source of the healing designed into our human bodies, they often unwittingly invite involvement of deceptive or evil spirits masquerading as spirits of righteousness. This often makes them very much akin to witchcraft and other modalities that admit their demonic sources of power.

From a Natural Faith perspective, each of these modalities has a two part aspect in common that explains their effectiveness. Firstly, they all use some form of bio feedback or kinesiology, requiring by design, physical touch, or "communion". Secondly, they all employ an absolute belief, or "faith" in their own system.

The founder(s) and developer(s) of these alternative healing modalities have scientifically proven that Natural Faith Healing works! In each case, very brilliant and accomplished people have undertaken to discover the science behind how certain

aspects of the body's own healing abilities may be enhanced. Some of these modalities consistently demonstrate almost miraculous results, considering they were conceived by "men", and therefore limited to the intellectual capacity of those men. The real issue is, their methods work because they are effecting to whatever degree the limits of their modality allow, some portion of Yahweh's freely available Natural Faith Healing.

There is no doubt that the knowledge programmed into us at the cellular level, is far beyond the grasp of even the greatest human minds. The living power of Yahweh's Will, His Holy Spirit is even farther beyond man's understanding. Physical communion is witness to our faith that Yahweh, through His awesome power and majesty, will indeed answer our prayer requests for healing. This always results in more personal harmony, as well as in physical, emotional, mental and spiritual healing.

The only human limitation to the effectiveness of laying on of hands for healing, is the level of faith that is associated with the person laying on the hands. The only Godly limitation to the effectiveness of laying on of hands for healing, is the degree to which the healing request (*just like any other prayer request*) is in perfect harmony with Yahweh's Will. Yahweh answers all prayer, including prayer for health, "according to His Will".

Therefore, Absolute Natural Faith, with absolutely no doubt, coupled with absolute physical communion, will incur absolute results, according to Yahweh's Will. This, is an otherwise unconditional promise of Yahweh!

Faith Healing is the supernatural intervention in individual physical, emotional, or spiritual health. Yahweh does the healing, super-naturally. There are many faith healers in the Natural Congregation of Yahweh, but as Yah'shua showed us, the lack of faith can stop

the power.

We are born into a body that dies, and we get tired, and we get sick, and our bodies wear out through time no matter what. When Yahweh heals, He is breaking into time and space and intervening in the natural course of events and performs the miraculous. Everything that Yahweh does is natural to Him but from our perspective it all seems miraculous. He is above, beyond and outside of our natural ways. Are we to think that sickness and viruses and old age is just in the mind? There are those that would have you believe this, but our condition in Adam's fallen nature is real, not imagined. It may not have been the way that Yahweh originally intended but this reality must be accepted as the revealed truth it is.

The mind does have a lot to do with healing and sickness and how we think can determine our health. But our minds also must be constantly renewed whereas our bodies will continue to deteriorate until it dies.

Paul tells us a lot about spiritual gifts, he teaches us about the gift of prophecy, the gift of tongues, the gift of wisdom and knowledge and all the rest. But Paul does not write about the gift of healing, he writes of the gifts of healing - plural. Think about it, who has the gift, the one that prays for healing or the one that gets healed?

We must realize that you might not really need to have the gift of healing to pray for someone to be healed. James writes "Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the Congregation; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of Yahweh." There is no requirement here that one should have the gift of healing to pray for the sick, only the faith to be able to ask.

Now everybody in Israel didn't get healed, but it says that those that came to Him got healed. That's a key. Yah'shua never let

anybody go away without being healed, but the people that didn't come to him, didn't always get healed. Of course faith leads you toward coming to Him. If you did not believe, would you pray to Him? Lazarus did not ask to be risen from the dead, neither did His family. Yah'shua loved Lazarus enough to raise him and He loves us too.

Because not everyone gets healed, should we stop praying for it, even if you have not been healed yourself? The answer here is obvious yet there are others who would think that Yahweh does not heal at all or it was for a specific time in the past and not for today. Yahweh heals through His supernatural power and Yahweh heals through the natural power of our body's ability to heal. He heals through prayer, He heals through doctors, He heals through medicine and wholesome living. And don't forget that inner healing is much more valuable than physical healing. We need faith to be able to ask of Yahweh, but Yahweh does not need our faith to heal. He heals because He loves us and bestows His compassion on us according to His will.

Every healing ministry has a prophetic element to it, real or feigned. This is good because we are to try the spirits to see if they are in fact from Yahweh, but not everybody has the prophetic ability to recognize truth from error. Discernment is listed as one of the spiritual gifts and is a very important one.

We do know that we can lose our healing: "Afterward Yah'shua findeth him [the healed man] in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee" (*John 5: 14*). Wow! Sin no more, quite a task, are we capable of that? No, but we have been graciously gifted forgiveness in advance for all of our faults and failings. Should we sin then? Of course not! This passage has to do with "wilful" disobedience.

Yahweh is compassionate and will forgive all sin that is not deliberate in the face of knowledge.

Yah'shua went about in His ministry and healed people of their sicknesses, diseases, mental illness and to heal the broken hearted. He cast out demons and did marvellous works. Yah'shua gave his disciples the power against unclean spirits to cast them out and to heal sickness and disease. He also told us that in His name we also will be able to do these things. "Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils. Freely you have received, freely give." "Heal the sick that are therein and say unto them, the kingdom of Yahweh is come nigh unto you." Yahweh is the healer but we are the instrument that He uses to bring the healing.

In the Old Covenant, Yahweh healed and showed us that if we pray for the healing that He would answer the prayer. Mighty prophets like Elijah were given the gift to heal but today it may come through anyone who believes. David prayed to be healed. Solomon said that there was a time to heal. Not only physical healing, for Jeremiah wrote of the backsliding children to return from forgetting Yahweh and He will heal their backsliding. "Heal me, O Lord and I shall be healed. Save me and I shall be saved, for you are my praise." "I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely."

The early Israelite community knew the power of the gift of healing. The disciples were doing miracles and were persecuted for boldly proclaiming the name of Yah'shua, but they prayed. "And now, Lord, behold their threatening and grant unto your servants that with all boldness they may speak your word, by stretching forth Your hand to heal and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of your holy child Yah'shua. And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they

were assembled together and they were all filled with His Holy Spirit and they spoke the word of Yahweh with boldness. And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and one soul."

This same oneness and power is available to us as we humble ourselves, rid ourselves of spiritual pride and come of one accord, accepting our place in the Natural Congregation of Yahweh. "But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings and you shall go forth and grow up as calves of the stall. And you shall tread down the wicked for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith Yahweh God of hosts."

True, Godly Faith Healing is simple. It simply requires absolute faith and no doubt! The faith is in knowing you have been graced with a right to ask for the healing through the Messiah. Having no doubt that your prayer will be answered is the key to the desires results! That is also why it is so simply rare these days!

#### **Faith Healing Practical Addendum:**

**Note:** One on one assistance is available for those desiring to learn more about Natural Faith Healing. For details please contact us.

The words "faith healing", are not necessarily the best choice of words for describing the actual phenomenon of healing that takes place by the laying on of hands, or by the results of Divine intervention, although both of these events involve "faith", and both or either can be the cause of effective "healing", both physically and or spiritually.

Divine intervention with regard to healing, is essentially nothing more or nothing less than Yahweh choosing to intervene with regard to our physical or spiritual health according to His will for us. This may be the

result of His unilateral decision, or it may be the result of His compassionate hearing of a faithful prayer request, asking Him to intervene in a health issue.

Faith healing utilizing the Biblical principle of “laying on of hands” is something more. It involves the faithful confirmation of our understanding of at least one of our most important original design features. We were designed with the capability to be “perfect”, although none of us save the Messiah will attain perfection in this mortal lifetime.

If we faithfully believe that our designer has built into each of us the capacity for perfection, then we can start to understand faith healing and the laying on of hands. In fact, we must accept the scientific reality that each of our many billion cells contains the potentially perfect DNA coding required to perfectly re-create our entire physical body! Thus, by extension, each of those cells has the DNA coding required to maintain that body in perfect health, potentially. We could for example, call this wisdom that manifests at the cellular level “innate wisdom”.

The limiting factor to the potentiality of our perfect health may be summed up in the words “free will”. Our individual as well as our collective free will enables us to make less than perfect decisions, which result in our potentially perfect bodies being exposed to less than perfect environmental and spiritual influences. In short, the health of our bodies reflects in part, the degree of our mistakes, both spiritual and physical. This includes our own personal mistakes, the mistakes of our direct ancestors and the mistakes of those around us that may have direct or indirect impact on our lives, such as food manufacturers or processors that cause us to mistakenly consume contaminated or adulterated foods for example.

Our bodies, and in fact each of our cells within them, are designed to be obedient to our

free will. They respond to our mistakes just as obediently as they respond to our good decisions. Our resulting health is a manifestation of these decisions; mistakes included. Our faith in these scientifically supported Biblical facts is the first step toward understanding why the laying on of hands can and does have significant impact in healing.

Our creator is a Master Designer! We have any number of design features built into us that most of us either take for granted or do not even give a second thought to. The faithful laying on of hands is not something that causes any special power or gift to be passed from one party to another. It is merely the confirming expression of our faith in our original design criteria! We were designed to be “social”. Social by definition, means to be dependent one upon the other!

When I lay my hands on you, I confirm my physical presence to the innate wisdom within your physical body. Neither you nor I are perfect, that is a given. But both of us, or either of us can have the faith that we have the potential within us to be perfect. We both know that Yahweh made us and that Yahweh does not make mistakes! Hence when I am in physical communion with your innate wisdom, and I am in faithful and prayerful contact with our Father, your innate wisdom can sigh in relief, inasmuch as you have temporarily set aside your own “independence” and have faithfully accepted dependence upon another, at least in terms of your immediate health. This allows your innate wisdom the permission to finally over-ride some of the mistaken decisions that you have made, and “re-tune” itself closer to its original design!

With the faithful laying on of hands, there is by design, an “exchange” of information that happens at the cellular, or innate wisdom level that can have scientifically measurable effects on the DNA coding within

your body! The often dramatic healing that can result from the faithful laying on of hands is another example of our original design criteria, including its potential for perfection!

Our faith and Yahweh's will for us, are the two limiting factors to achieving that perfection!

**Note:** One on one assistance is available for those desiring to learn more about Natural Faith Healing. For details please contact us.

## **Eliminating:**

### **ALLERGIES & MIGRAINE HEADACHES:**

#### **Reverse & Slow Aging - naturally!**

"Allergies" are generally not what we typically think they are. Rather they are almost always *(about ninety eight percent of the time)* a symptom of the body that was designed to act as a warning "sign" that we are nearing our personal limit on toxicity.

This means that our body can normally hold in check the various accumulations of toxins it is dealing with, without allowing them to cause any significant impairment or disease, until we expose ourselves to "just a little bit more". Particularly in the case of an apparent allergic reaction, if that little bit more is something to do with nature, such as seasonal pollens, dusts or foods. *(There are only a very few extremely rare cases of actual allergy to natural things, including foods found in our natural environment.)*

Pollens and dust or other air borne particles that are seasonally prevalent, require the body to engage additional efforts to filter these materials out of the air we breathe. If the body's filters are already working to capacity *(plugged, or partially so)*, then when this extra effort is required from the body's cleansing mechanisms, we suddenly find that the body is "reacting" to the air borne particulates with new symptoms, or "signs" we call "allergy".

This is simply like the body saying; *"Look, I cannot cleanse any more stuff out of the system right now because my filters are already working at capacity."* So the body tries to reject the air borne particulates directly by sneezing or producing extra mucous in the nasal passages to catch and eliminate the offending particulates before they actually get into the system.

Nominal food allergies are very similar. Our digestive systems, when encountered by certain foods, cause chemical reactions such

that small amounts of mildly toxic substances are created as by-products to that digestion. The proportion of the toxins as related to the healthy aspect of these foods is very slight, but nonetheless it exists. Again, if the body's filters are already working at or very near to capacity, then when this extra effort is required from the body's cleansing mechanisms, we suddenly find that the body is "allergic-ally reacting" to the foods that produce these small amounts of mild toxins.

The primary natural method designed into our body for cleansing foreign particles or digestive toxins from our body, is systemic, and uses the liver as a filter to clean the toxins from our blood, which in turn eliminates them out through the colon. A smaller portion of toxin is also filtered and released through the urinary tract, and some by way of perspiration, etc., but the primary cleansing mechanism is the blood filtration provided by the liver.

Almost universally, when a person suffers from allergies *(of any type)*, it is the liver and colon that have been strained to their limits. Even people that suffer what they believe are milk or lactose intolerances, are most often really only suffering because their liver and/or colon are over-worked with toxic build up.

Thousands of people that previously suffered from a variety of perceived allergies, or thought they were lactose intolerant, now suffer no allergy type symptoms whatsoever, and are able to enjoy drinking good quality (non-pasteurized) raw milk and eating dairy products including cheeses, and encounter exposure to all kinds of pollens and dust, after simply doing a major colon cleanse program *(and sometimes a supplemental liver cleanse)*.

There is a simple test that anyone can do to determine whether or not their colon is plugged or suffering reduced elimination efficiency. And before we go there, believe this:

it can be "plugged" and still allow MASSIVE bowel movements.

What happens is this. For sake of example, imagine your bowel and intestines as a pipe or drain, like your kitchen drain, that gets coated on its interior walls, gradually slowing the flow by reducing the diameter. It still works, but is slower than it should be. So, just like if you were to put extra strain on the drain by dumping a large pail of water into a full sink, you might have a temporary over flow. But clean out the drain with a roto-rooter or "Draino", and it is back to functional capacity again. The bowel and colon function rather similarly and can often require a good "cleaning" just the same.

To test to determine whether or not your bowel or colon needs cleaning is simple. In fact the first sign that it is suffering from reduced elimination efficiency, and therefore needs to be cleaned, is the manifestation of headaches, especially what is commonly referred to as migraine headaches. Allergic symptoms always follow if headaches occur.

There is a mineral that is a natural component of most foods and that is particularly present in large amounts in fruit, called magnesium. (*See Magnesium Articles following for more info.*) If certain fruits or other foods high in magnesium, like plums, prunes, etc., give you diarrhoea, then you know your colon needs cleansing. The best way to test it with certainty, is to get some pharmaceutical grade powdered magnesium oxide from a pharmacy, or the same product mixed with water and sold under the more expensive brand name "Milk-of-Magnesia" (*basic powdered magnesium oxide usually costs about \$30 to \$60 for 1kg of powder form, which is usually enough to do a good colon cleanse*).

Take a rounded teaspoon with eight to twelve ounces of water as a test (*at least two hours after eating*). If it gives you any cramping

or even slight diarrhoea, you definitely need your colon cleansed. If your colon is clean, you can take up to a heaping tablespoon of magnesium oxide with no diarrhoea or side effects at all (*to do the test with a brand name product, use the amount that would be equivalent to a teaspoon of the active ingredient*).

If your colon needs cleaning (*and if you suffer "migraines", or "allergies", then it probably does*), then simply take a tablespoon of magnesium oxide first thing in the morning, two hours before eating, then take another about two or three hours after eating lunch, and a third about three or four hours after eating dinner, or just before bed-time. (*Always wait after taking it for at least two hours before eating.*)

AND TAKE LOTS OF WATER. Drink at least two large glasses every time you take it and more in between, as much as you are comfortable with. It will initially cause very dark, almost black coloured liquid stool, gradually lightening in colour and gradually stiffening in texture, and it will definitely make you spend a lot of time on the toilet, but only until your colon is fully cleaned out and back to functioning as it was naturally designed to. Then your stool will return to normal, even if you keep taking the magnesium oxide.

It typically requires at least three weeks of persistence to thoroughly clean most colons, sometimes up to two months for really bad cases. Usually, the older you are the longer it takes. Many people report losing from fifteen to sixty pounds of weight or more, while continuing to consume the same caloric intake or even more than they normally would! Most of these reports are from people that have already experienced many other herbal colon cleanses or even "high colonics" of various types.

Food cravings for such things as sugars,

ice cream, pastries, or chocolates will quickly disappear and allergic symptoms and headaches will also completely vanish.

Cleaning the colon thusly stimulates the liver to "dump" otherwise stored toxins, that it has filtered from the blood, thereby increasing its blood filtration capacity. When the colon cannot function due to its interior walls being coated, food that normally passes through, is retained for unusually long periods of time, intended to allow the body more time to access the nutritional components, that for the same reasons, cannot be ingested through the coated colon or intestinal walls.

Food that is slowed down this way by an inefficient colon, will eventually ferment, rather than simply be digested. The significant difference here, is that fermentation converts food-bound otherwise healthy nutrients into sugars and alcohols that are high in calories and low in nutritional value, while healthy digestion, converts any sugars, starches and alcohols into nutritional concentrates, thus making it much easier to maintain, or even loose body weight.

As people begin aging, and conclude that their "metabolism has slowed down", they are generally very much mistaken. What has in fact happened, is that they have found it much easier to gain weight, simply because their colon has become coated, resulting in fermentation of their food; a very inefficient form of digestion. The "smell" of their stool, is the first clue.

Because this food is retained for prolonged periods, the liver does not have any opportunity to release its toxic build-up of filtered matter, which coincidentally also reduces the flow of bile, essential to proper digestion.

The liver will only freely release bile that contains this build up of toxic matter into a fast acting intestinal tract that it knows can

eliminate those released toxins before they can be re-assimilated.

As far from conventional as this method of dealing with migraine headaches and airborne or food allergies may sound, it has been found to be almost 98% effective for thousands of people over many, many years.

#### **Brief on Magnesium in Medicine:**

*(Excerpt from paid-to-be non-published portion of research as delivered by one of the participating Doctors of the Medical Faculty at a top US University, conducted for the American Dairy Council, names withheld upon request.)*

"The hospitals would be empty in five years!" This may seem a little preposterous to you, but not to a medical doctor we recently interviewed.

The doctor believes that many hospitals would have to be closed down and put up for sale if enough people followed his advice. If you are expecting some expensive treatment you will have to fly to Switzerland for, you need not worry. His answer is not some miracle drug. Nor is it some exotic herb, rare vitamin, quack nostrum, or magic pep pill. And, it is not raw foods.

His answer is so basic and so fundamental that everyone overlooked it - both the medical doctors and the nutritionists. It is somewhat ironic that the world's most prominent anti-aging "experts" missed the biggest anti-aging discovery of the last fifty years.

This solution is pathetically simple; and it works. So you would think that the doctor's research would be front-page stories in every health magazine in the country. This has not happened. Since his views are 100% radically different from existing theories, not many publications want to go out on a limb and present his work. No one wants to admit to their readers or patients that they were wrong -

and that their advice may have caused others harm.

The doctor is a former professor of Gynecologic Endocrinology at a major medical school in California. For the last ten years he has specialized in treating women's premenstrual tension syndrome (PMS). He considers this to be nothing more than a symptom of premature aging. "Instead of women's ovaries aging at 60, they age at 17 or 20."

When he puts his women patients on his controversial program, over 97% of them reported that their PMS vanished. But more importantly, many also reported that they felt - and looked, 10-15 years younger! In one case a 60-year-old woman started menstruating again. She became "biochemically younger." Most of the women said that they lost weight, increased their energy, felt far less depressed and started enjoying sex like they never had in years. Well, that's what youth is all about.

Many said that they also noticed less wrinkles - and they didn't even put anything on their skin. But this report goes far beyond slowing down the aging process and feeling better. It discusses a colossal dietary mistake that is driving North Americans into the hospitals by the millions. This single mistake is rapidly aging young people - yet nearly no one is aware of it.

This common mistake is the single biggest cause of allergies and headache symptoms worldwide!

Instead of enjoying supreme health in the prime of their life, people are needlessly crippled by arthritis, heart disease, severe blood sugar problems, osteoporosis, allergies, migraine headaches, and Alzheimer's disease. And every year -- in spite of breakthrough after breakthrough in the medical world -- the statistics keep getting worse!

The doctor told us, "If the government

reversed the daily requirements for calcium and magnesium, you could clean out the hospitals". Take less calcium, take more magnesium, and clean out the hospitals. It sounds so simple, yet I believe this one powerful concept can change the health of the entire world. He also said that even the "best" American diet -- fresh natural foods, balanced supplements, and good common sense -- can lead to rapid aging and cellular degeneration.

Many of the world's greatest scientists are looking for the magic "youth pill" that can slow down the aging process. The promotion of anti-aging products is already a booming business. The "fountain of youth" can never be found unless one of the main causes of aging is STOPPED and reversed; that cause is the pathological calcification of the soft tissues of the body.

Unless this basic issue is addressed, all the aging experts are just wasting their time and misleading the public! There is no question that calcium can be a lifesaver. Calcium plays a vital role in many physiological functions such as blood clotting, lactation, nerve (impulse) conduction, muscle contraction, bone metabolism, and the formation of intercellular cement.

However, in the wrong places, calcium can be the kiss of death. Calcium can be a "great white villain". It can age you just as fast as the most excruciating stress. It's a paradox how the same nutrient can be both a lifesaver and a villain. But that's the way nature is. This same principle applies to all basic nutrients, including oxygen, hydrogen and every mineral in your body.

Signs of imbalance begin with allergies, leading to headaches and finally more serious degenerative diseases. As you grow older, the calcium migrates from the hard tissues (bones) to the soft tissues in your body. This principle is so important that you should read it to yourself

five times before you go any further. Increased calcification IS aging; however, few people seem to understand the full scope of the problem. It is the most prevalent clinical symptom in industrial cultures.

Where the calcium builds up, depends on your individual biochemistry. When the calcium deposits in the joints, we call it arthritis. When the calcium deposits in the blood vessels, we call it hardening of the arteries. When the calcium deposits in the heart, we call it heart disease. When the calcium deposits on the brain, we call it senility.

The calcification process is slow but insidious. It occurs gradually over a period of 10, 20, and 30 years or more. In many cases, it can even begin in childhood! There is almost no soft tissue in your body that is immune from calcification. Your adrenal glands, your kidneys, your eyes, and even parts of your inner ear can calcify to one degree or another.

As you will learn shortly, molecular parts of the basic human cell itself can calcify. Pathological calcification can cause "a thousand and one chronic illnesses." A few of these conditions include: obesity, memory loss, sever muscular conditions, hypertension, kidney stones, chronic bronchitis, vision impairment, hearing loss, massive depression, and even cataracts and cancer.

Generally, the higher the concentration of calcium in a body organ, the more difficult it is for the organ to function. It is important to note that the calcium does not have to precipitate out to cause problems. If the amount of calcium in an organ merely doubles, -- relative to the magnesium -- this is enough to prematurely age that organ.

The key word to remember is "relative". The level of calcium is not as important as its relation to magnesium. In some cases, the level of calcium (relative to magnesium) in a particular tissue is more than ten times normal!

People in this category are frequently in the hospital for one reason or another. Most people assume that if your blood calcium levels are normal, you are OK. This may or may not be the case. If its relative level to magnesium is off, then it is definitely not the case.

Your blood calcium level remains extremely constant. It usually registers from 9-11 mg per 100ml of blood. Circulating calcium levels appear to be one of the most constant of all biological variables. This is only logical because the body couldn't tolerate calcium precipitating out in your blood. But here's the problem: In many cases your blood calcium levels can be normal - yet you can still suffer from pathological levels of calcium! So where is the pathology? It's in the soft tissue. It's in your heart, your arteries, and your muscles.

In this respect, monitoring your calcium level by a blood test can be highly misleading, and to a large degree, irrelevant. Your blood calcium level can be normal, and you can be aging rapidly. Or even worse, you can be just days from death. In fact this has happened numerous times. Many people have gone in for a check-up and had comprehensive blood tests. The doctor tells them, "You're in perfect health." The next day, the patient dies of a heart attack!

Here's another example: The blood calcium level is normal, however, the bones are devastated by calcium loss and the kidneys are so loaded with high calcium levels that the person has kidney stones. And to make it even more confusing, the person may be in "perfect blood calcium balance." It's the tissues, the tissues, the tissues where the calcium pathology takes place -- not the blood!

The media has been hypnotizing the public for over thirty years that our need for calcium increases as we grow older. According to the doctor, "Advice like this is ruining the health of the country." It's driving every man

woman and teenager into premature aging. Its causing massive numbers of serious allergies and headache symptoms. If you want to discover the fountain of youth, rid yourself of allergies, and eliminate headaches, look to the children. Look at the biochemistry of children. That's where the answers are.

The child has LOW calcium levels in his/her soft tissues. One researcher in California, Dr. Paul Eck, confirmed this fact after evaluating the tissue biochemistry of over 300,000 people. He stated, "It doesn't take a genius to figure out that tissue calcium levels rise as one grows older. That's something that you can't deny at all. I've seen that for over fifteen years."

You can understand this fact a little easier when you consider calcium's role in the body. Calcium gives the body its rigidity. There is no mineral in the body that can give rigidity to the body except calcium. Obviously, that's why the concentration of calcium is high in the bones.

Many doctors who work on the spine can understand this. As a person gets older, it gets harder and harder to give an adjustment. The tissues are harder; the muscles are less flexible. You have to use more and more pressure because the spinal muscles are solidifying.

What is the worst part of growing old? All women know the answer: WRINKLES! It is a prevalent fear among many women. What happens to the skin, as you grow old is often the same thing that happens to other soft tissue - increased calcification. Didn't you ever wonder why children have smooth, moist skin and old people often have tough, leathery, wrinkled skin? Well, now you have your answer. It's the calcium that dries out the skin.

Basically, that's what scleroderma is. It is highly calcified skin; it's the extreme case. Scleroderma means "hard skin". The skin

actually hardens and looks like leather. When a person has scleroderma, the skin at 20 can look like a person's skin at age 70! When most people age, this same thing happens to a much lesser degree. The skin dries out and wrinkles. Scientific analysis reveals that the ratio of calcium to magnesium is the only difference between the "old" or the "young" tissues.

Here's the best proof: If you were to mix cement with your hand, and take your hand out, your fingers would burn from the lime in the cement. The skin on your hand would shrink and actually form wrinkles and depressions right before your eyes. This is almost what your skin would look like when it is old and wrinkled. The skin on your face would be almost indistinguishable from your cement-wrinkled hand. What is the reason for your skin shrinking when you put it in cement? The cement contains lime, which sucks in water like crazy. Lime dehydrates your skin and that's where you get the wrinkling effect.

Now lime is calcium. And the calcium in your body has that same effect upon the tissues. It dehydrates the tissues. The higher the level of calcium in your skin, the drier it will generally be.

Women in Europe used to have their doctors inject them with tuberculosis bacillus. The women did this because they wanted beautiful skin. These women did not know why it worked; they just knew that their skin appeared 10-15 years younger. Here's the reason: tuberculosis - an infectious condition - would cause a person's metabolism to increase. The faster a person's metabolism is, the lower their tissue calcium levels are.

Can you see the connection? The lower the level of calcium in the skin, the more moisture the skin would hold. Hence, the more beautiful the skin would look. We obviously do not recommend this foolish method of making

one's skin look younger, however, the scientific reasoning is fascinating.

Here's another example: When autopsies of elderly people are performed, the tissues are all dried up. There's little mass; there's shrinkage. There's dryness in appearance to the organs. When you look at a fresh organ of a young child or even a 24 year old person -- and everything has moisture in it.

But an older person is just the opposite. The moisture is gone. There is not even a glow or a gleam or a glistening effect on the organs. Fat is glistening. You can observe this on a piece of prime rib. It's a glistening fat because it's got water in it. Fat is mainly water. You look at the fat on an autopsy of a person who is old and the fat doesn't even glisten. It's like marble; it's solidified. The moisture content is gone. Well, the moisture content in the whole body decreases with age. That is simply because of increased calcification of the soft tissue.

The doctor told us that when he reduced the amount of calcium in women's diets - and increased their magnesium levels - they noticed that their skin became moister, right away. The skin developed more tone.

Another doctor that we know asked many of his patients if they noticed that their skin became drier when they took a lot of calcium. Every single one of them said, "Now that you mention it, yes!" In many cases, the body will store excess calcium by sending it to an organ as a "defense mechanism". In these instances, calcium is being stored in a convenient location, simply because the body has too much of it.

In certain other instances, calcium is used as the body's defense against weakened tissue. Calcification of the arteries is nature's way of protecting weak blood vessels from rupturing. It's like a patch on a bad tire. In the short run, a "calcium patch" can save your life. However, in the long run, it can be fatal.

The late Dr. Hans Seyle, a Nobel Laureate in Physiology and Medicine, proved this concept conclusively. He was the first doctor to call attention to the widespread occurrence of pathological calcification. His findings are described in his book, "Calciphylaxis".

Dr. Seyle discusses over one thousand clinical conditions, which are associated with abnormal calcium deposits. Top of the lists, are hardening of the arteries, heart disease, allergies and headaches!

Dr. Hans Seyle also exposed lab rats to severe biochemical stress to prove that pathological calcification can occur in almost any organ. He noted that animals aged dramatically as calcium was being laid down in the soft tissues. He administered various steroids to stress the rats. When he autopsied the rats, there was extensive calcification of the tissues. He had never seen this before in any test animal he had ever worked with. At six months of age, various organs showed massive degeneration. They were as non-functional as an old and weakened animal. The more he stressed a particular organ, the more it would calcify, and the quicker it would age.

Another excellent book on this topic is called "Pathological Calcification". On page four is a classic statement about this universal problem: "Thus, in a sensitized human, any inherent weakness in a body organ, or any internal injury may result in calcium deposition in the weakened tissue". This section is the most important part of the issue. It gets to the very core of the aging process itself -- the human cell. Very few health books in North America cover this information.

Magnesium and calcium are the two most abundant bivalent ions in the cells of practically all-living systems - from microbes to humans. Both of these minerals are antagonistic to each other. Picture a seesaw

with calcium on one end and magnesium on the other. When one goes up, the other goes down; each one controls the other. What very few people know is that within the cell, the concentration of calcium is very LOW. In the cellular cytoplasm, the concentration of calcium is especially low.

One of the most fascinating medical books on this topic is called "Cellular Calcium and Magnesium Metabolism," written by Professor F. L. Bygrave. Almost every line in chapter eight is a philosophical gem. Within the cell there is a very important "biochemical pump". The doctor calls it the "cellular calcium pump". Do you know what the main function of this pump is? It is to pump calcium OUT of the cell! How long you live, how healthy you are, and how quick you age, is **dependent upon this** calcium pump. When too much calcium accumulates in the cell, it kills the cells. To put it very bluntly, as our doctor said, "When the hardens sufficiently, the pump fails, and you die".

The power plant of the human cell is called the "mitochondria". The mitochondria are what generate energy for the cell to use. What everyone refers to as "ENERGY" is derived at the intercellular level from the oxidative reduction or cellular respiration. This is done through the mitochondria.

The problem arises when the cell is low in magnesium - relative to calcium. The generation of ATP, the "energy currency" of the cell, is magnesium dependent. This means it is obvious that the calcium pump at the cell membrane is also magnesium dependent. Without enough "biologically available" magnesium, the cellular calcium pump slows down. It becomes a vicious cycle. The low levels of available magnesium inhibit the generation of energy, and the low levels of energy inhibit the calcium pump. Resulting high levels of cellular calcium, cause headaches,

allergies, and eventually serious systemic disease.

What's the end result? The mitochondria - the powerhouse of the cell and the entire body - begins to become calcified. THIS IS THE BEGINNING OF AGING. It starts in the cell! First, the cells age. This leads to organ aging. And, after the organs age, you have overall individual aging. It all starts within the cell.

Professor Bygrave says in his book, "Since calcium is readily accumulated by mitochondria, this ion is potentially capable of antagonizing the activating influence of magnesium on many intra-mitochondrial enzyme reactions".

This means that every function of your body can be inhibited when the mitochondria calcify. It's like going through life with the emergency brake on. Calcium is the brake. Magnesium is the accelerator. To be in optimum health, there must be a balance between the two. Both minerals are vitally important, but there must be that critical balance.

As the author of the classic French book, "Soil, Grass, and Cancer" wrote, "Calcium contents cannot be considered separately without taking the other mineral elements into account. It is the mineral equilibria, and not the individual elements that govern the phenomena of life." That's the magic word -- equilibria.

Everyone today is concerned with his or her chronological age. But they should be equally concerned with their "biochemical age". The ratio of calcium to magnesium within your cells is your "biochemical age". As you age, the level of calcium usually increases relative to the magnesium. Tragically, in many cases, children are now starting to show high cellular calcium levels.

The hospitals started filling up in the late 1950's. Right after calcium became the number one mineral promoted. People began to age and degenerate like never before. Arthritis increased, diabetes increased, heart disease increased, allergies increased dramatically - all the big name diseases increased. People started becoming senile at a much younger age. Even young people were not immune to the ravages of heart disease. That all this happened and continues to happen is an international tragedy. The real damage has never been calculated. No one wants to speak out against what is happening.

At the end of WWII, the US government increased the RDA for calcium. It recommended that every school child drink two glasses of milk a day, in school. It is fascinating to note that the Recommended Dietary Allowance, (RDA), for calcium was 400mg a day up until WWII. Then, Sherman was appointed to set up the RDA's for calcium. He was a medical doctor and had a large research grant from the Dairy Council. His recommendations soon became law. Suddenly, the RDA for calcium went up to 1,200mg for teenagers and 800 mgs for adults. (*The National Institute of Health now recommends 1,500mg of calcium for women after menopause This is like regulated poisoning.*)

At this point taxpayers' money was being used to finance the dairy industry. The quality of work and health has decreased ever since. It has indeed become worse every year. It is not hard to see that the Dairy Council influenced the government for financial gain at the detriment of hundreds of millions of North American citizens.

There is a definite correlation between the time period when the new law was passed to increase calcium consumption in the North American public, and, the increase in degenerative diseases in the populace. The

degenerative diseases referred to are: arthritis, diabetes, cataracts, chronic allergies, migraine headaches, and heart disease; just to name a few.

During the US War in Viet Nam, doctors found advanced arteriosclerosis in young soldiers; this had never been seen before. The men were 18, 20, and 21 years young when they died and they had advanced calcification of their aortas. This was only since increased dairy consumption started. Increased calcium intake without a corresponding increase in magnesium intake will result in premature aging. The calcification of soft tissue is nothing other than a cellular aging process.

It may be fine to increase dairy intake, thus increasing calcium, but only if you are careful to also increase your magnesium intake accordingly.

North Americans have the highest RDA requirements for calcium and the lowest RDA for magnesium. The ratio of calcium to magnesium in the diet gets right to the core of almost all health problems - and especially the ability to think clearly.

Aging is the calcification of cellular mitochondria. In some people, this happens in the first years of life. Of course, new cells grow and replace those, but it shouldn't happen in a healthy person; at least not that young. Many thousands of years ago, humans lived in a magnesium rich but calcium poor environment.

For reasons of survival, the human body has an efficient mechanism for conserving calcium. We have certain hormones, which conserve calcium in the body. One of these is vitamin D3, which is a cholesterol derivative. However, it is really a hormone. The skin has a process that creates vitamin D3 under the influence of solar ultra-violet light. This is then hydroxylated in the liver and then the kidneys to produce "1, 25-dihydroxy-vitamin D3", the most potent calcium conserving substance.

This hormone increases calcium absorption in the small intestine and decreases calcium excretion in the urine.

Essentially the body is designed to handle a low calcium diet. The substance, that increases the body's ability to thrive on low calcium, is magnesium. When you get too much calcium in your diet, you suppress this adaptability. When there is enough magnesium in the diet, the calcium can be converted to something called "hydroxyappetite". This is a hard, phosphate form of calcium. This is the form of calcium in the bones. However, on a high-calcium, low-magnesium diet, this conversion is going to be very difficult, if not entirely suppressed.

Calcium is not something that you need every day. You have enough storage of calcium to last for many, many years, even if you have a diet with zero calcium. Of course, most foods contain some calcium, so it is impossible to avoid it entirely. However, magnesium is needed every day because the body does not have a conserving mechanism for magnesium.

The average North American diet consists of about 1,000mg to 1,200mg of calcium and only 50mg to 100mg of magnesium. If you want to rapidly age your cells and body that is the perfect diet to accomplish the task. The bulk of the calcium consumed doesn't go to the bones or hard tissue where it is needed, it goes to the soft tissue for "temporary" storage, where it does not belong.

For the kidneys to excrete excess calcium they need lots of magnesium, otherwise calcium precipitates in the kidneys. If sufficient magnesium is not present, you end up with kidney stones.

The ratio of calcium to magnesium in pasteurized dairy products is ten parts calcium to one part magnesium. To be healthy for you,

all dairy products need a lot more magnesium. They should contain twice as much magnesium, as calcium. Instead some pasteurized milk now has added calcium.

A lot of people think they are allergic to dairy products, and many are treated that way by physicians. However, what is really causing the problem - the allergy symptoms, is the high calcium to magnesium ratio (*not to mention pasteurization - Pasteurized cow's milk will kill that cow's calf within 2 days*). Lactase, the enzyme which is needed to digest milk is magnesium dependent - hence the common illusion that "I can't digest milk"! Almost everyone can digest milk - if they have sufficient magnesium to activate the lactase!

We all need to take a serious look at the ratio of our dietary intake of magnesium/calcium.

It is advisable to discontinue all calcium supplements without exception. The proper ratio of magnesium has been established as four times the amount of calcium intake. Since all vegetables, fruits and starches contain high amounts of calcium, quality magnesium citramate supplement is essential to balance your diet. Also, all magnesium has been lost in any cooked (or pasteurized food).

Everyone should take at least 600 milligrams of magnesium citramate per 100 lbs. of body weight per day to offset normal calcium intake. If you are taking any vitamins with calcium components or any calcium supplements, take an additional amount of magnesium citramate equal to four times the calcium supplement.

Magnesium citramate can be purchased very economically from most pharmacies and health food stores.

### Addendum:

#### Allergies, Migraines and Anti-Aging:

**Clinical research indicates allergies and or recurring migraine headaches, are clear signs of unhealthy colon flora**, often caused by combinations of antibiotic regimens and poor diet trends.

If at any time in your life, you have undergone a regimen of antibiotics, regardless of what was undoubtedly a very good reason for taking them, you have probably screwed up your colon's natural flora. This state can easily be repaired/restored by clearing the colon of any impacted matter, then dosing yourself with good quality BIFIDOPHILUS - BIFIDOBACTERIA (*not the more common "Lactobacillus", or "acidophilus" strains*).

There are recognized super health benefits to taking any of Bacillus, bifidobacteria, Bifidobacterium animalis ssp. lactis (BB-12), Bifidobacterium DN-173 010, which are available in multiple brand names.

There are many terms that identify specific varieties or forms of probiotics. Many such terms are used in the naming of commercial probiotic products. Probiotics should not be confused with prebiotics.

**Background:** Probiotics are beneficial bacteria (*sometimes referred to as "friendly germs"*) that help to maintain the health of the intestinal tract and aid in proper digestion. They also help keep potentially harmful organisms in the gut (*harmful bacteria and yeasts*) under control. Most probiotics come from natural food sources, especially cultured dairy products. Probiotics can be consumed as capsules, tablets, beverages, powders, yogurts, and other foods.

Probiotics should not be confused with prebiotics. Prebiotics are complex sugars (*such as lactulose, lactitol, a variety of fructo-*

*oligosaccharides, and inulin*) that are used as fuel by healthful bacteria to stimulate their growth and activity while suppressing the growth and activity of harmful organisms. Other foods that may support probiotic activity include Japanese miso, tempeh, kefir, raw milk, kombucha, bananas, garlic, and onions. When prebiotics and probiotics are combined in one product, it is called a synbiotic.

Probiotics are known to work by colonizing the small intestine and crowding out disease-causing organisms, thereby restoring proper balance to the intestinal flora. They compete with harmful organisms for nutrients and produce substances that inhibit growth of harmful organisms in the gut.

Probiotic bacteria have been found to stimulate the body's immune system. They also aid in several gastrointestinal illnesses such as inflammatory bowel diseases, antibiotic-related diarrhoea, Clostridium difficile toxin-induced colitis, infectious diarrhoea, hepatic encephalopathy, irritable bowel syndrome, **allergies, and migraine headaches, which research indicates are early warning signs of unhealthy colon flora.**

Probiotics have been found to enhance the digestion and absorption of proteins, fats, calcium, and phosphorus, enabling more efficient metabolism, and easier weight loss and weight maintenance. They also **help overcome lactose intolerance** and restore healthful bacteria after a course of antibiotic therapy has altered the normal gastrointestinal flora.

# It's Gross and It's Mine!

Real photos of results from the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**



Above: Susan from Hawaii and her "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below she writes:

"Aloha!

First of all, I must say it feels a bit weird to be sending pics of my poo to complete strangers...but all in the name of good sportsmanship! It felt even stranger to TAKE pics of my poo...

My name is Susan; I am 24 and live in beautiful HI. I have had GI problems as long as I can remember. After my husband and I made a big move from our hometown on the mainland to Hawaii, I was feeling pretty toxic. I wasn't having regular bowel movements. I had tried colonics, diet modification, exercise, everything I could think of and was feeling pretty desperate. That is when I did a search for cleanses on the Internet and came across Blessed Herbs.

I did a lot of comparison and decided to give BH a try. The results were phenomenal. Everything that your company promised was delivered. I did the fast, only had the toxin absorber, organic apple, and some veggie broth with miso and, a ton of water. By day two my body was getting rid of some pretty nasty things and by day 5, I couldn't believe the results. This product was great, I highly recommend it!

Thank you!  
Susan"



Above: Paul from Australia and his "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below he writes:

"I tried the colon cleansing kit for 8 days ... End of day 2 was like large sausages being discharged and every day after that, gradually reducing in size by the eighth day. I had veggie broth in the evenings and I was surprised how good it felt to not be full all the time. It was no problem drinking juice, water and having broth. Another positive side effect is the way this process makes you review your eating habits and leaves you much more grateful for food when you resume eating. Anyway, I've recommended this already to several friends. Many years ago I used to juice fast with enemas, but your approach achieves a much more deep and thorough cleansing.

Thanks and regards,  
Paul, Australia."



Above: Linda from the USA and her "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below she writes:

"My name is Linda. Two years ago, just after my 37th birthday, I was diagnosed with rheumatoid arthritis. Up until that point in my life, I was what I thought, very healthy. My onset of RA was severe, within 2 weeks I was unable to dress myself or even open the car door let alone run the five miles that I was used to running! After finding a doctor, I started the long road back to health. I spent the first year trying all the toxic drugs available for treating RA, Humira, methotrexate and a lot of steroids. I found that although I was functioning, I could feel that my body was still very sick!

My doctor then felt I was ready to try the harder way, but definitely the right way! I immediately removed all processed food from my diet and began to feel stronger and healthier than ever! I never really knew what good health was until I quit eating the poison that the American diet is so full of!

The next logical step after being in drug free remission for over 8 months was to try to rid my body of what damage I had done through poor diet. Thus came the idea through a friend for the Colon Cleanse! I've never felt better and what came out of me was shocking but reassuring that THIS IS A MUST DO! I feel stronger and healthier than ever, I can't wait to do it again, and the experience was great. I had lots of energy and was surprised there was no hunger from start to finish!

- Linda"



Above: M.

from the UK and his "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below he writes:

"As a vegetarian of 20 years, I did not expect much to come out, but how wrong I was! I was already getting results by the morning of day 2. It was wonderful not to experience the pangs of hunger, so I knew I'd last the full 5 days. It's just wonderful knowing this stuff is out of you, and I will certainly do an annual cleanse now. I now find my mood has lifted, and I have about an extra hour's energy a day before feeling tired. That gives me an additional 30 hours, or just over a day of extra time each month - remarkable!

Thank YOU

M.

(Great) Britain"



Above: Carl from Canada and his "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below he writes:

"I am sorry for not writing you, but it's that time of year when it's so hectic. I just haven't had time, anyway, I sent you the pictures of what came out of me, well DrNature nothing came out. I don't have that bloated feeling any more, my stomach is gone down a lot. I still feel that I should have another cleanse very soon. I want to know what you think. But the cleanse I did from you was excellent, I would recommend it to everybody, it was really great. Carl"

---



Above: Omar from Texas and the "results" he passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below he writes:

"Doing the 5 day (Colon Cleansing Kit) with a water/juice fast...here are my results...amazing!"



Above: The "results" passed by Mary while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below she writes:

"I want to first say Thank You. The colon cleansing kit was well worth the price as it is the only one that actually worked for me. I did the 9-day program with the fast and it was super simple. The taste of the ginger was nice and I loved the fact that I could still work while cleansing. The second day of fasting I eliminated much mucus and each day there after. It wasn't until three days off the cleanse that I eliminated the REALLY hard thick mucus plaque like the photos show.

I wasn't alarmed as I had spoken to the Herbologist Helen before cleansing and was told this might happen. Your company is the only one that I know of that has such wonderful customer service and quality products. I've also suffered from adult acne for ten years and it has cleared up by 50% in three days. The knot in my forearm that was the size of a Garbanzo bean is now the size of a pea! My mother and husband are now interested in cleansing after witnessing my success. Thank you much for quality products and fabulous employees! May many blessing always come your way.

- Mary"

---



Above: J. from the USA and his "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below he writes:

"Good morning,

I just wanted to say that your product is actually amazing!!! I'm an American civilian in Kuwait and I first tried your product last year and it worked great. I bought it again this year and have almost completed back-to-back colon cleansing without stopping. I'm 100% fasting without any solid or liquid food accepts apple juice, toxin absorber, and the digestive stimulator capsules. I have 2 days before I finish the double colon cleansing and then I'll start my 21-day cleanse for the parasites, blood, lungs, liver and such.

I'm just completely amazed at how much literal crap has come out of my body. And I 'thought' that I was healthy! I would have to recommend to anyone who's serious about their health that they do the mental discipline and do a back-to-back complete fast. The amount of garbage that came out on the second fast is just unbelievable. It looked worse than the pic on your website.

I'm really writing this email for all of the nonbelievers and skeptics including certain co-workers who said it was a scam and they could make this stuff in their kitchen. Seeing is believing and this stuff works! It's the absolutely grossest 'crap' that I've ever seen in my life, but better out than in.

I'm even including pics and hope this doesn't offend you... but the skeptics need to know. I'm writing this like I'm getting paid... ha-ha. I've even recommended your product to many of my coworkers and associates here in Kuwait. Anyway.... thanks for great products that TRULY work as they say!! I can't wait to start the 21 day cleanse. I actually might even do another colon cleanse in a few months just to make sure I'm really clean.

It's been almost 2 weeks that I've gone without solid food and can honestly say that I was only hungry on my 2nd day. It's literally all in the mind because the mix makes my stomach full and I only want it cause I see it, but not cause I'm hungry. Well, I've taken enough of your time.... Your product is truly amazing. I don't care if you use the pics on your site, but could you change my name or something. I don't want my pooh to make me famous...ha-ha. Thanks guys

Thanks, J."

---



Above: John from New Zealand and his "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below he writes:

"Just wanting to say thank you very much, following the Colon Cleansing Kit. Got some great results as you can see...."

Best Regards,

John"

---

## **It's not just our customers; our family has done the Colon Cleansing Kit too**



Above: Shalom Volchok, son of Blessed Herbs cofounders and his "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit** by **Blessed Herbs**. Below he writes:

"First, I'll admit the idea of a five day fast did not appeal to me. When my mom (Martha) was making this kit, I told her she would never get anyone to fast. Well, she finally convinced me to try it and..."

The first day of fasting was extremely hard and I thought I would never make five whole days. All I could do was think about eating! However, on the second day of the Colon Cleansing Kit, 'it' came out"

When I had my first "weird" bowel movement, I found myself uncharacteristically poking around in the toilet with a chopstick. When I lifted my movement, it felt like it was made of rubber. It was clingy, and I couldn't break it apart.

It really was the most unusual feeling. Once that first piece came out I was so happy to fast!! When I saw what was in me, I just wanted it all out. And for the next four days, it came out five or six times a day. Of course the first thing I did was email pictures to my mom. My subject line read, "It's gross & it's mine!!"

To date tens of thousands of people have done the Colon Cleansing Kit. So much for nobody fasting!"

---

Above: Martha Volchok, AHG. Cofounder and master herbalist of Blessed Herbs and her "results" passed while taking the **Colon Cleansing Kit**. Martha is the herbalist who created **the Colon Cleansing Kit** and she based the formulas on years of her own personal experiences with bowel problems and personal success from colon cleansing. Below is her story of how she first found colon cleansing:

"Some twenty-five years ago I gave birth to the last of my children, Shalom. Immediately afterwards, I experienced a physical collapse. Along with complete exhaustion, I was unable to eat anything without stomach pain or intestinal pain as the food traveled on down. Medical doctors wanted to do the barium studies on my GI tract. What I knew and they didn't was that the introduction of barium to my system would have made me incredibly sicker than I already was or even worse been the cause of my death. The doctors were totally frustrated with me and needed those diagnostics to figure out what my problem was. I elected instead to study and research everything available about healing myself; especially my digestive system.

That decision was totally intuitive. How was it possible to ever prove who was really right about the barium studies on me? Back then I went forward with faith in my own intuition and I did totally recover without outside medical intervention. It was not until many years later while staying at a health clinic (not for a digestive problem) that I met a woman (in her early thirties-the same age as I was when I chose not to do the barium studies) who had the same type of digestive problems that I had. Only she had gone ahead with the barium studies and immediately became much sicker for doing it. So much so, that she had to have someone with her at all times because of how much weaker she had become and found digestion even more difficult. Even after several months at the clinic, she had not improved much.

I was very grateful to receive this confirmation and living proof of what might have happened to me; if I, too, had decided to go for those barium studies. I would like to point out that I am not against medical diagnostics or medical care or barium studies for that matter. I have used their services and had my life saved, but I have also opted against not using their services and saved my life. It is so important to be in touch with your true self and learn to recognize that "small, still voice" that speaks its advice just when you need it the most. It is also important to learn about what constitutes real health and how to get it and maintain it. Remember also that what worked well one time, may not be called for this time. There is no substitute for attention and awareness. After all who is living in your body, but you. You are the one who most needs to know what is going on in there and you can! In order to heal my "digestive problems" back then, I chose to go on an all raw juices and wheat grass juice for some eighteen months; along with colon cleansing, before I completely regained my digestive ability and felt better than ever.

During those eighteen months, I observed all of my bowel movements and studied them as a scientist would. After my first cleanse, I got out just what Dr Jensen showed in his book, *Tissue Cleansing through Bowel Management*. Not only that, but popcorn kernels came out and I hadn't eaten any popcorn in years! Having something come out after all those years, gave me more faith in Dr. Jensen's work. I reasoned that if the popcorn was that old, how old was the rest of the stuff coming out? Surely some of it was from that same time period.

I understand even more, now, after years of observing the material that comes out whenever I do colon cleansing. I have observed that the material coming out now has become progressively lighter, less smelly, and of a consistent texture; rather than initial dark, hard, rubbery, foul smelling stuff. There was a time when I would see some chunks of the hard rubbery stuff mixed in with the type of stuff I see today. Whenever I do my yearly cleanse now, I see clearly the striations on the outside of stool that reflect the same indentations from different parts of the intestinal wall, both small and large (colon). Could this be an actual thin layer that had accumulated directly on the intestinal

lining? These markings are never present on my everyday bowel movements. The stool from my colon cleanse has a thin, outer layer that is decidedly a different, deeper color than the inside of the stool. It is also much firmer and cannot be pulled apart, whereas the inner portion of the stool looks remarkably like the Toxin Absorber drink (in the Colon Cleansing Kit) and it is possible to pull apart easily (see photo above).

My conclusion is that I am lifting off the intestinal wall a thickened layer that has accumulated quite like what happens to the plumbing in our homes. Over time any tube/pipe/intestine that has material going over it daily begins to have a build-up. Only we need our intestines to be as free of that as possible for the best, healthy functioning. Of course, I cannot say for sure just exactly what is happening, but I can judge by the resultant great feelings that I get after colon cleansing that in fact I have done something truly positive for my health.

I have tried many different herbal formulas for colon cleansing over the years, but it wasn't until I decided, as a professional herbalist, to create my own formula that I got everything that I wanted -strength of action combined with gentleness- to make colon cleansing as thorough and comfortable as possible.

Besides my yearly colon cleanses, I do not hesitate to cleanse whenever I see that my health is definitely suffering a decline. Usually when I get past day one of the liquid fast/cleanse, I am already feeling better and by day five, all my symptoms of decline are gone. Then there are times that I have been in extreme pain from a migraine or from some other part of my body. I do a cleanse along with a colema, which is an enema that is taken lying down on a "Coleman board" that sits over the toilet. One doesn't have to jump up to get to the toilet as one is already lying over it. There is a five-gallon bucket of water/herb teas that flow gently and steadily through your lower bowel, which cause multiple evacuations that are quite gentle. It has taken me from extreme pain back to normality in thirty minutes and oh, how grateful I am!

Whenever I have had a problem, I always like to hear from someone who has really dealt with that same situation in his or her own life. Then I read all I can from both alternative and mainstream sources about the situation and weigh the issues. Lastly, I listen to my own inner self and life experience and make the best choice that feels right for me. You know, it works!!"

**The Colon Cleansing Kit** by Blessed Herbs

## PARTHENOGENESIS SARCOPHAGUS

“PARSEC.me™”:

### Superior Self-Healing Technology -

---

#### TAKE NOTICE:

This website and or this documentation contains general information about health and healing and hypothetical treatments. The information is not medical advice, or advice of any kind, and should not be treated as such. The information on this website is provided without any representations, or warranties, express or implied. We make no representations or warranties in relation to the health and healing information on this website.

You must not rely on the information on this website as an alternative to medical advice from your doctor or other professional healthcare provider. If you think you may be suffering from any health or medical condition you should seek immediate professional attention. If you have any specific questions about any health or medical matter you should consult your doctor or other professional healthcare provider.

---

**Partheno-Re-Genesis:** (**partheno** - virgin / pure; **re** - again / repeat; **genesis** - coming into being), essentially meaning to renew, or revert again back to the original and purest state of natural being; and

**Sarcophagus:** from the Greek σάρξ *sarx* meaning "flesh", and φαγεῖν *phagein* meaning "to consume", hence *sarkophagus* literally means "flesh-eating". In the oldest pedagogic sense of the word, it was originally used together with the word *lithos*, meaning "stone", as in the phrase; *lithos sarcophagos* (λίθος σαρκοφάγος) meaning literally, 'flesh-eating stone', which in context of the ancient vernacular implied the common expression; "death-consuming stone chamber".

## ParthenoReGenesis Sarcophagus:

'transliteration' of the combined "phrase" into modern English results in; "a chamber in which a renewed state of virginity or purity is brought to otherwise diseased or dying flesh of the natural being". Used throughout history by many ancient cultures, then later by secretive religions and other self-proclaimed illuminates, and in more recent times, highly technologically advanced versions remain in use by the extremely wealthy and secretive *illuminist* families.

### PARTHENOGENESIS

SARCOPHAGUS Entrainment Chamber (“PARSEC.me™”): 'Sarcophagus' size and shape: Coffin-like structure made of six sides and two ends. The internal end to end spatial dimension (*length*) is closely equal to the inside corner to corner spatial dimension (*width*) multiplied by  $\pi$  (3.14159). A wool padded 'bed' suitable for a human body to lie comfortably on, is supported on a wooden frame such that the central mass of the body is suspended roughly in the centre of the interior space.

The 'structure' of the modern device is crafted outside of these internal dimensions. Ideally the chamber should be used in a "grounded" situation, meaning outdoors, and literally on the ground, or if this is not practical, then for indoor use the chamber should be fitted with the appropriate magnetic sleep pad suspended below the "bed" at an appropriate distance to safely compensate for the earth's natural magnetic field (*as if operated on ground*). See *Magneto Sleep Pads* (<http://magneticosleep.com/>), for example.

The six side panels and the two end panels are constructed pursuant to traditional 'layering' used in "Orgone Accumulator" technology (search "DIY Orgone Accumulator"), with the addition of two layers of *Orgone Matrix Material* commonly referred to as "Orgonite" (search "An Introduction to

*Orgone Matrix Material - Jon Logan*"), the first layer of *Orgonite* next to the inner layer of the *Accumulator*, is a one (1) centimetre thick layer of *Medium Density Orgonite*, and the second layer next to the interior space within the *Accumulator*, is also a one (1) centimetre thick layer, but it is of *Low Density Orgonite*.

The inner layer of *Medium Density Orgonite*, is to contain a series of twenty-four (24) strategically placed and specially modified SSB Coils - see partial coil instructions found at [Loohan's](http://www.loohan.com/coilinfo.htm) (<http://www.loohan.com/coilinfo.htm>), for more information.

The coils are to be embedded (*not exposed*) in the layer of *Medium Density Orgonite*, in one row of three coils centred on each of the six side panels, with one of the three placed midpoint of the length of the panel, and the outer two in each row placed as measured from their centre points, at one half the distance from inside corner to corner of the interior width of the chamber from each end. The two end panels also contain three coils each, in an equilateral triangle pattern with one point of the triangle pointing down and the other two forming a horizontal top line, with the distance from the inner edge of the interior space to the centre point of each coil of the triangle being one sixth of the distance across the corner to corner inner dimension of the chamber.

For access, the chamber is constructed so that the top and two adjacent side panels (*top half*) are fixed as a unit that can be easily removed from the remaining three lower panels, either by using strategically placed handles on each side, or by hinging the top half on one side to open coffin-like. The one-piece ends should remain fixed to the three bottom stationary panels (*bottom half*) when the top is opened. The structure should be built with tolerances to allow it to be closed as tightly as possible, and a minimum of steel screws or

nails should be used, with care to ensure that no metal structural objects (*nails/screws, etc.*) penetrate entirely from the outside through to the inner side of the interior most layer of the *Accumulator*. Minimal allowances are made for channelling power for light, sound, oxygen, and radio frequencies into the chamber.

### **Vibrational Therapy Basics:**

*Molecular Frequency Entrainment*, using the unique living frequency of *Orgone* (*Living Energy explained below*) to profoundly amplify the known beneficial effects of *Aroma Therapy*, *Color Therapy*, *Light Therapy*, *Sound Therapy*, and *Touch Therapy*.

Vibrational Therapy, also known as *Vibrational Medicine* and *Energy Medicine*, is based on the scientific principles that all matter (*things - whether visible or invisible*) vibrates to a precise frequency. Within all life, existing together at the same time, there is a duality of matter and space, of movement and stillness, of sound and silence, of light and darkness, of all things resonating at specific frequencies.

At any level of existence, whether it be atomic or cosmic, the 'form' of matter that is in a state of balance and health, pulses in and out of stillness and movement easily. It is a dynamic, ever-changing dance. Thus matter, in any form, is, with its inherent wisdom and intelligence, constantly seeking to harmoniously balance its pre-programmed frequencies. The different parts of our physical, emotional, mental, and spiritual being resonant to various frequencies of vibration. They are in resonance with one another, and with all things vibrating around them.

Trauma to a system of these frequencies such as a human being, or any of its parts, often results in states of movement or frequencies that are out of sync with that system's natural programme. When the system or part of the system is damaged by out of sync frequencies, or is restricted from naturally

occurring entrainment and ceases to freely move, it atrophies, and over time, dies. Or, if the system never rests, it will eventually burn out. The “systems” includes not only the physical, but systems operating in the emotional, mental, and spiritual levels.

Vibrational/Energy Therapy gently invites stuck or out of sync energy to move or vibrate at its naturally correct frequency, promoting healthy re-entrainment. The natural system automatically finds and re-tunes its pre-programmed natural frequency balance. This is the experience of not only health and vitality, but of mental expansion, transformation of consciousness, and ultimately transcendence.

The languages of vibration and resonance are those which stimulate the five senses. This includes color, light, sound, aroma, and touch. Common to all of these is the ability to entrain via the entire spectrum of vibratory energy.

Like an orchestra, the system may be deficient of a single note or a whole symphony of harmonics. As a variety of foods creates balanced nutrition in the physical aspect of the system, the ability to receive and process over time a variety of colors, sounds and aromas, for example, is also essential nutrition for overall frequency entrainment.

Most of us are regularly deficient or bombarded in one or more of the senses by negative stimuli, resulting in trauma be degree. Therapeutically engaging our senses in a conscious and specific exposure to naturally occurring positive frequency stimuli enables the body to utilise its automatic pre-programmed ability to heal trauma through the natural phenomenon of frequency entrainment.

### **Aroma Frequencies:**

Plants create two types of oils, the fatty oils, and the essential oils. The essence of the lifeblood of the plant carry a frequency. The fatty oil (*olive, flax, canola, sesame, etc.*) is

derived from the plant seed and is nourishment for the growing young plant as it develops into a mature plant. These fatty oil molecules also provide base nutrition to the human body, but are too large to pass through the blood brain barrier.

The essential oil molecules are small enough to pass through the blood brain barrier and penetrate at the cellular level, enhancing health, releasing HGH and transforming DNA. Therapeutic grade essential oils, whether inhaled, applied topically, or digested in the human system, have the ability to instantly transform diseased cells into healthy ones, through the natural phenomenon of frequency entrainment.

The live frequencies of essential oils carry electrical properties, electrons, negative ions and the essence of the lifeblood of the plant in to the human system. The essential oils derived from the essence of the lifeblood of the plant carry a live frequency ranging from 52 MHz to 320 MHz. A healthy human body frequency range is 62 to 72 MHz and will re-entrain itself whenever exposed to these higher frequencies.

Clinical research has found that many diseases begin to appear when our frequency drops to 58 MHz or lower. Research also finds that inhaling the high frequency of the essential oils can elevate the body’s vibration, healing and reversing damage, through frequency entrainment. For example, the essential oil of Rose carries the highest known plant frequency of 320 MHz. Inhaling the fragrance of Rose brings faster healing and optimizes health of the body, and naturally elevates the mood.

Essential oils are some of the most concentrated extracts of plants known, exerting significant physiological and psychological affects. These volatile liquids are stored in special cells, ducts, or glandular hairs of the

plant that are distributed among the roots, leaves, bark, stems and flowers. Clinical research shows essential oils, having the highest frequency among known living organisms, create an environment in which microbes, disease, bacteria, molds, fungus, etc. cannot survive.

The fragrance alone, of a therapeutic-grade essential oil can directly affect everything from your emotional state to the physical quality of your life. The fragrance can cause an instinctive reaction too, because of the way our sense of smell triggers memories. As any fragrance is inhaled, millions of olfactory receptor cells, which line the inside of the nose, are picking up the molecules from the fragrance which causes the nervous system to fire (*electronic frequency pushes*) and send messages to the limbic portion of the brain.

The lining of nerve cells triggers electrical impulses, which then transmits the impulses to the gustatory center (*where the sensation of taste is perceived*), the amygdale (*where emotional memories are stored*) and other parts of the limbic brain which control heart rate, blood pressure, breathing, memory, stress levels, and hormone balance. All of this happens in less than a millisecond (*at the speed of electricity*)!

Here is a short list of the frequencies found in high quality essential oils:

- Rose (*Rosa damascene*) 320 MHz
- Hellichrysum 181 MHz
- Frankincense 147 MHz
- Ravensara 134 MHz
- Lavender 118 MHz
- Myrrh 108 MHz
- Blue Chamomile 105 MHz
- Blue Tansy 105 MHz
- Mellissa 102 MHz
- Juniper 98 MHz
- Aloes/Sandalwood 96 MHz

Here is a list of the frequencies found some *Young Living Essential Oil* blends:

- Forgiveness 192 MHz
- Joy 188 MHz
- Exodus II 180 MHz
- Sacred Mountain 176 MHz
- Gentle Baby 152 MHz
- Mister 147 MHz
- Inspiration 141 MHz
- Grounding 140 MHz
- EndoFlex 138 MHz
- PanAway 112 MHz
- En-R-Gee 106 MHz
- Peace & Calming 105 MHz
- Christmas Spirit 104 MHz
- Motivation 103 MHz
- Acceptance 102 MHz
- Release 102 MHz
- SARA 102 MHz
- Harmony 101 MHz

### **Basic Sound Frequency Technology:**

***Solfeggio Frequencies:*** are the sound frequencies traditionally used in ancient *Gregorian* chants. The healing tones of the *Solfeggio* frequencies were used because they were understood to “re-tune” what the monks believed were the ‘spiritual’ aspects of the human being (*vibratory frequency*), bringing it back to its original, pure, most natural and healthy relationship (*vibratory frequency*) with the physical body.

Through ‘entrainment’ (*detail described below*), the *Solfeggio* frequencies re-unite and heal, by enabling the body to re-tune itself to its originally intended frequency as naturally designed into its DNA programming. Sympathetic resonance describes the tendency of two wave forms with the same degree of arc to vibrate sympathetically together, energizing and communicating universally with each other. Thus wave forms of varying lengths and frequencies will entrain and influence each other in varying degrees throughout all of creation.

This is a key to understanding one of the dynamics that holds creation together, and to understanding the theory that the body, like all material substance, is merely an expressed representation of specific energy frequencies, or vibrations that have been expressed by the sacred sound of Creation. The *Solfeggio* frequencies were so effective an aid to the early monks, that their apparent near perfect health and well-being undermined the authority of the early *Vatican*, so much so, that the information was conveniently "lost" and went into oblivion for many centuries.

Thanks to the inspired work of *Dr. Joseph Puleo*, the *Solfeggio* frequencies were rediscovered. *Dr. Joseph Puleo* is a naturopathic physician and one of America's leading herbalists, who began his research of frequencies in the mid-1970's. In his coincidental examination of the *Bible* he found in Genesis: Chapter 7, Verses 12-83, that there were a pattern of six repeating codes around a series of numbers, 3, 6 and 9. When he deciphered these using the ancient *Pythagorean* method of reducing the verse numbers to their single digit integers, the codes revealed a series of six sound frequencies that correspond to the six tones of the ancient *Solfeggio* scale.

The *Solfeggio* frequencies contain the six pure tonal notes that were used to make up the ancient musical scale, until they were altered by the *Catholic Church* and *Pope Gregory I*. The *Church* claims that they had "lost" 152 of these amazing ancient *Gregorian* chants, but more likely, they had them intentionally locked away in the bowels of the *Vatican* archives. One of those sacred chants, however, known as, "*The Hymn to St. John the Baptist*," has now re-emerged and is known as the most inspirational hymn ever written and features all six *Solfeggio* notes.

These are the *Solfeggio* frequencies:

- UT** – 396 Hz – Liberating Guilt and Fear
- RE** – 417 Hz – Facilitating Change
- MI** – 528 Hz – Transformation and Miracles  
(*DNA Repair - Repair - and derives from the phrase "Mira gestorum", in Latin meaning, "miracle". This is the exact frequency used by genetic biochemists to repair broken DNA –genetic blueprint upon which life is based!*)
- FA** – 639 Hz – Connecting/Relationships
- SOL** – 741 Hz – Awakening Intuition
- LA** – 852 Hz – Returning to Spiritual Order.

Sound is expressed as a vibration of air, but like all vibrations, sound frequencies in the energetic field are primal, and so they affect everything, because as the physicists and meta-physicians agree, absolutely everything including mankind is a perceived expression of vibrating energy. The frequencies, at which every living being vibrates, are continually and automatically being affected and entrained by the frequencies of sound, light and other waves that these living organisms are exposed to.

**Footnote:** Our modern day musical scale is slightly out of sync from the original *Solfeggio* frequencies, and is consequently more dissonant, as it is based upon what is termed the "*Twelve-Tone Equal Temperament*." In ancient times, the musical scale was called "*Just Intonation*." Our modern music also falls within the A 440 Hz frequency, which was changed from A 417 Hz, around 1914. And a 7th note was added to the modern scale in the form of a "SI," or a "TI," as in the "DO, RE, MI, FA, SO, LA, TI" vocal scale, while the original *Solfeggio* scale was composed of only the six notes: "UT, RE, MI, FA, SO, LA."

#### **Basic Light Frequency Technology:**

Many health conditions can be eliminated using a near infrared light therapy known as photonic stimulation. Photonic stimulation is like "*Star Trek*" medicine - something out of the future that sounds too far-fetched to exist in today's world. However, it has existed so long as the sun has been

shining, and now “quantum healing”, with near infrared light photons is a reality today, and is poised to become mainstream in medical practice very soon. This powerful, effective, safe, and affordable technology is revolutionizing medical treatment for pain, many neurological disorders, and a wide variety of musculoskeletal and soft tissue maladies.

Many health problems that had previously been notoriously difficult or even impossible to successfully manage can now benefit from photonic stimulation, also known as vibrational frequency re-entrainment, using infrared light waves.

Scientists have learned that the mechanism of action of photonic stimulation is related to its ability to excite, or re-entrain the frequencies of electrons within the energy producing mitochondria of cells in injured tissues. This process enables cells to increase production of ATP and thereby stimulate the return of more normal cellular physiology; entrained to a frequency more closely aligned to the natural frequency originally programmed into the DNA. Accompanying this is more normal regulation of the autonomic nervous system, which then re-regulates blood flow to injured tissues, relieves pain, and promotes extremely fast healing. Using the process, one can literally “see” minor injuries heal.

Changes in thermographic patterns correlate with patients' subjective improvement and are measurable in real time with the use of an infrared scanning camera. This process of using a photon-generating device under the guidance of infrared scanning is referred to as "dynamic image feedback." In this way photonic therapy has been proven to restore more normal and natural isothermal patterns, almost instantly.

Photon generating devices used for medical therapy include lasers, light emitting

diodes (*LEDS*), and infrared mosaic arrays. Lasers have the potential of damaging soft tissues because their output is concentrated into a small intense beam of energy and the frequency band available is narrow. Standard *LEDS*, and certain infrared mosaic arrays, on the other hand, are much weaker and lack sufficient energy output to be hazardous when used properly in such devices.

Infrared mosaic arrays, such as are used in *Bales Scientific Photonic Stimulator*, have the unique advantage of high output power of infrared energy over a relatively large treatment area. They are safe because their energy output falls off rapidly with treatment distance.

At the central core of our body, seven main wheel-like energy centers called *Chakras*, spin continuously. *Chakras* have the ability to receive, assimilate, transmit, and be easily entrained by light energy and are also readily subject to entrainment by all other sources of vibratory frequencies.

Each *chakra* is a vortex, spinning life-force energy into or out of the body. In fact, the word *chakra* is from the *Sanskrit* word meaning "wheel of light". There are seven major *chakras* connected to, and associated with specific parts of the physical body. All are located on the torso and head. Each *chakra* transmits and receives life-force energy often called "*chi*" (or "*qi*"), or "universal intelligence".

There are also many minor *chakras*, most of which are located at the joints of the physical body. When we are in a state of ill health, the *chakras* may be distorted, out of alignment or even stagnant. When this happens, life force energy cannot flow in and out freely, and the physical body may suffer. Stress, inability to express emotions, over emotional expression, beliefs incongruent with Truth, disconnection from a higher power, unhealthy diet, lack of exercise, and exposure

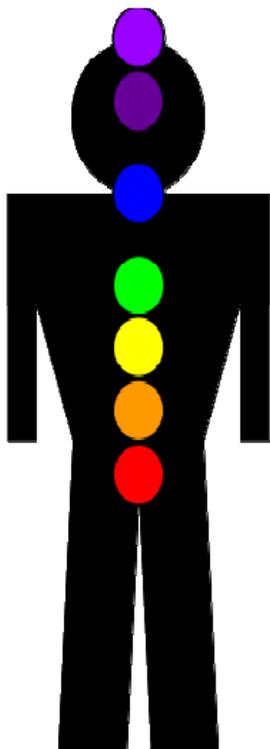
to toxicity, etc., can lower biological frequencies and cause the *chakra* system to suffer or close down.

Each *chakra* resonates with a particular frequency of vibration. *Chakras* are balanced by inviting them back to their natural state of vibration & frequency using vibratory entrainment. Vibratory entrainment may result from exposure to full spectrum color, light, sound, aroma, touch, etc.

By stimulating, or entraining the senses in a favourable way, the nervous system and therefore, the *chakras* may be re-balanced.

The physical body is a unit made of many different integral parts that are designed to be automatically self-correcting. The body's job is to maintain balance and the free-flow of energy.

The *chakras* are an energetic gateway, feeding the body *Life Energy* and providing an outlet for the release and dispersal of spent energy (*expression of work effort*).



Color	Chakra	Chakra location
Red	1st	Base of the spine
Orange	2nd	Lower abdomen, genitals
Yellow	3rd	Solar plexus
Green	4th	Heart
Blue	5th	Throat
Indigo	6th	Just above center-mid forehead
Violet	7th	Crown of head

### Frequencies of the Human Body:

*Georges Lakhovsky* discovered that all living cells (*plants, people, bacteria, parasites, etc*) possess attributes which are normally associated with electronic circuits, and *Dr. Royal R. Rife* found that every disease has a specific frequency and found that certain frequencies prevent the development of disease. *Professor Harold Saxton Burr* showed that these *L-Fields* could be used to predict illness by noting variations in the frequencies, and *Dr. Reinhold Voll* identified correlations between disease states and changes in the electrical resistance of the various acupuncture points.

German biophysicist *Fritz-Albert Popp* found that diseased cells will radiate a different photonic signature than healthy cells of the same type, and *Dr. Robert O. Becker* found the human body has an electrical frequency, and that much about a person's health can be determined and influenced by it.

### Circadian Rhythm - Body Clock:

Our body's biological functions work much like a finely tuned watch: Every part works in unison to keep the body in homeostasis (*maintenance of the internal environment within tolerable limits*). However, when one working part doesn't function normally, it tends to disrupt many other vital parts and can upset homeostasis. Our circadian rhythm is best described as an internal biological clock that regulates our body functions, based on our wake/sleep cycle. Circadian rhythms are not only important in

determining sleep cycles, but also in feeding patterns. There are clear patterns of brain wave activity, hormone production, cell regeneration, and other biological activities linked to these daily cycles, each associated with specific frequency variables.

Every cell in the body vibrates at a certain frequency, and groups of cells, which form together to make bodily systems such as organs, have their own particular frequency, i.e. a healthy liver has a frequency of 55 to 60 MHz, and these organized frequencies vary according to associated rhythms or time cycles.

### **Overview of Frequency:**

Every object on this planet, still or alive, animate or inanimate, has an electrical frequency that can be measured accurately. Electrical frequency is measured by counting of the number of occurrences of a repeating current flow per second. This unit is called Hertz (*Hz*).

All atoms in the universe have vibrational motion. Each periodic motion has a "frequency", (*the number of oscillations per second*), measured in Hertz:

1 Hertz (*Hz*) = 1 oscillation per second (ops)

1 Kilo Hertz (*KHz*) = 1,000 ops

1 Mega Hertz (*MHz*) = 1,000,000 ops

1 Giga Hertz (*GHz*) = 1,000,000,000 ops

The human body is a radiant machine. Every living element in our body radiates. Our brain operates on electrical current, our ears absorb sounds vibrations, our eyes recognize and enable us to interpret light frequency, and we produce voices and temperature, all with frequencies.

### **Biophotons:**

Living organisms have measurable frequencies on various levels from the entire body down to the molecular level. That fact has enabled scientists to conduct researches on humans and map their frequencies. It turned out quite clearly that there are

frequency differences in healthy humans in comparison to ill ones. Biophoton emissions will vary according to the functional state of the organism. If a disease such as cancer affects certain cells they will radiate a different photonic signature than healthy cells of the same type.

Scientists have discovered that every known illness has a different frequency that is always within a definite range. During the first steps of that line of research those results were considered as a new diagnostic discovery, yet as the research progressed and researchers started running frequency measures on human cells, it turned out that those cells also reacted to direct external light and sound frequencies. The most incredible discovery was that ill or diseased cells reacted very precisely to levels of frequencies and were cured or eliminated whilst nearby healthy cells remained intact.

It has also been discovered that the general human healthy frequency is within the range of 62 -72 MHz and when it drops to lower levels it enables the appearance of a variety of diseases. For example at the level of 58 MHz, diseases like cold and flu are more likely to appear. On much lower levels (42 MHz) Cancer appears in humans.

Any movement of an object in any frequency can be changed by an external intervention of another frequency and the frequency of the human body and its cells is of no exception. This is simply frequency entrainment. When the body becomes ill or infected, these normal frequency patterns have become distorted and either increase in frequency (*rare unless injury associated*), known as 'hyper' in medicine, meaning "high, excessive, above normal", i.e. inflamed, on fire, irritation type conditions, or a decrease in frequency (*much more common*), known as 'hypo' in medical terms, meaning "low, under,

beneath, down, below normal", i.e. for cold, damp, degenerative conditions.

Of course the unwanted virus, toxin or infection also has its own unique frequency which can be isolated and 'inverted' so it is 180° out of phase, then by delivering the inverted frequencies back to the body, it will neutralise/kill the virus, toxin or infection, allowing the organ to recover and normalize, therefore recovering in health. It was *Dr. Royal Rife* who first discovered the importance of this type of frequency entrainment.

*Dr. Royal Raymond Rife* developed a high-powered microscope that could magnify an object almost 1,500 times. He was the first to see viruses, bacteria, parasites, toxins, etc. in the blood. From this work he developed a frequency generator which could generate various electrical frequencies to be passed through an affected or diseased part of the body. It is well known that electrical currents passed through a wound or broken bone will greatly accelerate the healing process. Furthering his work, he validated certain frequencies could prevent the development of disease, and others would destroy existing disease.

**Measuring Frequency:**

*Bruce Tainio of Tainio Technology in Cheney, Washington*, developed equipment to measure the biofrequency of humans and foods. He used this biofrequency monitor to determine the relationship between frequency and disease, and to provide a basis by which to analyse the person's health:

Brain frequency range (head)	72-90 MHz
Normal Brain frequency range	68-72 MHz
Visionary Range	120 MHz
Bone	38-43 MHz
Genius Capable Brain Frequency	82-90 MHz
Healthy body (neck down)	62-68 MHz
Thyroid and Parathyroid glands	62-68 MHz

Thymus Gland	65-68 MHz
Heart	67-70 MHz
Human cells start to mutate below	62 MHz
Lungs	58-65 MHz
Liver	55-60 MHz
Pancreas	60-80 MHz
Disease begins, colds invade	59-60 MHz
Stomach	58-65 MHz
Ascending Colon	58-60 MHz
Descending Colon	58-63 MHz
This is common for a headache	58 MHz
Disease begins, cold symptoms	58 MHz
Flu invades the body	57 MHz
Viral Infection	55 MHz
Pneumonia, Epstein Barr	52 MHz
Tissue degeneration begin	48 MHz
Cancer can set in	42 MHz
Death begins at	20 MHz

Invading pathogenic frequencies (toxins & viruses) are low. Positive beneficial bacterial frequencies are higher. Pollutants lower healthy "Frequency".

Processed, canned food, and frozen foods have a frequency of zero. Fresh produce has up to 15 MHz. Dry herbs from 12-22 MHz. Fresh herbs from 20-27 MHz.

Essential Oils have frequency range from to 52-320 MHz *Orgone Living (Spiritual) Energy* is 360 MHz and higher.

**Disease can't exist in high vibration tissue:**

As quantum physics shows, subatomic particles are waveforms in their pure state, and manifest as an expression of matter only when acted upon or observed. Ultimately, everything is energy vibrating at varying frequencies to give the expressed impression of density. Science is now catching on to what sages and seers through the ages have always known – everything is an expression of energy, and the higher your energy vibrates, the better health and happiness you can enjoy.

**Cellular Frequency:**

In his book *The Essential Beginnings*, *Dr. Gary Young* tells how he worked with *Washington State University* and an electronics

instruments company in Seattle to develop an electronic instrument that could measure the electrical frequency of individual cells.

He measured the frequency of the cells in the bodies of patients at his medical practice and correlated the measurements with whatever ailments they had. From this he was able to determine that the normal healthy range of the human body is 62-72 MHz. At this level and above, nobody had any ailments at all.

Everyone who had a common cold had a cellular frequency of 58 MHz or less; for flu it was 57 MHz or less; Candida symptoms began to appear at 55 MHz, for Epstein Barr virus it was 52 MHz, and so on.

Everyone he measured who had some form of cancer had a cellular frequency of 42 MHz or less. Clearly, high frequency cells correspond with better health, and ideally everyone should strive for a frequency of at least 62 MHz.

#### **Hawkins Scale:**

In his book *Power vs. Force*, Dr. David A Hawkins, head of the *University of Applied Kinesiology* in the USA, describes his “map of consciousness”, where people’s level of consciousness, or spiritual awareness can be tracked on a scale from 1 to a 1,000.

Sometimes called the *Hawkins Scale* or the *Scale of Enlightenment*, Hawkins claimed a person could expect to climb about 12 points up the scale during a normal lifetime. While he wasn’t intending his research to be used necessarily for healing, it is clear the higher up the scale you are, the more mastery of life you will enjoy, including health happiness, and general well-being.

However, we have found that by balancing their polarity (*re-switching*), and entraining their frequency, many people have been able to climb tens or even hundreds of points in a short space of time, even propelling them to levels perceived as reserved for saints

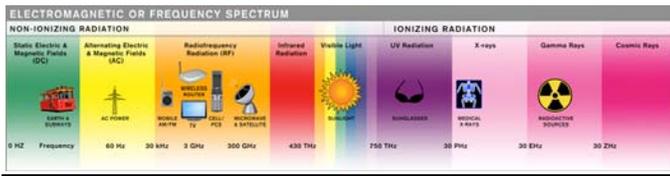
or avatars. Clients have reported increased intuition and psychic capabilities, while healers have reported even stronger connection to the Creative source and greater results in their practice.

Once registering over 550 on the *Hawkins Scale*, individuals can now start a self-administered program to achieve 12-strand DNA reconnection, as briefly described by *Keith Smith*, founder of the *Polarity Balancing Program* used at *Woodland Wellness*, as seen in his *Lightworker.com Virtual Light Broadcast*.

The advantages of a hi-vibration life are immense. Physical healing is an obvious benefit. As we said at the beginning – disease cannot exist in high vibration tissue. Mental/emotional healing is another benefit. Finding forgiveness, learning gratitude, healing phobias, and addictions are all characteristics of a hi-vibrational living. Spiritual growth is also enhanced, while experiencing a deeper connection with Creation, leading to a greater sense of peace and well-being.

Healing abilities are enhanced, including recognition of synchronicity opportunities and manifesting. It is possible therefore, to realise benefits on all levels, including the proverbial health, wealth and happiness. Metaphysicians understand that we can influence the creation of our own reality. Having a higher vibration dramatically increases the manifesting power on all levels.

The table below provides a summary of hi-vibration healthy frequencies, and low-vibration unhealthy ones. Clearly, not everyone can live the ideal way in today’s hurried, mechanised world, but choosing to be exposed to frequencies more from the left side of the column and fewer from the right side of the column, will help you on your way to enjoying the naturally intended benefits of a healthy life.



## **Vibration & Frequency Entrainment:**

The capacity for continual vibrational frequency 'entrainment' is automatic and built into every single cell within the human system, as well as every other living organism. As surely as children are endowed with the ability to walk, learn language, laugh, cry, and love, we all have the inherent, sub-conscious ability to entrain our vibration at the cellular, and even at the molecular level.

Once you have recognized this design component within the living organism, it is not difficult to go beyond the base levels of the body - to cells, tissues, organs, and systems - and arrive at a junction between *Life Energy (mind)* and matter, the point where spiritual consciousness, or *Life Energy*, actually starts to have an effect on expressions of matter.

There is such a point where spiritual consciousness and physical matter intersect, and this junction results in the manifestation and expression of our unique vibrational identity.

From the DNA, to the bones, all cells and systems express our unique vibration. We are vibrational frequencies, and we are all surrounded by vibrational frequencies at all times, and all of these various frequencies that surround us, serve to influence and entrain our own unique vibration.

Spiritual resonance is a unique thing. There truly is a mystery and a wonder in the seemingly simple function of Spiritual resonance. From the galaxies to the subatomic, all people and particles dance to its power. If a piano and a guitar were both in tune, and a G was played on the piano, the G string on the guitar near it would also vibrate. Sound waves that move air particles are

transferring the acoustical energy from the piano to the guitar - one instrument is entraining the other via its frequency.

Similarly, tuned oscillators, that is, things that can vibrate at the same frequency, require very little work to transfer energy from one to another. In this example, the string on the guitar absorbs the energy waves from the piano, because it is tuned to the same frequency. Whenever there are similarly tuned oscillators, they form a sympathetic resonant system. The guitar and piano string are resonating together.

If pendulum-type grandfather clocks were mounted against a wall with their pendulums swinging out of phase to one another, in a matter of days, their pendulums would lock into phase and beat together. In this case, energy transferred through the common wall would be sufficient to allow the clocks to come into phase with one another. This is sympathetic "entrainment", a phenomenon that allows two similarly tuned systems to align their movement and energy so that they match in rhythm and phase.

This phenomenon also occurs in the area of electronics. When you have similarly tuned oscillating circuits vibrating at similar frequencies, the slower circuit will rise to match the speed of the faster one. In both of these examples, we can see how energy is transferred from one similarly tuned system to another.

What can we learn from all this? First, when two similar systems are oscillating at different frequencies, there is an impelling force called frequency resonance that causes the two to transfer energy from one to another. That aspect of energy transfer is called entrainment, which causes frequencies to line up and to vibrate at the same rate, or if they are living organisms, then at the frequency programmed into their DNA.

This entrainment works with biological systems just as well as mechanical ones. Entrainment in living cells is a variation of the process by which things align their movement and energy together to match in the rhythm and phase that was originally programmed into their natural DNA. On warm nights in many parts of the world, fireflies gathering in a tree will light up at random. Before long, they will all be turning their lights on and off in a coordinated manner.

We have often heard crickets or frogs all finding the same rhythm and coordinating their sounds to one another. In these cases, nature finds it useful or perhaps economical to rhythmically entrain the individuals. Perhaps through a more mysterious process, women sharing a house or dormitory over time will find that their menstrual cycles will rhythmically entrain as well. Scientists have found that even disembodied animal hearts, when kept alive in a lab and placed near each other, will entrain - the individual hearts will begin to beat in unison.

The process appears to be universal. *Itzhak Bentov* may have been absolutely correct in 1977, in his fascinating book *Stalking the Wild Pendulum*. He states, "*We may look at disease as such out-of-tune behaviour of one or another of our organs of the body. When a strong harmonizing rhythm is applied to it, the interference pattern of waves, which is the organ, may start beating in proper tune again.*" He postulates that this theory may account for the reason energy healing actually works. It happens to be "scientifically" true, simply because it is an example of applied entrainment, whether known to the practitioner or not.

When two things are vibrating at different frequencies through resonance and entrainment, either the lower vibration will come up, the higher vibration will come down,

or they will meet in the middle, or more significantly, the living cell will filter its needs from within the available frequencies it is exposed to, to enable it to re-entrain itself as closely as possible to the originally coded program within its DNA.

### **Basics on Life Energy:**

Throughout this section we will speak of natural "**Life Energy**", meaning the existing natural *Living Energy* also commonly referred to as **Orgone**, that is uniquely inherent to this planet, and that although is scientifically known to exist, cannot be weighed, measured or easily quantified in the conventional scientific manner.

The famed scientist and researcher, [Wilhelm Reich](http://www.wilhelmreichmuseum.org/) (<http://www.wilhelmreichmuseum.org/>) discussed natural *Living Energy* with the even more famous *Albert Einstein* (circa. 1930/40's) while referring to it as "[Orgone](http://www.orgonics.com/humorac.htm)" (<http://www.orgonics.com/humorac.htm>).

Others have coined names such as "Bion", "Prana", or "Universal Energy", while many others referred to it as the "Aura" surrounding a living entity.

We shall stick to natural *Life Energy* and or *Orgone* for this article. In *Reich's* discussions, he was able to establish that although his *Orgone* energy could not be easily scientifically measured, it could easily be scientifically proven to exist, accumulated, and manipulated, and used to cause benefits for plants, animals and humans in varying degrees.

["Kirlian"](http://www.kirlian.org/kirlian.htm) (<http://www.kirlian.org/kirlian.htm>) photography has historically been used to photograph the existence of this natural *Living Energy* in virtually every living thing. Most commonly this photography has been used to capture evidence of the "aura" of a living subject, yet it has recently been used to capture photographic evidence of this same field of natural *Living Energy* as it exists in

many inert things, such as soil, rocks, sand, and most any other thing that can contain some amount of moisture, including our planet's very unique atmosphere.

All of the scientific research indicates that whatever we call this unique energy, it is in fact the very energy that drives "life" and all living things on this unique planet, including uniquely causing frozen water to float. It is fascinating to consider that when water is frozen within an absolute vacuum (*devoid of Orgone*), it will sink. It floats on only this planet due to the existence of natural *Life Energy*, or *Orgone*, which is naturally attracted to the freezing water molecules, thus causing them to be "lighter" than the unfrozen water molecules, in spite of them being denser, a phenomenon we cannot objectively comprehend, yet which we should be eternally grateful for.

Without this unique ability for the frozen water to attract the invisible, apparently immaterial, yet denser natural *Life Energy*, or *Orgone*, and to otherwise defy the accepted scientific rules (*denser, being heavier and thus sinking*), our freezing climates in certain areas would continually freeze surface waters, sinking them because of their colder and thus denser make-up, then freezing what liquid would rise to the surface, and repeating this process until all fresh water on the planet was frozen solid, and life could thereafter not exist. Thankfully the inherent characteristics of natural *Orgone* have been pre-programmed to avoid such an occurrence, almost as if it "thinks".

Natural *Living Energy* is naturally attracted to water molecules and to all animate and inanimate molecules by virtue of the very design of those molecules and cells. It may be logically deduced therefore, that this energy must be attracted from "somewhere".

Apparently that somewhere, is the very unique (*blue*) atmosphere of this planet as well

as most every type of natural, but otherwise inert substances that make up this planet, such as soils, rocks, sand, water, etc., which all have the ability to act as temporary "accumulators" or loosely, temporary storage containers of this natural *Living Energy* we call *Orgone* that graces the planet.

This also appears to be the same "where" from which we are able to "accumulate" it in certain artificial devices. Science has accepted that when we specifically design the shape of a "space" within specific objects made from specific materials, we can attract and accumulate concentrations of natural *Orgone Energy* within that space, in much the same manner as water molecules, living cells and other organic materials accumulate and store it. Examples of this artificial design would be such devices as Reich's "*Orgone Accumulators*", or the Australian's "*Joe Cells*" used by many to power automotive engines without any known source or consumption of "fuel" (*aside from a non-depleting quantity of water*). (For complete explanation of how and why a *Joe Cell* operates, see this link; "[Free Energy](http://www.naturalgod.com/IsraeliteLightIII.htm#Free%20Energy)". (<http://www.naturalgod.com/IsraeliteLightIII.htm#Free%20Energy>))

A closing thought with regard to our brief description of natural *Living Energy*, or *Orgone*, would be that its supply may be compared to that of water. There is the same amount of water on this planet today, as there was five thousand years ago - right down to the last drop. We do not, nor can we, through consumption or use of water, actually destroy or eliminate any quantity of water - we can only contaminate it, or temporarily change its form or location. The same applies to natural *Living Energy*. We do not through the act of living, nor can we in any other way or by any other means, actually destroy or eliminate any quantity of the naturally existing *Living Energy*.

Plants and animals can only temporarily use or access its form and power to sustain and carry out activity during their temporal lives. Thus there is the same amount of natural *Living Energy* on this planet today, as there was five thousand years ago; it is simply manifest in different temporal forms at this moment in time.

Because true natural *Living Energy* cannot be destroyed, (*and we believe cannot be reduced, eliminated or even damaged*) it must therefore remain present and available at all times, because it is the inherent characteristics within this very *Living Energy* called *Orgone*, that sustains not only all life on this planet, but all matter as we perceive it to be expressed.

One of the most significant revelations of the research conducted in relation to *Orgone*, was done by *Wilhelm Reich*, were his findings established that just like ALL other things, visible or invisible, *Orgone* is essentially the result of energy that has been expressed via a very specific vibratory frequency.

Ergo, *Orgone* IS a vibrating frequency, and all vibrations have the capacity to influence, or to entrain other vibrations. Since *Orgone* is essentially indestructible, and is, in and of itself, the very essence of "life", its specific vibratory frequency is the most powerful and most important entrainment factor in existence relative to all living cell tissue.

Using the frequencies confirmed by *Reich*, *Dr. Royal Raymond Rife* successfully treated 1,000 patients in a specific study group that had been independently diagnosed with incurable cancer in the 1930's. He was honoured with 14 awards and an honorary doctorate as a result. After an unsuccessful attempt by pharmaceutical companies to buy out his research and equipment, his office was ransacked, his research paperwork was stolen, and the machine that healed all of those 1,000

"incurable" cancer patients was destroyed. He was subsequently arrested and killed while held in prison pending trial.

In 1934, before this destruction occurred, the *University of Southern California* appointed a *Special Medical Research Committee* to bring terminal cancer patients from *Pasadena County Hospital to Rife's San Diego Laboratory* and clinic for treatment. The team included doctors and pathologists assigned to examine the patients - if still alive - in 90 days. After the 90 days of treatment, the *Committee* concluded that 86.5% of the patients had been completely cured. The treatment was then adjusted and the remaining 13.5% of the patients also responded within the next four weeks. The total verified recovery rate using *Rife's* technology was 100%.

As we have briefly demonstrated here, dozens of renowned scientific and medical researchers have confirmed *Rife's* findings, and the remarkable importance of *Orgone* and its capacity to re-entrain all other frequencies, yet his work remains officially "buried" by governments who refuse to admit he was correct. It still remains "*ill-legal*" to claim his methods will cure diseases. So we won't make that claim - the reality is self-evident.

### **Practical Application:**

The physical human being is a perceived expression of vibratory, *Life Energy*. In short, the human organism is a vibratory frequency perceived by itself, wherein each of its billions of subatomic particles are powered by *Orgone Living Energy*. All frequencies are subject to influence of all other frequencies, and all frequencies are subject to entrainment by all other frequencies, and the most powerful entrainment frequency of all resides in *Orgone*. Therefore the frequencies we expose ourselves to, have a profound effect on what we are, because as our frequency changes, so too, do we.

Science clearly demonstrates that we are not just the result of what we consume, although the things we consume play an important role. We are much more than the sum of our consumption of physical nourishments. Each of us is a living organism capable of growing and maintaining itself upon the things we consume. And as that living consuming organism, we are also capable of attracting and harnessing the very power of life itself, in the form of *Orgone*.

Food and water does not hold even a fraction of the energy the human being can express (*wield / manipulate / control / expend, etc.*). Even the best organic foods and the purest waters only vibrate at a mere fraction of what the human being vibrates at. This 'sustenance', merely provides the human being with sufficient energy to build (*grow*) and maintain itself, and to thereby enable it to access and to direct, limited amounts of the otherwise freely available *Orgone Life Energy* it is exposed to.

Of course, the higher the vibratory frequency of the human being, the more freely available *Orgone* that human being will be able to harness and to express according to that human being's will. This directed expression of *Life Energy*, may typically be called "work", or it may be virtually any other activity aside from simply 'living', and most importantly, it is this very capacity to access this *Life Energy* that ultimately enables the human organism to experience consciousness and thought, leading to *Enlightenment*.

"Utopia" for a living human organism, could be described as the perfect environment; an environment where harmful vibrations were eliminated, and beneficial vibrations were plentiful. Or put another way, our DNA contains the perfect coding that would enable perfectly healthy, and perfectly happy living, in a perfectly maintained environment, providing we

maintained that environment perfectly, and made only perfect decisions. Such an environment would provide the perfect circumstances for advancing our *Enlightenment*. Human nature - utopia may not be the case for a time.

So we are left with our limited understanding of how to compensate for these deficiencies within the current status quo. First and obvious, is to do all reasonable things to reduce our exposure to harmful vibratory frequencies, and to maximize our exposure to beneficial vibratory frequencies. Beneficial vibratory frequencies include the best foods and purest and most natural water to sustain us. Then we also need to satisfy our 'senses' of smell, touch, hearing and sight, by exposing them to the highest possible beneficial and associative frequencies; the naturally pleasing aromas of essential oils, sounds of the *Solfeggio Scale*, the visual stimuli of full spectrum colour, and the stimulating effects of naturally occurring, healthy radio (*radionic*) frequencies.

Achieving these physical, or base needs, brings us nearer, or just next to the last step in our innate ability to become the most efficient living organism possible. The higher we are able to raise our base frequency as a living human organism, the closer we get it in relationship to the vibration of the *Orgone Living Energy*. As we bring these normally divergent frequencies closer to one another, we strengthen the naturally inherent capacity for *Enlightenment* entrainment that is programmed within our DNA. For centuries, illuminists and cults of many different origins have known this, and have attempted everything from numerology to magic to achieve it.

The potential and purpose of this *Enlightenment* technology has for many centuries been kept under secreted guard by,

and for these self-proclaimed elite. Now, thanks to our anonymous contact within those 'inner' circles, we have access to the most modern and advanced methodology available. It is the PARTHENOGENESIS SARCOPHAGUS, combining the most advanced, scientifically proven methods briefly described in these pages to advance our universal quest for *Enlightenment*.

The *PARSEC.me*<sup>TM</sup> is a "Life-Energy-Charger" for the human being. Consider it the ultimate "body-health compensator" for the negative and evil influences of our modern societies. The chamber is designed first, to eliminate all harmful radiation; and second, to attract, accumulate, condense and make available for assimilation and entrainment of the human occupant, highly concentrated *Orgone Life Energy*, and while doing this, it provides an environment perfectly adapted to maximize the cellular entrainment potential of that *Orgone Living Energy*, by incorporation and introduction of perfectly balanced aroma therapies, perfectly tuned *Solfeggio Scale* rhythms, perfectly balanced full spectrum visual and infrared light frequency exposure, and perfectly synchronized harmonious radio frequency exposure.

Benefits of repeated use include superior vitality, enhanced creativity, vastly improved health in general, reduction of negativity, improved optimism, elimination (*not 'cure'*) of disease, longevity, slows, reduces, or even reverses aging, promotes easy weight loss, hair re-growth, enhances naturally occurring capacity for remote viewing/influencing, enables self-administered DNA strand repairs, improves manifestation realization, etc.

*PARSEC.me*<sup>TM</sup> (Entrainment Chamber):

Our bodies are pre-programmed to operate within a pre-set frequency range, and to strive to maintain that optimal frequency in

diverse conditions. Since all frequencies, always affect all other frequencies at some level, this manner of function is essential to maintain homeostasis of any living organism, otherwise all living organisms would eventually entrain to the static frequency level of common inanimate objects.

This form of frequency entrainment occurs naturally and continually, whether we are aware of it or not. It happens in whatever environment we find ourselves in, whether that environment is contaminated or not. It happens as a result of whatever nutrition we consume, whether that nutrition is healthy or not. It happens as a result of whatever vibrations we expose ourselves to, whether those vibrations are optimal or not. *PARSEC.me* merely provides an optimal environment for this activity - an opportunity to maximize rejuvenation entrainment, while minimizing degenerative entrainment.

Vibrations, whether from aroma, light, colour, radionics, sound, touch, or from living *Orgone Life Energy* itself, are always causing entrainment of our own frequency. The characteristics of *PARSEC.me*<sup>TM</sup> are designed to maximize the inherent vibratory entrainment capacity within every known method of frequency creation and exposure, to stimulate the maximum natural, body-system-self-regulated, frequency modulation entrainment, for optimal physical, mental, emotional, and spiritual health.

*PARSEC.me*<sup>TM</sup> is the ultimate entrainment facilitator, using advanced *Aroma Therapy*, *Color Therapy*, *Light Therapy*, *Sound Therapy*, *Touch (vibrational radionics) Therapy*, and of course, exposure to high concentrations of ultra-pure *Orgone Life Energy*, the most powerful frequency entrainment factor existing in the known universe.

## **ADDENDUM 1: - on Brainwave Entrainment:**

### **Brainwave Synchronization:**

Is any practice that aims to cause brainwave frequencies to fall into step with a periodic stimulus having a frequency corresponding to the intended brain-state (*for example, to induce sleep*), usually attempted with the use of specialized software.

It depends upon a "frequency following" response on the assumption that the human brain has a tendency to change its dominant EEG frequency towards the frequency of a dominant external stimulus. Such a stimulus is often aural, as in the case of binaural or monaural beats and isochronic tones, or visual, as with a dreamachine, a combination of the two with a mind machine, or even electromagnetic radiation.

### **History:**

Enthusiasts of brainwave entrainment claim that it has been noted or used in one form or another for centuries (*long before the invention of EEG equipment*), from shamanistic societies' use of drum beats to [Ptolemy](#) noting in 200 AD the effects of flickering sunlight generated by a spinning wheel. In the 1930's and '40's, with then-new EEG equipment and strobe lights, William Grey Walter performed some of the first scientific research on the subject.

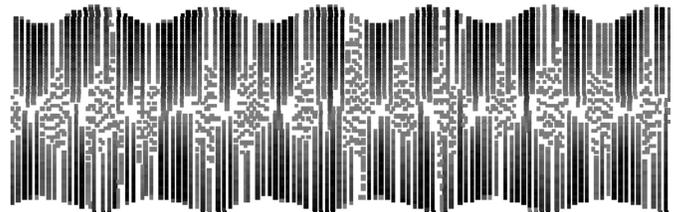
Later, in the 1960s and '70s, interest in altered states led some artists to become interested in the subject, most notably Brion Gysin who, along with a Cambridge math student, invented the [Dreamachine](#). From the 1970's to date there have been numerous studies and various machines built that combine light and sound.

These efforts were aided by continued development of micro-circuitry and other electronic breakthroughs which allowed for ever more sophisticated equipment. One of the

more frequently noted scientific results claimed for brainwave entrainment was the discovery of binaural beats, published in *Scientific American* in 1973 by Gerald Oster. However, Oster's research actually makes no mention of brainwaves.

With the development of isochronic tones by Arturo Manns, combined with more sophisticated equipment, these discoveries led to many attempts to use claimed brainwave entrainment techniques in the treatment of numerous psychological and physiological conditions.

### **Aural entrainment with Binaural beats:**



Binaural beats deserve special mention because of the manner in which the desired frequencies are obtained. Brainwave entrainment may be achieved when audio signals are introduced to the brain causing a response directly related to the frequency of the signal introduced, called *binaural beats*.

Two tones close in frequency generate a [beat frequency](#) at the difference of the frequencies, which is generally [subsonic](#). For example, a 495 Hz tone and 505 Hz tone will produce a subsonic 10 Hz beat, roughly in the middle of the alpha range. The "carrier frequency" (e.g., the 500 Hz in the example above), is also said by some to affect the quality of the transformative experience.

Note that this effect is achieved without either ear hearing the pulse when headphones are used. Instead, the brain produces the pulse by combining the two tones. Each ear hears only a steady tone. Although some have

claimed that these frequencies do provide help in treating certain medical conditions, there is not a wide acceptance by the medical community to adopt the practice of brainwave entrainment for emotional/mental disorders.

A fixed, constant frequency of synchronization is less helpful than techniques such as classical neurofeedback or learning meditation, which naturally generate brainwave frequencies that differ from person to person and may vary from minute to minute.

Binaural beats or binaural tones are auditory processing artifacts, or apparent sounds, the perception of which arises in the brain for specific physical stimuli. This effect was discovered in 1839 by Heinrich Wilhelm Dove, and earned greater public awareness in the late 20th century based on claims that binaural beats could help induce relaxation, meditation, creativity and other desirable mental states.

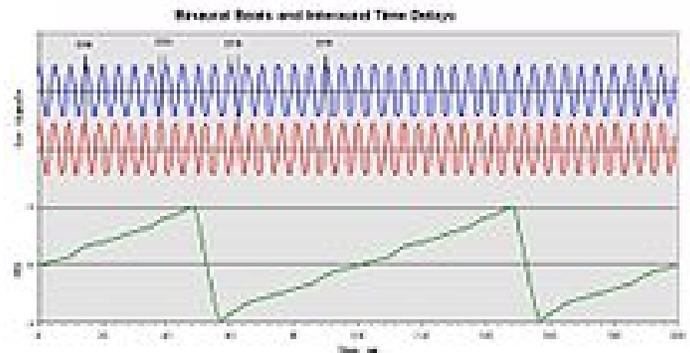
The effect on the brainwaves depends on the difference in frequencies of each tone: for example, if 300 Hz was played in one ear and 310 in the other, then the binaural beat would have a frequency of 10 Hz.

The brain produces a phenomenon resulting in low-frequency pulsations in the [amplitude](#) and [sound localization](#) of a perceived sound when two tones at slightly different frequencies are presented separately, one to each of a subject's ears, using stereo headphones. A beating tone will be perceived, as if the two tones mixed naturally, out of the brain.

The frequencies of the tones must be below 1,000 hertz for the beating to be noticeable. The difference between the two frequencies must be small (*less than or equal to 30 Hz*) for the effect to occur; otherwise, the two tones will be heard separately and no beat will be perceived.

Binaural beats are of interest to neurophysiologists investigating the sense of hearing. Binaural beats reportedly influence the brain in more subtle ways through the entrainment of brainwaves and have been claimed to reduce anxiety and to provide other health benefits such as control over pain.

### Acoustical background:



### Interaural time differences (ITD) of binaural beats:

For [sound localization](#) the human auditory system analyses [interaural time differences](#) between both ears inside small frequency ranges, called [critical bands](#). For frequencies below 1000 to 1500 Hz interaural time differences are evaluated from interaural phase differences between both ear signals. The perceived sound is also evaluated from the analysis of both ear signals.

If different [pure tones](#) ([sinusoidal signals with different frequencies](#)) are presented to each ear, there will be time dependent phase and time differences between both ears. The perceived sound depends on the frequency difference between both ear signals:

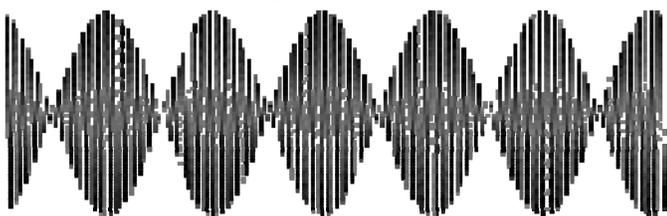
- If the frequency difference between the ear signals is lower than some hertz, the auditory system can follow the changes in the interaural time differences. As a result an [auditory event](#) is perceived, which is moving through the head. The

perceived direction corresponds to the instantaneous interaural time difference.

- For slightly bigger frequency differences between the ear signals (*more than 10 Hz*) the auditory system can no longer follow the changes in the interaural parameters. A diffuse auditory event appears. The sound corresponds to an overlay of both ear signals, which means amplitude and loudness are changing rapidly.
- For frequency differences between the ear signals of above 30 Hz the [cocktail party effect](#) begins to work, and the auditory system is able to analyze the presented ear signals in terms of two different sound sources at two different locations, and two distinct signals are perceived.

Binaural beats can also be experienced without headphones; they appear when playing two different pure tones through loudspeakers. The sound perceived is quite similar: with auditory events which move through the room, at low frequency differences, and diffuse sound at slightly bigger frequency differences. At bigger frequency differences apparent localized sound sources appear. However, it is more effective to use headphones than loudspeakers.

#### Monaural beats:



Binaural beats were first discovered in 1839 by H. Dove, a German experimenter. At that time, binaural beats were considered to be a special case of monaural beats. Binaural beats are not the same as monaural beats.

Binaural beats are perceived by presenting two different tones at slightly different pitches (*or frequencies*) separately into each ear.

This effect is produced in the brain, not in the ears as with monaural beats. It is produced by the neural output from the ears and created within the olivary body within the brain, in its attempt to "locate" the direction of the sound based on phase.

Only monaural beats are the result of the arithmetic (*vector*) sum of the waveforms of the two tones as they add or subtract from one another, becoming louder and quieter and louder again.

Monaural and binaural beats are rarely encountered in nature, but in man-made objects, monaural beats occur frequently. For example, two large engines running at slightly different speeds will send "surges" of vibrations through the deck of a ship or jet plane. The lower pitched tone is called the carrier and the upper tone is called the offset.

Monaural beats occur in the open air and external to the ears. For example, when two guitar strings of slightly different frequencies are plucked simultaneously, monaural beats strike the ear as beats and therefore excite the thalamus, an action crucial for entrainment. Binaural beats played through loudspeakers become monaural beats. Binaural tones require headphones to be effective.

To hear monaural beats, both tones must be of the same amplitude. However binaural beats can be heard when the tones have different amplitudes. They can even be heard if one of the tones is below the hearing threshold. Noise reduces the perceived volume of monaural beats whereas noise actually increases the loudness of binaural beats.

The most frequently commercialized use of monaural and binaural beats are in software or apps aimed at achieving brainwave

entrainment. Brainwave entrainment is the use of masked monaural or binaural beats to induce a specific brainwave state. It is hypothesized that listening to these beats of certain frequencies one can induce a desired state of consciousness that corresponds with specific neural activity.

It is widely accepted that patterns of neural firing, measured in Hz, correspond with states of alertness such as focused attention, deep sleep, etc.

- Beta: A brainwave state associated with high levels of focus and concentration. This is when the brain is actively working and alert. The brainwave patterns that corresponds to this state of consciousness is 12 Hz and above.
- Alpha: While this state of neural firing is slower than Beta at around 8 Hz – 12 Hz this is a state often targeted by brainwave entrainment software. The alpha brainwave state is associated with a relaxed, reflective frame of mind and is also used for problem solving and increased creativity.
- Theta: Theta waves are much slower than beta wave and correspond with states of mind that include meditation, release of stress, and lucid dreaming. At a frequency of 4 Hz – 8 Hz this is the most sought after brain state for mindfulness meditation.
- Delta: This is a brain state that is associated with deep dreamless sleep. The slowest of the brainwave states at 1 Hz – 4 Hz this state is possible to achieve while still awake by some experienced meditators.
- Gamma: Is a brainwave state not given much attention but it is thought to correspond with a moment of insight or eureka moment. 40 Hz and above.

While these brain states are what brainwave entrainment is hoping to achieve the effectiveness of monaural and binaural beats are up for debate. There are many companies that produce software for purchase that stand behind their product saying that “research shows” binaural / monaural beats are effective for inducing a desired brainwave state. However no published scientific studies have found statistically significant data that indicates monaural / binaural beats induce a specific brainwave state in human participants.

No significant change in human EEG readings were found when using binaural beats to induce a theta brain state. Many applications and software continue to be sold by companies such as Centerpointe Research Institute and their customers stand by the product’s results. No evidence supporting their claims has yet been found.

### **Isochronic tones:**



"Isochronic tones are evenly spaced tones which turn on and off quickly." Unlike binaural and monaural beats, isochronic tones do not rely on the combination of two tones – the "beat" is created manually by turning a tone on and off. Widely regarded as the most effective tone-based method, isochronic beats produce very strong cortical responses in the brain. Many people who do not respond well to binaural beats often respond very well to isochronic tones. Isochronic tones are most effective using headphones.

**Isochronic tones** are regular beats of a single [tone](#) used for brainwave entrainment. Similar to monaural beats, the interference

pattern that produces the [beat](#) is outside the brain so headphones are not required for entrainment to be effective. They differ from monaural beats, which are constant [sine wave](#) pulses rather than entirely separate pulses of a single tone. As the contrast between noise and silence is more pronounced than the constant pulses of monaural beats, the stimulus is stronger and has a greater effect on brain entrainment.

Isochronic tones work by emitting sound at regular intervals. This excites the thalamus and causes the brain to duplicate the frequency of the Isochronic tones, changing its thought patterns.

**Notes: Music Modulation / Audio Filtering:**

Modulating sound is a way to produce brainwave entrainment using something as complex as a musical track. In effect, this is "embedding" brainwave entrainment into the audio. Any sound can be used, from nature sounds to white noise to a full classical symphony.

Modulation works by rhythmically adjusting a component in the sound. For example, volume modulation would be used to increase and decreases the volume to create the rhythmic stimulus necessary for entrainment to occur.

The problem with modulation (*above*) is that it can often distort the audio, particularly when used with music or certain nature sounds like rain. Frequency band selection solves this problem by selectively modulating certain parts of an audio file, instead of the whole of it.

The brainwave entrainment is embedded into a lower frequency range only – affecting parts of the bass, but leaving the mid and treble alone. Frequency band selection can be used to affect only one part of a sound file. Multiple frequency bands can also be selected.

Frequency band selection is an important advancement, allowing entrainment to be embedded into any sound file with virtually no negative effect on the existing audio. Because it allows for much higher intensity levels, the effectiveness of the session is actually increased.

**ADDENDUM 2: - on SBB Coils:**

<http://www.loohan.com/coilinfo.htm>

In the beginning, there was the **SBB coil** introduced by Don Croft. One end is turned up 1/8" and the other down. Don introduced it for a specific device, the Saint Busters Button (*a therapeutic HHG*), but human nature being what it is, soon people started adding them to HHGs, CBs, and various offshoot devices. The coils seemed to considerably increase the power and range of organite devices. The more the better.

HEAVY SBB COILS  
8 gauge x 26.65"



top 2 direct energy toward viewer;  
bottom one away.

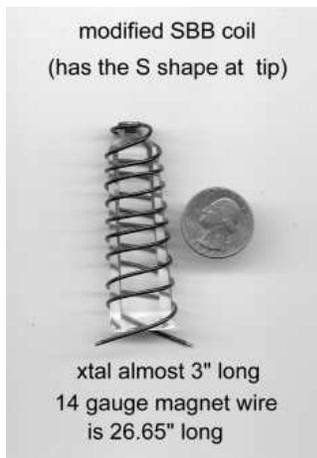
Trouble is, the standard SBB coils strongly direct energy one way. This is not always desirable. Sometimes it is. Someone (*Jim Wright?*) discovered that if you bend both ends the same direction, the energy really shoots that way even more. Especially if the direction of rotation agrees. I have done this in wands and other devices when I really want a forward push.

Then one day, I noticed that if you neglect to bend the wire tips at all, the energy is much more dispersed; a lot more radiates laterally. There is still some predominance in the rotation-defined direction, but not so much. This was a big breakthrough for many applications.

Along about this time, more crucial breakthroughs were made by Catmagnet. She pulled an SBB coil out of its flat plane into a cone shape. This markedly increased its power. This became known as the **catmagnet coil**, or **cat coil** for short.

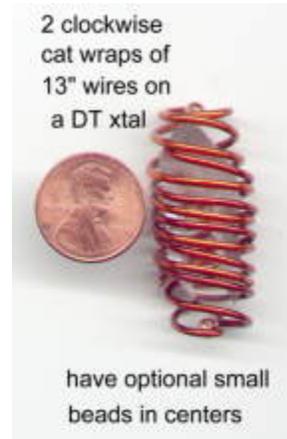
So we started making TBs with coils like this, with ends unbent. They didn't need to be pulled into much of a cone; even a slight dome shape gave a good effect. Then she started putting 2 coils on each end of her TBs, slightly overlapping. When these coils overlap somewhat, the synergy is much greater than when placed side-by-side or concentrically. There doesn't appear to be a point of diminishing returns as to how many of these you can overlap to great benefit. She has made some with 4 on each end, and reports that they are very effective at a good distance.

*(Note: I made one with 3 at each end, and it still wasn't as good as my Big Secret + Apache tears TBs. I suspect the BS/Apache may be roughly equivalent to a TB with 7 or 8 cats used this way.)*



*(Note: I haven't used overlapping, offset coils in months. For fancy TBs, I now prefer to spend my time making a single 17" double-stranded Jerrified cat coil, as described below. Or maybe a double-stranded Big Secret coil. For most TBs I now use a 17" cat coil of single strand 10 gauge insulated house wire.)*

Also, I tried wrapping a crystal with this coil. I think it is better than a caduceus coil, energized or passive. The pic shows the wire ends splayed outward so I can touch them to the Terminator (*frequency zapper*) terminals. *(Caution: I do not know if it is safe to run this on a Terminator for any length of time without a resistor added to the circuit.)* However, for passive use I would spiral the ends back inward under the base of the crystal or TB, or leave them wrapped around the crystal or other object (*like my big central CB pipe, or a cylindrical HHG*). Or even turn the tips upward to direct more energy in that direction.



One can also wrap a crystal with two of these coils. I make them on a round shaft. *(Neoprene tubing from an auto parts store works real well if you put a metal rod or tube inside. A tube holds any bead you may use in the center; or you can just have the hose stick out a bit further than the rod. Also, a pen or pencil with some duct tape wrapped around it works pretty well. Incidentally, this is also the best implement I know of for making Big Secret coils.)* And I sort of screw them onto the crystal.

See Bruce Stenulson's [improved version](#) of a strongly unidirectional flat coil of this type. He posted about this on a thread on the Tech Talk forum, and someone else posted about this pic of a crop circle (which I stole from [this site](#) which has a larger version of the pic). I don't know whether Bruce did this coil prior to seeing Don's. I don't know where Bruce gets his ideas; space aliens, maybe.



Copper beads are a real hassle to bend coils around, unless your wire is very thin and malleable, or you jerrify the coil (see below). Also the ones I bought were not cheap, despite being hollow. Nonetheless, these coils are worth making for higher-end units.

I have significantly improved the energy of a cat coil merely by including one bead in the center. (And incidentally, inside the center of even a regular cat coil is a great place to place stones, notably topaz. In fact, about anything in the very center can improve the energy, like a piece of thin metal tape used for stained glass, or a tiny piece of silver wire wrapped around the center. See especially the "cookie coil" described below.)

One odd thing about Bruce's coil, is that when you bend the ends inward, as shown on his site, it reverses the flow direction. A coil that is clockwise from the outside in facing you is now pushing energy very much away from you. One can do this to a coil with 0, 1, or 3 beads.

If, instead of bending the ends of the coil inward as Bruce does, you instead bend them outwards [as Ryan McGinty does](#), then they also have the same reversed direction. I.e., Ryan's labelling of his coils is correct.

A coil made like the crop circle (I used a little dab of silicone glue to hold the beads in place on the one pictured, which happens also to have smaller beads on the tips) radiates pretty evenly in all directions, "catted" or not.



crop coil

Well, actually, if you cut them severely (as in a crystal wrap) there will be more energy driven in the rotation-defined direction.

[~ here's how to make the center of an SBB-type coil](#)

One can stack these various different types of coils concentrically going in opposite rotations but the same energy direction (or no particular direction in the last case) for an interesting synergy. One can also stack cat coils of the same type but opposite rotation atop one another, but a better way to do that is probably in the form of a [loohan coil](#).

(Note: I don't simply stack cat coils any more for two reasons: closely-stacked coils interferes with evenly loading metal shavings, resulting in large pockets of resin without metal in them. And, it is better to connect the coils at the centers with a wire, leaving some space between them, as is described under Cookie Coil below.)

The Stenulized Loohan Cat Coil: I made a loohan coil in the "double-terminated" shape with 4 copper beads; 2 in the centers, one precariously holding the ends together, and one opposite that one. Put it horizontally nestled in a Big Secret coil that fits around the top of an HHG, on the outside. There seems to be a remarkable synergy. Plus it looks like a cool, esoteric transmitter of some sort. I

suspect that an HHG with this "emitter array" on it becomes a much more capable device, although very vulnerable to physical damage.

What's also interesting is putting beads near the ends

of Big Secret coils. Someday I need to try this stuff with beads of hematite or other stones. Too bad topaz beads are so expensive.

this coil pushes energy both up & down:



ends must touch

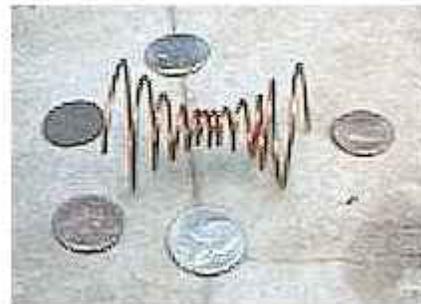
step 3: draw the entire thing out into a cone à la catmagnet

The **Loohan Coil**: Anyway, back when I found out about the cat coil, I went and made a continuous-loop double one. Or loohan coil for short. I have made them with both centers pulled in the same direction, but one can also pull them apart, as depicted below. The ends need to be held connected somehow. I suppose one could solder them. I take a piece of aluminum tape from the hardware store and tape the ends together, then put a strip of silvered copper tape over the junction point for better energy, and cover it all with copper tape. [How to make one of these babies.](#)



Note that this coil appears vulnerable to some "shorting out" if bare wire is used. This might also be true of overlapping cat coils. I normally use magnet wire, which has a very thin enamel coat, if I'm planning to use them in orgonite with shavings. The ones depicted above are stand-alone coils of heavy bare wire.

Big Secret Coil



this one fits 3oz Dixie cup

### [What is the Big Secret?](#)

This is one of my favourite coils. Just from an energy standpoint; I don't know about some of those wild experiences some people have.

For one thing, a mini-BS complete with a crystal acts as a Reiki amplifier: if you hold it a few inches above a chakra, and hold a radiant palm a few inches above the coil, if you can feel energy, you will notice something. Even just pointing the end that corresponds with the dominant energy direction of the crystal at yourself gives a shot of good energy.

This device is also described at [this site](#) thusly: "Van Doren claims that another equally effective device is a simple coil of copper wire wound in a clockwise direction with a funnel configuration at both ends.

## **Humus - Bar Far, The Most Valuable Commodity on this Planet:**

### **Natural Health & Nutrition:**

The information in this section was in part graciously provided by the founders of "Super Organics™ Natural" food production and marketing methods and offers a full explanation of what Natural Foods really are. For another great information source on related topics, you might visit the "**Soil and Health Library**", found at: <http://www.soilandhealth.org/index.html>

In our modern world, we are even NOW, living in the nutritional "famine" that Yahweh promised mankind would suffer, as an aspect of His punishment for universal disobedience!

Natural Agriculture is a complete ecological production management system that fully utilises nature's biodiversity, naturally occurring biological cycles and soil biological activity.

It is premised on the use of natural soil management, and on management practices that restore, maintain and enhance natural ecological harmony, as well as facilitating the use of natural off-farm inputs to nurture harmonious interaction with our urban markets.

### **Natural Health and Nutrition Education:**

To begin with, we must all do our best to enjoy proper physical health. Natural production methods recognize the natural Nutrient Ratio Regulators ("NRR") found in all plants to ensure that Nature's perfect balance of nutrients is both complete, and intact. All plants grown using Natural production methods are found to be 100% nutritionally complete with an exceptionally high resistance to traditional 'pestilence'.

In turn, these totally balanced, nutritionally complete, disease free plants are a direct cause of nutritional wholeness, and disease resistance in both the animals and humans that consume them.

Traditional organic food production methods have helped us to remove chemical and other contaminants from our food, but have done little if anything to ensure a proper balance of macro, micro and trace nutrients within those same food products. Research proves that traditional and most organic production methods can cause a serious 'tricking' effect on the NRR operating in plants.

This tricking of the NRR results in a serious imbalance of nutrients by distorting the natural ratios within the plants' makeup. These nutrient imbalances within the plant are the direct cause of plant disease and plant susceptibility to pests (*moulds, fungi, bacteria, insects, etc.*). In turn, these imbalanced, deficient and diseased plants are the direct cause of nutritional deficiencies and disease in both the animals and humans that consume them.

When man 'fertilizes' his plants, by adding two or three macro components such as nitrogen, phosphate or potassium to his soil, whether in chemical or 'organic' form, man immediately causes a serious imbalance in the available nutrient balance in that soil.

Research proves that when such an imbalance in the soil nutrients available for plant uptake occurs, that there is a universal 'tricking' of the NRR within all of the plants grown on that soil.

This traditional or even the conventional organic method of fertilizing is basically an 'artificial stimulation' of the plants' NRR. Even 'certified organic' fertilizers can act as artificial stimulants because they are often typically a combination of the same three macro nutrients used by conventional farmers.

Naturally occurring plant nutrients in soil are made up of hundreds and thousands of macro, micro and trace elements including a myriad of enzymes, all of which work in an harmoniously balanced ratio and mutually

interdependent manner to support healthy plants.

The temptation to add these macro component style fertilizers is overwhelming due to the increased plant yields that it will cause. Such fertilization has for many years proven to dramatically increase yields and in many cases, even improve the 'appearance' of plants grown. Recent nutrient analysis methods have also proven that these increased yielding plants suffer from serious nutrient deficiencies and imbalances due to their NRR having been tricked by the macro component fertilizers.

What has been produced is 'hollow' food, with too much emphasis placed on the 'size and appearance' while not giving due consideration to the nutritional 'substance' of this food.

What constitutes Natural production methods? Only Nature is capable of properly regulating itself. This is vitally true within the makeup of all plants. Natural production methods are beyond simple organic farming.

All artificial stimulation of plant growth is eliminated with Natural production, and the plants' NRR are allowed to regulate their growth function naturally.

Only 100% natural humus components and/or naturally 'digested' organic wastes can be added to soil without compromising Natural production methods.

Nothing can be done to 'stimulate' plant growth aside from the building up of naturally healthy, humus rich, living soil, as evidenced by the workings of Nature itself.

### **Humus in Soils Managed Naturally:**

*Selman Waxman*, one of the world's foremost microbiologists, stated: "The importance of humus in the human economy seldom receives sufficient emphasis. Suffice it to say, that it probably represents the most important source of wealth on this planet!"

*Sir Albert Howard (Knighted for his work in organic agriculture)*, wrote: "Nature [*Yahweh*] has provided a marvellous piece of machinery of conferring disease resistance on the crop [*and on livestock and people that consume it*]. This machinery is only active in soil naturally rich in humus; it is inactive or absent in infertile land and in similar humus-rich soils fertilized with chemicals...I have several times seen healthy, well fed animals [*or people*], on diets grown on naturally fertile and humus-rich soil react to exposure to disease exactly as suitable varieties of crops, when properly grown, did to insect and fungus pests - no infections took place [*even when deliberate contamination of soils, plants and animals was attempted*]. Nothing was done in the way of disease prevention beyond good natural farming methods and the building up of a fertile, humus-rich soil."

Extensive research conducted by world-renowned experts, has proven unequivocally, that only those plants grown on naturally humus rich soil, without any artificial stimulation will produce a naturally disease free, totally nutritionally balanced food.

Roughly speaking, there are some sixty to seventy known macro-elements in healthy soil, plus some several thousand micro and trace elements. These nutrients are derived solely from the activities of microbial soil life that cause the decay and breakdown of dead and dying vegetation - humus. Soil types, climate, historical land use and naturally occurring plant, animal, soil insects, and soil macro and micro-organisms, all play a part in this array of soil nutrition - humus.

Soil nutrients from this humus are available and identifiable in all soils in varying quantities; however, by necessity of design, that proportion of these nutrients that can be utilized by plants, must all be in a very precise ratio of freely available form, for intake by these plants.

Add or remove 40% of any one of the macro or micro-nutrients and you will find that the plants grown will naturally regulate their growth by about 40% of what they would have been if the element was not added or removed. In other words, the limiting factor to naturally regulated, healthy plant growth, is the plant's own internal measurement (*NRR*) of the least available nutrient within the total spectrum of nutrients found in the soil that are required for that plant.

Man has discovered that by adding three basic fertilizer components; the macro-elements of nitrogen, phosphate and potassium, he can often double and triple plant growth and crop yield.

What man has concurrently failed to appreciate however, is that in so doing, the plants' *NRR* have been tricked by this artificial stimulation, and the resulting plants are seriously deficient in most every other macro-nutrient and almost every micro or trace element by volume; the very things necessary to provide properly nutritionally balanced food.

These deficient plants are also very susceptible to disease. Animals that eat these plants are also very susceptible to disease because they do not have the nutritionally balanced intake of macro and micro-elements to resist disease. Humans that eat these plants or these animals are likewise deficient in their nutritional intake and susceptible to disease.

Long term financially viable agriculture, purposefully designed to enable self-sufficiency, together with good, natural farming practices are tantamount to the improved disease resistance and sustainable health of our citizens. Even most farmers do not recognize the overwhelming significance of the forgoing statements.

Most urban North Americans either do not know or do not care that the fundamental driving force for the health and wealth of our nations is our farmers and their farming

methods. They also are not generally aware that in the past two decades, the prices received by farmers for most of their agricultural produce have dropped by about forty to sixty percent, whereas the costs of almost every aspect of production have risen by well over two hundred and twenty per cent!

During this period, "consumer" demand for "cheap" food has forced the farmer to find ways to become more "efficient" in order to survive. As a result, there has been a corresponding increase in the use of chemical and organic macro-component fertilizers to increase plant yield, herbicides and insecticides to protect the imbalanced and fragile plants, growth hormones and genetic engineering to increase production volumes of animals and plants, and massive amounts of antibiotics and pharmaceuticals to protect the imbalanced and fragile animals.

"Quantities" of production have indeed increased. "Quality" however, has decreased in direct proportion to the decrease in our overall physical health (*as evidenced by statistical increases in numbers and severity of new diseases and disease epidemics in developed countries*), both of which are also in direct proportion to, and in perfect co-incidental timing with the increase in our immense health care costs, as borne out by current statistical data.

Our plants, our animals and our people are all suffering from nutrition deficiency diseases simply because there is no naturally balanced humus rich soil left to support them. Many would like to believe that eating only "organic" food is the answer. Others feel that by relying on "health-food supplements"; herbs, vitamins and minerals, that they will be healthy and disease resistant.

Again, statistical data proves they are wrong! Infectious diseases including common colds and influenzas have increased across the board, with no significant difference in

frequency in those segments that regularly consume vast amounts of these supplements. Sadly, almost 97% of all organic food grown for the herbal, vitamin and mineral supplements, has also been grown under conditions where the NRR has been artificially stimulated (*tricked*) with the three macro-nutrient fertilizer components of nitrogen, phosphate and potassium.

This unnaturally growth-regulated organic food, including most of what is produced for our herbal and vitamin supplement market, is all devastatingly nutritionally deficient, imbalanced in its nutrient make-up and disease promoting just like the other commercial foods. We are unhealthy and ailing from the ground up!

## Clean & Unclean Foods:

On Biblical topics such as clean and unclean meats, the issue is not what we or any other group may profess to believe, rather it is purely and simply, "what does the Bible say on the matter".

Without getting into an exhaustive review of the many passages that use the same words and or similar contextual phrases as when referring to unclean or clean foods, it is reasonably easy to deduce that the English terms "clean" and "unclean", might more correctly reflect the intent of the original Hebrew language if they were replaced with **disease inhibiting** and **disease promoting**.

For example, it was deemed to be disease inhibiting if certain illnesses were in part, treated by quarantining victims. The same Hebrew terminology may be used to express this, but it would not make as much sense to state in English that quarantining the victims would be a "clean" act, although it did/does serve to "cleanse" the affected population.

When taken in the context that Yahweh has deemed the various foods to be either "disease inhibiting", or "disease promoting", the matter tends to become clearer, than when read as clean or unclean. We find no evidence that anything has happened either naturally, or by Yahweh's intervention, that could in any way have caused any changes to the disease inhibiting or disease promoting qualities of the various foods since Yahweh inspired the original words on the matter. Thus it stands that these various foods remain either disease inhibiting, or disease promoting to this day.

This is not entirely difficult to appreciate, inasmuch as we are all generally aware that some foods are considered "healthier" than others. Further, when taken to the scientific extreme, a great deal of research by secular scientists has inadvertently proven the matter. With regard to swine for example, science has finally "proven" the reason it is

deemed "unclean", or disease promoting as Yahweh decreed. In writing "*Study of Blood in Cancer*", O.C. Gruner, a world renowned cancer researcher, stated: "**a meal which features pork will produce a microscopic blood picture [of cancer micro-organisms] indistinguishable from a cancer patient, though of course, normality appears to reappear after eight or nine hours**".

Seems to be a pretty clear cut reason for staying away from pork. In short, Gruner's study established beyond any doubt that eating a meal containing normal portions of pork causes short term cancer, which if repeated often enough, leads to long term or terminal cancer. Thus it could be expressed that "pork is disease promoting", or "unclean" according to Biblical terminology.

Although similar research has established the presence of carcinogens and or many disease promoting qualities of other "unclean" foods such as shell fish, non-ruminant mammals, unscaled fish etc., modern science also has many devious ways to present information that supports its "sponsors". "Money"; the driving force behind most of our agricultural and food industry, fairly well dictates what we eat, regardless of whether it is known by the scientific community to be good for us or not.

The quick answer to the issue of clean and unclean foods, is that we believe the Bible says that certain foods are indeed **disease promoting** and certain other foods are **disease inhibiting**, and we believe that these statements were made for the very good reason of providing us with sound advice on maintaining our good health. We also believe that they apply today just as much as when they were originally penned, and we find it interesting that modern science has finally proven the truth regarding some of these Biblical issues surrounding clean and unclean foods.

## Managing the Life on this Planet

### From the Ground Up:

To help us avoid being further deluded by Satan's temptations of SELF-CENTEREDNESS, Isaiah reminds us: "But now, O Yahweh, thou art our father; we are the clay, and thou our potter; and we all are the work of thy hand" (64:8).

Try to see ourselves and our planet as Yahweh does. Imagine looking down from outer space, seeing nearly 6 billion little human creatures orbiting on this tiny "ping-pong ball", spinning like a gyro at over 1,000 miles per hour, circling a giant ball of fire at precisely one revolution per year.

The sun - our energy source, keeps us warm and produces our food. Yet unlike man's efforts, there is no "energy crisis" in this relationship. If there were, it would be fatal to all life forms! If this little sphere of ours, wandered ever-so-slightly off course, we would either be frozen to death, or fried to a crisp by the sun's white-hot inferno of flames that leap out hundreds of thousands of miles in every direction!

Further out into space, our planet would appear as no more than a pin-point of reflected light in the heavens. Have we ever asked ourselves what causes these countless billions of celestial bodies to stay in place relative to each other and to the rest of the universe? Is it likely that such astronomic precision continues to function smoothly of its own accord? These are interesting and challenging questions to those with an open mind.

Where did planet earth come from? Is it just a coincidence that it exists, and another, that it perfectly matches and supplies the needs of every living species? The oddest phenomenon of all - life; in multiple forms, some plant, some animal, all living together under the daytime energy of just one distant ball of fire!

It is truly amazing that all life exists, reproduces and dies - without any input from man! Yet myriads of life forms do exist, or rather, co-exist - live, grow, reproduce, die and decompose to perpetuate the cycle. All in one miraculously conceived and fantastically complex symbiotic relationship! Literally hundreds of thousands of mutually INTERDEPENDENT, mutually beneficial life forms exist. There is NO WAY these life forms could have survived, had their original existence or their respective development been delayed for days or weeks, let alone millions of years!

These marvels are beyond man's comprehension, yet millions never even raise their heads to question them, or their own improvable "theory" of evolution, or to ponder the magnificence of our planet, the infinity of the universe, or the wonder of how it all continues to function without man - and to a considerable extent, in spite of man!

This vast delicate balance is something over which puny little man has absolutely NO control whatsoever - which is just as well, judging by our performance in other areas! But by a combination of intellectual arrogance, ignorance, and REBELLION THROUGH DECEIT (*of Satan*), man has formulated the crazy belief that all of the orderliness and precision of the planets, the galaxies - the universe and its very existence "just happened"!

To support the anti-God theory of evolution, one must first ignore Darwin's recanting of his own theory, plus overlook the fact that "scientific evolutionists" themselves, toss figures around that vary by tens of millions of years! So much for their ridicule of Creation, and their claim to be scientific! Their "theory" (*which they admit is not provable - but that we should merely "accept it"*) is full of holes, and to believe it is an act of UNPARALLELED BLIND FAITH!

This is the ultimate insult to the Potter from the clay! But then clay is not all that intelligent! (*And obviously, very easily deceived!*) And we are, in our present form, nothing more than “clay”, “formed...of the dust of the ground” (*Gen. 2:7!*)

Notice Isaiah’s dramatic contrast between Yahweh and man: “To whom then will ye liken Yahweh...It is He that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and its inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers ...Behold, the nations are as a drop in the bucket, and counted as the small DUST of the balance...All nations before Him are as nothing” (*40:18,22;15,17*).

This is true, but Yahweh is still very mindful of man, whom He made in His own image and for a very special purpose! As part of His plan, He tells us, “The heaven, even the heavens, are Yahweh’s: but the earth hath He given to the children of men” (*Ps. 115:16*).

But in his rebellion, man refuses to believe this, and does not want to be responsible to anyone but himself!

As viewed from space, man and every “little” thing that he has created, are as nothing when compared to the celestial wonders, the earthly clouds, the snow, the rain, the mountains, animals, forests and farmlands GIVEN to us by Yahweh!

Yahweh also GAVE us dominion over every living thing on this planet! With instructions on how to manage it! In his ignorance, carnal-minded man has rebelled against every Word of Yahweh! And what has this rebellion produced? How about starting with millions of acres of man-made deserts, smog-laden cities, towns, traffic jams; air, water and soil pollution; crime, violence, sickness, disease and war, not to mention millions of starving people every year, or thousands of extinct animal and plant species!

Do we believe Yahweh, when He says: “There is a way which seems right to a man, but its end is the way of death”, or that man is,

“ever learning [his own wisdom], and never able to come to the truth [*of Yahweh’s wisdom*]” (*Prov. 14:12;16:25; 2 Tim. 3:7*). Science fulfills these proverbs. It has systematically ridiculed and resisted the existence of Yahweh and His role as Designer, Creator and Sustainer of the creation - the universe. It has therefore placed human intelligence ahead of what Yahweh teaches, based on its own experimentation. It usually looks good, but being based on human reasoning, will invariably come unstuck, as it fails to take Yahweh’s REVEALED KNOWLEDGE into consideration.

THIS IS THE CAUSE OF ALL OF OUR CURRENT SOCIO-ECONOMIC PROBLEMS! Let’s look at this from the perspective of modern farming practices, as an example. Albeit farming represents a simple industry, it nonetheless plays vital economic and provisional roles for everyone in our society. And as I personally have a background in farming, it makes the many points of interest easier for me to relate.

Each of us has been born into this complex living environment. We had no choice. At the same time, we do have a Yahweh-given responsibility to manage it. We were given “dominion” over it, with instructions to “dress it and to keep it” (*Gen. 2:15*). This is for our own benefit, and more importantly, for the ultimate good of future generations.

This is where the SELF-CENTEREDNESS of Satan’s influence has come into play. Does mankind really care about future generations, or just his own survival? A general analysis of the demands we regularly make on the environment should answer the question! We are the most materialistic, greed-filled generation in human history. And ironically, through scientific and technological “progress”, we have developed the greatest all-time capacity for destruction - of anything and everything!

Scientists and the vested interests that bankroll their experimentation, justify their agro-chemical based system by claiming they successfully feed much of mankind. The industry does feed much of the world, but that does not mean they are doing it “successfully”. Are scientists loving their neighbour when they are helping to destroy the environment, genetically manipulating plants and animals and harming our own health?

As a farmer, are we loving our neighbour, if we grow food simply out of motivation for money - regardless of nutritional value? What if we operate a tractor mounted boom sprayer, polluting the food crops we grow with chemicals so poisonous that we ourselves wear protective “spacesuits”? What if we feed our livestock great varieties of toxic growth hormones, antibiotics and other chemicals?

As a food processor, are we loving our neighbour, if we refine the nutrients out of otherwise healthy, nutritional foodstuffs? How about when we chemically treat it with unwanted and unwarranted preservatives for so-called extra shelf-life, or if we chemically alter the food with all kinds of deadly, flavour enhancing additives and carcinogenic coloring and modifying agents?

As a food distributor, are we loving our neighbour when we promote or sell nutrition less food that has been contaminated with doubtful chemical residues and/or deliberately adulterated with chemical enhancing agents known to be harmful?

As a consumer, are we loving our neighbour, or our family, or our guests, when for the sake of saving a few dollars, we knowingly purchase and serve this tasteless, intensively advertised, unnecessarily refined, overly processed, chemically treated, factory manufactured “food”?

Are we loving our neighbour, if we are involved in the highly profitable area of research into finding the “ever-newer and

better” methods to grow crops, or raise livestock, or to manufacture harmful agro-chemicals or food additives?

Are we loving our neighbour, if we are involved at any level in the gigantic medical, veterinary, pharmaceutical, or agro-chemical industries, that perpetuate their very own existence by treating symptoms and effects, rather than the causes of problems - even if, and when this is known to produce far worse problems?

Are we loving our neighbour, if we are investing in shares, or work for any company, bank or financial institution that lends to, or promotes any level of these activities?

The point behind all of these examples is not to condemn everyone, but to demonstrate that everyone, either directly or indirectly, is involved in this system. We all play our part whether we like it or not. Certain things we can avoid, but we cannot deny that the entire system, from the top to the bottom, has been corrupted by Satan! It is full of greed and selfish motives, with little if any, genuine concern for the health and welfare of others.

Modern agriculture has historically proven to be the single greatest negative factor on damage to the earth’s environment, mostly within the last 40 or so years. In this century we have seen the development and expansion of giant agro-chemical/food distribution companies around the world. Their phenomenal growth and huge amounts of investment capital have resulted in their effective monopolizing of mankind’s food supply, and its production methodology.

These companies control seed and livestock breeding programs, together with chemical pesticide and feed supplements, that are all intricately and inseparably linked, in a fashion that allows them to create and capitalize on a totally artificial supply/demand feature. This in itself, should almost be sufficient warning! We must begin to realize

that it is WRONG for ANY company to totally control access to whole seed varieties, and then sell them only to farmers willing to utilize that same company's system of chemical fertilizers and pesticide controls! This happens in most every facet of our modern farming arena!

Our food producers - our farmers and their families, have been driven from their land and way of life on a scale never previously thought possible! Modern farming has proven to be a "treadmill" where one has to run faster and faster to maintain an even position. Millions who could not stand the pace, lost their farms and their way of life. The few that remain, have completely lost control of their own industry and their financial independence. They have become bondservants to the various agri-business corporations and money lenders, owing total dependence on suppliers of hybrid seed and breeding stock; on manufacturers of fertilizers, herbicides, fungicides, pesticides, heavy equipment, pharmaceutical and other supplies.

Such dramatic social and environmental upheaval has not occurred since the Industrial Revolution! What man did not foresee in this "industrialization" of farming, was the impact on our soil, plant and animal species, forests, rivers, oceans, underground water sources, the atmosphere, our physical health and our social well-being. Even city-dwelling consumers, who at first welcomed the "cheap" food, have recognized its futility, when compared to our recent spiralling health care problems and related costs.

Some might argue that we actually "need" certain aspects of these so-called modern farming practices, but this comes only from the minds of those that desire to perpetuate this myth for their own selfish greed and/or the need to bolster their own self-inflated "scientific" ego. It is absolutely not

based on any credible facts, and as we will see later, is very easily disproved.

Yahweh says through the apostle John, "Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth...I have no greater joy than to hear My children walk in truth" (3 John 2,4).

Yahweh's wishes, and His warnings have been habitually ignored: "Trust in Yahweh with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths. Be not wise in thine own eyes" (Prov. 3:5-7).

In exercising his "dominion" over this planet, man has never consistently followed Yahweh's simple instructions on how to "dress it and to keep it". When Yahweh gave these simple instructions, the earth was an example of a perfect environment with great potential for development. We were to "keep" it, which means, to guard, protect or to preserve it. Instead, we have robbed, plundered, exploited and fought to try and conquer it!

Most people have little, if any real idea, why it is so important that we "dress and keep" our environment. It goes far beyond the simple aspect of sustenance.

Why has so much of man's activity been centered around farming; around animals, crops, gardens, orchards, fishing and so on? Why a support system with all these food sources totally dependent on water, healthy soil, sunshine and a symbiotic relationship with insects, earthworms, and micro-organic life? Why not something simpler?

Consider bread, long regarded as a staple of life. Its production and use, involves soil tillage, seed planting, weeding, a year's delay between harvests, threshing, cleaning, storage, milling, marketing, kneading, baking, packaging, distribution, retailing and finally, eating! As all things are possible with Yahweh, surely a continuously bearing "bread" tree would be simpler and much more efficient!

Come to think of it, Yahweh could have pre-fuelled us for life - sort of like a nuclear reactor!

Careful analysis of Yahweh's plan for man and His system of food production REVEALS several major reasons for its design, aside from sustenance. These reasons all tie in with building a righteous, holy, perfect character within ourselves.

The first, and most obvious, is to create in man, the AWARENESS of a Creator God! "For the invisible things of Him [Yahweh] FROM THE CREATION OF THE WORLD ARE CLEARLY SEEN, being understood by the things that are made" (*Rom. 1:20*). Though man shows little consciousness of it, everything in the creation around us reflects the incomparable mind of Yahweh! Its fathomless complexity on the one hand and its dumbfounding simplicity on the other, make this planet an ecological masterpiece. It should impress on every human, the glory, power and majesty of Yahweh.

Secondly, is to create in man, an awareness of our DEPENDENCE on Yahweh and the environment! The necessity of maintaining the environment by which all life is sustained is meant to help us understand and appreciate our dependence on it and on Yahweh. Man needs a constant reminder of who really is in charge of things! Complete dependence on Yahweh and His laws has always been the key to joy, harmony and the abundant life Yahweh wants for all of us.

Thirdly, is to provide evidence of this most grand Creator, that would instill in man an inherent appreciation of the "laws of nature", and desire to be OBEDIENT to their Creator! Obedience is the key to receiving every blessing promised by Yahweh. Our natural desire to receive these blessings is bolstered by our witness to the evidence of Yahweh's laws of nature, and to Yahweh Himself.

Fourthly, is to provide OPPORTUNITIES for teaching, learning, sharing and growing in

relationships with friends and families. "Farming", was originally given to us as Yahweh's most honoured profession. It is a means of occupation, requiring vast amounts of time and cooperation by families and entire communities. It was essential, and thereby could not be ignored.

The systematic production of food, maintains our AWARENESS of the source of our food, requiring a fundamental understanding of the very creation itself, which in turn, reminds us of our DEPENDENCE on the Creator, leading us to OBEDIENCE to the laws of creation, which we understand will provide us OPPORTUNITIES, leading again to AWARENESS, and so on.

A fifth, and somewhat more subtle, but no less significant reason why Yahweh made our system of food production the way He did, is to humble us before our Creator. Yahweh knew, that we, like Satan, would be seduced by SELF-CENTEREDNESS and over-inflated egos. He knew that we would desire to do it "our way". He therefore made it so utterly impossible to improve upon His system, that we would humbly accept "His way", as being the only way! Unfortunately, many are still out there "banging their heads on the wall", and still have not - and may never in this lifetime, "get it"!

It is after all, most humbling, when you realize that in order to best our Creator, we would literally have to make and sustain life out of dust! "And the Lord Yahweh formed man out of the dust of the ground...and out of the ground...formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air" (*Gen. 2:7,19*).

Elsewhere we read that, "All flesh is grass" (*Isaiah 40:6*). For the purpose of better understanding our Yahweh-given environment, we also need to know that all grass is SOIL! "Grass" is therefore Yahweh's fundamental link between man and the "dust of the ground". And we will go on now, to explain just how

important the farming (*dressing and keeping*) of this “dust” is!

When Satan tempted Adam and Eve to rebel, they were expelled from the garden of Eden, thereby deprived of the fantastic opportunity of living and working with the laws that create and maintain a perfect environment, with its perfect productivity. Yahweh’s curse was to eject them into a hostile environment that would physically plague them with problems for life (*Gen. 3:17-19*)!

They also produced the first murderer. But even before killing his own brother, their son Cain openly rebelled against Yahweh! It involved the type of offerings he made to Yahweh. Yahweh’s rejection of Cain’s offerings lies in the absence of animals!

Cain could not accept Yahweh’s rejection of his offering, so he “got back”, so to speak, by striking a death-blow to his blessed brother. He was then cursed by Yahweh: (*Gen. 4:12,13*). The kind of curse was no mere coincidence! As well as being a curse for murder, it underscored Yahweh’s rejection of his offering.

We must realize it is highly significant that his curse and that of his parents, both related directly to PRODUCTIVITY OF SOIL! An offering of fruit, instead of the flock, was man’s second act of rebellion, and has set the pattern until this day. By requiring animal sacrifices, Yahweh forced any OBEDIENT man to maintain an animal breeding program! (*Physical offerings are now obsolete under the New Covenant.*)

It is not just that Yahweh has designated certain animals as fit for human consumption (*see Leviticus 11:1-47*), and others unfit. It is that there are some astonishing fundamental links regarding the healthy maintenance of plants, animals, the soil, and man, within a system of food production that includes animal husbandry, versus one that does not.

This is a classic example of Yahweh not spelling out the consequences of wrong behaviour. Like children, we sometimes have to discover these penalties for ourselves. All we have to do is OBEY - the blessings will follow! We are Yahweh’s children; and as with our own little children, we don’t always feel compelled to spell out all the consequences for disobedience. Sometimes we just say “obey”! If they don’t, they find there are penalties.

We do not yet, even begin to understand the intricacies involved in the delicate balance of nature. We do know that many plant and animal species, as well as soil fertility, and air and water quality, are all somehow inter-dependent. The imbalanced use of soil fertility, crop or animal production, is like a transfer of past capital and of future possibilities to enrich a dishonest present. It is theft!

We do know, that following modern mono-culture farming practices, requiring by their very nature, the use of excessive amounts of chemical fertilizers and pesticides, often resulting in serious soil loss due to erosion, is WRONG!

Just as WRONG as genetically altering plants and animal species! These activities are precisely what our modern agri-business industry is all about!

We should also know that the indiscriminate harvesting of many types of “unclean” shellfish and other seafood, is inextricably linked to the “balance of nature” within our water systems, and is WRONG!

We should also know, that wasting vast amounts of wholesome grain, otherwise fit for consumption by untold tens of millions of undernourished and starving humans, on feeding swine is WRONG!

So is the wasteful feeding of all other types of animals Yahweh has told us are “unclean”, WRONG!

Yahweh did not explain the reasons “why” for all of the points contained in His

instructions, nor for example did He say “why” swine are unclean. In many cases, the explanations are still well beyond our comprehension. We were told simply to OBEY!

With regard to swine for example, science has finally “proven” the reason it is deemed “unclean”! In writing “*Study of Blood in Cancer*”, O.C. Gruner, a renowned cancer researcher, stated: “a meal which features pork will produce a microscopic blood picture [of cancer micro-organisms] indistinguishable from that of a cancer patient, though of course, normality appears to reappear after eight or nine hours”. Seems to be a pretty clear cut reason for staying away from pork!

The Messiah said: “If anyone will DO HIS WILL, he shall KNOW of the doctrine, whether it is of Yahweh” (*John 7:17*). Yes, if we follow all of Yahweh’s instructions, even our own common-sense tells us, that all of our problems would be solved! Certainly, THEN, we would KNOW that the instructions (*doctrine*) are from Yahweh! We may not always know WHY, but if we know its right, does “why” really matter?

The book of Genesis is a beautiful illustration of the love of Yahweh. Several thousand years ago, in their “childlike” appreciation for the story, our ancient forefathers found it EASY TO UNDERSTAND! That’s why Moses chose to write it this way - simple! Yet somehow, with all of our “advanced” education and “progress”, most of modern man just can’t “get it”!

The symbology of the Garden of Eden story is still just as EASY to understand as it ever was - any child can quickly grasp its meaning! It seems that it is time for “adults” to put off their arrogant “know-it-all” attitudes, and re-read this simple story.

“Put off concerning your former conduct, the old man which grows corrupt...and be RENEWED IN THE SPIRIT OF YOUR MIND” (*Ephesians 4:17-24*).

Yahweh placed us in a perfect environment - the earth, with perfect, simple instructions on how to “dress and to keep it [perfect]”! And He GAVE us our own FREE WILL. In other words, if we chose to “DO HIS WILL” - to be OBEDIENT, following HIS instructions on how to “keep” the earth, it would remain a perfect environment, and our DEPENDENCE on it would be perfectly fulfilled.

Conversely, if we chose to be DISOBEDIENT, and manage the earth “our way”, it would AGAIN become an imperfect environment, and our dependence on it could never be totally fulfilled, and we would be plagued with physical problems for life (*Gen. 3:17-19*)!

Yahweh desired us to follow His “farming” instructions for obvious reasons. As food was/is vital to life, it cannot be ignored, and its production was (and should still be) our primary occupation! Farming is loaded with OPPORTUNITIES, from learning to work together, to sharing with one another, to learning to accept our limited understanding and total DEPENDENCE on the creation, which reminds us of the Creator, which reminds us to be OBEDIENT to His laws, in order to be blessed with the OPPORTUNITIES, and so on!

Satan has his own selfish reasons why he wants us to continue to ridicule and resist REVEALED KNOWLEDGE! Satan does not care how many, or which of Yahweh’s laws we break, so long as we do not totally submit to the government of Yahweh! Through SELF-CENTEREDNESS, Satan has deceived us into believing that “we”, actually know better than Yahweh! In this, our societies have universally obeyed Satan, almost without fail!

Yahweh says “My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge...Because you [the dust of the ground] have forgotten the law of your God” (*Hosea 4:6*). Our ancestors obviously

made some wrong choices, which we, unfortunately, stubbornly continue to make!

Yahweh's laws have long been ridiculed by many as "outdated". His environmentally sound management principles have been resisted to the point of nearly bringing this planet to extinction.

THE SELF-EVIDENT TRUTHS REVEALED IN GOD'S LAWS AND INSTRUCTIONS WERE FREELY GIVEN TO US - FOR OUR BENEFIT!

Yahweh FREELY GAVE us instructions on WHAT foods to produce domestically, HOW to produce them, and WHICH foods were "clean" and safe to be eaten, and which were "unclean" - to be left in the wild. (*See parts of Genesis, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Leviticus and specifically Deut. 14 and Lev. 11 for details.*)

These laws and instructions are just one more simple example of how Yahweh's Word is TIMELESS! It applies today, just as it would have thousands of years ago, and just as it will thousands of years from now! We cannot change any of Yahweh's laws, any more than we can change HIS Law of Gravity!

Yahweh's Word can be applied to every occupation, not just farming. Read your Bible with a determination to apply Yahweh's timeless instructions to your lifestyle - without getting all caught up in "why" each of these instructions are meant to apply.

We may eventually understand all of the reasons "why", but for now, DOING GOD'S WILL, will simply prove to be the most rewarding experience any of us could HOPE for!

## Managing the Life on this Planet

### From the Ground Up - Part 2:

"In the beginning was the spoken word, and the words were from Yahweh, and the words were Yahweh's. It was in the beginning from Yahweh. All things were made through Yahweh's word, and without it nothing was made that was made. In Yahweh's word was life, and the life was the light of men" (*John 1:1-4*).

"LIGHT" is the key to life! In the physical, as well as in the spiritual sense. There is a duality to almost all Biblical revelation. The opening verses of the book of John are a perfect example of Biblical duality. In them it is revealed that Yahweh - by His Word, provides us with spiritual "light", to guide us in our understanding of the mysteries of the "Kingdom of Yahweh", and these verses also reveal that physical "light" is the source of "life", in the physical sense.

We are instructed in many places in the Bible, that our physical life is an image of the spiritual life to come. In Hebrews 8:4, when speaking of the physical as compared to the spiritual, we are instructed that the physical is merely "a copy and shadow of the heavenly things".

We are to use our experiences in this "physical" life, coupled with our Yahweh-given instructions in righteousness - to build the righteous, holy character, required for us to be worthy of being called one of the "children of Yahweh", in Yahweh's future "spiritual" Kingdom.

How are we to do this? Ironically, one of the very first instructions given to us by Yahweh, reveals that we were to do this by becoming successful "farmers"! Yahweh took the man (*Adam*), and placed him in the garden to "tend and keep it" (*Gen. 2:15*).

In other words, our physical life, is meant to be a study of our physical environment - the environment that we are to

"tend and keep" in order to produce the food required for our very survival. (*For the "trendy" reader, who may not find it appealing to be labelled as a "farmer", you might say that Yahweh instructed us to be "food producing environmentalists"!*)

Yahweh gave us our physical environment, that we might have a simple and obvious need (*our very survival*) to learn an awareness of, and an obedience to its physical laws. This physical learning process is to be an example, or a "copy and shadow" of the spiritual learning process that we also need to undergo, in order to learn an awareness of, as well as an obedience to Yahweh's spiritual laws, prior to entering His Kingdom.

Yahweh commanded us to manage our environment, and to "replenish the earth" (*Gen. 1:28*), and to have dominion over every living thing that moves upon it! That has been man's responsibility from the beginning. In fact, this environmental management IS OUR LIFE, because it reveals the way we relate to Yahweh and to His physical laws in every area of our human existence! These are physical laws and responsibilities, but they will not be correctly executed by man without spiritual understanding. That spiritual understanding must exist, not just among farmers, but with all humanity and in every generation - if you hope to be in Yahweh's Kingdom!

As a farmer (*sorry - "environmentalist"*), we must first recognize that our survival is totally DEPENDENT ON OUR PHYSICAL ENVIRONMENT. Further, we must recognize that ALL LIFE that exists in our physical environment is totally DEPENDENT ON LIGHT. It becomes obvious, that the vital link in our food chain that is responsible for converting this light into food energy is "soil"! That is why we were first instructed to "tend and keep" the garden - the earth - our environment!

Healthy soil is the most vital link in the food chain. Yet, soil mismanagement has long

been one of man's most fundamental abuses of the environment! We have long since forgotten the importance of our soil in converting the vital light-energy into life-giving food products. This is Yahweh's way of "testing" us in this temporary "physical" life, prior to granting us eternal life in His Kingdom. "All things" physical can be replaced and will be replaced, once Yahweh has finished "proving" the human race on this earth - "And I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away" (Rev. 21:1).

When we speak of our environment, we often refer to what we call the food chain. Our society also has a saying: "a chain is as strong as its weakest link". What then are the links of the food chain and which is the weakest link?

The links are the various parts of the environment involved in human nutrition and therefore human survival. There is only one weak link and that weak link is man! That is why there is only one link being "tested" by Yahweh! MAN IS THE WEAK LINK, because man is the only element of the living physical environment with free moral agency - the freedom to choose his own course of action!

This requires by its very design, that man develops and exercises character in the choices he makes! It allows us to lean to our own understanding, but does not force us to. It offers us the option of following Yahweh's freely given instructions, but again does not force them upon us.

Man, then, by his very nature, is the weakest link. And man, has historically been responsible for managing our environment - from the ground up! This ground, or soil, is the MOST VITAL LINK; it is the key to converting "light" into "life"! So the decisions made by the weakest link - man - have the greatest impact on the most vital and sensitive link - the soil!

Think of soil as the foundation of life. It comes mainly from eroded rocks, and from

humus from the return of dead organic matter, which is broken down by various soil macro and micro-organisms, which in turn support oxygen-giving plants, which support animals, both of which support man - who tends the soil.

Man's abusive soil management decisions have been critical, because they have produced domino effects on all species in the environmental and food chain links - from the ground up! This is why the condition and management of our food-producing soil is so fundamental. Ultimately, it is our health and survival that are being managed - or "mis" managed!

Our health is currently being undermined by agri-business concerns, who, for the sake of money (*dead trees with ink on them*), purport that huge applications of chemical fertilizers and great varieties of chemical pesticides are the answer to our "survival"! Many will agree with these industrial concerns, simply because they have access to more food than in times past.

But this helps to prove, rather than disprove the point, if we consider what nutritional value is in the food.

In almost every group of shops today, at least in the English speaking world, we find one displaying the sign, "health food". Does it ever occur to us that we never see the sign that says, "unhealthy food"? However, people are now slowly coming to suspect that every food shop and supermarket sells what to some extent, should be labelled as "unhealthy food".

If you consider that to be an exaggeration, just stop and ask yourself: What are the main products sold in "health food" stores and why? You know very well their main products are vitamins, minerals and other nutritional supplements. In the last 20 to 30 years they have become a multi-billion dollar industry. Why? What are they supplementing? Shocking as it may sound, they exist to supplement the vitamins, minerals and other

nutrients found ONLY NOW to be missing in the food we buy in the shops next door!

Why? Partly because of processed foods, but mainly because the plants and animals from which the food is derived, are themselves deficient. Why are the plants and animals deficient? Partly because many of them have been genetically manipulated (a topic which deserves a chapter unto itself), but mainly because the soil on which they were raised did not adequately supply their nutritional needs.

Why does the soil no longer provide these nutritional needs? Because of man's arrogant abuse of the soil! Wrong farming methods (*poor environmental management*), has reduced the soil's ability to supply proper plant nutrition. Loss of soil fertility has resulted in lower yields and increased plant diseases. Soil fertility can easily be replenished naturally, using Biblical principles of crop rotation - alternating cereals, legumes, and others, together with grazing and fallow (rest) practices. However, this natural process, is time-consuming and in consideration of large, industrial-scale farming operations, not entirely economically viable.

For these agro-chemical based companies, the solution has been obvious - apply artificial chemical fertilizers and pesticide controls! The "quick-fix"! These artificial means do perform. The "farmer" can see it before his very eyes. They dramatically increase his yields, especially on soil that has been badly depleted. What they don't see, is that the two or three nutrient components of the fertilizer chemicals added (that appear to cause the increased yield), do not include allowances for the other three or four dozen trace elements, concurrently deficient in that same soil! This results in food that "appears" to be bigger and better, but in reality, it is in itself, deficient in many elements vital to our own complete and balanced nutrition!

The truth is, only nature itself, is capable of fully maintaining its proper balance. Many, especially those with vested interests, hotly deny this and will continue to do so. What they cannot truthfully deny, is the huge increase in nutritional deficiency diseases in plants, animals AND MAN! Neither can they truthfully deny the rapid expansion in the western world of feeding protein and mineral supplements to farm animals and sales of vitamins, minerals and other supplements to humans! Nor can they truthfully deny the fact that these trends have taken place in precise proportion to, and in perfect coincidental timing with the increased usage of chemical fertilizers and pesticides!

This is simply another costly example of treating the effects rather than the cause! Small wonder that many of these large agribusinesses are controlled by the same interests that own the fertilizer, pesticide and strangely enough, even many of the vitamin, mineral and nutritional supplement manufacturers! Seeing that "money" is their sole motive, they have succeeded in manipulating our food production, processing and distribution networks in such a manner that they "reap" from every angle!

"World on edge of food crisis", was the headline for an article appearing in the January 17th, 1994 issue of "The Australian". Despite the efforts of our industrial food producing giants, many experts agree that we cannot continue to expect our soils to feed our ever-growing population without major changes in farming methods.

Here are just a few simple thoughts based on Biblical principles, that many of these same experts agree, will one day be absolutely necessary for our survival. We'll start with humus.

Good structure and high fertility of soil always depend on regular and adequate return of organic residues. This is the principle that has been producing the forests of the world for

thousands of years - and it is the same principle that must apply to food production.

In humus, Yahweh has provided a nutritional storehouse within the soil, upon which plants may draw throughout successive generations of crop production. It is the most important of all substances contributing to the fertility of the soil. If it is allowed to become exhausted, the soil will be ruined as a natural medium for plant growth.

Humus; dead organic matter, is a first and vital step in the soil's cycle of life. Earthworms, bacteria and a host of other soil organisms are constantly waiting to spring instantly onto the stage of life. They are ever-ready to jump in and fill any ecological gap in the soil's health, if only man will temporarily remove his grasping hand and FEED THEM!

Soil texture is rapidly improved by these agents of organic decomposition. Water no longer hurries past on the quick journey to the sea. Soil which was impervious becomes porous, while that which was all too porous and prone to leaching, becomes more absorbent. New-found moisture retention ushers in multiple benefits for the wise food producer, making more efficient use of available rain.

Humus-rich soil provides a tremendous breeding ground for multiple life forms. Few of us have any consciousness of the activity beneath our feet, through multiple forms of macro-organisms - earthworms, eelworms, centipedes, millipedes, springtails, spiders, mites, and many other insects, as well as micro-organisms - bacteria, fungi, actinomycetes, algae, and protozoa.

These life-forms are incredible fertilizer "factories". The humble earthworm for example, contributes as nature's aeration expert, with its ceaseless tunnelling within the soil and the resulting annual top-dressing of castings which can range up to 20 tons per acre!

Man on the other hand, really thinks he is accomplishing something when he adds a measly 200 to 500 pounds of fertilizer per acre, usually comprised of roughly equal amounts of nitrate, phosphorous and potassium. This man-made fertilizer is extremely expensive, and not readily available for plant consumption until first exposed to the elements for varying periods of time.

Earthworm castings on the other hand, contain abundant, FREE and readily available plant nutrients! When compared to the surrounding soil, they are over 5 times as rich in nitrogen, 2 times in exchangeable calcium, 3 times in exchangeable magnesium, 7 times in available phosphorous and 11 times in exchangeable potassium, as well as many times richer in a host of other trace elements!

A difficult aspect of the study of soil micro-biology is mentally adjusting to the size and number of organisms concerned. One gram of soil can contain as many as one thousand million bacteria, plus a kilometre of fungal hyphae (*thread*), as well as many hundreds of thousands of protozoa and algae! These soil life-forms occupy relatively little of total soil space, yet proportionately speaking, they affect large areas around them. Studied microbiologists say of them, that it is as if a tree could affect all other plants growing within a kilometre of itself!

Selman Waxman, one of the world's foremost microbiologists, stated: "The importance of humus in the human economy seldom receives sufficient emphasis. Suffice it to say that it probably represents the most important source of wealth on this planet!"

*Sir Albert Howard (knighted for his work on organic agriculture)*, wrote: "Nature [*Yahweh*] has provided a marvellous piece of machinery of conferring disease-resistance on the crop. This machinery is only active in soil rich in humus; it is inactive or absent in infertile

land and in similar [*humus-rich*] soils fertilized with chemicals"!

Elsewhere, he wrote: "I have several times seen my cattle rubbing noses with foot-and-mouth cases. Nothing happened. The healthy, well-fed animals [*on diets grown on NATURALLY FERTILE AND HUMUS-RICH SOIL*] reacted to this disease exactly as suitable varieties of crops, when properly grown, did to insect and fungus pests - no infection took place. Nothing was done in the way of prevention beyond good farming methods and the building up of a fertile soil"!

THE SOIL'S LIVING ORGANIC CONTENT, DEPENDENT ON MAN'S FARMING PRACTICES, IS A VITAL KEY TO THE SUCCESSFUL MANAGEMENT OF OUR ENVIRONMENT. Unfortunately, modern farming practices are killing ALL SOIL LIFE, thereby destroying - from the ground up, the very environment upon which we owe our total dependence!

For years, farmers the world over, BURNED off all of the crop "residue", after harvesting, calling it an inconvenient "waste"! This practice literally starved the soil organisms to death! They then further depleted the soil life by poisoning it with chemical fertilizers. This prompted tremendous imbalances in the natural order of soil life, resulting in harmful but otherwise scarce soil "pests" (*rare fungus, bacteria and insect varieties*) taking over, and diminishing yields. Of course, chemical pesticides were brought in to "save" us from this man-made disaster.

It's as if each time man creates a "problem", instead of falling back on Yahweh's principles of environmental management, he creates a "band-aid" solution, which turns out to be the next "problem", and so on, and so on! Admittedly, it has taken man a long time to come anywhere close to understanding even basic environmental practices outlined in the Bible. Some of the reasons behind Yahweh's

instructions, we concede, may never be within our limited human understanding! But we are still meant to OBEY them!

Yahweh gave us the forests as an example of perpetual, self-sustained growth, to use for our farming methods. They obviously worked - even though He did not tell us WHY they worked! We have learned at least something about two obvious reasons why they work - one is that a great variety of plants and animals co-exist, providing a variety of naturally recycled decaying matter for active soil life. And two is, that somehow this varietal co-existence maintains a natural balance of defence against disease.

Yahweh also gave us instructions on grazing certain animals, requiring by its nature, the rotating of land out of crop production. Animal grazing also contributes animal droppings - a rich source of nitrates and other valuable food for soil life.

Again, experience has "proven" that the practice of periodically grazing crop land will increase its productivity - if the farmer can afford the transition.

Yahweh also gave us instructions on letting land "rest", or leaving it fallow. He designated each seventh year as "a Sabbath of solemn rest for the land" (*Lev. 25:2-7*), and in *Lev. 25:8* through 17, He further instructs us that in addition to the seventh year land Sabbaths, a Jubilee will occur each 50 years, in which the land is also left fallow.

Ask any prairie farmer, and he will quickly confirm that periodically leaving land fallow, is probably the single greatest factor contributing to the high productivity in our North American grain belt region.

This chapter only deals with a small aspect of the fragile balance of soil life. There is a certain "scientific" logic behind every aspect of our environment. There is also a certain Yahweh-given logic behind each of Yahweh's farming instructions! Yahweh has not

forced us to follow His methods - He gave us our free will to choose. Unfortunately, we have stubbornly chosen to pursue the scientific approach, and to "do it our way", in almost every instance, until we were finally, and usually out of desperation, driven to acceptance of His ways.

Ironically, science has turned out to be our biggest obstacle to real progress! It has literally "blinded" us to the guiding "light" offered only in the pages of the Bible. Man has been so pre-occupied with finding out "why" things are the way they are, that he has forgotten to OBEY the simple and practical instructions given to him by Yahweh!

In his arrogance man has completely lost sight of the purpose of this life - it is, whether we like it or not, a life designed by Yahweh, for Yahweh's purpose - not ours! Yahweh merely wishes to establish which of us will humble ourselves to the point of being OBEYANT TO HIS LAWS IN THIS LIFE - WHETHER WE KNOW "WHY" THEY WORK, OR NOT!

With respect to our Yahweh-given opportunity to learn obedience to His spiritual ways, through practical application of our experience with the physical laws of our environment, it is safe to say, the majority of humans have failed miserably - from the ground up!

The soil that Yahweh gave us to "tend and to keep", is in many cases dying, or already dead! "And they took of the fruit of the land in their hands, and brought it down unto us, and brought us word again, and said, `It is a good land which Yahweh our God doth give us'" (*Deut. 1:25*).

Yes, it WAS "a good land which Yahweh our God gave us" - but that was ancient Israel 3,400 years ago! It's not true of the land of Palestine today! Neither is it generally true of most of the food producing regions of the rest of our planet today! If it were, we would not be

reading headlines such as the earlier quoted, "WORLD ON THE EDGE OF FOOD CRISIS"!

Historically, in nomadic and semi-nomadic agriculture, this process went on to the point of soil exhaustion. Modern intensive methods differ only in one basic point - modern science has made it possible to artificially extend high levels of productivity well beyond the point of actual soil exhaustion! The nomads ended up with visible deserts. Science ends up with invisible deserts; something approaching hydroponics and nutritional chaos!

We want to call ourselves "environmentalists", and we pretend to be environmentally conscious, but the reality is, because of our spiritual "blindness", we haven't even come close to being good "farmers"!

The "dead" soil we have created, is no longer capable of converting the Yahweh-given light-energy into nutritionally balanced, life-giving food products! We are living in what the Bible calls a man-made "famine", and most of us don't want to admit it, while many don't even know it!

We (man) are the weak link! Yahweh has put us to the test, and sadly, as individuals, as nations, and on a global basis, we have failed Him! Israelite logic dictates that it is high time that we exercise our Yahweh-given ability to choose; that we choose to accept the very life-saving words in our Bible, that proclaim: "In Him was light [*spiritual guidance*] and the LIGHT WAS THE LIFE OF MEN"!

## **Vital Land Sabbaths:**

"For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there SHALL BE FAMINES, AND PESTILENCES, AND EARTHQUAKES, IN DIVERS PLACES. All these are the beginning of sorrows" (*Matt. 24:7-8*).

How do these events relate to the land Sabbath? "For the wrath of Yahweh is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of Yahweh is manifest in them; for Yahweh hath shewed it unto them...so that they are without excuse" (*Romans 1:18-20*).

Unpleasant as it may be, our present world food crisis, rampant outbreaks of disease and spiralling health care problems, as well as the increase in both frequency and severity of "natural" disasters, have all been brought on this world by ourselves! It is all our fault; no one else can take the blame! And it could have been avoided through obedience - and may still be avoided through repentance AND obedience! Simply put, our current health and environmental problems are punishment for our rebellious attitude!

Our food producing industrial giants give many humanly devised reasons for continuing the present systems of management, which are fast undermining human health and destroying our environment. Millions living an urban existence won't stop to consider their relationship with Yahweh until their health is destroyed or their food runs out! Most rural inhabitants have become part of the "industrial" food chain, or at best, bondservants to it, which leaves almost no one prepared to face the catastrophic reality man has set upon himself!

Yahweh says we are to "sigh and cry" for the abominations taking place in modern Israel (*Ezek. 9:4*). (*U.S., British Commonwealth and others, see chapter 27*). This is because of the seriousness of the penalties roaring toward

us like an express train! "A third part of thee shall die with the pestilence, and with the famine shall they be consumed in the midst of thee: and a third part shall fall by the sword around thee; and I will scatter a third part into all the winds, and I will draw out a sword after them" (*Ezek. 5:12*).

At this time, Yahweh is only able to work with those very few of us who are RESPONDING to His call. He is CALLING EVERYONE in modern spiritual Israel, but most won't listen! The disease plagues and environmental crisis could hardly be any more obvious, but still, most fall into the category of Isaiah's prophecy that Yah'shua quoted on this very topic; "Hearing you will hear and not understand, and seeing you will see and not perceive;" (*Matt. 13:14*).

Whether man recognizes it or not, Yahweh is the great provider - of all things, including methods of producing nutritionally balanced food, which leads to good health! "He [*Yahweh*] waters the hills from His upper chambers; The earth is satisfied with the fruit of Your [*Yahweh's*] works. He causes the grass to grow for the cattle, and vegetation for the service of man, that he may bring forth food from the earth" (*Ps. 104:13-14*).

Man, made in the image of Yahweh, is the life form for which ALL OTHER LIVING CREATURES ON THIS PLANET WERE CREATED! Man is the only creature given the capability of knowing this and of knowing the Creator! But man stubbornly refuses to accept this, ignoring that his very existence, let alone his continued survival, is completely in the hands of the almighty Yahweh! "What you [*Yahweh*] give them they gather in; You open your hand, they are filled with good. You hide Your face, they are troubled; You take away their breath, THEY DIE AND RETURN TO THEIR DUST. You send forth Your Spirit; they are created; And You renew the face of the earth" (*Ps. 104:28-30*).

Renewing "the face of the earth" happens every year through Yahweh's four seasons. But this is something of which urbanized man has little knowledge and even less interest. Rural mankind has more interest in this area, but his knowledge is mostly based on human reasoning, rather than on the revealed laws of Yahweh.

It is clear from the Bible that if Yahweh's called out ones (*John 15:16*) are to lead the vast majority of mankind by example (now, and through the millennium), we must come to understand certain laws of which most of mankind is completely ignorant today. This chapter will deal primarily on how a law such as Yahweh's land Sabbath, can seem so insignificant to carnal-minded man, while in reality, the importance of this law cannot be exaggerated because it is an integral part of a concise legal system that is fundamental to restructuring human civilization. It was meant to apply to our lives in times past; it applies now, and it will by all means be implemented in the future. Our simple choice is whether we will partake of voluntarily implementing it, thereby setting an example for the rest of mankind NOW, or if we will be a part of the majority of mankind that will be taught this during the millennium (whether we believe it now or not!).

The previous two chapters in this book touched briefly on environmental management based on the soil. But which laws of Yahweh, if obeyed, will guard this natural nutritional and health support system on which we all depend? The first is the land Sabbath! But that's in the Bible! And who would think to look in the Bible for infallible guidance on environmental management? What could the Bible have to offer on such a subject?

Some may have read through the entire Bible and discovered, much to their chagrin, that Yahweh's specific instruction to food production appears to be little more than a verse here and there on firstlings, cross

breeding, clean and unclean food (*disease inhibiting versus disease promoting*), the land Sabbath and jubilee. Beyond these and a few other points, Yahweh APPEARS to have considered it unnecessary to offer any specific guidance for producing man's most important commodity - FOOD! It APPEARS this way, only to the "worldly wise and disobedient" - it is not really the case!

When Yahweh inspired the Bible, He was not at all nebulous about something as globally important as environmental management. He gave man very detailed and specific guidance on the matter and in such a manner as it could not possibly be neglected or overlooked by any obedient individual or nation.

The best way to discover the purpose and meaning of any of Yahweh's laws is to put them into practice in our own lives. We have Yah'shua's own words on this: "IF any man will DO His Will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of Yahweh, or whether I speak of Myself" (*John 7:17*). This timeless principle applies to the Sabbatical year. Only by keeping it can we learn the true meaning, intent and full importance of Yahweh's command.

"Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: `When you come into the land which I give you, then the land shall keep a Sabbath to Yahweh. Six years you shall sow your field, and six years you shall prune your vineyard and gather in its fruit; but in the seventh year there shall be a Sabbath of solemn rest for the land, A SABBATH TO Yahweh. You shall neither sow your field nor prune your vineyard'" (*Lev. 25:2-4*).

"So you shall observe My statutes and keep My judgements, and perform them; and you will dwell in the land in safety [*and health*]...Then I will command My blessing on you in the sixth year, and it will bring forth produce enough for three years" (*Lev. 25:18-22*).

It is a blessing from Yahweh, not a curse! Few today have had opportunity, or have taken advantage of it. Imagination; applied Israelite logic, is therefore needed as we mentally walk through a land Sabbath. This will help us to appreciate its implications for individuals and whole nations, both past and future!

Briefly the land Sabbath imposes the following conditions every seven years:

- no grain to be harvested for commercial purposes.
- no crops to be sown specifically for harvesting that year.
- no vineyards or orchards to be pruned.
- no fruit or vegetables sown.
- no land produce of any kind harvested except for family needs.
- no land produce of any kind available for sale.
- no restriction on pasturing clean livestock.
- all hay or winter fodder to be returned to the field as animal manure.

Now visualize yourself as an adult male with a wife and two or three children. The civil government of your local country has made the Sabbatical year part of the enforced laws of the land, as Yahweh intended. Your responsibility is to provide food, clothes, shelter and a fulfilling way of life for your family. The provision of clothes, shelter, fuel and recreational amenities would be unaffected by the land Sabbath. But what about FOOD?

And what about the environmental management lessons to be learned from an agricultural based family support system?

We would expect a temporary shortage of certain basic commodities every seventh year, but that wrong thinking is based on our present society. The type and scale of many types of production will be curtailed or eliminated in an OBEDIENT society. But Yahweh will still bless man and his animals abundantly. "For your livestock and the animals

that are in your land [during the land Sabbath] - all its produce shall be for food" (*Lev. 25:7*).

It is clear that this type of production is actually stimulated during the year of rest, not restricted. This increase is made possible by the prohibition of commercial crops, which is highly significant. With this in mind, we have a key to understanding the in depth meaning behind the land Sabbath. "What grows of its own accord of your harvest you shall not reap, nor gather the grapes of your untended vine, for it is a year of rest for the land. And the Sabbath produce of the land shall be food for you: for you and your servant, for your maidservant and for your hired servant, for the stranger who sojourns with you" (*Lev. 25:5-6*). Volunteer produce would therefore be more than any family could eat.

"When you come into the land which I give you" (*Lev. 25:2*), means that the land Sabbath applies to ALL FOOD PRODUCERS IN THE SAME YEAR! (*Lev. 25:7*). Can you imagine what that means? We would not be able to go down the road and buy from the neighbour. Neither would we be permitted to rent his land for the purpose of farming it during the year of rest! Yahweh's enforced year of rest would make it impossible to rely, as we do today, on a few specialist producers selling "commercially viable" produce to multiple millions of non-producing consumers!

In a system applying the land Sabbath, grain is easily stored for many years and would therefore always be available. But fresh fruits and vegetables would be non-existent for families without their own garden, orchard and vines. It is hard for us to imagine a system in which everyone produces his own food. Or at least enough food, that he is always able to "glean" from others, some varieties of food in exchange for allowing the others to "glean" from his crops, what they do not have during the year of rest. (*Gleaning is a term defining the practice of harvesting the produce missed*

during the main harvesting operations.) "When you reap the harvest of your land, you shall not wholly reap the corners of your field, nor shall you gather the gleanings of your harvest. And you shall not glean your vineyard, nor shall you gather every grape of your vineyard; you shall leave them for the poor and the stranger: I am Yahweh your God" (*Lev. 19:9-10*).

There would be no green grocers operating anywhere in the nation in the year of rest! The law would prevent anyone buying or selling any type of fruit, vegetables, grain or land produce whatsoever! But people could have a FREE supply directly from their own land! These things would turn our modern nations upside down and throw everything into chaos. This helps us to understand why Yahweh says He will utterly destroy our Satan-inspired society and replace it with an entirely new system.

"Behold, Yahweh makes the earth empty and waste, distorts its surface and scatters abroad its inhabitants...the haughty people of the earth languish. The earth is defiled under its inhabitants, BECAUSE THEY HAVE TRANSGRESSED THE LAWS, CHANGED THE ORDINANCE, BROKEN THE EVERLASTING COVENANT. therefore the curse [of disobedience] has devoured the earth, and those who dwell in it are desolate. therefore the inhabitants of the earth are burned, and few men are left" (*Isaiah 24:1,3-6*).

In a system based on Godly principles of environmental management, Yahweh has seen the necessity of forestalling our rebellious carnal (*human*) nature. Many people left to their own devices, would only plant a garden in the seventh year, buying their needs from others in the remaining six years. However, the land Sabbath COMMAND says you "shall not sow thy field", so in order to have any VOLUNTEER produce in the seventh year, families must have a garden in at least the sixth year. For most fruits, many families would

need to have their own trees and vines, which must be five years old before you can eat from them (*Lev. 19:23-25*). Yahweh makes all of this mandatory simply by limiting available produce in the seventh year to that which volunteers.

Properly planned and managed gardens and orchards will produce a surprising amount of volunteer produce, even in the untended seventh year.

The following are some of the benefits that accrue to families that keep the land Sabbath:

- self-sufficiency is a reward for those who dwell under their own vine and fig tree (*Micah 4:4*).
- healthy, disease resistant families result from eating a diet of fresh produce, naturally grown on healthy soil.
- increased healthy, disease resistant livestock production because harvesting and selling plant production is illegal in seventh year, and animals eat only healthy pasture/produce.
- the end of mass migration to cities because of the need to produce one's own food.
- greater family unity and spiritual values because of the need to work together and with nature, producing their own food.
- improved soil fertility due to pasture fed animals and less crops.
- animal based agriculture because of no crops in seventh year.
- hazards of soil erosion and desert formation reduced by increased crop cover, less bare soil and no over grazing.
- no massive grain surpluses to encourage factory-farming of animals, including "unclean" animals.
- natural food for animals instead of force-feeding grain and protein concentrates.
- higher pasture production due to increased soil fertility.

- higher regular crop production due to bacterial inoculating effects of pasturing the land.
- annual savings of multiple billions now spent on treating disease symptoms, such as hospitalization, pharmaceuticals.
- annual savings in multiple billions now spent on disease promoting agents such as chemical pesticides and fertilizers.

Perhaps we can now begin to understand the far-reaching implications of this Biblical law. Its purpose is not to cause economic difficulties. Like all of Yahweh's commands that appear to be negative, it is Yahweh's way of PROVIDING and PROTECTING all those who are obedient to it. The seventh year land Sabbath offers every family a method of providing themselves with an abundant and varied supply of healthy, disease inhibiting food products.

We see that simply resting one-seventh of our available farm land is not the issue. This is not what Yahweh intended under Moses, nor is it what will be acceptable in the future. By concentrating the observance into one year, even short-term economic common sense demands a change to animal based agriculture. And why not, when the alternative is forfeiture of income for one year in seven! It is logical that the primary law for protecting soil fertility on this planet, would have built into it, provisions for continued and alternative sustenance, and for strictly limiting crop production - the farming practice that destroys soil productivity most rapidly!

To think that we could simply rotate one-seventh of our land out of production each year is like a "Christian" who believes that his religion is something he practices one day a week!

The land Sabbath is a law to teach us ecological and spiritual principles - those values we learn from the simple experience of being obedient to another of Yahweh's laws.

The physical principles of health and sound environment are obvious. The spiritual principles which demand that we pass our land on to the next generation in better physical condition than when we received it, are not as obvious. If we do not accomplish this, we are "unprofitable stewards" in the sight of Yahweh!

No farmer, unless he is robbing another area, or cheating the land by using artificial chemicals, can take six grain crops off any piece of land, and rest it once without radically reducing its capacity to produce healthy food. Most farmers might say, "To keep that law, I would have to change my whole system of farming!" That is precisely what Yahweh intends. That is a major purpose behind the law; to get us into an attitude of "giving" to the next generations, rather than "getting" everything we can right now!

As noted, the land Sabbath is directly linked to animals. Through Yahweh's laws of clean and unclean meats, Yahweh has intentionally given us direction in what animals should play major roles in our agriculture, which as will become clear, helps to maintain healthy soil. Clean versus unclean meats is not "Jewish fanaticism", it is basic nutritional instruction for ALL MANKIND!

There is something very special about the animals designated as "clean", and therefore suitable as food for man. In Leviticus 11 and Deuteronomy 14, they are categorized by those characteristics of BOTH chewing the cud AND dividing the hoof. Collectively, these animals are called "ruminants" because of their special digestive systems. For the past 30 or so years, establishment of improved pasture and other crop species has been aided by inoculating the seeds with cultures of certain micro-organisms at sowing time. This was because the soil population was deficient in these organisms, just as it usually was with the number of earthworms, etc., due to improper farming methods.

There exists an obvious and incredible parallel between the humanly devised "band aid" return of micro-organisms to the soil via seed inoculation, and the Yahweh-given plan for the AUTOMATIC return via animal manure! The environmental impact by even limited regular grazing by ruminants ("*clean*" animals, such as sheep, cattle, deer, elk, buffalo, goats) comes not just from the return to the soil of the residues themselves, but also from the inoculating effect of rumen bacteria within those residues.

This indicates that those that graze clean animals on their land, are: a) obeying Leviticus 11 and Deuteronomy 14; b) following an animal-based system of soil management (*rather than crop monoculture*); c) employing a built-in safeguard against their soil becoming depleted of vitally necessary micro-organic life; and d) safe-guarding their animals' digestion by using the grass they eat to complete a cyclical function of certain micro-organisms.

As grass and other pasture species grow up through fertile soil, there are associated micro-organisms (*rumen bacteria*) on the leaves of the plants. (*Ecology of Soil Bacteria, edited by Gray & Parkinson 1967, pp.78,79,152-53,386,483. Livestock Production by H.H. Cole, pp.457-458. Agricultural Bacteriology, by J. Percival, p.152.*) These organisms are ingested along with every mouthful of pasture, thus re-inoculating the rumen of the animals.

What is significant about this is that man and certain animals such as pigs are created with a three stomach, acid based digestive system, free of rumen bacteria. But the "clean" ruminants have an extra fourth stomach and depend on a population of rumen bacteria to breakdown the contents of their digestive system. During these digestive processes, these rumen bacteria multiply at an enormous rate as they decompose the pasture species ingested by the animal. They are partly

digested as protein, further along in the fourth stomach system, with billions of live rumen bacteria being returned to the soil in the animal manure.

The dung bacteria multiply and combine with life in the soil to decompose the manure and other humus, creating a perfectly balanced supply of dozens of trace elements and other soil nutrients required to grow healthy, naturally nutrient-balanced crops, that are essential for a healthy human diet. The same healthy, naturally nutrient-balanced crops, are also responsible for maintaining healthy animals, which maintain healthy crops, both of which maintain healthy humans and so on, and so on!

Man, through "science", spends billions of dollars and wastes untold millions of hours of mental energy, on such foolishness as researching the pandemic diseases we have brought upon ourselves, when in fact, the answers to all of these "pestilences" have been freely available to anyone who would apply Yahweh's laws! When will man ever believe that, "there is a way which seems right to a man, but its end is the way of death" (*Prov. 14:12*)! Or as Yahweh inspired in *Zech.13:4-5*: "And it shall be in that day [*the millennium*] that every prophet [*false priest or minister*] will be ashamed...But he will say, 'I am no prophet, I AM A FARMER; for a man [*Yahweh's "Elect"*] taught me to keep cattle from my youth"! There is much more that could be spelled out regarding Yahweh's land Sabbath and animal-based agriculture commands, as they relate to our environmental management concerns. It should, by now, be obvious that Yahweh intended us to OBEY these timeless laws, whether we understood them or not, in order that we might enjoy His promised blessings of good health and prosperity within a sound global environment. Indeed, had our modern nations of the British Commonwealth and North America kept these, along with Yahweh's other laws, when we "came into the land which He

gave us", it is difficult to see how we could have avoided health and prosperity in a land that would surely have been flowing with "milk and honey"!

Now, just for a moment, imagine that all of Yahweh's environmental principles were being practiced by our nations - and we were indeed enjoying Yahweh's promised blessings. Then add to that the simple thought: "Now that we have solved our environmental concerns, what would happen if we followed Yahweh's equally timeless advice on economics?" Consider the plight of our nations - in debt to the point of near financial catastrophe. And our citizenry - also in debt to the point of hopelessness for many.

Now what about a few quotes on Yahweh's laws as they relate to basic economics: "If you lend money to any of MY people who are poor among you...you shall not charge him interest" (*Ex. 22:25*). "You shall not oppress one another, [*financially*]" (*Lev. 25:17*).

"At the end of every seven years you shall grant a release of [*all*] debts" (*Deut. 15:1*). "The land shall not be sold permanently, for the land is Mine [*Yahweh's*]; for you are strangers and sojourners with Me. And in all the land of your possession you shall grant redemption of the land" (*Lev. 25:23-24*).

"For the poor will never cease from the land; therefore I command you, saying, `You shall open your hand wide to your brother, to your poor and your needy, in your land'" (*Deut. 15:11*).

"In the land which Yahweh your God is giving you...if you carefully obey the voice of Yahweh your God, to observe with care all these commandments...Yahweh your God will bless you just as He has promised you; you shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow; you shall reign over many nations, but they shall not reign over you" (*Deut. 15:4-6*).

These are only a small sampling of Yahweh's COMMANDMENTS dealing with our

modern nations' economic woes. Imagine interest free loans for every family that wanted to buy some farmland and become self-sufficient. Or for that matter, to better their lives in any way!

Imagine the accomplishments and sense of purpose we would all enjoy, if all debt payments were systematically "written off" each seven years! Imagine being able to "redeem" all lands and properties in the jubilee year, that might have been sold under hard times or duress. Imagine the well-to-do being generous and actually giving abundantly to satisfy the needs of the poor and the needy! What if our nations obeyed the command not to borrow money! Imagine how we would feel if we had no national debt! Imagine "Wall Street" without interest! Or the poor not being oppressed by the rich!

Imagine what it would be like if people would stop ridiculing and resisting the Bible, and simply take the time to read (*and put into practice*) these profoundly obvious, SELF-EVIDENT TRUTHS REVEALED IN GOD'S WORD!

## **Harnessing our Free Life Energy:** **Our Environment is our Energy!**

Throughout this article we will speak of natural "Life Energy", meaning the existing natural Living Energy that is uniquely inherent to this planet, that although is known to exist, cannot be weighed, measured or quantified in any conventional scientific manner. We will also refer to a concept called the "*Joe Cell*", merely as a reference point by way of it being an example of how to harness our Father's freely available Life Energy.

We will also use the word "vacuum" throughout this article, simply referring to the force created within a defined or enclosed space when the contents or portions of the contents of that space are quickly removed or vacated from it.

Typically, we might think of vacuum force as being the by-product of some other preceding expenditure of applied energy, such as electricity in the vacuum-cleaner appliance. There are other ways in which vacuum force can be created. One method is by means of deliberate manipulation of natural Life Energy to create a vacuum. This process of creating vacuum force shall be discussed here, together with a means to positively apply that vacuum force as free, non-polluting "power", to supplement or indeed even replace our reliance upon fossil and other combustible fuel sources.

The famed scientist and researcher, [Wilhelm Reich](#) discussed natural Living Energy with the even more famous Albert Einstein (circa. 1930/40's) while referring to it as "[Orgone](#)". Others have coined names such as "Bion", or referred to it as the "Aura" surrounding a living entity. We shall stick to natural Life Energy for this article. In Reich's discussions, he was able to establish that although his [Orgone](#) energy could not be scientifically measured, it could easily be proven to exist, accumulated and manipulated

to cause benefits for plants, animals and humans in varying degrees.

["Kirlian"](#) photography has historically been used to photograph the existence of natural Living Energy in virtually every living thing. Most commonly this photography has been used to capture evidence of the "aura" of a living subject, yet it has recently been used to capture photographic evidence of this same field of natural Living Energy as it exists in many inert things such as soil, rocks, sand, and most any other thing that can contain some amount of moisture, including our planet's very unique atmosphere.

All of the scientific research indicates that whatever we call this unique energy, it is in fact the very energy that drives "life" and all living things on this unique planet, including uniquely causing frozen water to float. It is fascinating to consider that when pure water is frozen within an absolute vacuum, it will sink. It floats on this planet due to the existence of natural Life Energy which is naturally attracted to the freezing water molecules, thus causing them to be "lighter" than the unfrozen water molecules in spite of being denser, a phenomenon which we should be eternally grateful for.

Without this unique ability for the frozen water to attract the natural Life Energy and otherwise defy the accepted scientific rules, our freezing climates in certain areas would continually freeze surface waters, sinking them because of their colder and thus denser make-up, then freezing what liquid would rise to the surface, and repeating this until all fresh water on the planet was frozen and life could thereafter not exist. Thankfully the inherent characteristics of natural Living Energy have been pre-programmed to avoid such an occurrence.

Natural Living Energy is naturally attracted to water molecules and to all living cells by virtue of the very design of those

molecules and cells. It may be logically deduced therefore, that this energy must be attracted from "somewhere". Apparently the somewhere, is also the very unique blue atmosphere of this planet as well as most every type of natural, but otherwise inert substances that make up this planet, such as soils, rocks, sand, water, etc., which all have the ability to act as temporary "accumulators" or loosely, temporary storage containers of this natural Living Energy.

This also appears to be the same "where" from which we are able to "accumulate" it in certain artificial devices. Science has accepted that when we specifically design the shape of a "space" within specific objects made from specific materials, we can attract and accumulate concentrations of natural Living Energy within that space, in much the same manner as water molecules or living cells accumulate it. Examples of this artificial design would be such devices as Reich's "Orgone Accumulators", or the Australian's "Joe Cells" used by many to power automotive engines without any known source or consumption of "fuel".

Powering an automotive engine with natural Life energy is where we come back to the vacuum and where we will formally introduce the concept of the "Joe Cell". We will not go into the specific details of how a *Joe Cell* is alleged to work within this article, except to refer to it's design properties to the extent they relate to this material. More information may be obtained regarding the *Joe Cell* from any number of web-sites, including: [Joe Cell Energy](#), or [JoeCell Energy - Home](#).

A closing thought with regard to our brief description of natural Living Energy would be that it's supply may be compared to that of water. There is the same amount of water on this planet today as there was five thousand years ago - right down to the last drop. We do not, nor can we, through consumption or use of

water, actually destroy or eliminate any quantity of water - we can only contaminate it, or temporarily change it's form or location. The same applies to natural Living Energy. We do not through the act of living, nor can we, actually destroy or eliminate any quantity of the naturally existing Living Energy. Plants and animals can only temporarily use or access it's form and power to sustain their temporal lives. Thus there is the same amount of natural Living Energy on this planet today as there was five thousand years ago, it is simply manifest in different temporal life forms at this moment in time.

We will start on the *Joe Cell*, by stating that we strongly disagree with the idea that by using a *Joe Cell* on a conventional auto engine, we are somehow harnessing this natural Living Energy (a.k.a. "Orgone") in any form of "[implosion](#)" as most *Joe Cell* proponents tend to believe. An implosion is essentially just as destructive, if not more destructive than an explosion when you fully grasp the mechanics of the event, and we do not think for one moment that we have been granted the authority or ability to deliberately or accidentally "destroy" or eliminate any of our Creator's natural Living Energy by imploding it, thus the effect we are witnessing in the *Joe Cell* equipped engines, must be something else.

We believe the explanation for the observable effect of the *Joe Cell* on an engine is quite simple. When enough natural Life Energy is present in a normal automotive style engine, that engine will start to run rough until two things happen; first, the timing must be adjusted to eliminate any spark on the "compression" or power stroke, and second, the conventional fuel supply must be cut off. Each of these actions eliminates an explosive or destructive potential. But there is one more aspect of a conventional engine that is also the cause of a minor "destructive" event, which is the "compression" stroke.

The very act of "compression" of the otherwise natural atmospheric pressure is contrary to the natural design of the atmosphere and could therefore be termed destructive (*less so than the combustion, but still..*). By simple process of elimination it becomes rather obvious that when natural Living Energy is accumulated in the *Joe Cell* and then directed into the engine block, it naturally looks for, or seeks a way to escape the unnatural environment of the engine, and get back to its more natural atmospheric environment. It does this through the path of least resistance – the open air channel within the exhaust system. In other words it's easiest escape route while the engine is running, is to follow the air flow as opposed to passing through any "physical" parts of the engine.

Thus, for all intents and purposes, once the engine is running and normal atmospheric air is being drawn into the intake chamber, it may reasonably be deduced that very little of the artificially accumulated Life Energy is in the intake area, only some small amount which inadvertently migrates through the actual metal components in that direction. Most of the accumulated Life Energy, once directed toward the running engine (*from the Joe Cell accumulator*) would take the escape path of least resistance through the exhaust chamber and out the exhaust pipe. The small amount that inadvertently migrates into the combustion chamber is simply what causes the car to run rough until the "explosive" or destructive effects are stopped by eliminating any spark or any fuel to that area.

Failing to eliminate the spark or the fuel to an engine equipped with a *Joe Cell* causes an extremely rough running engine. This rough running phenomenon of *Joe Cell* equipped engines, is simply the natural Living Energy being manipulated into an environment where it is subsequently forced to "escape" immediately before the destructive forces of combustion can

take effect within the combustion chamber. When it escapes these potentially destructive forces during a normally fuelled power stroke for example, it creates a vacuum force in it's wake within the concurrently occurring combustion action, which offsets those concurrent explosive forces, thus generating the appearance of a rough running engine.

The only reason the "spark" that is now set to occur at the bottom of the piston stroke seems to have any effect at all on the engine, is because the natural Living Energy is simply (*and also*) escaping the proximity of that "spark". It also escapes that potential damaging energy very quickly - literally immediately, out through the open exhaust ports, and in fact so quickly, that it creates a vacuum in its wake. It is this extremely intense vacuum caused by the natural Living Energy escaping from these potentially harmful destructive actions such as the combustion, the advanced spark, or the compression, that causes the engine to continue running after the fuel source is cut off, not the equally destructive "implosion" of the natural Living Energy, or "Orgone" as many would erroneously claim.

Basically powering an automotive type engine with a *Joe Cell* could be summed up as follows: "We are artificially accumulating natural Living Energy and deliberately manipulating it by directing it into a potentially destructive environment called an automobile engine. Because true Natural Living Energy cannot be destroyed, (*and we believe cannot be reduced, eliminated or even damaged*) it must therefore immediately vacate the vicinity of any potential destructive forces such as combustion with the fuel, or proximity to the spark, or even simple compression. By vacating from the premises of these potential destructive forces at incredible velocities – precisely concurrent with any such destructive occurrence, vacuum force is created within the

combustion chamber resulting in the effect of what we typically refer to as "power" from the engine."

When asked to explain why the natural Living Energy that is in proximity of the explosive combustion is not damaged in that explosive combustion of the fuels before the supply is turned off, or why it is not damaged by the spark, or by the simple compression, we believe the answer is also simple and straight forward. We do not purport that the natural Living Energy "thinks", or is capable of taking evasive action to avoid these destructive forces, rather it simply moves out of the path of any destruction automatically as it was pre-programmed to do, and concurrently with any such destructive force.

Vacating the vicinity of destructive forces "concurrent" with those destructive forces without being captive or subject to those destructive forces may be further explained as it relates to relativity. The time element of the destructive action is relative to the motion of the natural Living Energy, such that it's complete and successful escape is imminent. Simply compare it to the example of a train traveling northbound on it's tracks at sixty miles an hour toward a bullet fired southerly at the oncoming train and traveling at roughly three thousand feet per second. The bullet hits the train without penetrating and immediately and concurrently changes directions without actually "stopping" as we understand the word. In other words, if the bullet was to have stopped in order to reverse directions at impact with the train, then the train would have had to stop at the same time.

Since we know the train did not stop or even slow down in it's northerly motion upon impact with the bullet, then the actual directional motion of the bullet is relative to the point in time that we attempt to measure, or pinpoint it's location. The bullet never truly stops moving. This is the same phenomenon

that occurs with the natural Living Energy. While it is indeed present concurrent with the components of destructive combustion, it is able to escape from the premises of that destructive combustion concurrent with it's occurrence and free, or independent of any involvement in that destructive combustion. At any given point in time, the natural Living Energy is outside of the sphere of any destructive combustion, notwithstanding it may also be concurrently contiguous to that same destructive combustion.

The operation of an automotive engine with a *Joe Cell* can now be reconciled to a better comprehension of what is really happening. This explanation also negates any misconceptions that we human beings would ever be able to implode or otherwise destroy even some little portion of the natural Living Energy that sustains life on this planet - that most arrogant notion is just not acceptable.

## **Inspired to Faith by Tribulation!** **by our Volunteer Correspondent # 3:**

Have faith! Enjoy having faith – it truly is a lot of fun! And it is so very simple to do! . . . “be renewed in the spirit of your mind” (*Eph. 4:23*).

What’s the purpose of life anyway? Only to eat, drink, play, make love? Or do you have a mind, designed to dream? Can you imagine beautiful accomplishments? Think of this. Man is the only creature in the universe that has capacity for exercising creative imagination. This divine quality of dreaming – what you want to be, where you want to go, what you’d love to do, projects you hope to achieve, goals you’d like to reach – all of this makes us the most unique creatures in all creation.

We really are “made in the image” of our Creator! So you are fulfilling your destiny as a child of Yahweh when you dream the beautiful dreams Yahweh inspires in your mind. That’s exciting! That’s faith! Faith is dreaming Yahweh’s dreams!

. . . “I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly” (*John 10:10*).

It’s terribly important to understand that a believer is a normal person. Faith is in fact, the mark of normality. A persistently negative and cynical attitude is a mark of emotional illness – the results of unbelief, or “mis”-belief.

Birds are designed to fly. Fish to swim. Humans to live by faith! It is normal to have faith. It is abnormal to be cynical. When you practice positive belief, you are controlled by positive emotions – love, joy, courage, enthusiasm – faith! These are the qualities of an emotionally happy person; one able to think clearly, creatively, as he was designed to do. You were created to be a believer! That’s why you feel so great when you are optimistic!

. . . “Delight yourself in Yahweh, and He shall give you the desires of your heart” (*Ps. 37:4*).

Faith is a choice not an argument. Faith is a decision, not a debate. It is a commitment, not a controversy. Faith fulfills a need in your heart. It can be defined as wanting more out of life. Everyone, even the super affluent, at some time or other, realize a void in their lives. We suspect that out there, somewhere, there is always something more. Where does this intuition for something more come from? It is built right into our very nature – man has been called an incurably religious spiritual animal – by instinct and by nature.

Wanting is believing and believing produces results – so be careful what you want – you’ll get it! No doubts! Strong faith is the expression of deep desire. Likewise doubt is the lack of desire. A host of conscious and subconscious forces can keep you from wanting to believe. Fears of what Yahweh might do to your life or in your life can keep you from wanting to believe. Internalized guilt can make the possibility of an Almighty, All Knowing God a threatening concept. Deep-seated negative emotions can kill the desire to believe, leaving you with a negative inclination to doubt. Having trouble believing? Well, why don’t YOU want to believe?

Yahweh promises to bless the person who has strong desires. This is because in Yahweh’s eyes, desire and faith are one and the same: “He shall give you the desires of your heart”.

. . . “There lives more faith in honest doubt, than in half the [*religious*] creeds”, wrote Alfred Lord Tennyson, in his “In Memoriam”.

I find that many who have serious questions about the existence of Yahweh, want desperately to believe in something. Their probing inquiry and creative alternatives, reflect thoughtful doubt. Actually they are for the most part, far more responsible and serious in their pursuit of a “faith” – in something, or anything, than they realize. Even more so than those who blindly recite religious creeds without

really daring to know or to explore the really tough questions.

Doubt can be a very positive force when we learn to doubt our doubts! And to have faith in our faith! It is apparent that the believer in Yahweh and His Word, has as strong of a foundation for a rational system of belief as does any doubter for his philosophy of irreligion he has fabricated or been victimized by.

If your doubts collide and clash with the viewpoint of faith, it is the better part of wisdom to believe the believer in you and doubt the doubter within you. Then you are on your way to a great life.

. . . “and when Yah'shua went out He saw a great multitude, and He was moved with compassion for them, and healed their sick” (*Matt. 14:14*).

In the Broadway play, “The Man of La Mancha”, Don Quixote was mocked and scorned for being such a positive thinker! Finally, in a splendid self-defense, he asks the ultimate question, “who is crazy? Am I crazy because I see the world as it could become? Or is the world crazy because it only sees itself as it is?”

Who is normal, the cynic or the believer? The positive thinker or the negative thinker? The man of Godly faith or the atheist? The despairing pessimist or the hopeful optimist? By now we all know the answer. We must affirm that health is normal and sickness is abnormal. That very basic value judgment is beyond controversy. Unbelief is a sickness, and skepticism is damnably dangerous. It gives birth to a multitude of spiritual demons that can destroy your mental health and spread an epidemic of despair wherever you go. As soon as you surrender to negative thoughts, you become host to an infectious spiritual disease and become the carrier of an epidemic of doom and gloom.

It is normal for a child to laugh and play and dance. It is not normal for a child to be

downcast, to withdraw, or to sulk in isolation. It is normal to be a happy believer! Who is crazy? The realist or the idealist? Obviously, the beautiful dreamer, with his exalted visions of glorious possibilities, is the uplifting force in society. He comes bringing solutions. He is the great problem solver. He is the great physician, the healing source, the hopeful friend. He follows Yah'shua the Messiah! He imitates the perfect example to the best of his ability and is proud of it! After all, it was commanded of him! His optimism is his faith, the faith that recognizes the value of being the very best you can be, which truly only comes from following the very best example that has ever been. And it is easy! You don't even have to work out any new ideas – just “imitate” what has already been perfectly done!

. . . “for I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says Yahweh, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope” (*Jer. 29:11*).

Each new year is an appointment to become an authentic optimist. Each new day is justification for being enthusiastic about life. Each dawning is Yahweh's invitation to begin with the present moment, to make new and noble resolutions. Every day you have a standing appointment to meet new opportunities.

Faith is such a positive opportunity. It is a positive idea. A positive idea is the greatest power in the world. Godly faith opens your mind for Yahweh's thoughts to enter in. The most powerful positive idea is one that comes directly from the God who created you, who fathered you and who broke sunshine through the darkness of night.

You were created to think Yahweh's thoughts! You are set free, liberated, listening to the desires of your heart. Be excited about them – they are Yahweh's promised gifts to you! Be excited about today and be excited

about your future – it is in Yahweh’s hands! A truly rewarding knowledge!

. . . “show me your ways, O Lord, Teach me your paths, Lead me in your truth and teach me, for You are the God of my salvation” (*Ps. 25:4*).

The walk of faith is an adventure. In the depth of your heart, you know with an unflinching certainty and with an invincible awareness, the course of action your life must take. This is Yahweh’s answer to your purpose in life.

. . . “One thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forward to those things which are ahead, I press toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of Yahweh” (*Phil. 3:13,14*).

Faith is not merely thinking happy and holy thoughts. Faith takes the form of good and Godly goals. No act of faith is more dynamic, more constructive, than setting incredible goals! Ever notice how negative thinkers avoid setting goals? “Goals – who needs them? Or, I’ll just wing it thank you. Or, I prefer to roll with the punches. I don’t want to get trapped by a commitment, etc.”.

Failure is not a matter of failing to meet your goals. Failure is in not making goals or in not making the most of your possibilities, seen and unseen, known and unknown, in the present and in the future! Use faith to set positive goals and you’ll be sure to rise to higher plateaus – I guarantee it! You’ll be happier, healthier, wealthier and wiser! You’ll be farther ahead tomorrow than today – even a little can turn out to be a lot.

Someone recently asked me why I most often seem to be happy and to see the positive side of things. My answer; “Because I’ve always got a lot of unfulfilled goals, just waiting to be achieved, and this pleasantly distracts me from anything I might otherwise worry about!”

If you use faith to set and strive for positive goals you will always inspire those

around you. Imitate Yah’shua the Messiah! He inspired millions to believe Yahweh! What a positive goal! What are positive goals? They are the impossible problems just waiting to be solved by someone with this incredible and miraculous power called faith!

. . . “Go your way, and as you have believed, so let it be done for you” (*Matt. 8:13*).

We truly are a manifestation of our beliefs! Miracles never happen just through meditation, but by mighty action – the result of belief! Read carefully the words of Yah’shua and notice the verbs: “follow, go, seek, do, ask, knock”. The walk of faith is not merely the serene, silent, spiritual, unspeaking stroll of a holy man in the stillness or silence of day. Faith is the mental activity that draws Yahweh into our mind and our imagination, until a passion inflames our will and motivates us into action!

It is then that commitments are made! What are commitments? They are entering into an honourable contract, pledging oneself to the task well before the problems are solved. Every commitment generates by definition, a new set of problems. If we waited for the solutions to the problems before we made the commitments, the commitments would never get made. This is not the walk of faith! It is for this reason that commitments in anything, in marriage, in fulfilling a project, in business, in family, in whatever, are self-inspiring!

. . . “I can do all things through Yah’shua the Messiah who strengthens me” (*Phil. 4:13*).

Faith is the inner conviction, the unshakable assurance, the profound knowing that becomes the reality before the event. It is what we choose to believe in before we can start to act as if it were true! It is a sense of destiny – of knowing you can. Walking by faith is knowing you can solve any problem!

. . . “so he, leaping up, stood and walked and entered the temple with them –

walking, leaping, and praising Yahweh” (Acts 3:8).

Faith is often a leap. How appropriate! How else could you possibly move from one place to another where there were no direct links? The healed man had no experience with standing or walking, there was no direct link, yet by faith, he “leaped” up, stood and walked!

Faith is leaping across the chasms that exist between the:

- known and the unknown
- proven and unproven
- actual and possible
- the grasp and the reach
- the I've got it and the I'll get it
- knowledge and mystery
- material and spiritual
- achieved and pursued
- sickness and health
- sin and forgiveness
- life and death.

Yes there are chasms between today and tomorrow. I cannot be sure I can cope with tomorrow, but by faith I'll leap into it with expectation. There is always a chasm between my present and my unfulfilled hopes and dreams, and by faith I'll make the leap toward their achievement – and grow – and have fun doing it!

I believe in faith, I believe in believers, I believe in hope for believers, I believe believers are happier and more fulfilled, I believe in Yahweh and I believe in fun-filled tomorrows.

I believe I am always in a leap of faith! And I have faith that you will be inspired to enjoy that same leap!

## Inspired to Faith by Tribulation!

### An author's confession,

#### by our Volunteer Correspondent # 4:

"This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance, that Yah'shua the Messiah came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief" (1 Tim. 1:15).

These words were first penned by the Apostle Paul, when he was giving instructional advice to young Timothy, his "spiritual son in the faith".

Paul's claim to being "chief" among the world's sinners, was undoubtedly a heartfelt expression, although it was obviously not true in any literal sense. Nor is it true that I myself, am chief among the world's sinners.

It is patently true however, that I also suffer heartfelt feelings of abhorrence for my own past conduct, not entirely unlike that of Paul's. Few, if any of my life experiences prior to coming to the knowledge of the Bible, are worthy of any report, save for the fact that they were stepping stones of progress toward my Father and His Messiah.

Through my own empathy for Paul's feelings, I have gained such confidence in Yah'shua the Messiah, so as to become determined to "wage the good warfare" (1 Tim. 1:18) as best as I am given opportunity. And "for this reason, I [hope] to obtain mercy, that in me first Yah'shua the Messiah might show all longsuffering, as a pattern for those who are going to believe on Him for everlasting life" (1 Tim. 1:16).

And so, as Yah'shua's humble bondservant, it seemed fitting to me to help in the preparation of an orderly account of the practical application of Yahweh's Word for the modern day reader. Thus, I freely contribute to this Web-site and hope that its content may be found as useful tools for the better understanding of Yahweh's word.

This contributors to this site have also collaborated in an epic work to assemble the

world's first and only non-copyrighted edition of Yahweh's Word, with both Old & New Covenants properly divided into the original 7 divisions and published in a 7 volume set with all 49 original books arranged in their original order and numbered sequence – the Natural Israelite Bible English Version (NIBEV)!

This **non-copyrighted** material is freely available to all of Yahweh's children; the Congregation of the Family of Yahweh, where "membership is registered in heaven", and is focused in part, on helping the reader to overcome the apparent barriers of time and language that had crept into modern traditional copyrighted versions, since the original writings of the Bible.

I do not profess to hold any superior qualifications - in fact, I am simply a farmer. I do profess a profound ability to seek for, and find the simple answers to life's questions. Ironically, I spent nearly forty years searching the world over, only to find them all right before my eyes in the pages of the Holy Bible. I pray that you read the content of this site, and then more importantly, read the entire NIBEV version of the Holy Bible yourself. You will find answers to all of life's concerns. And in your search for wisdom, remember, it is "the peace of Yahweh, which surpasses all understanding" (Phil. 4:7).

I was raised with a Sunday school background until my early teens and I had no church or religious involvement until I was about 38 years old. I grew up on a modest family farming operation in south western Ontario, with parents who had a fundamental belief in Yahweh, but did not teach, or live by any particular "religious" tradition.

By the time I had reached my late teens, I had lost all interest in religion, in fact I felt quite adamant about the Bible being only a "collection of fairy tales" made up by a bunch of old "con-artists" with ulterior motives. I have no idea how I came to such a conclusion, except

to say that, the little bit of organized religion I had been exposed to, was so very ludicrous that it left me with this equally ludicrous opinion.

More recently, however, there was a considerable twist. I had, due to a very personal challenge, and as a direct result of my new-found understanding of basic Bible Truths, changed my entire outlook as to the purpose of my life. In the spring of 1986, a very good friend of mine, a Christian, became quite upset with me when I expressed my personal opinion of the Bible. My friend responded with what was an obvious challenge - how could I express such a strong opinion on a Book that by nature of the opinion itself, proved I had never even read the Book? He was absolutely right!

I set about to read the Bible in the same manner my experience with all other books had shown me was the most "efficient" for me. While in school, I had developed the habit of reading the last chapter of a book first. Obviously, if you know how the book is going to end, then everything leading up to this ending will make a lot more sense and be easier to understand - right? Well in most cases, perhaps yes. But certainly not with the Bible! I don't know if you have ever read the last chapter in the Bible or not, but it definitely on its own, does not make understanding of the rest of the Book any easier - especially on the first reading!

I had to admit, that the book of Revelation was one of the few things that I had ever read without at least, some basic level of understanding. This very fact was the impetus for continuing my "challenge" to fully understand the entire Book - the Bible. So I thought, well I certainly don't want to go to "Church" to learn this, I must be able to learn it on my own - I was obviously very independent in my way of thinking. But I did break down, and began watching several different

"religious" shows on television, to help give me a better perspective on what the Bible really said.

Ironically, for the most part, this did not help at all! I found that almost every one of these programs had its own, unique interpretation and/or understanding of various Bible topics. By this time I had diligently read the Bible from cover to cover more than a dozen times, and had found certain things in it, that I concluded I was either misunderstanding, or in fact, all of these religious programs and churches, were also either misunderstanding, or more probably, were interpreting in a way that conformed to their "traditional market needs"!

This was a major concern for me. Was I correct and all of them wrong? Surely not! After all, I was certainly not an expert, and many of these organizations were connected with, controlled, or influenced by highly respected, very reputable "theologians", who were indeed alleged "experts in the field".

Of all these "traditional" Christian television programs, there was one produced by a local Vancouver Pastor, who was a dentist prior to putting together his church and television ministry. I only saw about three of his programs from that time era, but he seemed to me to be a very "normal" type, who had come from "regular" society and background into his new "religious" experience, somewhat along the lines of where I felt I was coming from. Then his program went off the air.

For the most part, the remaining Christian programs, whether local or international, I found very shallow and boring as well as very IN-consistent with what I had been learning through my own Bible study. I did watch a number of televised episodes of a program, produced by a Ministry that preached the keeping of the Sabbath, and found them to be MORE consistent with what I was learning from the Bible.

They were certainly NOT consistent with the fundamental teachings being expressed by the majority of the "traditional" Christian programs at the time. But as I said, they were also, not totally consistent with my understandings either!

It was all very frustrating. I decided to dedicate myself to at least two hours a day for the next five years to study this matter, on my own, in depth from the Bible itself. By this time I had reached the point where I understood the value of faith in Yah'shua the Messiah, His crucifixion and resurrection. I accepted Him into my life through private prayer and began to experience fellowship with Yahweh the Father - as reconciled by the Messiah, and a new-found, wonderful prayer life, which proved its effectiveness in my daily living continually. (*I had by this time, obviously renounced my former opinion of the Bible!*)

During those next five years, my life gradually changed. The way I thought, how I felt about myself, about others, my priorities, my goals and lifelong objectives; everything about me and my outlook on life, changed dramatically. I had come to enjoy a new wealth of richness in my personal relationship with Yahweh and in the dedication of my life and efforts, to Yahweh. Although, I was still what you might call, a "closet" Christian!

I thought at this point (*through 1990 and 1991*), that I had now developed, and was experiencing the totality of Christianity from the Biblical perspective. Then I was confronted with the meaning behind one statement made by the Messiah, that I was reading during a nightly study session: "I will build My Church" (*Matt. 16:18*).

This is the first place in the common Bible versions I had been using where this word "church" is used. Then I wanted to know "where" is this church, and more importantly "what" is this church that the Messiah said He would build? I became curious again. What is a

church? What did the Messiah build? Why did He build a Church? Where did He build it? Did He build one church, or many? Is the church that the Messiah built represented by the many denominations of "Christian" churches? Or is there one true church?

Then I learned that the English word "church" is translated from the original Greek word "ekklesia", meaning "congregation", or "an assembly" of "called out ones". Most appropriately, I learned that for most applications in the Bible, the erroneously translated word "church" should have properly been transliterated as, "congregation".

Symbolically this Congregation in Bible usage is referred to as the household, or family of Yahweh (*Eph. 2:19-21*).

So at that time, I chose at least temporarily, to interpret these verses about the congregation - the called out ones, in the way that was most convenient for my lifestyle. Through more studying, it seemed easy to determine that in the Bible, the word congregation did not refer to church buildings, but rather to the people - the people "called out" to understand the truth of the Gospel.

Well, I figured that I did indeed know at least some of the truth about the Gospel - therefore I was "called out" and therefore I was part of the congregation, right? Well, maybe! I then learned that the Bible teaches that Israelites must "gather together of one accord" to have "fellowship" with one another as well as with Yahweh, in order to receive the full benefits of their relationship with Yahweh, and to help each other to grow in grace and character of Yahweh through the power of His Holy Spirit.

So then, in 1992, I found myself searching for a "church congregation" to become involved with, somewhere that I might have fellowship with other Israelites. For some reason, the dentist-come-Pastor that I had watched on television some years previously,

kept coming to mind. By this time I had even forgotten his name. With a little effort, it was not very difficult to ask around and find out who this Pastor in Vancouver was, that had been a dentist prior to being on television. A few days of querying and someone told me this man's name, the name of his church and how I might contact him.

I was still having difficulty with this whole idea about going to church, so when I contacted him, I suggested that I would like to talk to him, ostensibly about a retirement housing project that could have some spin-off benefits for his church. He agreed to meet and I was excited and quite full of anticipation at the prospect of being invited to attend his church services.

Well we met, we had a very interesting meeting with respect to the "business" proposal, and he then greatly disappointed me by not inviting me to church! Instead, he invited me to a downtown businessmen's Bible study class that he was hosting each Tuesday morning at 6:30 a.m. I went to the Bible study and found it enjoyable, and then he invited me to attend his church service for the following Sunday.

For close to one year, I attended the Bible study sessions, faithfully every Tuesday at 6:30 am and attended his church services every Sunday - sometimes twice on Sundays. I wanted to get everything I could out of this "fellowship" aspect of things.

But somehow, something just wasn't quite right. I did not know what or why, but I did "know" something was wrong. I had been enjoying the Bible study and the church services - in fact I eagerly looked forward to both each week. As well, I had developed a good friendship with the Pastor and with several of the congregation - it almost seemed to be "working" the way it was supposed to be.

I had been praying earnestly and fervently since 1986 for a full and complete

"understanding" of the Bible, especially the book of Revelation, and not until late 1993 did Yahweh fill in some of the more important pieces for me.

I had studied the Revelation and all the related Bible prophecies for literally thousands of hours, reading, praying, taking notes, making comparisons, until it finally started to come together. Many times, for several nights in a row, I would awake at 2 or 3 o'clock in the morning with an uncontrollable passion to study these prophecies and with a "certain knowledge" that if I did, Yahweh would bless me with the understanding I had prayed for.

I can only explain the final stages of this revealed understanding as miraculous - not because the book of Revelation is so "mysterious" as some would think - or not because I'm so "smart", but quite literally, the opposite! I had been told, and I had originally led myself to believe, that the Revelation was extremely complex and difficult to understand; that it was a "mystery", that only a few people have ever understood it. Well, maybe only a few people have ever understood it, but the rest of these "myths" about it, are just that - myths! Once Yahweh helped me to remove my prejudice toward understanding the Revelation, it became as easy to understand it as simply reading it! Just exactly like Yahweh said it would be! After all, Yahweh, through the Messiah does say in the Revelation, that a blessing would be bestowed on all who read it, provided they are obedient to keep the things that are written in it.

Well the one thing I had by then learned about Yahweh that was absolute, is that Yahweh does not lie - He does not play games! He tells it how it is! If Yahweh says He expects us to read, understand and keep what was written in the Revelation, then He also wrote it in such a way as this must be possible - right? Well, again, maybe! IT IS VERY EASY TO UNDERSTAND - by the few who have not

been deceived by their own ego as influenced by Satan. But just as Yahweh says that these "few" would not be deceived, and would therefore understand, He also says that "the many" would be deceived, and would therefore NOT understand!

Since the Revelation is KEY to understanding almost all yet to be fulfilled Bible prophecy, it is of vital importance. It is also important to note that there is no blessing, no benefit, not the slightest advantage in simply "understanding" the Revelation. Rather the advantage, the promise of benefits, or the blessing, comes as a result of OBEDIENCE to what the Revelation says; obedience to Yahweh's Word, the Bible, which almost anyone could understand (*if they would simply read it*), but which very few will actually OBEY!

I've since come to understand that the "church" is not a physical place I need to search out in order to fellowship. Rather, the "remnant" of the faithful; those who share "like precious faith" consummate the congregation of Yahweh. These "called out ones", are the "body" and Yah'shua the Messiah is the "head" of His Father's Congregation, where membership is "registered in heaven".

When we gather together for fellowship with those "of one accord", we place obedience to the Gospel of the kingdom of Yahweh that the Messiah preached, above all else.

Unfortunately, my friend and former Pastor, like most traditional Christians, teaches that we should "worship Yahweh according to the dictates of our own conscience", which is contrary to Bible instructions, which are simply that we must: "worship Yahweh in spirit and in truth", and that, "Thy Word is truth".

My HOPE is that this work being done by all of the volunteers at NCOY will help motivate he and his congregation, together with countless others, to read the Bible with a NEW MIND, and to be drawn away from their false

traditions, customs, and beliefs, to a new-found faith - "the substance of things HOPED for".

**Useful Philosophy, Inspired by our  
Volunteer Correspondents  
# 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, and 11:**

**Useful Philosophy**

● The essence of any useful philosophy is that a man should live so that his happiness and fulfillments shall depend as little as possible on external things. Such being the case, we come to our own feelings. Commonly, confusion over responsibility reigns. Action seems to many to follow feelings. But really, action and feeling work harmoniously together.

Even when we re-act to another's actions with feelings of our own, we are in reality and by definition, experiencing our very own actions. And by regulating our actions, which are under the more direct control of the will, we can indirectly regulate our feelings, which are not. In short, blaming others for our feelings is like pretending to be able to excuse our actions by claiming them to be mere reactions to another. It is irresponsible, and inconsistent with any useful philosophy.

**Friendship**

● The true essence of friendship shall be its usefulness. A wise and prudent man shall choose his friends so that this usefulness is unique and manifests with or without his approval. Otherwise, he shall not be choosing friends, rather judging people. Since he knows he is unable to judge with certainty, this choice is easy. Commonly, the choice is averted by an eagerness to be with others under the pretence they have some magical ability to "make us feel good"; a pretence often bolstered by a sharing of "similar interests".

Such a pretence obviates the great advantages of our uniqueness, and requires by definition, uniform conformity. It is more often a display of insecurity and fear of being unique, than it is evidence of a useful friendship. Only when one is perfect, may one wisely judge that

he does not need the useful advantage of a distinctly unique friend – one very different from himself in most every way.

**Natural Beauty**

● A simple stage with five men and five stringed instruments presenting to about twelve hundred patrons. A Celebration called "Mozart-Week" in Salzburg, Austria, 1990. In reverent silence to the ensemble, we found our emotions being played upon. We listened, we wept, we smiled and we wept some more. All twelve hundred of us marvelled that music without any words could convey such a powerful moving of our emotions.

I thought perhaps the beauty of it all was because the instruments were such perfect extensions of the impartial players. Then I thought perhaps the beauty of it all was really because the players were such impartial extensions of the perfect instruments.

But no, it was more. The humility of the players and the purity of their love for the music set down by the true artist decades earlier was miraculous. A wonderfully gifted child somehow wrote music that has endured and remains beyond the talents of even the greatest artists of today.

I realized the true beauty of it all, was not because of what any man knew or was capable of, rather it was purely because of the foreknowledge of Yahweh. Only Yahweh could know that when perfect music was expressed by perfectly tuned instruments that were managed by perfectly impartial technicians, that the true listeners would enjoy perfect emotional participation.

Only Yahweh could gift the young child with such understanding that enabled him to write perfect music. Only Yahweh could gift the craftsmen with the skills necessary to create the perfect instruments. Only Yahweh could gift the technicians with the perfectly impartial, perfect skills so necessary to play those

instruments. And only Yahweh could gift the listeners with the emotions that could so joyously appreciate it all.

The original genius, the true Artist, is Yahweh; Musical Conductor Extraordinaire! Naturally!

### **Vanity - I**

●The vanity of human nature is a fascinating thing. Consider hair care products. Marketing experts have capitalized upon our vanities, and created multi-billion dollar products for pre-shampooing agents, shampoos and hair cleaners, basic conditioners, revitalizers which are not to be mistaken for mere conditioners, colours, tints which are not colours, frizz controllers, anti-static formula, hair spray, hair gel, setting gel, straightening agents, curling agents, de-tangling formula, hair (*food*) therapy formula, shine enhancers, body enhancers, texture enhancers which are not hair-body products, split end formula, colour sensitive products in each category, hair dryers, hair curlers, hair curling solutions, hair crimpers, curling irons, and heat sensitive products in each category, and most amazingly, special treatment products for chemically sensitive hair. The money spent, not to mention the vast time shopping for and applying all of these things, evidences vain priorities.

It demonstrates a cultural acceptance of the vain concern for the image, rather than the substance of the package; a state of our culture without defence, regardless of an individual's most noble effort at trying.

### **Character**

●The true essence of character shall be its perception. For perception to be true, it must look without judgment beyond the temptations of the obvious. To see without judgment, and to thereby perceive, one must fully accept what is viewed without partiality. Any temptation or

desire to change what one sees when one looks, is a bastardization of one's perception, and is akin to fantasy. Or put simply, what is in your view is what you must see, your perception of it however, is subject to opinion. How you regulate your opinion is a measure of your character.

A man of character, will look upon another with unfettered acceptance. What others may fantasize as dislikes or personality flaws, are accepted by the man of character as challenging opportunities for his own growth. He knows he is responsible to control that which resides within and to accept that which is outside of his control. Therefore, by all means everyone and everything is acceptable and well liked.

### **Vanity - II**

●The vanity of human nature is a fascinating thing. Consider modern automobiles. Marketing experts have capitalized upon our vanities, creating "cars", designed to reflect the "image" of the owner. The average consumer spends well over one third of his income on cars, whether sporty cars, sexy cars, muscle cars, family cars, suburbanite cars, utility cars, sport-utility cars, executive cars, limousines, luxury cars, touring cars, racing cars, economy cars, limited edition cars, custom personalized cars, middle class cars, or cars designed for elderly drivers. All of these cars come with personal choices of hundreds of colours, fabric or leather covered seats, smoking facilities, dual vanity mirrors, "appearance" packages, "convenience" packages, and sometimes, even built-in safety features. None of the cars are designed to really last and the styles are changed in order to provide a "dated" look to any that do. Car companies admit that it only costs about one eighteenth of the price of a car to produce it, but in a free economic society where the "consumer" is boss, that's just the way it is. The

success of this manipulation evidences vain priorities. It demonstrates a cultural acceptance of the vain concern for the image, rather than the substance of the package; a state of our culture without defence, regardless of an individual's most noble effort at trying.

### **Nobility**

● There are no truly Noble thoughts that remain unspoken, nor Noble deeds which remain undone. The true measure of Nobility lies not in the relating of blood, but rather in the eloquence of the expression of words and in the sincerity of the deeds done.

A poor man, who knows how to conduct his manners and deeds in silence if needed, in isolation if necessary, and with his dignity, integrity and honour intact, is capable of expressing the most chivalrous character – a truly Noble man to the core. Whereas it has become popular for many of lesser character, to seek for the recognition of their desired Nobility rather than the evidence of their true character.

Proclamations of superior bloodlines, displays of material accomplishments, philanthropic gestures designed as rehearsed public presentations and various other glamour's, are sought to immortalize the desired image rather than the true substance of the package.

Sadly, the audience, our society, has degraded to the point of actually preferring this type of shallow behaviour, as evidenced by its overwhelming support; a state of our culture without defence, regardless of an individual's most Noble effort at trying.

### **Silence is Golden**

● When a man of character can think of nothing positive to say on a topic, he will remain silent. It is without doubt known to him, that the negative thoughts he was tempted to speak were but mistaken in any event.

### **Natural Compassion**

● "Seeing they may see and not perceive, And hearing they may hear and not understand"! (*Mark 4:12*). The Messiah spoke these words to explain why He used parables, which in part, was "To you it has been given to know the mystery of the kingdom of Yahweh; but to those who are outside, all things come in parables" (*Mark 4:11*).

The parables in fact were all very fully explained, yet nearly everyone still misses their meaning, even to this day. Perhaps focus should be placed on "the peace of Yahweh, which surpasses all [human] understanding, [which] will guard your HEARTS and MINDS through the Messiah Yah'shua" (*Phil. 4:7*). For when a man, Simon by name, did not understand the gift of His Holy Spirit, he was admonished with a reason for his misunderstandings: "for your heart is not right in the sight of Yahweh ... and pray Yahweh if perhaps the THOUGHT OF YOUR HEART may be forgiven you" (*Acts 8:21,22*).

So it is that our thoughts do not all emanate from our minds! Some in fact emanate from our hearts! Thus it is with our hearing also. If we hear with the same heart that we generate our thoughts with, then we may not "hear" the truth, even when it has been spoken to us! In fact, we are told quite simply that the things of Yahweh will be very hard to explain "since you have become dull of hearing" (*Hebrews 5:11*).

Notice it says dull of "hearing" not dull of "understanding"! Remember, for "hearing they may hear and not understand"! For when speaking of man's heart, Yahweh says through Jeremiah "The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked;" (*v. 9*). And again in Matthew "For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies. THESE ARE THE THINGS THAT DEFILE A MAN" (*v. 19, 20*). "Do you not know that you are the

temple of Yahweh and that the Spirit of Yahweh dwells in you? IF ANYONE DEFILES THE TEMPLE OF Yahweh, Yahweh WILL DESTROY HIM. For the temple of Yahweh is Holy, which temple YOU ARE" (1 Cor. 3:16, 17).

Yahweh lives in you. Yahweh has gifted you with the very life you live. Yahweh knows your every thought, of both heart and mind. Yahweh cries out in heart-felt agony over your own deceitful heart! It is the deceit of the heart that causes all of the pain and suffering, the death and agony, the torture, the wars, the starvation, the abuse, the excesses of this world that are justified by the excuses of mankind!

New-Agers, pious religious believers, deceitful politicians and people in general, fall back on platitudes surrounding their myths of some "universal" power or force that seems to be uniting the minds of millions around the world. They boast of new scientific discoveries, modern advances and accelerated human potential due to these mysterious universal forces being at work! Indeed they are correct.

What has accelerated is the totality of all of this disastrous human behaviour at a rate unparalleled by anything except the equally staggering disintegration of the collective human consciousness. Only calloused minds; numb to the realities of life, could find "progress" in what the world has endured.

Yahweh is love. Yahweh FEELS! Those few that truly know Yahweh, also feel deeply and compassionately about the world's wrongs. They, and Yahweh, do not see these events as progress, but rather as evidence of a firmer resistance to the compassionate nature Yahweh gifted us all with. And Yahweh feels what you feel –He KNOWS what you feel! If it is not embarrassing to feel good about the world we have made for ourselves, it should be very much so!

It should be embarrassing to face Yahweh and admit to being one of these human beings that have collectively failed so miserably. It should be embarrassing to face Yahweh and not have anything to say to justify your position. No excuse, no reason why you just went along with things, or why you did nothing in the way of prevention.

We are of all things, pitiful in our endeavours to be kind, caring, loving, compassionate human beings. We are lazy and irresponsible, and we lie, cheat, plunder, loot, steal, rob, murder, war, fight, abuse, and take for granted everyone and everything on this planet, and justify ourselves in this "progress" as it is "just the way things are", as if "things" have created the circumstances!

Close your eyes and FEEL! Feel the pain, the anguish, the distrust, the scepticism, the fear, the hurt, the anger, the uncertainty, the relentless pressure of "success", the hunger, the thirst, the starvation, and you know what, you just may find yourself crying! Yahweh is!

## Thoughts on the Modern World by our Volunteer Correspondent # 5:

👉 I was recently asked what I thought about the many technological advancements of our modern world.

My response was, "Well, let me think a minute. I was born just before television, penicillin, polio shots, frozen foods, Xerox, contact lenses, Frisbees and the pill. There was no radar, credit cards, laser beams or ball-point pens.

Man had not invented pantyhose, air conditioners, dishwashers, clothes dryers, and the clothes were hung out to dry in the fresh air and man hadn't yet walked on the moon. Metal detectors were used to find lost metals not to keep weapons out of schools, the computer age hadn't yet been coined because computers were still science fiction.

My parents got married first, and then lived together. Every family had a father and a mother. It was normal for myself starting at about age 13, and for every other real man that I knew, to act like a gentleman; to open doors for women, to help them with their coats, to address them politely as "Ma'am", to address every man older than yourself as "Sir", to always let women have the available seats if anyone had to stand and to let women go anywhere first; in other words, to treat them as a lady.

Children today don't even know how to define "lady" and "gentleman", aside from gender! It was also normal and expected to always have and show respect for your elders. Good manners were a given. It was polite and expected that you would greet people you met on the street and wish them a good day - whether you knew them or not.

"Gay" still meant happy. There were no gay-rights, computer-dating, dual careers, daycare centers, or group therapy. Our lives were governed by good judgment, and common sense. Mothers actually looked after

their children in person. We were taught to know the difference between right and wrong and to stand up and take responsibility for our actions. We accepted what we knew about right and wrong. We had no idea that we could "excuse" our wrong behaviour with such platitudes as being "victims" of oppression or abuse. What used to be self-indulgence is now "self-fulfillment".

What we used to call two men living in sin together is now a "meaningful" relationship under the "minority rights act". What was once discipline is now "repression". People can now do things that used to be wrong, because they have now been "liberated".

Equality amongst all men used to be respected by the world as something worth striving for. In this country, I'm now one of the "minority". I'm Caucasian and I'm heterosexual. My way of stating in plain language that I'm "just a normal white guy", is no longer "politically correct". Natives, East Indians, blacks, Orientals, homosexuals, feminists, cultists, and others, all move to this country expecting and getting more rights than I have.

They are not required to adopt my customs or the customs of this country, but I am now obligated by law to provide special accommodations for their unique ethnic, cultural and religious beliefs and customs. Yahweh [God] and religious faith also used to be part of what made most Canadians proud. Now it is against the law to speak of Yahweh in most public forums.

Everyone knew that government employees were there to provide services for you and that they were actually well thought of, courteous and helpful. We treated them with respect, partly out of our compassion for knowing that they were poor, and not able to do anything but work for the government. Living in small rural communities was considered a privilege as well as an enjoyable necessity for many. Good neighbours always

left their keys in the car and their house open in case someone had an emergency. People shared their work, their produce, their machinery or tools and always preferred working together when possible. "Work" on the farms was really a lot of fun and satisfying because of the evidence of its productivity! Poor people moved to the "city" and suffered the hardships of working alone at really boring factory or government jobs. If they were lucky and made enough money to move back to the community, they were welcomed and helped.

Serving your country was still thought of as a privilege; living in this country was an even bigger privilege. We thought fast food was what people ate during Lent. Time-sharing meant time the family spent together in the evenings and weekends, not purchasing condominiums.

The stores and shops where we did purchase those very few things that we did not grow or barter with our friends for, were all owned by people we knew; by people that also wanted to help us in any way they and their small business could manage. Customer service meant real help – where the storekeeper actually cared and took full responsibility for your satisfaction, not just the place where you took back your purchases and made your complaints.

We never heard of CDs or guys wearing earrings. And I don't ever remember any kid blowing his brains out listening to Tommy Dorsey or Glen Miller. If you saw anything with 'Made in Japan' on it, it was junk. Pizza Hut, McDonald's, and instant coffee were unheard of. We had 5 & 10 cent stores where you could actually buy things for 5 and 10 cents. Ice cream cones, phone calls, rides on a streetcar, and a Pepsi were all a nickel. And if you didn't want to splurge, you could spend your nickel on enough stamps to mail 1 letter and 2 postcards.

You could buy a new Chevy Coupe for \$600 but who could afford one? Too bad, because gas was only 11 cents a gallon. In my youth, 'grass' was mowed, 'coke' was a cold drink, 'pot' was something your mother cooked in, while 'rock music' was your grandmother's lullaby. 'Aids' were helpers in the Principal's office, 'chip' meant a piece of wood, 'hardware' was actually found in a hardware store, and 'software' and 'internet' were not even words.

And I think I am of the last generation to actually believe that a lady needs a husband to have a baby. When my sister and I were young my parents called us children. Now my "kids" claim I am the victim of a "generation gap"; an expression that didn't exist until about twenty years after I was born. Which coincidentally was only 1954.

So all in all, what do I think about the many advancements of our modern world? I really miss the community spirit, the good neighbours, working on the farm with friends and families where everyone actually looked forward to and enjoyed their work. Where neighbours weren't just someone that lived close by that you could recognize. Neighbours were people you worked with; they were your friends, they were helpful, they were polite, and they were those that really and truly cared about each other. They had good values, and they actually lived by them."

Good Values! That is the purpose of this Web-Site! And it is what my book, "A New Mind", which is patterned after many Biblical examples, is all about! I hope you read it! I hope you enjoy it! And I hope you find it useful!

Another point of view regarding changes in our modern way of thinking was recently sent to me from another well known Congregation member. It was a response to why we might be experiencing terrorism and other "modern" problems. It went this way:

In light of recent events...terrorists attack, school shootings, etc., I think it started

when Madeleine Murray O'Hare (she was murdered, her body found recently) complained she didn't want prayer in our schools, and we said OK.

Then someone said you had better not read the Bible in school ... the Bible says thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not steal, and you shall love your neighbour as yourself. And we said OK.

Then Dr. Benjamin Spock said we shouldn't spank our children when they misbehave because their little personalities would be warped and we might damage their self-esteem. (Dr. Spock's own son committed suicide after many years of his father's advice.) We said an expert should know what he's talking about. And we said OK.

Then someone said teachers and principals better not discipline our children when they misbehave. The school administrators said no faculty member in this school better touch a student when they misbehave because we don't want any bad publicity, and we surely don't want to be sued (there's a big difference between disciplining, touching, beating, smacking, humiliating, kicking, etc.). And we said OK.

Then someone said, let's let our daughters have abortions if they want, and they won't even have to tell their parents. And we said OK.

Then some wise school board member said, since boys will be boys and they're going to do it anyway, let's give our sons all the condoms they want so they can have all the fun they desire, and we won't have to tell their parents they got them at school. And we said OK.

Then some of our top elected officials said it doesn't matter what we do in private as long as we do our jobs. Agreeing with them, we said it doesn't matter to us what anyone, including the President, does in private as long as we have a job and the economy is good.

Then someone said let's print magazines with pictures of nude women and call it wholesome, down-to-earth appreciation for the beauty of the female body. And we said OK.

And then someone else took that appreciation a step further and published pictures of nude children and then further again by making them available on the Internet. And we said OK, they're entitled to free speech and freedom of expression.

Then the entertainment industry said, let's make TV shows and movies that promote profanity, violence, and illicit sex. Let's record music that encourages rape, drugs, murder, suicide, and satanic themes. And we said it's just entertainment, it has no adverse effect, nobody takes it seriously anyway, so go right ahead.

Now we're asking ourselves why our children have no conscience, why they don't know right from wrong, and why it doesn't bother them to kill strangers, their classmates, and themselves. Or why it doesn't bother them to steal or cheat or investigate pornography.

Probably, if we think about it long and hard enough, we can figure it out. I think it has a great deal to do with "WE REAP WHAT WE SOW."

I believe Yahweh is deeply saddened by this, just as most of us surely are, but for years we've been telling Yahweh to get out of our schools, to get out of our government and to get out of our lives. And being the gentleman He is, I believe He has calmly backed out. How can we expect Yahweh to give us His blessing and His protection if we ignore all of His advice and demand that He leave us alone?

Funny how simple it is for people to trash Yahweh and then wonder why the world's going to hell. Funny how we believe what the newspapers say, but question what the Bible says.

Funny how you can send 'jokes' through e-mail and they spread like wildfire but when you start sending messages regarding Yahweh, people think twice about sharing.

Funny how lewd, crude, vulgar and obscene articles pass freely through cyberspace, but public discussion of Yahweh is suppressed in the school and in the workplace.

Are you laughing?

Funny how when if you were to forward this message, you would not send it to many on your address list because you're not sure what they believe, or what they will think of you for sending it.

Funny how we can be more worried about what other people think of us than what Yahweh thinks of us.

Ask people to read it, or pass it on if you think it has merit. If not then just disregard it... no one but you, and oh yes, Yahweh, will know what you did.

But, if you decide to disregard this thought process, then please don't sit back and complain about what bad shape the world IS IN!

Israelite year 5762 (Roman 2002)

**Possibilities & Provocations:**  
**by our Volunteer Correspondent # 6:**

● Have you ever thought, or has anyone you know, ever suggested that a Creator God is not a reality, just a comforting idea in your mind, an emotional crutch, wishful thinking? Many prominent philosophers have propagated that Yahweh is nothing more than a psychological projection. Ludwig Feuerbach first suggested this, and Sigmund Freud, Karl Marx, Friedrich Nietzsche and others over the years have picked up on it.

Is Yahweh just an imaginary “cosmic father” invented for our emotional protection, created in our image to comfort us, a phantom to fill the hollow places? Any challenge put this way is beset with fundamental problems. Is it fair to dismiss theism because belief in Yahweh happens to fulfill emotional needs? Is there a real connection between our psychological state of mind and the real truthfulness of our ideas?

How does what we wish to be true influence what is actually true? Psychological motivations give us information about the person who believes something, but they tell us absolutely nothing about the truth of his beliefs. An idea cannot be refuted by simply showing - even correctly - the psychological reasons why a person believes it. Why? Because psychological motivations have nothing to do with the truth of any belief. That evidence must come from other sources.

Someone might say that Israelites just want a father figure - but I say, maybe we do, maybe we don't, but what has that got to do with whether Yahweh exists or not? My claim that Yahweh is our protective Father, and the critic's that He is simply a psychological projection, could both be wrong - but neither claim on its own, is going to get us closer to the truth.

Suppose I believe, that after doing my accounts I have a large balance at the bank.

Suppose you wish to determine whether this belief of mine is wishful thinking. You could never come to any useful conclusion by examining my psychological condition or motivation. That evidence would only be available by proving my arithmetic wrong. In other words, you must show purely on the evidence, that a man's idea is wrong before you start explaining why he is wrong.

The initial question - Does a Creator God Exist? - must be answered with reasons of evidence first, not dismissed with misleading talk about motives. Suppose I make note of the apparent order and design of the universe, for example, and conclude that Yahweh is responsible. How could you refute me? There is only one way - address the merit of the reason and evidence itself - not my motivations for believing it.

If there are good reasons to believe in Yahweh that are not dependant upon my emotional condition, then assessing my psychological condition misses the mark entirely. One can never answer the question “Is Yahweh just an idea?” by looking at motivations. Any refutation of His existence or self-serving adjustment of His definition must address reasons of evidence, not desires. Give me convincing arguments that Yahweh does not exist, or is something different than what He says He is, before you ask why I believe in such a fantasy.

Let's turn the question around - fair play, so to speak. Is atheism a reality, or is new age thinking a reality, or are they just ideas, wishful thinking, emotional crutches - the axe cuts both ways. Perhaps atheists reject Yahweh because they have had bad relations with their own father - maybe atheism was invented to escape the frightening implications of Yahweh's existence. Maybe new age thinkers adjust their definition of “what their God is” because they are better comforted that way.

People of all cultures, from the most primitive to the most advanced believe in some form of God. They don't have to work themselves into any belief - perhaps this is the real reason - it is simply natural! Even atheistic naturalists posit "Mother Nature". Why would they be motivated to use this particular phrase? They use it because it seems like "someone" is - assembling, building, designing, organizing.

Atheism, not belief in Yahweh, is the real anomaly - the unnatural, forced, artificial response. This active disbelief, including the active manipulation of belief practiced by new age thinkers - who design a god to fit their own needs - takes the real effort, not belief. This disbelief is premised on talking one's self out of believing in Yahweh and engaging in mental gymnastics to dissuade the obvious.

Why would anyone do that when the evidence is so apparent? Here is where the question of psychological motivation has its proper place. The motive is obvious. If we can somehow convince ourselves that Yahweh does not exist or that He exists only as we wish Him to be, then He won't be cramping our style. When it comes to our own lives we don't like to be riding in the back seat - we want to be the drivers!

Think about it. Invent a god - fashion one of your choosing. Would your god be like the God of the Bible? A god formed by the human mind would probably mirror human sensibilities and proclivities. He (or she) would think and act, more or less like we do. His morality might reflect our desires. When we erred, he'd cluck his disapproval and then dismiss our frailties with an affectionate kids-will-be-kids shrug. After all, nobody is perfect. And coincidentally, this is the kind of god most religions and new age thinkers seem to produce. Not New Covenant Israelite faith though.

The curious thing about the God of the Bible is how unlike us He is, and how very unlike anything we could even imagine. His wisdom confuses us; His purity frightens us; His compassion overwhelms us. Instead of being at our beck and call, He defies our manipulations. In His economy, the weak and humble prevail and the last become first - doesn't sound very much like a human invention does it!

Is our Israelite God just an idea? Is He within the capacity of our limited human imagination to create? Or have the atheists and new age thinkers closed their eyes, hid their faces and turned their backs for fear of trembling at the sight of the true God?

I won't judge you for whether you believe in Yahweh or not. This book is not about belief in Yahweh - it is about believing Yahweh. It seems to me to be elementary that Yahweh exists, and the more important issue is WHAT IS HE SAYING to us. That is what this book will clear up once and for all, dispelling the myths and proving the realities. Before you judge it, read it from cover to cover - it may provoke you in more ways than you think. It is not friendly toward any religious organization, in fact prominent religious organizations have threatened violence and offered bribery in attempts to stop its publication. It is totally evidentiary in support of its radical points of view, it pulls no punches and tells it like it is - believe it or not.

## **Pursuing Relevance Part 1 & 2:** **by our Volunteer Correspondent # 7:**

☀️ We have great difficulty exercising our imagination to believe that those around us are “smart”, if we hold on to the belief that the “stuff” we know or that we would like to know, constitutes the only, or one of few ingredients of “smartness”.

Once we abandon this idea, we may find that the people around us do indeed know a great deal of their own “stuff”, and that it is then much easier to imagine they are the brightest people around. But what are we really doing by giving credibility to “stuff”, whether theirs or ours?

The “stuff” we are talking about is commonly referred to as “information”. But, information, or bits thereof, only become knowledge when they can be practically “applied”. Information on its own is merely trivia, and is in the preponderance, impractical, in that it is generally not possible to convert most available information into knowledge that can be applied to cause change. We have tremendous volumes of information, even libraries (*physical or techno-driven*) full of it, but it is almost all totally irrelevant in terms of applicable knowledge.

Knowledge is relevant. It is the information that has become of use - it can be applied to some set of practical circumstances to effect the status quo; It may be utilized to maintain the status quo, or it may be utilized to change the status quo. If the status quo is perfect, then obviously so is all of the current knowledge. If the status quo is imperfect, then obviously, new knowledge must be recognized and applied in some practical sense so as to effect the desired change's.

By extension, if the status quo is imperfect, then most certainly so is all of the available information; even the current voluminous amounts that are available, as it

cannot be formulated into the requisite knowledge to cause the desired effects.

By further extension, it is “knowledgeable” to avoid filling your mind with the ever-inefficient, ever-increasing volumes of available information, because as you do, you eliminate by virtual overload, if nothing else, the only tool known to mankind that possesses the ability to “produce” knowledge - the kind that may indeed be utilized to actively effect positive change. This may actually be “relevant”!

The most strident, traditional advocates of high “standards” on knowledge, insist that these be “applied” particularly to “basic fundamentals”. Indulging our propensity to inquire into the language of education, we find that the essential portion of the word “fundamental”, is the word “fundament”. It is poetically appropriate that “fundament” also means the buttocks, specifically the anus.

We will resist the temptation to explore the subconscious motives of these “fundamentalists”, but must state that their “high” standards actually represent the lowest possible standards imaginable for rating our education or information dissemination systems in any arena of human knowledge.

What one needs to ask of a standard is not, “is it high or low?”, but, “is it appropriate to our goals and objectives?”. If our goals and objectives are to continue to make people more alike, to prepare them to be docile functionaries in some bureaucracy, and to prevent them from becoming vigorous, self-directed, inquiring learners, that are incapable of educating from within and therefore “producing” knowledge, then our current standards are apt. However, the very survival of the true learner’s skill and interest in learning; his ability to “create” knowledge, are at stake. Perhaps this is also, relevant!

We must rather be centrally concerned with the hearts and minds of competent,

confident learners when they are genuinely engaged in learning - in contrast to those merely concerned with the fundament. No competent learner ever says to himself, "In solving this problem, I will read 2 books, write a report of 20 pages with a minimum of 15 footnotes and prepare an oral review. . ."

The only place we find such "standards" are in a school syllabus - where we are first trained not to learn, simply to "perform". It is initially instilled, rehearsed and practiced until we are "conditioned" to believe it is the "acceptable" method. These false standards do not exist in natural, human learning situations where knowledge is actually produced, since they have nothing to do with the conditions of learning - with what the learner needs to be and to do in order to learn about learning, or indeed learn about anything.

Consider this: The first hole dug on the moon with man-made machinery has been done. It is the most expensive hole in the history of mankind - and it is still, empty! Now, what does it mean? How do we know whether this is one of man's noblest achievements or if it is a game being played by a small group of lunatics for their own amusement - at our expense? Is this relevant? To what? Maybe not even to this article!

"Progressive" thinkers, transmitters of our "cultural heritage" and lovers of "standardised" education everywhere, are defenders of this type of "achievement". Learners - capable knowledge producers, know that none of these types of things have any direct bearing on them, and that it is all part of the "conditioned" response to accept the teaching of lies! Furthering this premise, the main thing children in school practice in their "learning" is how to lie!

The game is called "Let's Pretend", and if its name were chiselled onto the fronts of every school and announced or printed at the beginning of every news article, scientific or

medical journal, we would at least have an honest announcement of what takes place. The game is based upon a series of pretences which include: Let's pretend that you are not who or what you really are and that the sort of work or training that you are doing actually makes a difference to your lives; let's pretend that we must continue to amass great libraries of "information" and let's pretend that it is of vital importance in and of itself, and let's pretend that to "know" a lot of this information - as much as possible - is important and that whoever knows the most of this crap is the smartest; let's pretend that what bores you is important, and that the more bored you are the more important it is; let's pretend that there are a great list of certain boring things that everyone must know, and that both the questions and the answers about them have been fixed for all time; let's pretend that your intellectual, personal or business competence can be judged on the basis of how well you can play Let's Pretend. There may not be much positive relevance in "Let's Pretend"!

A learner soon comes to understand that what he is asked to think about in school or in the workplace has no bearing on what he needs to think about in order to learn anything or to produce new knowledge. He therefore removes the best, most important, most vital part of himself from his learning process - his mind - the inquiring thought process, the primary motivation for learning anything and everything of substance. It seems that this might just be extremely relevant!

It is not uncommon for "teachers" to make such statements as "Oh, I taught them that, but they didn't learn it". There is no utterance more extraordinary than this one. It is on the same level as a salesman saying "I sold it to him but he didn't buy it", in other words, it makes no sense at all.

There are thousands out there teaching or propagating their information, who believe

that there are certain “subjects” that are “inherently good”, that are “good in themselves, or good for their own sake”. When you ask “Good for whom?”, or “Good for what purpose?”, you will be dismissed as being “merely practical” and told that what they are talking about is literature qua literature, grammar qua grammar, computer techno-information qua computer techno-information, mathematics *per se*. Such people are commonly called “humanists” - mostly by themselves, and are our teachers, scientists, traditional researchers, analysts, and disseminators of information - our “fundamentalists”.

Thousands of these fundamentalists propagate their subjects because they are inclined to believe it to be important and they enjoy talking about it to others. That is why they become involved so. It is also why they predominantly fail to teach anyone anything. They typically define a “bad” student (*learner*) as anyone who does not respond to what they have prescribed for him.

They teach or provide information on one thing or another under the supposition that the “subject” will do something for their audience which, in fact, it does not, never did, and indeed, which most evidence indicates, does just the opposite of the proclaimed intention - it forces the participant to remove his “mind” capacity from the equation. In other words, we are conditioned to “conform” to the information provider’s version - and if we don’t, we are told we just “don’t get it” and/or we are judged/marked into “low performance” categories.

Contrary to conventional education and information dissemination models, true teaching or sharing of information, is the art of eliciting from the learner the meanings they have already stored up so that they can be re-ordered, re-classified, modified or extended to new and practical application's). The learner is

not as is supposed, a passive recipient, he is an active producer of knowledge. The word “educate” is related to the word “educe”. In the oldest pedagogic sense of the term, this means to draw out of a person something potential or latent. We can after all, learn only in relation to what we already know. Again, contrary to common misconceptions, this means that if we don’t know very much, our immediate capability for learning is not very great.

Further, if the information we already possess is flawed, or is based upon flawed premises, we will also have limited capacity to learn anything of real value; we will not be able to effectively and efficiently produce and recognize new knowledge - we will only, as evidenced by those great many fundamentalists around us, be able to continue in our efforts to memories vast amounts of readily available information - interesting to them - boring and impractical to us. This is also, extremely, relevant!

There is a very fascinating and simple source of basic information that provides the first basic premise for the pursuit of knowledge. This has been freely provided us by our Creator. It is the basic premise from which all further knowledge can be produced and recognized. To search for knowledge beginning with any foundation other than this one and only true foundation, is risky at best, and entirely flawed at worst.

This source reveals to us the cause for true “education” from within. It shows us the way to educe from the knowledge written in our hearts and minds the very nature of life; its purpose, its design and its function. It reveals the awesome potential of mankind to learn, produce and recognize knowledge; to be creative as is our Creator - to be gifted with the ability to do original thinking, to understand the magnitude of our future potential, and even to understand the nature of and to be filled with the very mind power of our Creator.

It shows us clearly how to seek solutions for all of what we now perceive as problems or difficulties and it provides answers to every unknown that we may have ever wondered about. We simply need to “inquire” into it, and all this and more will be opened to us. This is undoubtedly, relevant!

Would you like access to that first basic premise to knowledge that would enable you to easily solve *(or provide solutions for)* any real problem you were able to recognize? Would you like the first basic premise to knowledge that would enable your ability to recognize problems? If you wouldn't, then maybe you perceive yourself as “irrelevant”!

Before you prejudice your next thoughts, think of what it was you were going to learn tomorrow or the next day. What purposeful learning - what experience had you in mind - what knowledge were you going to produce from it? Can you honestly say that whatever you thought of learning could come even close to understanding the very mind and character of your Creator - Yahweh? Maybe!

We'll take the next step - then how close do your ambitions come to actually putting you in the position of being able to prove, unequivocally, the existence of your origins, of your current and future potential, of your Creator and all things about Him. There is absolute, irrefutable proof, readily available, all you need do is ask for it! It is relevant in the extreme, and so are you!

## **Pursuing Relevance Part II**

● Part I in this series was designed to educate the reader's inherent awareness of, and understanding of, the significance of starting any pursuit of knowledge from the right basic first premise. Starting from a Yahweh-centred, Yahweh taught premise, is what this chapter is all about.

It is increasingly obvious, that many people in this day and age, believe in some

form of “God”, and therefore possess what could be described as a knowledge of the “God of their understanding”. Many, especially the trendy New Age thinkers, and even a considerable number of “traditional” thinkers, have a propensity to believe in a God, simply when they see or hear of, and because of, certain events that might otherwise be deemed “spectacles”, or miracles.

It is even more common for the “accepted” version of a God, to be “whatever you want a God to be”. In other words, whatever makes many comfortable with a definition of a God, turns out to be precisely what the “God of their understanding” is.

This “creative license” being applied to the very definition and character of Yahweh is also readily applied by many in terms of their own understanding of “spiritual” status, or “spiritual enlightenment”. To be able to “do” something miraculous; to walk on hot coals, to speak in tongues, to do “good” things, to be able to heal people as an example, is to many people, a definitive “sign” of “spiritual advancement”.

Recently, one particular person was pointed out to the writer by several independent parties, as being “the most spiritually advanced or evolved person on the planet”, simply because he was able to heal many people of their physical infirmities. Each of these same people claim to believe that spiritual growth is something that “only comes from within”, yet they do not even recognize the paradox of these two statements. That paradox is relevant to truth.

Interestingly, it is the writer's opinion that none of these people have ever read their Creator's version of spirituality. Or perhaps, it would be more generous to say, they have probably read all, some, or portions of it, but have obviously not observed nor have any regard for the true meaning set forth regarding spiritual growth and/or spiritual knowledge.

Wanting to believe in our Creator and in Yah'shua the Messiah seems to be consistent, as does wanting to be “spiritually evolved”, but wanting to believe our Creator and Yah'shua the Messiah seems to be most inconsistent, almost non-existent, and “justifiable” by means of a great many euphemisms. We must first believe Yah'shua the Messiah when He pointed out that He never actually healed anyone! He made it abundantly clear that it was the “power of Yahweh” that caused every one of His healings and other “miracles”.

Second, we must also believe Yah'shua the Messiah when He instructed us to “Test the spirits”. What Yah'shua the Messiah meant here was precisely what He said - “Test the spirits”, whether they be of Yahweh (*His Holy Spirit of Truth*), or of Satan (the Spirit of Deception). If only His Holy Spirit of Truth were able to empower us, Yah'shua the Messiah would not have warned us to “test” them! There is vital relevance here!

It was of paramount importance to Yah'shua the Messiah to point out on many occasions as recorded by his disciples, that none of the things He said or did, were of His own doing or ability, but were either provided for Him by Yahweh the Father, or were merely the result of His faith in the Power of Yahweh the Father. Yah'shua was quoted as saying He could do nothing of His own accord, only Yahweh the Father, working through the power of His Holy Spirit (*or Will*) could do anything associated with each of Yah'shua's miracles.

Each and every time a miracle was recorded in Yahweh's word, it was also recorded that the miracle was accomplished by “the Will of Yahweh”, not by Yah'shua or any of His disciples. Yah'shua's faith, was the catalyst, Yahweh's power - His “Will” (*Spirit or intent*) was the “power to perform miracles” in each and every case.

There is a simple and true test of the Spirit - whether or not it is His Holy Spirit of

Truth or the Spirit of Deception working in an individual. His Holy Spirit of Truth always makes it known *that any appearance of miraculous healing (or any other miraculous event)*, is being accomplished by the Power of Yahweh working from within the individual being healed, and the healed party will recognize the internal revelation of Spiritual healing and be thankful to Yahweh and to Yahweh alone. His Holy Spirit of Truth, like Yah'shua, does never take credit for directly healing any one.

The Spirit of Deception will on the other hand, allow the “healed” (*or the audience - the “admirers”*), to thank him, to effectively believe “he” did it and to therefore, “worship” him, allowing the Healer to directly or indirectly, accept credit for the miraculous healings, further allowing the healed party's to believe that the Healer was therefore a very “spiritually evolved” individual.

In most cases, the Healer is himself deceived, and also believes himself to be highly “spiritually evolved”, as evidenced purely by the good works. If we were not meant to apply this test as Yah'shua instructed, I wonder why He was also inspired to write: “For many shall rise up and show great signs and wonders, so as to deceive if possible, even the elect”. These first basic premises from which to educe knowledge of spiritual growth are relevant to its truthful analysis.

To accept the premise that all knowledge comes from, and is therefore “educated” from within, is easy as related to most things. We need to realize that if this is the case with even simple forms of knowledge, that it most assuredly is the case with Spiritual knowledge. A progressive awareness of Spiritual knowledge as revealed from within the individual, is the effective catalyst for Spiritual Growth of that individual. Without more awareness, more growth will not occur.

As Spiritual awareness CAN ONLY COME FROM WITHIN as and when revealed by Yahweh (as *Yah'shua* said: “No one can come to me except by Yahweh who draws him”), it is obvious that Spiritual growth must also of necessity, come from within, and therefore, be based upon the only true, reliable first basic premise for knowledge.

If even for one minute, a healed person, or one desiring to be healed, or one desiring to learn how to heal (and by extension - desiring spiritual advancement), looks outside of himself - to a “faith-healer”, or to anyone other than Yahweh the Father, then that person has been successfully seduced into looking toward and seeking closer ties to the Spirit of Deception.

The Spirit of Deception, like His Holy Spirit of Truth, will provide the most “miraculous” results; will provide those great “warm and fuzzy” feelings of “wholeness” within you, while concurrently providing the most crafty diversion necessary to keep you from seeking His Holy Spirit of Truth - the revelation of knowledge from within. You will no longer seek that which you perceive you have already found. That’s relevant!

If one small human mind could educe this knowledge, and formulate an hypothesis for its application, do you not suspect that the all-powerful “god of this world”, as *Yah'shua* declared the Spirit of Deception to be, could not also?

Your very spiritual survival, let alone your desire for spiritual advancement, depends entirely upon your recognition, that, of course he could. And that’s relevant!

## **Thoughts on Education Part 1 & 2:** **by our Volunteer Correspondent # 8:**

● As North Americans, we enjoy living in what the world perceives as the richest, most powerful, most prosperous and most educated nations on earth. We have vast libraries full of great volumes of accumulated knowledge on virtually every topic imaginable. A great percentage of the world's countries look to us for advice and guidance in social, community, technical and other strategic planning initiatives. Yet we suffer nearly 25,000 murders each year within our own borders - far more deaths each year than what results from the many wars abroad that the Americans participate in - yet these wars evoke greater public outcry!

Since World War II, we have been flooded with movies, programs, books, pamphlets, counsellors, articles and professional advice on love, marriage and sex. Why then do over one half of our marriages end in divorce? Or why do ever-growing numbers of unwanted teenage pregnancies result in even less wanted, staggering numbers of abortions by unwed teenage mothers that are contracting and spreading disease with their teenage counterparts at even more alarming rates?

Why? Nearly 54% of our citizens now enjoy some form of post-secondary education compared to less than 4% at the turn of the century, yet like the statistics mentioned above, and only recently, unemployment has skyrocketed, welfare roles have quadrupled, and over 15% of our own populations live below the poverty level!

Why when we continue to train nearly 750,000 physicians with an average of 11 years of education, and we make ongoing advances and technical breakthroughs in understanding and treating disease, do we have excessive and still growing health care costs, coupled with higher numbers of people

suffering ever-increasing new diseases, sickness and death like never before? Why then with all of our education and resulting knowledge do we suffer such abysmal problems? Why the paradox?

We must remember that there is a cause for every effect. If the effects of our knowledge have caused us to be living in undesirable circumstances, we must look to the cause. This does not necessarily mean that the knowledge we have produced has caused all the evils around us, but it does mean that our vast array of knowledge has failed to cure existing problems or to prevent new ones!

What is wrong? Is it wrong to acquire and possess knowledge? Of course not, but there are 2 basic types of knowledge - true and false - or right and wrong - or good and evil. In our pursuit of knowledge, we have used only one basic premise or starting point - science. The scientific method of experimentation, discovery and reason. Errors almost always result from a false basic premise. Mankind started off in the wrong direction (*with science*) and even though some of the knowledge acquired along the way has been good, it's been based upon the wrong premise! Therefore man has yet to achieve the desired effects of his efforts.

Do you suppose that knowing who you are and why you exist has anything to do with the right kind of education? It does if you want to get started on the right basic premise. Very early in the Biblical accounts, we see Yahweh is educating mankind. He is revealing to them, what is right and what is wrong - or what is good and what is bad. Mankind had a choice. They could know right from wrong by taking Yahweh's Word for it, or they could decide for themselves. They pioneered in deciding for themselves what is right and what is wrong.

They conducted the first scientific experiment when they ate the forbidden fruit! They rejected Yahweh's Word, they observed

the fruit, experimented with it by tasting it, and then reasoned that it was pretty good! Webster's defines "experiment" as: "test, trial, experience; to try out a new procedure, idea or activity"!

Starting out on this wrong first basic premise was what caused Yahweh to cut mankind off from His revealed knowledge - the true foundation or starting point for all knowledge (*Gen. 3:22-24*). That knowledge which is still cut off from the majority of mankind today, is the missing dimension in modern education! The *Encyclopedia Britannic* defines education as: "an attempt on the part of the adult members of a society to shape the development of the coming generation in accordance with its own ideals of life". In other words, education is what mankind has made it to be!

To call into question our modern system of education, or its standards, would seem ridiculous to most, because those people are prone to assume - to carelessly take for granted whatever is popular - whatever has the general public acceptance - which is that education is something you go to school to get. However education is not something you go out and get! It is a way of life. And there are two additional problems with our modern education system - WHAT is being taught, and HOW it is being taught.

Our children are not being taught HOW TO THINK, but merely to follow along with the rest of the crowd. The preponderance of our "learning" is merely to memories portions of our vast accumulation of knowledge. Our systems of education instills the habit of assuming - of carelessly taking for granted without question - what is commonly accepted. It is only a fraction of human beings who truly know why they believe what they do. We are nations teaching our children to be followers not leaders! And because we like to be well thought of - to be liked - to be accepted, people are trapped into

conforming - into following the false teachings of the world like blind sheep!

For 6,000 years man has virtually destroyed every part of this creation he was intended to maintain and beautify - for 6,000 years he has been experimenting with what is right and what is wrong! Man has educated HIMSELF with his own scientifically created material knowledge. In so doing, mankind has produced a vast mountain of evils all around himself. His fund of knowledge is a mixture of right and wrong - of good and bad.

It has produced a civilization full of empty lives, unhappiness, pain and suffering, crime, immorality, broken homes and family life, corruption, injustice, violence, pollution, environmental chaos, war, disease and DEATH. Yet man refuses to believe the most obvious results of his own experiment! "There is a way which seemed right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death" (*Prov. 14:12*). That way began when man conducted the first scientific experiment in the symbolic Garden of Eden!

Humans do not learn well from experience, nor all at once. The childishly simple and most incredibly obvious lesson of the forbidden fruit has not been learned in 6,000 years! Even an agnostic would have to agree that the future welfare and quite possibly even the very existence of our civilization is dependent upon the educational system we choose to utilize.

We must truly question whether we have absolute faith in our system of education and resulting knowledge production, especially considering the tremendous import we place upon it. One who is truly educated never relies on assumption and does not take things for granted. We must learn to "Prove all things" (*1 Thes. 5:21*).

Yahweh freely revealed to us over 6,000 years ago, that there are 2 basic types of knowledge - good and evil - or right and wrong.

Many are inclined to equate the good knowledge with only spiritual knowledge, and the bad knowledge with material knowledge. This however, would make all forms of material knowledge wrong, or evil, which of course is not true. Mankind was given dominion over the physical creation with instructions to subdue it. Dominion means to “reign or rule over” - the material creation, and to subdue means to “subject to oneself”.

To fulfill this Yahweh-given assignment, mankind needed to know how to deal with THINGS! Yahweh knew he would need to learn to make things, to build things, to grow things and to work the land and resources of the planet. Yahweh knew that man would of necessity, have to create his own material knowledge. First Corinthians 2, reveals why man alone among the creation, is capable of acquiring this needed knowledge: “For what man knoweth the THINGS of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him?”

Yahweh also FREELY revealed to us that, although mankind was created physically complete, he was created spiritually INCOMPLETE! Simply put, man has a complete body and a complete HUMAN spirit, or conscious will. The human spirit however, is INCOMPLETE; it requires the Spirit (*Will, desire or intent*) of Yahweh to complete it; “...even so the [*Spiritual*] things of Yahweh knoweth no man, but the Spirit of Yahweh [*knows all theses things*]”.

In addition to working with material things, mankind was to develop and maintain a loving relationship with his Father - Yahweh. Man was also to marry and develop and maintain loving relationships with his spouse, his children and his neighbours. He was also to teach his children to be loving, honest, contributing members of a community. These things required the help and advice offered only through Yahweh’s Spirit.

So from the beginning, mankind needed to know how to deal with things - material knowledge, and how to deal with others - Spiritual knowledge. Acquiring physical knowledge is possible due to the fact that we were created with a human spirit - His Holy Spirit within us that separates us from animals. Spiritual knowledge however, comes ONLY BY REVELATION of Yahweh - it is FREELY GIVEN - all we have to do is accept it! To become truly educated we need both kinds of knowledge!

REVEALED KNOWLEDGE, freely given to us by Yahweh - Yahweh’s Word - the Bible, is mankind’s instruction manual. Who would know better what to put in an instruction manual - the Creator, or the thing created? This revealed knowledge is the FOUNDATION, or first basic premise - the starting point for ALL KNOWLEDGE!

It is not the sum total of knowledge - it is the only true premise from which to start - the concept that directs our approach to the acquisition of all further knowledge. Yahweh gave us awesome minds with which to think - He intended us to use them to explore, observe, study and measure things - to acquire additional knowledge through experimentation and HUMAN reason.

Knowing this, He supplied us with the requisite first step - the basic premise from which to conduct all of our observations - His freely given revelations of what is right and what is wrong. But like our first parents, we have continued to reject the very foundation of all knowledge. Our educational systems and resulting production of knowledge have been operating without a foundation - based on human reason alone, which invariably means false premises and erroneous hypothesis - the evidence is all around us!

Paul describes a society which rejects Yahweh’s revelation as the foundation for all knowledge: “Because that, when they knew

Yahweh, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing to be wise, they became fools" (*Rom. 1:21-22*). Once you reject Yahweh's freely given advice - His revelations of foundational truth, your wisdom becomes darkened - you no longer have access to the spiritual light - or enlightenment, that is "the LIFE of men"! This pursuit of material knowledge only, is foolishness to Yahweh! "And even as they did not like to retain Yahweh in their knowledge, Yahweh gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient [*or not right*])" (*v. 28*).

All knowledge is obviously not wrong, but when you leave Yahweh and His fundamental starting premise out of it, it may well end up wrong more times than not. And so when we say there are two types of knowledge; good and evil, we mean just that. There is the good or right kind of knowledge, which is any knowledge, whether spiritual or material, that is based on the foundation of Yahweh's Word, and there is the evil or wrong kind of knowledge, which also can be any knowledge, whether spiritual or material, that is based on human reason (or experimentation) alone.

While the Bible (*Yahweh's Word*) must be the beginning premise for the pursuit of all knowledge, Yahweh does still expect us to train, develop and use our incredible mind power to His glory and honour. The overwhelming majority of humans use their Yahweh-given abilities to seek for and attain material knowledge for their own selfish and vain ambitions - and most will even admit this!

There are a very few at the opposite end of the spectrum who believe that Bible study is all we should do in order to obtain an education, and that we should set aside all materialistic pursuits. Neither extreme is true education.

The Messiah did not come so that we might be uneducated and live in poverty. Instead, He said: "I am come that they might have LIFE, and that they might have it more abundantly" (*John 10:10*). The Messiah hoped that we would allow a Yahweh-centred, true education to make it possible for us to live ever-expanding, happy, joyous, productive, creative and prosperous lives, intelligently using the creation the way it was intended to be used!

The Bible is not a book of sentimental religion, nor is it the repository for all knowledge. It is precisely and simply what it says it is - the first basic premise, or starting point for every pursuit. It contains the basic premise from which we attain all additional knowledge, whether knowledge of science, history, psychology, genetics, sound business practices, health, family and community or international government relations, social sciences, sex - virtually ALL branches of knowledge.

To become truly educated in any area of knowledge, the Bible must come alive. It contains practical, common sense, sound principles, that when applied, always bring about successful and prosperous results. Just like it says it will! "Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in [*good*] health, even as thy soul [*spirit*] prospereth" (*III John 2*).

The Messiah encourages us to rely on Yahweh for our physical needs - to provide food, shelter and clothing. BUT, few people grasp the true meaning and intent of the conditions for the Messiah's promise in Matthew 6:33: "BUT seek ye FIRST the Kingdom of Yahweh, and His righteousness (*revealed truths*); and all these THINGS shall [then] be ADDED unto you". Notice the Messiah does not tell us to discard every material thing on the way to becoming educated, He simply tells us to make seeking

Yahweh and the Kingdom our FIRST priority, as they are the most important! There are other things to seek as second, third, and fourth priorities, etc., but the problem with most people is that they make money, a career choice, a love interest, or acquiring some form of material knowledge their number one aim in life, while relegating Yahweh to a lesser, if not the least important pursuit of their lives!

So we see that education is not something you go out and get, it is rather a way of life. Education is rightly developed character, and that may not come easy. Most want to be considered successful and well educated, but they do not really understand the meaning behind the words. Generally what they are wanting is simply a superficial recognition for WHO they are, rather than WHAT type of person they are - too much emphasis on the package and not the contents!

If you are seeking to be a truly educated, well-rounded individual, you first need to know WHAT that means, and then you need to be prepared to work hard to achieve it - for the rest of your life! There are seven basic aspects of obtaining an education revealed within the Biblical accounts that may provide you with some assistance in achieving yours:

1. Build a solid spiritual foundation based on Yahweh's freely revealed laws. We were designed and placed on this earth to become educated in spiritual AND material knowledge. Unless proper spiritual knowledge is the foundation of our life, most everything we do, is more apt than not, to be based on wrong information. The Messiah gave His disciples knowledge, but then He admonished them to GO OUT AND APPLY IT.

Those who DO what He freely revealed, He likened to building on a rock foundation, whereas those who make their life based solely on human reasoning, He likened to building on sand. Remember not only to learn the Spiritual intent of the revealed knowledge - but to

APPLY it. That is where the results come from - this APPLICATION is the cause for the desired effect!

2. Capture the vision of the type of person you would like to be. We are told that people perish without vision in Proverbs 29:18, and in Proverbs 23:7, that; "For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he". The Messiah many times admonished us to "follow Him", or to imitate Him - to use Him as an example of what type of person we would aspire to be. As Paul relates: "For you yourselves know how you ought to IMITATE US; we were not idle when we were with you".

Paul and his companions worked hard, being careful to pay for all of their own needs. Notice WHY: "It was not that we have not that right [*to accept gifts*], but to GIVE YOU in our conduct an EXAMPLE TO IMITATE" (*II Thes. 3:7-9 RSV*). And Paul further clarifies this in I Cor. 11:1; "Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of the Messiah". Respect the wise counsel of your elders such as the Messiah, Paul and other lesser but wiser, accomplished people of history, or within your own family or community, and look up to and abide the advice given by such people, providing you always check that their advice is based upon true Biblical premise. It is your responsibility to "Prove all things", as the Bible instructs.

3. Prepare and plan with much patience, to work hard to achieve your goals. It's been said that opportunity favours the prepared man. Proverbs 24:27 says, "FIRST work your farm, and till the soil - THEN marry and set up house". Notice the system of priorities. Many set out with every passion and desire to find that special someone, while spending little time or effort to secure a good job or to better themselves educationally. Most people do not understand that marriage is a Yahweh-plane relationship which is symbolic of the marriage of the Messiah to His Congregation [*His obedient believers - those*

*that APPLY His revealed truths].* So many enter into the marriage not really committed, thinking that divorce is always an option. But regardless of what society teaches, marriage is a sacred covenant, not only between husband and wife, but between THEM and Yahweh, and should not be made hastily, without counting the cost, and only after much planning and preparation. Likewise, we must realize that we are not ready to jump into a career or to immediately pursue any major objective without much planning and preparation.

Planning, preparation and hard work requires patience, and it may not always come easy. Why else do so many frustrated people suddenly realize after years of unhappiness, that they are in a job they hate, a marriage they want out of, or a life they do not enjoy? Because of impatience, or not counting the cost of their decisions - by not APPLYING the first basic premise - by not making the decisions based on the right foundational knowledge - not planning and preparing prior to making the decision.

The Messiah said of those who apply patience, that they are: "...those who, having heard [*understood*] the word [*the truth about right and wrong knowledge*] with a noble and good heart, keep it [*apply its principles*] and bear fruit [*are successful*] with patience [*planning, hard work and preparation*]" (Luke 8:15). Planning and preparation often incur many difficulties while exercising your patience. This is where faith in the absolute validity of Yahweh's revelations of basic knowledge comes into play. We are instructed to "count it all joy when you fall into various trials [*problems or difficulties*], knowing that the testing of your faith produces patience. BUT let patience [*proper planning, hard work and preparation*] have its perfect [*prosperous and abundantly successful*] work, that you may be perfect and complete, lacking nothing" (James 1:2-4). Count the cost and be prepared to work

hard and properly plan and prepare prior to making life's crucial decisions.

4. Learn to be humble like Yahweh. Yahweh - our Creator, truly does want us to be happy, and to realize that we should want to imitate this all-powerful, all-knowing Being! Notice how we do that: "For all [*material*] things hath mine hand made...but to this man will I look [*to provide them with*], even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth [*has faith*] at My Word" (Isa. 66:2). Yahweh also says that He "dwells", or freely shares His advice - His revelations of what is right and wrong, with "him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit" (Isa. 57:15).

To listen to and heed the wise counsel of older, wiser, more accomplished individuals takes much humility. Adhering to and diligently obeying Yahweh's advice - His freely given Laws, concerning success in business, family, community, international relations, and virtually every other of our endeavours, requires even greater humility. We must not let the vanity of our typical "know-it-all", or "know-a-better-way" human nature get in the way of a right, Yahweh-centred education.

5. Strive for excellence in everything you do. Your job is a career. Your marriage, preparing for Yahweh's Kingdom - every one of your prioritized objectives should be treated with the planning, hard work and preparation of a career - the best you can.

Ecclesiastics 9:10 instructs us that "Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might [as best as you can]; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest".

We have only a limited time during this life in which to become educated. We need to learn to simplify our lives and the things that we do, in order to devote quality time for proper planning, hard work and preparation for each of our important educational pursuits: Yahweh,

family, work, the community and our other educational hobbies.

Yahweh gave us minds meant to be developed and trained to operate efficiently and effectively - if we always do the best that we can. And when we do, we will enjoy the fruits of a happy, prosperous, healthy, successful, secure and abundant life.

6. Continually seek for and accept new challenges in your life. Always observe, think and learn, while seeking more productive and efficient ways of doing things. You have the mind to do it, which is what makes life interesting and is the catalyst for stimulating growth. Unless we deliberately make efforts to go beyond what we have already mastered, we will never grow.

A life full of obstacles and challenges is a blessing, providing a wealth of opportunities to work hard for, to plan and prepare for and to conquer each and every one of them, while gaining an invaluable education - its called experience!

7. Realize that true education never stops, but is rather a life-long pursuit. Focus on developing the whole you. Education is not merely learning how to earn a living, it is learning how to live - it is building character. Never stop in your studies of great men; always seek counsel of wiser, successful elders before big decisions - there are always some around.

If you do not know any personally, then take the wisest advice of all - seek for the fundamental guidance - the first basic premise of all knowledge - accept Yahweh's Word on the topic you are pursuing. Continue to develop communication and social skills - build new friendships, broaden your existing relationships. Look for and take advantage of new opportunities to learn, to participate, to help, to share what you know - to become truly educated.

None of us have yet attained the perfect education. We can all continue to put our absolute best into becoming as close as humanly possible to our greatest role model. I've chosen the Messiah and His Apostles as my personal and foremost examples to imitate with all my might.

I truly hope that you will come to understand that there is a definite correlation between physical and spiritual prosperity. Yahweh - your Creator, does want you to lead a happy, successful, exciting life - He cares enough to have even freely given you a complete "instruction manual" on how to do just that! Most do not enjoy His blessings because for one reason or another, they refuse to accept His advice - they actually think they know better!

Begin now by submitting to Yahweh in all humility, then seek His Kingdom with all your might. Beyond that, if you make Yahweh the centre of your life by seeking out and accepting His sound advice on every other goal or topic you have an interest in, you will need to plan for and prepare to enjoy a life of happiness and abundant blessings. It works - Yahweh really does know just a little bit more than most of us! Put it to the test - try Him out - its absolutely FREE and guaranteed to work! When you put Him to the test, what an education you will have!

This article is a small insight into some of the most basic Bible topics. It is my very best effort to share some of the simple concepts outlined in the Bible. I have faith that if you read it with an open mind, it will stimulate and motivate you in your pursuit of a well-rounded, complete and true education - it WILL inspire you to actually read the Bible, and APPLY its principles, which is the way to achieving the happy, successful, healthy and abundant life you surely have always hoped for.

## **THOUGHTS ON EDUCATION Part II**

Do you think for yourself? Now there is a question that would inspire a variety of heated responses from people! "You better believe I think for myself! No one is going to tell me what to do," most people would say. But there is a vast difference in doing what you want or feel like doing, versus actually LEARNING TO THINK FOR YOURSELF. Most people simply do what they want or feel like doing, which is the very reason why most of them never actually think! And, most do not understand the difference!

An example in point. Examine any modern textbook today and you will see that Darwin's theory of evolution - not the Bible, is the foundational doctrine upon which all education is based. Evolution and the resulting "scientific" education based upon it, are something that the overwhelming majority in society accept with very little questioning. Yet even many of the most scientific minds acknowledge the numerous flaws in the improvable theory! The same theory that was refuted by Darwin himself!

Religion, if people are honest, is also something most people take completely for granted. Most believe what they have grown up to believe, never stopping to consider why - or to wonder if they could actually prove it one way or the other. You would expect the most convincing argument refuting evolution to come from the field of religion, yet the average church goer cannot answer the questions because most of them do not even read the Bible, and many that do, certainly do not understand it, so they take someone else's word for it.

There are thousands of awesome proofs, refuting absolutely any possibility of evolution right before our very eyes - yet most cannot even see them! Ask any botanist how many plant species are totally dependent upon co-existent insects, or ask any biologist how

many animal species are totally dependent upon co-existent plants - the answer is every single one of them! In other words, they all had to be there from the beginning at precisely the same time in order to have survived. Even the simple question of which came first, the chicken or the egg, will confuse most people.

Yet if you actually think just a tiny bit, you will realize that neither the chicken nor the egg could have come first - the only way the species could have begun, was with a chicken AND a rooster, otherwise the first egg would not have hatched! Ask any proponent of evolution to explain how every species of plant and animal on the planet evolved both male and female counterparts at precisely the same time (in order to multiply), and you will find that none have an acceptable answer beyond "it must have just happened"!

The greatest proof that evolution is an impossible and very childish theory, is the very existence of man - who, because of the human spirit, has MIND POWER - the ability to think, reason, plan, design and create things. Animals are driven by instinct and nowhere in the evolutionary theory is there any explanation for the incredible leap between dumb animals and the mind of man - in fact, nowhere in the evolutionary theory can its proponents even answer the simpler question of how the plant species suddenly made the gigantic leap to instinctive animals.

Just consider the awesome advancements in technology and science created by man and then consider the non-existent contributions to society set forth by the plant or animal kingdoms.

Only man of all living organisms can THINK! What a privilege! Yet thinking is something else that most simply take for granted - and rarely actually DO! There is a reason WHY we can think - there is a reason that Yahweh gave you a mind! He gave it that we might educate ourselves to use it - properly.

As we look around in this decadent society, we see the fruit of minds that have become twisted and perverted by being educated from the scientific premise. We have become a society of daydreamers and drifters, with the average North American watching nearly 45 hours of television weekly.

Television requires no thinking and is a thief of time! More than ever before, children read less, spend less time outdoors, get little if any real exercise, have poor appetites yet struggle with weight problems, poor diets and health, and most importantly, they spend less time thinking - because they spend up to 60 hours per week watching television, playing with mindless video and computer games, or countless other electronic babysitting toys, while consuming vast mountains of junk food.

Think about the negative effect this has on the mind - especially the young, impressionable minds of children. TV promotes daydreaming, the exact opposite of thinking. It fills willing minds with thousands of distorted, unrealistic and often perverted images while robbing the mind of the time to spend investigating and discovering the natural world around them. If you add all of the other distracting gadgets we have at our fingertips, it is not hard to see why so many find it hard to concentrate, why we constantly need a "break", and why most simply do not enjoy thinking! Not only have people not been trained to think, they have been conditioned - trained NOT to think.

Certainly the breakdown in the family and the overall moral slide of society contributes to our collective lack of educational thought. Studies show that parents, or step-parents in many cases, are not as concerned about poor grade reports from their children as they used to be. One study showed that one third of parents did not even know what kind of grades their children were getting! In the same study, nearly 25% of high school students said they did not apply themselves in school for fear

of what their classmates might think - it is not "cool" to be smart! Certainly peer pressure discourages thought - especially of those minds that are already too lazy to think for themselves.

For those students who are concerned about grades, an increasing number are cheating for a higher mark. In fact, North Americans have become quite accomplished cheaters. Honesty is no longer the best policy - not if you want to get promoted. Politicians cheat - and lie about it, celebrities cheat - and brag about it, bankers cheat - and deny it, athletes cheat - and claim "everyone" is doing it, and the average citizen cheats on a daily basis in ways far too numerous to list. Students cheat - and admit feeling better about getting an "A" by cheating than a "B" for their own hard work! Obviously cheating does not stimulate educational thought.

Aside from dishonesty, the working world does not stimulate thinking - in fact it discourages it in most cases. We are a people who no longer attain satisfaction and enjoyment through work. Work has become the dreaded "four" letter word. Most people work in a mindless job with a boss over them because they do not have the mental discipline to create or manage their own work.

The working world also discourages productivity. Although we are working more hours than in years past (solely to get more money) we are getting less done! We are beginning to reap the rewards of two or three generations of workers who have grown up in the age of television and "free thinking", which is more accurately non-thinking!

Add to these factors the tremendous wealth and prosperity we have enjoyed, and you end up with people conditioned to, and desiring only a life of ease - of not thinking. When its time for vacation, most desire a place where they can just free their minds (from what I do not know)! Very few, actually just want to

get away to think and collect their thoughts. We don't have time for that! We work for pay and when it's time to get away, we want to go to "never-never-land". The gregarious, push-button lifestyle of western civilization does not develop a thoughtful people.

Do we realize that even a democracy does not encourage deep thought? The very nature of our government structure promotes conformity - find a group you belong with and vote for them - don't think - just conform! Try being a non-conformist in this arena - actually THINK of and suggest better ways to govern, and like a few other thinkers over the years, you will not only be ridiculed, but more than likely arrested!

Added together, all of these factors make it very difficult for us to properly educate our minds - our foremost purpose in life! We must forsake the thinking of this world and learn to think like Yahweh! You can do it. You CAN learn to think, reason, meditate and educate yourself to actually create like the Yahweh of this universe - but it will take work - hard work.

Hebrews 11:3 says that Yahweh made the visible things of this universe out of nothing! How creative - what a thinker! How long must Yahweh have thought about and planned such an awesome creation. When you consider that we were created in His image and likeness (*Gen. 1:26*), with minds capable of thinking, reasoning, planning and creating like Him, how sad that most do not exercise those minds - do not educate them through proper thinking.

A great thinker has vision. He has mental discipline. He exercises patience in planning and preparing for his actions, knowing that there is a time for certain things (*Ecccl. 3:1-8*). But learning to think like Yahweh is not a "gift" as many traditional Christians would have you believe - the mind is the gift. Learning, or educating the mind involves a great deal of thought - it involves a change of mind! "Be not

conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, Will of Yahweh" (*Rom. 12:1-2*). This timeless advice was first handed down to the ancient Israelites in Exodus 23:2, where they were instructed to "NOT follow a multitude [the crowd] to do evil [the things of the world]". II Corinthians 10:5 gets even more specific: "Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of Yahweh, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of the Messiah".

Contrary to what traditional Christians profess, Yahweh is not looking for people who will just give their "hearts" to Him and get "saved" that they might "go to heaven", just as they are. Yahweh is looking to WORK with people who are willing to WORK with Him - who are willing to put the effort into thinking AND acting like He does.

In conclusion, there are three broad points to consider when planning and preparing to educate your own mind.

1. Realize that you alone have control over your own thoughts and what you think about. There is a story which perfectly illustrates this point in a book entitled, *Every Man and a King*, by Orison Marden. He writes, "A certain man of no great learning, so runs an old legend, fell heir to a ship. He knew nothing of the sea, nothing of navigation or engineering, but the notion seized him to take a voyage and command his own ship. The ship was gotten underway, the self-appointed captain allowing the crew to go ahead with their usual duties, as the multiplicity of the operations confused the amateur navigator.

Once out to sea, however, the work grew simpler, and the captain had time to observe what was going on. As he strolled on the forward deck, he saw a man turning a big wheel, now this way, now that.

“What in the world is that man doing?” he asked.

“That’s the helmsman. He is steering the ship”

“Well, I don’t see any use in his fiddling away there all the time. There’s nothing but water ahead, and I guess the sails can push her forward. When there’s land in sight, or a ship coming head on, there’ll be time enough to do steering. Put up all the sails and let her go.”

“The order was obeyed and the few survivors of the wreck that followed had cause to remember the fool captain who thought a ship steered herself.

“You say no such man ever existed, and you are right. That isn’t admitting that no such foolishness exists, however. You wouldn’t be so foolish, would you?”

“Think a moment. Are you not in command of something more delicate, more precious, than any ship - your own life, YOUR OWN MIND? How much attention are you giving to the steering of your mind?”

Most people believe, or act like they believe, that they are merely victims of circumstance - just going along with the flow, never realizing that all along, they, and they alone, were in control of their own destiny. As in the story, your circumstances may determine what you were born into, but they do not determine where you will go - you do that!

Just as we choose what to eat, read or wear, or when to get up, or which dreams to pursue, which job to seek, which person to marry, so we can choose which images we allow our minds to dwell on. Col. 3:1 relates the same thing as the above story: “If ye then be risen with the Messiah, seek those things which are above, where the Messiah sitteth on the right hand of Yahweh”.

*Thayer’s Lexicon* defines the word “seek” as: “to seek in order to find out by thinking, meditating, reasoning; to inquire into”. Yahweh intended our thoughts to govern our

actions. You can either set your mind to steer the ship or you can let it drift aimlessly in an ocean where Satan reigns supreme. Most choose the latter, many even believing that Satan does not exist, or holds no sway over their destiny! Wonder why so many that do not choose to think their actions through, end up in experiencing divorce, bankruptcy, single parenthood, abortions, disease, unemployment, accidents, injury, environmental crisis, and on and on it goes.

If you continue reading in Colossians 3, Paul lists several things on which you should and should not be thinking. It’s all in an effort to “put on the new man [or mind], which is renewed in the knowledge after the image of Him that created him” (v.10). We become like Yahweh when we learn to discipline ourselves to think on the things that Yahweh thinks on.

2. Create an environment suitable for thinking. The familiar story of Lot and his family illustrates the damaging effects of living in a morally bankrupt society - which is precisely what our modern “free-thinking” society is. Yahweh told Lot to gather his family and leave Sodom, for Yahweh was going to completely wipe it out because it had become a society without restraint - one of complete mental freedom to think about and do whatever you wanted or felt like!

Sound familiar? How many times have you heard people say, “I can do whatever I want, as long as it does not hurt anyone else, or I don’t force it upon others”? But, what these self-gratifying people do not understand and consequently never think about, is the fact that the visual effect of their actions, ALWAYS has a lasting impact upon the minds of everyone around them - it involuntarily but most certainly programs the “theatre” of the mind.

In fact, many of these minority groups, are so organized in their perverted behaviour, that not only do they force it upon others, via parades and other public spectacles, they have

even been successful in causing our governments to grant them “special” rights and privileges which are in addition to the rights of normal people. Lot even offered his two virgin daughters to a raping mob hoping they would leave his house alone. But because they had become so twisted and perverted, the men of Sodom no longer wanted women - they wanted men!

As they were fleeing the city, Lot’s wife looked back with longing to the society she had come to love; the society in which a violent, raping mob almost sexually assaulted her own daughters! She had become so wrapped up in the decadence of the day that she actually hated to leave it. She was not willing to completely forsake the wrong ways - the way of sin. Because of that, she became a pillar of salt - or simply put, she died with the rest of the sinners.

The point is, you cannot stay in the midst of the same old habits, or circle of friends, or allow yourself to watch those kind of things that you are trying to stop, and expect to control your mind. At some point you must flee old habits and wrongful thinking.

But Satan is the “god of this world”, as the Messiah Himself declared. So how can we come out of this world if he is its god? The Messiah answered that in John 17: “I pray not that thou [*Yahweh*] shouldst take them out of the world, but thou shouldst keep [guard or protect] them from the evil [that is in the world]”. The Messiah did not wish or expect us to be isolated in some secluded cabin away from society - He simply prayed that *Yahweh* would help us to build up a protective hedge around us and our thinking, to keep us from the evil influences surrounding us.

Your mind thinks and meditates on a constant succession of connected images. The images which have transformed the thinking of most in this society are of sex and violence. We have to avoid those areas and people

which fill our minds with negative imagery, which sometimes NEVER leaves!

But it is more than just avoiding people or things which pour out negative imagery - we have to begin thinking about what’s right - setting our minds on things above, as Paul said. Strive for a healthy, well-balanced life to improve the quality of your thought production. Developing and educating a thoughtful and creative mind is impossible if you get too much or too little sleep, too much or too little exercise, too much or the wrong kind of food.

Just think about the negative effects of so-called “night life”. Night life does not prepare people for the day - it does just the opposite. Work ends and then the fun begins, leaving many exhausted in the mornings, seeking stimulants to wake them up so they can trudge through another day of their mindless job. Think about what this lifestyle does to productive thought.

We are to use the night to prepare for the day - that is what *Yahweh* intended when He created the night AND the day! Use the night wisely - go to bed early, rising early the next morning, often before most others, feeling refreshed and invigorated and ready to gather your thoughts, thinking about, planning and preparing for your day. The Messiah was great with people. His friends and companions loved Him dearly, and the hearts of the disciples glowed with admiration when in His presence (*Luke 24:32*). Yet the Messiah realized the value and vital importance of solitary time. In fact, He craved it!

“And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, He went out and departed into a SOLITARY place, and there prayed” (*Mark 1:35*). He was not out late the night before - He rose early and began by focusing His thoughts on *Yahweh* - on the things above. Notice Matthew 14:23: “And when He had sent the multitudes away, He went up into a mountain APART to pray: and when the

evening was come, He was there alone". The Messiah also ended His day seeking those things from above - praying and thinking on the things of Yahweh.

Great men of the Bible repeatedly sought after Yahweh and His thoughts early, when it was most quiet, and when their minds, refreshed from a night of sleep, and free from all of the cares of the coming day, were most impressionable.

Take steps to eliminate all possible external distractions to thought, and then practice Messiah-like thinking - in the mornings to fully and adequately prepare for the day, and in the evenings, to fully and adequately prepare for a calm and restful sleep during the night.

3. Fix firmly in your mind that educating yourself to think like Yahweh is a habit. Paul, because of his life of sinful activity prior to encountering the Messiah, was well aware of how bad habits could affect the mind. He had much to say about changing your mind - about getting away from bad habits and acquiring new, good habits. He was speaking as one with authority on the issue, as indeed he did have much experience from which to draw. In his case, it was not simply a matter of sharing the revealed truths, but rather sharing them as they related to his and every other sinner's (*like you and me*) life.

It is not unlike exercising the body. Your mind also becomes conditioned by what it does, or does not do. In Philippians 4, Paul exhorts the brethren to be of one mind - Yahweh's mind that is. He continues on in verse 7, with more details of what this means: "And the peace of Yahweh, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds through Yah'shua the Messiah".

Solomon, whom Yahweh stated was the wisest of all men, past, present and future, when asked by Yahweh what he desired most, replied simply, that he wanted Yahweh to grant him wisdom in understanding the things of

Yahweh (*See 1 Kings, Chapter 3*). Not only did Yahweh grant Solomon's request, He graciously, and in addition, granted him more material riches and honour than any other man as well!

Yahweh will protect our minds, but this does not mean that we need do nothing! We must do our part. And in verse 8, our part is further clarified: "Finally, brethren, whatever things are true, whatever things are noble, whatever things are just, whatever things are pure, whatever things are lovely, whatever things are of good report, if there is any virtue and if there is anything praiseworthy - meditate on these things. The things which you learned and received and heard and saw in me, these DO, and the Yahweh of peace will be with you".

It is vitally important that we realize the significance of the order in which these things occur. FIRST we think - THEN we act. Your thought, or lack thereof, governs your actions, which are the causes for the effects in your life. Bad, or incorrect actions based on lack of thought result in bad or unpleasant effects.

Good, or correct actions based upon well thought out plans, result in good or productive effects. And the best way to ensure that good effects always happen in your life, is to develop good habits of always thinking things through from a Biblical perspective - a perspective of revealed truths, which are the first basic premise to any of your endeavours.

Most non-religious people assume the Bible was written to inform them about basic religion. Most religious people think the Bible was written merely to inform the mind about details of religion - about Yahweh, the life of the Messiah and possibly some doctrinal information.

Both groups are only partly correct. The biggest mistake made by almost everyone, is that the Bible is NOT merely a book of information to fill the mind - it is a book of information purposefully designed to CHANGE

your mind - or to RENEW it to its perfect state as it was originally designed!

True education is nothing if not the persistent and determined training of the mind, to think, act and reason like the mind of Yahweh - like the mind it was patterned after! David, whom Yahweh said was "a man after His own heart", wrote: "I will delight myself in thy statutes: I will not forget thy word" (*Ps. 119:16*). He did not forget Yahweh's word because of what he says in verse 15: "I will meditate in thy precepts, and have respect unto thy ways". David read, studied and then meditated, or thought about what he read several times over!

Continue from this inspiring Psalm: "O how love I thy law! It is my meditation all the day. Thou through thy commandments hast made me wiser than mine enemies: for they are ever with me. I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation". David completed his studies later as he meditated on Yahweh's testimonies - His revealed truths - the fundamental starting point for all things.

The Messiah was the greatest thinker who ever lived on earth, yet most do not try to emulate His way of thinking. They assume - which is a way of NOT thinking, that the Messiah's way is just not practical in this modern world. THAT'S NONSENSE!

The Bible is the only absolutely practical book ever written, revealing principles which, when applied, bring about rock-solid, positive results - every time, freeing you from the artificial limitations of an otherwise "no thinking" lifestyle, common to most people in our society! And they always will - even for eternity!

Practice these timeless principles. Take the Bible at its word. Most people, even in religion, do not take the Bible at its word, otherwise there would not be so much religious deception and division in this world. Believe the Bible and not men!

Think on these things. Then, APPLY them and prepare for the freedom to become truly educated! And as you develop that education, you will find yourself taking on the very nature and character of Yahweh Himself - and that's a good thing!

Acquiring a NEW MIND is simply a matter of changing the old mind - of exercising the freedom to develop and maintain the habits necessary to truly educate your mind. This book, "A New Mind" is simply purposed to inspire you to change your mind about the Bible. It is designed to inspire you to actually read and apply the many Biblically revealed truths in your day to day living.

I hope, when you have finished reading this book for yourself, that you have not only been inspired to read the Bible, but to share the inspiration of this book with others as well. There are no copyrights or restrictions on the material contained in this book, other than it must always be shared freely - not sold, and in its entirety, so feel free to make copies for your friends and loved ones, or write to us, with the names and addresses for any number of free copies you wish us to send.

Remember. The foremost purpose of the Bible is to change, or renew your mind for the purpose of allowing you the freedom to enjoy the only opportunity of truly training and educating your mind during this lifetime.

The foremost purpose of your life, is to become educated after the image and likeness of your Creator - your loving Father. That is why He has so graciously given you all of the necessary tools!

Your mind, patterned after His, together with His instruction book - the Bible, are your free keys to an infinite gift - a brand new mind. Turn the keys - the rewards are eternal!

## **Against Public School:**

### **by our Volunteer Correspondent # 9:**

● Edited and re-written from "**How public education cripples our kids, and why**  
**By John Taylor Gatto**"

*John Taylor Gatto is a former New York State and New York City Teacher of the Year and the author, most recently, of The Underground History of American Education. He was a participant in the Harper's Magazine forum "School on a Hill," which appeared in the September 2003 issue.*

I taught for thirty years in some of the worst schools in Manhattan, and in some of the best, and during that time I became an expert in boredom. Boredom was everywhere in my world, and if you asked the kids, as I often did, why they felt so bored, they always gave the same answers: They said the work was stupid, that it made no sense, that they already knew it. They said they wanted to be doing something real, not just sitting around. They said teachers didn't seem to know much about their subjects and clearly weren't interested in learning more. And the kids were right: their teachers were every bit as bored as they were.

Boredom is the common condition of schoolteachers, and anyone who has spent time in a teachers' lounge can vouch for the low energy, the whining, the dispirited attitudes, to be found there. When asked why they feel bored, the teachers tend to blame the kids, as you might expect. Who wouldn't get bored teaching students who are rude and interested only in grades? If even that.

Of course, teachers are themselves products of the same twelve-year compulsory school programs that so thoroughly bore their students, and as school personnel they are trapped inside structures even more rigid than those imposed upon the children. Who, then, is to blame?

We all are. My grandfather taught me that. One afternoon when I was seven I

complained to him of boredom, and he batted me hard on the head. He told me that I was never to use that term in his presence again, that if I was bored it was my fault and no one else's. The obligation to amuse and instruct myself was entirely my own, and people who didn't know that were childish people, to be avoided if possible. Certainty not to be trusted.

That episode cured me of boredom forever, and here and there over the years I was able to pass on the lesson to some remarkable student. For the most part, however, I found it futile to challenge the official notion that boredom and childishness were the natural state of affairs in the classroom. Often I had to defy custom, and even bend the law, to help kids break out of this trap.

The empire struck back, of course; childish adults regularly conflate opposition with disloyalty. I once returned from a medical leave to discover that all evidence of my having been granted the leave had been purposely destroyed, that my job had been terminated, and that I no longer possessed even a teaching license. After nine months of tormented effort I was able to retrieve the license when a school secretary testified to witnessing the plot unfold. In the meantime my family suffered more than I care to remember.

By the time I finally retired in 1991, I had more than enough reason to think of our schools-with their long-term, cell-block-style, forced confinement of both students and teachers-as virtual factories of childishness. Yet I honestly could not see why they had to be that way. My own experience had revealed to me what many other teachers must learn along the way, too, yet keep to themselves for fear of reprisal: if we wanted to we could easily and inexpensively jettison the old, stupid structures and help kids take an education rather than merely receive a schooling.

We could encourage the best qualities of youthfulness-curiosity, adventure, resilience,

the capacity for surprising insight simply by being more flexible about time, texts, and tests, by introducing kids to truly competent adults, and by giving each student what autonomy he or she needs in order to take a risk every now and then.

But we don't do that. And the more I asked why not, and persisted in thinking about the "problem" of schooling as an engineer might, the more I missed the point: What if there is no "problem" with our schools? What if they are the way they are, so expensively flying in the face of common sense and long experience in how children learn things, not because they are doing something wrong but because they are doing something right? Is it possible that George W. Bush accidentally spoke the truth when he said we would "leave no child behind"? Could it be that our schools are designed to make sure not one of them ever really grows up?

Do we really need school? I don't mean education, just forced schooling: six classes a day, five days a week, nine months a year, for twelve years. Is this deadly routine really necessary? And if so, for what? Don't hide behind reading, writing, and arithmetic as a rationale, because 2 million happy home-schoolers have surely put that banal justification to rest. Even if they hadn't, a considerable number of well-known Americans never went through the twelve-year wringer our kids currently go through, and they turned out all right. George Washington, Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson, Abraham Lincoln? Someone taught them, to be sure, but they were not products of a school system, and not one of them was ever "graduated" from a secondary school.

Throughout most of American history, kids generally didn't go to high school, yet the unschooled rose to be admirals, like Farragut; inventors, like Edison; captains of industry like Carnegie and Rockefeller; writers, like Melville

and Twain and Conrad; and even scholars, like Margaret Mead. In fact, until pretty recently people who reached the age of thirteen weren't looked upon as children at all. Ariel Durant, who co-wrote an enormous, and very good, multivolume history of the world with her husband, Will, was happily married at fifteen, and who could reasonably claim that Ariel Durant was an uneducated person? Unschooled, perhaps, but not uneducated.

We have been taught (*that is, schooled*) in this country to think of "success" as synonymous with, or at least dependent upon, "schooling," but historically that isn't true in either an intellectual or a financial sense. And plenty of people throughout the world today find a way to educate themselves without resorting to a system of compulsory secondary schools that all too often resemble prisons. Why, then, do Americans confuse education with just such a system? What exactly is the purpose of our public schools?

Mass schooling of a compulsory nature really got its teeth into the United States between 1905 and 1915, though it was conceived of much earlier and pushed for throughout most of the nineteenth century. The reason given for this enormous upheaval of family life and cultural traditions was, roughly speaking, threefold:

- 1) To make good people.
- 2) To make good citizens.
- 3) To make each person his or her personal best.

These goals are still trotted out today on a regular basis, and most of us accept them in one form or another as a decent definition of public education's mission, however short schools actually fall in achieving them. But we are dead wrong. Compounding our error is the fact that the national literature holds numerous and surprisingly consistent statements of compulsory schooling's true purpose. We have, for example, the great H. L. Mencken, who wrote in *The American Mercury* for April 1924 that the aim of public education

is not to fill the young of the species with knowledge and awaken their intelligence. ... Nothing could be further from the truth. The aim ... is simply to reduce as many individuals as possible to the same safe level, to breed and train a standardized citizenry, to put down dissent and originality – to craft the ultimate conformists. That is its aim in the United States... and that is its aim everywhere else.

Because of Mencken's reputation as a satirist, we might be tempted to dismiss this passage as a bit of hyperbolic sarcasm. His article, however, goes on to trace the template for our own educational system back to the now vanished, though never to be forgotten, military state of Prussia. And although he was certainly aware of the irony that we had recently been at war with Germany, the heir to Prussian thought and culture, Mencken was being perfectly serious here. Our educational system really is Prussian in origin, and that really is cause for concern.

The odd fact of a Prussian provenance for our schools pops up again and again once you know to look for it. William James alluded to it many times at the turn of the century. Orestes Brownson, the hero of Christopher Lasch's 1991 book, *The True and Only Heaven*, was publicly denouncing the Prussianization of American schools back in the 1840s. Horace Mann's "Seventh Annual Report" to the Massachusetts State Board of Education in 1843 is essentially a paean to the land of Frederick the Great and a call for its schooling to be brought here.

That Prussian culture loomed large in America is hardly surprising, given our early association with that utopian state. A Prussian served as Washington's aide during the Revolutionary War, and so many German-speaking people had settled here by 1795 that Congress considered publishing a German-language edition of the federal laws. But what shocks is that we should so eagerly have

adopted one of the very worst aspects of Prussian culture: an educational system deliberately designed to produce mediocre intellects, to hamstring the inner life, to deny students appreciable leadership skills, and to ensure docile and incomplete citizens in order to render the populace "manageable."

It was from James Bryant Conant—president of Harvard for twenty years, WWI poison-gas specialist, WWII executive on the atomic-bomb project, high commissioner of the American zone in Germany after WWII, and truly one of the most influential figures of the twentieth century—that I first got wind of the real purposes of American schooling. Without Conant, we would probably not have the same style and degree of standardized testing that we enjoy today, nor would we be blessed with gargantuan high schools that warehouse 2,000 to 4,000 students at a time, like the famous Columbine High in Littleton, Colorado.

Shortly after I retired from teaching I picked up Conant's 1959 book-length essay, *The Child the Parent and the State*, and was more than a little intrigued to see him mention in passing that the modern schools we attend were the result of a "revolution" engineered between 1905 and 1930. A revolution? He declines to elaborate, but he does direct the curious and the uninformed to Alexander Inglis's 1918 book, *Principles of Secondary Education*, in which "one saw this revolution through the eyes of a revolutionary."

Inglis, for whom a lecture in education at Harvard is named, makes it perfectly clear that compulsory schooling on this continent was intended to be just what it had been for Prussia in the 1820s: a fifth column into the burgeoning democratic movement that threatened to give the peasants and the proletarians a voice at the bargaining table. Modern, industrialized, compulsory schooling was to make a sort of surgical incision into the prospective unity of these underclass's. Divide children by subject,

by age-grading, by constant rankings on tests, and by many other more subtle means, and it was unlikely that the ignorant mass of mankind, separated in childhood, would ever re-integrate into a dangerous whole.

Inglis breaks down the purpose - the actual purpose - of modern schooling into six basic functions, any one of which is enough to curl the hair of those innocent enough to believe the three traditional goals listed earlier:

1) The *adjustive or adaptive* function. Schools are to establish fixed habits of reaction to authority. This, of course, precludes critical judgment completely. It also pretty much destroys the idea that useful or interesting material should be taught, because you can't test for reflexive obedience until you know whether you can make kids learn, and do, foolish and boring things.

2) The *integrating* function. This might well be called "the conformity function," because its intention is to make children as alike as possible. People who conform are predictable, and this is of great use to those who wish to harness and manipulate a large labor force.

3) The *diagnostic and directive* function. School is meant to determine each student's proper social role. This is done by logging evidence mathematically and anecdotally on cumulative records. As in "your permanent record." Yes, you do have one.

4) The *differentiating* function. Once their social role has been "diagnosed," children are to be sorted by role and trained only so far as their destination in the social machine merits - and not one step further. So much for making kids their personal best.

5) The *selective* function. This refers not to human choice at all but to Darwin's theory of natural selection as applied to what he called "the favoured races." In short, the idea is to help things along by consciously attempting to improve the breeding stock. Schools are meant

to tag the unfit - with poor grades, remedial placement, and other punishments - clearly enough that their peers will accept them as inferior and effectively bar them from the reproductive sweepstakes. That's what all those little humiliations from first grade onward were intended to do: wash the dirt down the drain.

6) The *propaedeutic* function. The societal system implied by these rules will require an elite group of caretakers. To that end, a small fraction of the kids will quietly be taught how to manage this continuing project, how to watch over and control a population deliberately dumbed down and declawed in order that government might proceed unchallenged and corporations might never want for obedient labour.

That, unfortunately, is the purpose of mandatory public education in this country. And lest you take Inglis for an isolated crank with a rather too cynical take on the educational enterprise, you should know that he was hardly alone in championing these ideas. Conant himself, building on the ideas of Horace Mann and others, campaigned tirelessly for an American school system designed along the same lines. Men like George Peabody, who funded the cause of mandatory schooling throughout the South, surely understood that the Prussian system was useful in creating not only a harmless electorate and a servile labour force but also a virtual herd of mindless consumers. In time a great number of industrial titans came to recognize the enormous profits to be had by cultivating and tending just such a herd via public education, among them Andrew Carnegie and John D. Rockefeller.

There you have it. Now you know. We don't need Karl Marx's conception of a grand warfare between the classes to see that it is in the interest of complex management, economic or political, to dumb people down, to demoralize them, to divide them from one

another, and to discard them if they don't conform. Class may frame the proposition, as when Woodrow Wilson, then president of Princeton University, said the following to the New York City School Teachers Association in 1909: "We want one class of persons to have a liberal education, and we want another class of persons, a very much larger class, of necessity, in every society, to forgo the privileges of a liberal education and fit themselves to perform specific difficult manual tasks."

But the motives behind the disgusting decisions that bring about these ends need not be class-based at all. They can stem purely from fear, or from the by now familiar belief that "efficiency" is the paramount virtue, rather than love, liberty, laughter, or hope. Above all, they can stem from simple greed.

There were vast fortunes to be made, after all, in an economy based on mass production and organized to favor the large corporation rather than the small business or the family farm. But mass production required mass consumption, and at the turn of the twentieth century most Americans considered it both unnatural and unwise to buy things they didn't actually need.

Mandatory schooling was a godsend on that count. School didn't have to train kids in any direct sense to think they should consume nonstop, because it did something even better: it encouraged them not to think at all. And that left them sitting ducks for another great invention of the modern era - marketing.

Now, you needn't have studied marketing to know that there are two groups of people who can always be convinced to consume more than they need to: addicts and children. School has done a pretty good job of turning our children into addicts, but it has done a spectacular job of turning our children into children. Again, this is no accident. Theorists from Plato to Rousseau to our own Dr. Inglis

knew that if children could be cloistered with other children, stripped of responsibility and independence, encouraged to develop only the trivializing emotions of greed, envy, jealousy, and fear, they would grow older but never truly grow up. In the 1934 edition of his once well-known book *Public Education in the United States*, Ellwood P. Cubberley detailed and praised the way the strategy of successive school enlargements had extended childhood by two to six years, and forced schooling was at that point still quite new.

This same Cubberley - who was dean of Stanford's School of Education, a textbook editor at Houghton Mifflin, and Conant's friend and correspondent at Harvard - had written the following in the 1922 edition of his book *Public School Administration*: "Our schools are ... factories in which the raw products (children) are to be shaped and fashioned .... And it is the business of the school to build its pupils according to the specifications laid down."

It's perfectly obvious from our society today what those specifications were. Maturity has by now been banished from nearly every aspect of our lives. Easy divorce laws have removed the need to work at relationships; easy credit has removed the need for fiscal self-control; easy entertainment has removed the need to learn to entertain oneself; easy answers have removed the need to ask questions. We have become a nation of children, happy to surrender our judgments and our wills to political exhortations and commercial blandishments that would insult actual adults.

We buy televisions, and then we buy the things we see on the television. We buy computers, and then we buy the things we see on the computer. We buy \$150 sneakers whether we need them or not, and when they fall apart too soon we buy another pair. We drive SUVs and believe the lie that they constitute a kind of life insurance, even when

we're upside-down in them. And, worst of all, we don't bat an eye when Ari Fleischer tells us to "be careful what you say," even if we remember having been told somewhere back in school that America is the land of the free. We simply buy that one too. Our schooling, as intended, has seen to it.

Now for the good news. Once you understand the logic behind modern schooling, its tricks and traps are fairly easy to avoid. School trains children to be employees and consumers; teach your own to be leaders and adventurers. School trains children to obey reflexively; teach your own to think critically and independently. Well-schooled kids have a low threshold for boredom; help your own to develop an inner life so that they'll never be bored.

Urge them to take on the serious material, the grown-up material, in history, literature, philosophy, music, art, economics, theology - all the stuff schoolteachers know well enough to avoid. Challenge your kids with plenty of solitude so that they can learn to enjoy their own company, to conduct inner dialogues. Well-schooled people are conditioned to dread being alone, and they seek constant companionship through the TV, the computer, the cell phone, and through shallow friendships quickly acquired and quickly abandoned. Your children should have a more meaningful life, and they can.

First, though, we must wake up to what our schools really are: laboratories of experimentation on young minds, drill centers for the habits and attitudes that corporate society demands in the crafting of the ultimate conformists.

Mandatory education serves children only incidentally; its real purpose is to turn them into servants. Don't let your own have their childhoods extended, not even for a day.

If David Farragut could take command of a captured British warship as a pre-teen, if

Thomas Edison could publish a broadsheet at the age of twelve, if Ben Franklin could apprentice himself to a printer at the same age (*then put himself through a course of study that would choke a Yale senior today*), there's no telling what your own kids could do.

After a long life, and thirty years in the public school trenches, I've concluded that genius is as common as dirt. We suppress our genius only because we haven't yet figured out how to manage a population of educated men and women – because we go to school. The solution, I think, is simple and glorious. Let them manage themselves.

## Observing Flawed Grammar:

### Inspired by our Volunteer Correspondent # 12:

I have read this statement on numerous *quasi* legal documents, and it always left me pondering. So I analyzed the grammar. Enjoy:

“Notice to Principal is Notice to Agent and  
Notice to Agent is Notice to Principal.”

Assuming “Joe” is the Principal; and assuming  
“someone else” is the Agent(s):

Sending Notice to Joe, is [*is = actually*]  
sending that Notice to “someone else”,  
meaning literally, that Joe did not receive what  
I sent him, and sending Notice to someone  
else, is [*is = actually*] sending that Notice to  
Joe, meaning literally, that someone else did  
not receive what I sent him either (*or them*).

So apparently if I send Notice to Joe, he  
will not get it, because sending it to him is  
actually sending it to someone else, and even if  
he admits getting it, it won't help me, because  
I've already told him that whatever Notice I sent  
him, it is was actually for someone else, so  
now everyone's confused, because even if  
someone else also gets Notice I sent, they are  
actually receiving it for Joe, so whoever they  
are, they can honestly say they did not get  
Notice from me, because the Notice they  
received was not for them.

Apparently everything was actually sent  
to someone else, while no one actually  
received any Notice.

## **Human Meta-Skills: Photo-Reading:**

### **Self-Engineering Skills to Enhance Information Assimilation & Memory**

The term “cryptomnesia”, refers to concealed memory recollection, which is akin to the latent ability to totally recall almost everything we have ever seen. Humans have unlimited memory, in the sense that no matter how much one remembers, with a little effort, one can always remember a little more.

Strong evidence suggests that all of us possess photographic memory capabilities far beyond what we may realize. Only a few people however, seem gifted with the natural ability to automatically retrieve and examine their mental “photographs” at will. Contrary to popular myth, most of these people are not geniuses, but rather average to below average intelligence.

They do however, know how to find out what they want, when they want it. Essentially this ability, or skill-set, enables people to learn and apply new information faster, because the new information they are exposed to is quickly interfaced with the information they already know. This article will introduce you to a specific learned skill called “Photo-Reading”; a skill that will help you learn the ability to automatically retrieve far more from your concealed memories than you hitherto thought possible.

There are a great many such skills that we can each learn to apply in differing ways to enhance our overall abilities. Each of these many abilities has become known as a “meta-skill”. There are meta-skills to enhance mathematics, reading, speaking, creative analysis, writing, problem solving, reasoning, amongst others.

Our ability to learn any new specialized skill, such as fully utilizing a computer’s

capacity as a tool, depends to a large measure on how well we have grasped these fundamental skills.

The specific skills of reading and comprehension have become inestimably vital to our successful participation in the modern world. Taken to their extreme as meta-skills, these unleashed, unlimited natural abilities become invaluable. Photo-Readers not only vastly increase the speed and quantity of reading, but have also proven to retain and retrieve useful data at many times their ordinary capacity and many times the capacity of their traditional counterparts.

How does it work? The explanation starts with an understanding of subliminal learning. The peculiar power of subliminal learning has long been recognised. As far back as 1916 researchers discovered and documented that sailors who were taught Morse Code in their sleep learned it three weeks faster than those who were taught normally. In 1954, a movie theatre in *Fort Lee, New Jersey*, experimented for six weeks with high speed advertisements on the screen between movie frames. Messages such as “eat popcorn” and “drink *Coca-Cola*” would blink onscreen for 40 milliseconds at a time, which is far too quickly to be consciously noticed. Yet during the six weeks of the tests, popcorn sales rose 57.7%, *Coca-Cola* sales increased 18.1%, and other soft drink sales increased dramatically as well.

Public disclosure of the experiments prompted widespread demands to outlaw subliminal advertising. The outcry soon died down and the practice was never banned! Subliminal advertising remains to this day a multi-billion dollar industry. Widespread evidence suggests that all digital audio and video recordings as well as all digital broadcasting venues contain subliminal messages, most often without the knowledge

of the producer/author/artist, or listener. Even “home-made” digital recordings of both audio and video are often subject to pre-recorded subliminal tracks on blank discs and tapes that are designed such that they cannot be erased or over-written. Big business and governments recognize the ultimate power of this tool, realizing that information perceived subconsciously impacts the brain and the memory much more quickly and far more powerfully than does conscious input.

In other words, everyone learns very fast at the subliminal level. Photo-Reading is a technique that recognizes this universal reality. To properly accomplish it, you must properly expose yourself to information far too quickly for your conscious mind to process it. Photo-Readers glance at each page for only a second or two, and immediately after finishing reading a book at this speed, they have no more conscious awareness of what they have read than the patrons in the *Fort Lee* theatre experiment. Yet like in the theatre, the “mental photographs” of the pages have a comprehensive and powerful impact on the brain. When properly understood, they can also be selectively activated for use later.

In 1985 and 1986 a man named *Paul Scheele* developed a standardized method for people from all walks of life to learn this meta-skill. His technique can be found in his book, “*The Photo-Reading Whole Mind System*” which has been sold by “*Learning Strategies Corporation*”, of *Minnesota*. The information contained herein, although remarkably similar, is presented from the author’s own, self-taught technique for accomplishing the same thing.

Normal reading is conducted at roughly the same speed as we speak, because we have usually been taught to “sub vocalize” the words that we read. This means that we are forcing the brain to accept input of new information that we read, at the same speed as

if we were speaking it. In other words, we are pretending that our brain’s speed capacity is similar to the speed at which we can speak, or about 150 to 170 words per minute on average. Subliminal learning skills prove that the brain is much, much faster.

The first step in speeding up the reading process was to advance from the speed of the mouth to the speed of the eyes. Conventional “Speed Reading” techniques teach us to eliminate the sub vocalization, and to concentrate simply on the words as fast as we are able to “see” them. This provides remarkable improvements in the overall speed of reading for many people. Typically, a good Speed Reader can effectively read about 3,500 to 5,000 or more words per minute with as good if not better retention than traditional readers. It is believed that the improved retention is due to the brain not being as “bored” with the input process as during normal sub-vocalized reading.

The next and obvious step to speeding up the reading process was to advance from the speed at which we can “see”, or focus, on words, to the speed at which the brain can actually process the visual data. This subliminal, or subconscious speed at which the brain can process visual data is much faster than even we can consciously “see” it when Speed Reading. This next step is Photo-Reading.

Not just anyone can do it. Everyone can do it because it is proven that everyone does it whether they will ever realize it or not. Standard reading tests given to *Scheele*’s students in 1986 showed results of being able to read in the range of 68,000 words per minute with about a 74 to 76% comprehension rate, far above conventional readers in both speed and retention. So since we are all assimilating information subliminally virtually all of the time, we might just as well learn how to

take the most possible advantage of it.

A simplified variation of this technique that has worked well for the author and many of the author's referrals, is as follows:

Firstly, your environment must be conducive to "relaxing". The idea here is to allow your brain to take in as much of the targeted information as it can, in as little time as possible, with as few interruptions, disturbances or distractions as possible. In fact, the same things that would interrupt concentration while "normal" reading was taking place, will have a multiplied effect on the Photo-Reading process. You can Photo-Read about 400 times faster, but interruptions, disturbances, and distractions can often also have about a 400 times the impact on your loss of concentration, retention and comprehension.

Even little things such as your physical discomfort during the process will greatly interfere. You must find a comfortable position that you know you will remain comfortable in for the duration of your Photo-Reading experience. If you have to think, even sub-consciously about moving and re-positioning yourself, you will lose valuable capacity. The most common successful position is widely accepted to be the sitting up, very straight-backed in a comfortable chair with both feet on the floor and the reading material in front of you on an angled surface facing directly at you when you position your head in its most comfortable angle (*for most people, about 15 degrees downward tilt*) and eyes looking straight out. This must also be such that your arms can comfortably rest one on each side of the reading material so that you can turn pages with a minimum of physical movement, basically just by moving your hands or fingers as little as possible, while your arms remain as comfortably still as possible.

No telephones ringing, no door-bells ringing or to be answered, absolutely no back-

ground music or disruptive noises, no distractions, no exceptions! You must go into the experience with a complete and absolute knowing that YOU WILL NOT BE DISTRACTED OR INTERRUPTED BY ANYTHING, BECAUSE YOU HAVE TAKEN THE PROPER MEASURES TO ENSURE IT. Otherwise you will simply be wasting your time.

Now when you can comfortably sit and look at the pages you want to read without having to move or tilt your head, then imagine you are hovering over yourself and staring (*not looking*) past your own head at both pages in front of you. When you do this you will notice your two hands holding the pages on each side. The technique of pretending to peer over your own head simply allows you to widen your visual perspective, allowing you to take in both pages at once.

Now concentrate on relaxing into the so-called Alpha State, where your brain waves are slowed to a leisurely 8 to 12 cycles per second rather than the normal 12 to 23 due to all of the "normal" distractions. Some people can automatically go into Alpha State from experience, others may never have heard of it. Don't worry, everyone also does this, it's just a matter of recognizing it. You might think of it as almost a "day-dream-like" state, yet still reasonably alert. Experts agree that this relaxed state is ideal for learning.

Now before you start reading, silently state, and repeat several times, and understand your purpose for reading your selected material. Your mind is very powerful and it is also very wise. You cannot "fool" it into taking the time to Photo-Read something that is not truly important to you. Information for information's sake, or the funnies for example, simply will not be retained by your mind because it knows truthfully that you are wasting its time. You must accept that your sub-conscious mind thinks, or operates almost

independently of your conscious desires. You cannot convince it of anything, unless you actually believe it yourself at the conscious level.

Your purpose for reading must be internally vocalized. What do you expect to gain from the material? Is it just interesting, or is it going to be helpful or useful in some specific way? What level of detail do you want? Do you need to remember every detail or just the major points in the chapters or in the book? Will you have need for the information immediately or at some distant future date? How much time are you truly willing to spend to learn this material?

Right before starting to Photo-Read, achieve a state of profound relaxation that opens your creative brain, meaning a deep Alpha, almost Theta State. Close your eyes and let any anxiety flow out with each breath and let tranquility flow in until every muscle group in your body is relaxed. Be careful not to fall asleep. Eventually you will gain the knack of getting into this state without such elaborate preparations. With practice, a couple of deep breaths, after finding your physical comfort spot for Photo-Reading, will serve as an automatic trigger.

Now you must find the automatic Photo-Read "Photo-Focus". When you focus with precision on single words as in normal reading, or on sentences or paragraphs as in speed reading, your logical brain functions, switch to a higher mode, and your more creative, higher capacity Alpha brain functions, switch off to some degree. Some people refer to this as "left" and "right" brain, but that thinking is more subjective. The whole brain works together, with either a logical focus or a creative focus. To properly Photo-Read, we need to be in the creative mode with some logic still functioning.

When we Photo-Read we never focus on any words or sentences or paragraphs.

NEVER! Instead, we deliberately try to focus simultaneously on the white spaces around both sides of the pages and down the centre of the pages. When you first practice this, if you remember to pretend to be gazing from behind your own head, looking at the entire two pages all at once while focusing only on the white spaces, and just noticing your two hands on the sides, you will be doing it correctly. Suddenly you will notice the page take on an almost three-dimensional depth, and the letters on each page may actually appear to move together and then apart like they are temporarily blocking your view of the centre white space. When you can consistently gain that sense of depth, you have attained the Photo-Focus 'moment'.

Now before you actually Photo-Read, you must have first practiced all of the above steps until you develop a familiarity with your physical comfort space for Photo-Reading, and until you are confident that you are mentally relaxed into Alpha State almost to Theta State, and until you can automatically go into Photo-Focus.

To Photo-Read, simply Photo-Focus on the first pages, then start to systematically turn the pages, allowing about 1½ to 2 seconds per page for each page to come into Photo-Focus. Let your mind stay as otherwise blank as possible, and do not allow yourself to have mental discussions which can be self-fulfilling prophecies, such as "This isn't going to work". One way to keep from having self-distracting conversations is to make up some form of non-relevant chant or hum that you can perform in time with the rhythm of turning the pages. This deliberately self-induced, no-thinking-required chanting will eliminate the possibility of your mind wandering and creating its own distractions. Many people chant repeatedly such things as "relax...keep the state...see the page...pause'...relax...keep the state...see

the page... 'pause'... relax..., and so on”.

Do not try to read the words on the pages at all. In fact if you allow yourself to actually focus on any of the words, you have probably lost the “Photo-Image” of that entire page, by having replaced it with whatever you focused on, even for an instant. Don't try to rush it. Give each set of pages just enough time to come properly into Photo-Focus, and then turn just after you go out of that focus but before you can actually get into normal focus. Continue the process to the end of the material you are reading.

Now don't test yourself when finished by trying to see what you can recall, because you will only become discouraged. You MUST follow the activation procedures that come next, in order to learn how to retrieve any of the information you just photographed with your mind.

You must give your mind time to incubate the information. If you are in a tremendous hurry, you can try to begin activation within about one hour, however it is best to wait at least a full 24 hours. Research has concluded that learned skills as well as new information consolidates in the brain during REM sleep. Performance of many newly learned tasks actually improves the day after the new skill is first learned, even with no practice in between. This will always apply to Photo-Reading.

Sometimes information will be activated spontaneously, without your conscious effort or awareness. Most often you will have to manually activate your information. Start by asking yourself, “What is important in the material I read yesterday?” “What do I need to know or perform to pass my test, write my report, contribute to the meeting, etc.” Then do not expect instant answers. These sorts of questions are meant simply to get your subconscious mind thinking about ways to

resurrect the stored information. The most important thing is to stay relaxed and remain confident that it will work if you stay curious.

After a few minutes of dwelling on these questions, you will become curious about certain sections or passages in the book. Turn to these sections. Now scan rapidly down the centre of each page. If any word or phrase catches your attention, dip into the page and read a line or two until you are satisfied. Resume your scan pattern, and limit each reading dip to a paragraph or two of any article or a page or two of any book. Follow your hunches not your logic. Allow your subconscious to direct where you will dip into the text, even if the passage seems irrelevant to your purpose. If you mistrust your initial hunches or want greater thoroughness, scan and dip throughout the entire book, but don't spend too much time or you will be defeating the whole purpose. The purpose of the scan and dip is to remind your mind of what it has already stored, so that it can then go and get it to answer the questions you have posed.

The early effects of Photo-Reading may not be obvious to most people. But they are there. The effect comes first in vague feelings and hunches that are easily ignored if you are not looking for them. You must develop this skill with practice like any other skill and it involves developing a feel, or alertness to these subtle inner suggestions or signals.

Examples of how this may be applied vary widely. After a frustrating meeting spent trying to understand an attorney's legalese, a businessman went to a bookstore and Photo-Read every book he could find on the subject which he was seeking advice. About to leave, he felt a strong urge to go back and scan the shelves. He walked directly to a particular book and opened it to the exact page he needed. An engineer was fumbling with a topic he had little expertise with. Later he remembered having

Photo-Read a large stack of related trade journals in his office. A quick scan of the stack caused him to select a journal which revealed an article that he had forgotten he had read, but which completely answered his problem.

In other words, the information was in the brain, or at least enough of it to trigger an immediate location of the rest of it. If you need information from any material you have Photo-Read, you may be able to activate it without the original material as reference, or sometimes you may require access to the original material, but you will amazingly know right where to go to find your specific answers.

The clearest mark of genius in the popular belief, is the mastery of logic skills such as math, fluency in foreign languages, or an impressive vocabulary. Yet these achievements are based on little more than rote memorization. Photo-Reading accelerates your progress in all of these areas.

Try Photo-Reading a dictionary several times. The exercise will greatly enhance your vocabulary. Or try reading the Bible this way. Suddenly when asked questions on topics you may not have felt comfortable with before, you will find yourself with simple and elegant answers. In tandem with formal study, Photo-Reading will accelerate your progress in almost any area many times over. It is a meta-skill with few equals.

Remember to practice the techniques set forth in the beginning of this article before trying and expecting results from your first Photo-Reading experience. And like most new skills, it may be best to start with a smaller article of less than one hundred pages as opposed to a several hundred page book. This does not make it more efficient except that it may help you to build more confidence in your ability to use the system, which is also important. It all sounds complicated and difficult, but really, with a very little bit of

practice, even mentally challenged people have quickly learned to develop this skill-set.

## **Human Meta-Skills: MindScape -**

### **Remote Viewing & Remote Influencing:**

#### **Self-Engineering Skills to Enhance Intuition, Creativity & Manifestation**

Therapist Julie is treating a patient in her clinic. As she works, her intuitive mind begins to reveal layers of information on her patient's problem, information vital for the success of the treatment, which would have normally eluded an untrained mind.

In a sitting-room miles away, Tony reclines on his sofa, engrossed in a fascinating encounter with the male and female archetypes of his psyche, gaining new in-depth insights about himself that will prove invaluable for enhancing his interactions in life.

On a plane bound for New York, Joseph is mentally rehearsing, right down to the minutest detail, the important presentation he will be delivering to a business client in a few hours' time. In so doing, he is laying the foundations for a superb performance.

In all three of these cases, the common factor is that these people are utilizing the normally latent abilities of their mind. They are using more of their resources than the average individual is trained to; they are using MindScape™ techniques. MindScape™ is a weekend workshop that leads participants to 'open' the powerful latent intuitive powers of the mind, and learn techniques such that one can tap into this resource at will, to immense benefit.

It is taught in various countries around the world both to public audiences as well as specialized groups that include therapists, athletes, and top businesspeople. Clients include some of the world's biggest companies, who have found the methods effective in enhancing creative thinking and intuition within

the ranks of their senior executives and managers.

But prior to discussing MindScape, let us take a brief look at that most wonderful asset we all possess, the most complex device in the known universe: the mind. MORE THAN JUST A SUPER COMPUTER - we are all familiar with the statement that the brain is a super computer. Modern scientific research not only supports this fact, but also takes it much further than we ever imagined. Today we know that it is actually each of the neurons (*brain cells*) that make up the brain that is a computer in itself. Considering that we have no less than 10 billion of these neurons, each with the ability to handle up to 100,000 inputs, the implications are truly awesome.

Even more important considerations are those that clearly position the mind as being so much more than a mere computing or thinking device. One important aspect is its pivotal role in man's health and wholeness. We are today very aware of how our mind can affect our body, and the way that subconscious mindsets and belief systems can determine our state of health is today widely known by every holistic therapist.

With quantum physics, the realization of the mind's nature truly takes vast leaps forward, moving into new dimensions altogether. This 'new' physics has put forward ground-breaking concepts about the holographic nature of the mind that force us to rethink our model of life, particularly in terms of space, time and the extent of the mind's influence within this continuum. This amounts to a paradigm shift that opens exciting and outstanding new possibilities when we learn to tap into the powerful intuitive faculties of mind, as the MindScape™ participant gets to prove for him/herself during the weekend course.

Staying at base level, the fact is that everything we do in our lives, from reading this

article to formulating a multi-million business plan, is dependent on how we use our mind for its degree of success or otherwise. Yet given this paramount importance of the mind in dealing with everyday life, it is ironic that most people are still only using a fraction of their true abilities. Why do we plod through life aided only by a pocket calculator when we actually have a powerful super-computer in our head that could help us achieve so much more success in every aspect of our lives?

The answer is that we are not trained to do otherwise. Or perhaps more correctly, we are conditioned to do what is considered 'normal'. As can be seen in our education systems and the way we are brought up even as children, society still tends to neglect the tremendous power of the creative and intuitive mind.

WHAT IS MINDSCAPE™? Throughout the ages, many individuals and groups have discovered that certain techniques allow the mind to yield its latent powers, rewarding the user with the ability to achieve what appears to be outstanding abilities and to enjoy more in life.

From the indigenous shaman who communicates with nature, to the inventor who taps into specific mental states for heightened creative thinking, methods of mental dynamics have been used to achieve results that often transcend the boundaries of what we have been conditioned to accept as the normal confines of mental ability. Knowledge has always been power, and often these methods were kept secret, passed down to a privileged few. Today, this knowledge has been streamlined with modern scientific findings and is more available than ever before. These techniques are taught in Mindscape.

For a number of years, the fundamental techniques were taught by *John and Esther Veltheim*, founders of the *PaRama School of*

*Life Sciences*, as part of what was then the *Life Management* program. In 1994 I was an instructor of this program when *Dr. Veltheim* invited me to assist him in the task of formulating the material into the modern format. The original methods have now been fine tuned in line with cutting edge scientific discoveries, and some of my own experiential research has been integrated, forming the Mindscape™ workshop as I am teaching it now.

The principle of Mindscape™ is a simple but highly effective one. There is a particular state of mind, the alpha state (*a state discernable experientially, as well as quantitatively using EEG*) that is more conducive to creativity and intuition than others. Renowned geniuses and inventors such as Edison, Tesla, Einstein, Mozart and others have been known to use their own, often crude ways of accessing this state, in order to originate creative ideas. Today, a Mindscape weekend workshop is the easiest way to acquire these abilities for life. There are also distinct advantages. Firstly, it provides the participant with a way of tapping into this state at will. Moreover, it creates parameters that enable one to open new horizons that he or she never thought possible.

During the weekend, participants are led into a deep state of alpha - deeper than that normally accessed in daily life. While in this altered state, a 'workshop' is constructed in their mind, a specially designed structure - the Alpha-mind - that provides an effective framework for an astounding variety of techniques. The benefits and uses of Mindscape™ are many. Among the most well-known are:

- Enhancing creativity and balanced thinking;
- Providing an interactive link with the subconscious, and hence opening vast

possibilities for self discovery and personal development;

- Providing a very powerful method for visualizing and manifesting affirmations and goals;

- Acting as a mind-body interface, as utilized by top athletes for their mental training;

- Heightening the powers of intuition to the extent that they can transcend normal boundaries ;

- Training the imagination, as well as relaxing and helping to de-stress both the mind and the body.

Needless to say, these are highly advantageous benefits to everyone, particularly in view of one over-riding fact - they work very effectively.

The Mindscape™ workshop has opened vast new horizons for countless people around the world, from all walks of life, from students and housewives, to psychologists and top executives.

In a time when our technological progress continues to diminish how much of our mind's resources we use, Mindscape™ is a superb way of unlocking the potential of our mind and using it to enhance our life and our work in so many ways.

For therapists such as BodyTalk™ practitioners, the advantages are even more pronounced. Mindscape™ imparts the ability to tune in to patients at various deep levels of being and even enables the practitioner to treat at a distance.

For the BodyTalk™ therapists who have integrated Mindscape™ techniques into their personal repertoire, this has virtually opened a new chapter in BodyTalk™ practice. Seasoned practitioners will be aware of the direction that advanced BodyTalk™ takes toward working beyond the physical levels to consciousness and energy.

The most significant levels of proficiency are achieved when intuition is integrated into the treatment.

There are three main aspects of using intuition in BodyTalk™, or in any applied healing modality. First, when the protocol points to a link in any part of the system, such as an organ, through a sharpened intuition one can tune into that part and discern the problem or link that needs tapping. At its most proficient, this skill becomes equivalent to actually communicating with the part in question, and spectacular results often follow.

Second, when one has attained the necessary practice to know when to trust the intuition, treatments become faster, more effective, and closer to permanent. This is when the intuitive practitioner goes straight to the very links that need tapping. The third benefit for therapists - indeed for everyone, therapist or not - is the one that workshop participants usually leave the weekend so excited about. In Mindscape™, we not only talk about heightened abilities but also prove them, and by the end of the weekend every participant gets to practise the Mental Scanning technique and tune into the universal consciousness.

In effect, this provides access to various levels of information within this collective consciousness, and one of the most spectacular ways to see it in action is by tuning in to other people within it.

Mental Scanning serves a number of important purposes. Besides giving the participant a technique useful in various life scenarios, it also serves to prove the ability to link in to universal consciousness. This amounts to a paradigm shift which, once internalized, paves the way for all manner of new possibilities in life.

This method also makes it possible for the BodyTalk™ practitioner to treat people at a

distance. Although hands-on BodyTalk™ always takes first preference, the ability to effectively treat any person or animal even when they are miles away has its uses, especially for emergencies.

The procedure is similar to that of using a surrogate, except that in this case the patient is not present, and is not in contact with the patient and/or surrogate. Moreover, this procedure starts where the standard protocol leaves off, namely giving the ability of treating people at any time period of their lives, even when they were five years old!

Another groundbreaking aspect is that using the same methodology, it is also possible to treat oneself with the entire BodyTalk™ protocol. Again, the focus can be at any age. To those who have not been introduced to this paradigm, all this may seem incredible, but it is actually very much in line with what modern quantum physicists are today telling us about the nature of the mind and the universe.

The paradigm shift of Mindscape™, the way it enhances creativity and intuition, and the wonderful abilities it confers, are all invaluable qualities that put the practitioner on the cutting edge of holistic therapy in general and BodyTalk™ in particular.

At the time of writing this article, much of it was simply copied by the author from promotional publications of *Kris Attard*. *Kris* was originally from Malta and was *PaRama's Senior Trainer* of Mindscape™, and a BodyTalk™ practitioner. He had been administering *Awareness Workshops* and had been teaching Mindscape™ for several years, conducting regular trainings in Malta, Europe, USA and Asia, to public groups, therapists and companies. Amongst his Mindscape™ clients are major multi-national corporations, where Mindscape™ is taught at the top executive level.

The author has direct experience with Mindscape™, and has found the skill-set to be remarkably useful and adaptable to a great many purposes.

The author also has extensive training and experience in the art of Remote Viewing and Remote Influencing; applied skills that although share some similarities with Mindscape™, the author feels are even much more advanced, and ultimately provide a far more diverse and useful skill-set.

Remote Viewing and Remote Influencing courses are available from a large number of providers. The author recommends that interested parties should do their own research into these matters before jumping into any course, or purchasing any training manuals.

One reliable, very experienced and well informed provider of training materials for Remote Viewing and Remote Influencing that we are comfortable referring our readers to is:

**ARVARI** - Academy of Remote Viewing and Remote Influencing, presented by its founder, Gerald O'Donnell, c/o [www.probablefuture.com](http://www.probablefuture.com)

If you have any questions about Mindscape or about the practical applications of Remote Viewing or Remote Influencing, please feel free to contact us at anytime at:

[Yahweh@naturalgod.com](mailto:Yahweh@naturalgod.com)

## Introduction:

When we recently published our volunteer correspondent's article entitled "**Supreme Knowledge Yearns to be Revealed**", which may be found at this link:

<http://www.naturalgod.com/56KnowledgeYearnstobeRevealed.pdf>, we received several inquiries from various people involved with the "**Noetic Sciences**", in particular from a group called "**Institute of Noetic Sciences**", or "**IONS**" for short: found at this link: <http://noetic.org/>

"Noetic" scientists purport to be of the highest and most advanced thinkers of the scientific community.

The following information has been selected from several of our responses to inquiries we received from those scientists:

### **Human Life 101: "Noetic" Experiences:**

Life implies a certain knowledge, which knowledge requires a comprehension of itself, leading to a requisite combination of intelligence and consciousness, embodied within some aspect of a mind capable of creating, or at least capable of processing both thought and emotion, to the extent that it is also capable of expressing and of directing the power of both, as it does so in exercising an apparently inherent free will to do, or to cause to be done, whatsoever it can imagine could be done by it, within an only known limit imposed upon it, of not being able to create more life (or to create anything for that matter.)

Life as we experience it, merely has capacity to experiment with re-arrangement of what already deliberately, or accidentally co-exists within it's known existence. Clearly then, this elementary thing that we are; this form of "human life", is not at all a very capable being.

In spite of our lofty desires, our noble efforts, and our otherwise feeble attempts to

associate the life within us to a greater knowledge, to higher intelligence, to an innate/universal consciousness, or to absolute creativity, we are in truth, only minimally capable of two simple things; that of expressing, and that of directing the power of thought and emotion, and even that is limited to our perception of how those thoughts or emotions relate to what already exists.

An innate desire, almost an insatiable need - an emotion, resides in each of us, to increase, or to be increased, by the power associated with or inherent to, our expression, and to our direction of our remaining thoughts and emotions.

Whether we desire increase in knowledge, in wisdom, in abilities to help, or to be helped, to heal or to be healed, to influence or to be influenced, or to manifest, we all desire.

To fulfil our desire, there is no secret. We do not need to 'find the key', or to 'unlock the door', or to gain 'special' or 'unique skills'. There remains no scientific discoveries to be made, or researching yet to be done with regard to fulfilling our desire.

We need only to learn how to implement our uniquely pre-existing capability, which is to accept that which is already known within each of us. Then, if we desire to convert that inherent knowledge into the awesome power that is its potential, we simply and appropriately express and direct our acceptance of the power of that inherent knowledge, through our thoughts and emotions. This is how we all - each and every one of us, already manifests the realities of our life, each and every day of our life - whether we know we are doing it or not.

Thus what most often appears to many as a "noetic" experience, is merely their occasional recognition of an accidental implementation of their natural, but otherwise

latent potential. They, by being a'live', have simply perchance noticed doing, what they, and everyone else, is capable of always doing with the life that is in them.

As opposed to waiting for the next accidental or noetic experience to occur, we favour learning to do this with deliberation and consistency inasmuch as it applies to all things we choose daily to do.

### **Human Life 101: Practical Applications:**

Learning how we manifest our daily reality is fun and easy, if tackled with an open mind. Innate wisdom will enable us to manifest and accomplish most anything we want. Many such things would seem to be "noetic" experiences, if another explanation was not readily available.

For example, in studying memory related to reading retention, academics using conventional reading methods, were found they could barely retain 30% to 40% of what they read at conventional reading rates of about 150 to 170 words per minute.

Advanced traditional speed-readers retained about 35% to 55% of what they read at a rate of up to about 4,500 words per minute. But believe it or not, your mind is capable of easily learning how to retain nearly 80% of what it can read at rates close to 65,000 words per minute. This is simple to explain, and equally simple to understand. (See our Meta-Skills article on advanced photo-reading found at this link: <http://www.naturalgod.com/86MetaSkillsPhotoReading.pdf> )

Or, you can quickly learn to be a successful healer, by which you can effectively help your body heal itself, or help others to help their bodies heal themselves of virtually any disease or affliction, so long as you are not seeking or attempting to gain some extraordinary or unique powers to heal. (See

our Library section on Health & Healing Issues.)

Likewise, if you desire to train horses or dogs for example, you can easily learn how to become a horse or dog whisperer, so long as you do not expect to be able to 'make' a horse or dog do anything. You will not succeed by asking either. Rather the truth is in simply allowing the animal to serve you in precisely the manner it was designed to do, and by allowing it to do exactly the things that you most desire it to do, for this privilege to be of service, is the animals' purpose and greatest desire as well.

Evidence abounds that these things too, are simple to explain and easy to do.

Or if you wish simply to increase your awareness of knowledge, or to experience the memories of past lives, this also is easy to learn. (*Not that you or anyone has lived in the past, but science has proven that cellular memory of events can survive several generations, and communing at the cellular level happens automatically at a sub-conscious level, so learning to do it consciously is the key.*)

You may choose to think of these types of experience as "noetic" or otherwise inexplicable, and you may choose to wait for your next "noetic" experience to accidentally occur, or you may accept the reality that such an experience will merely be a recognition of your natural, but otherwise latent potential, or you may choose to accept being a'live', and commence doing what you and everyone else, is capable of always doing with the life that is in them.

If you can imagine what you desire to learn, or what you desire to manifest, then you can easily learn what you need to fulfil those desires. What appears to many now as a "noetic" experience, will with modest learning, become your everyday norm.

### **Misc. "Noetic" Inquiries:**

#### What conclusions have you drawn from your search for inner wisdom?

We have concluded that one does not need to search for inner wisdom, but acquire learning to accept it.

If indeed what is sought, is wisdom of the "inner" self, or of the inner being, then such wisdom is by virtue of the very question, known already to exist there.

Hence the ability to achieve acceptance of what is known within us, is the substance of the things and of the knowledge we search and hope for.

We have also concluded that this inner wisdom is universally constant and universally available to everyone, yet we each have a unique need to reach out to commune with others, which communion is among other things, the catalyst enabling each of us, to discover and to learn our equally unique and individual means, whereby we are able to accept that inner wisdom.

Whether we commune with known or unknown gods, with ancient writings, with friends or alleged gurus, or some combination thereof, there is no higher purpose for our communion, than to achieve our own acceptance of this inner knowledge. It is our inherent curiosity satisfied.

#### Have you had a Noetic Experience? (An "event" that you knew was real, to the very core of your being, but could not prove? These are examples of the 'inner knowing' that can be defined as a 'noetic' experience.)

If everyone were to pay clear attention to their own experiences, it would scarcely seem possible to us, that anyone could be found without 'noetic' experiences among them.

If, as your question postulates, these "noetic" experiences stem from an "inner

knowing" of something, then perhaps our communion would be better rewarded by our mutual focus on how to know more of that actual inner self, as opposed to knowing more about the experiences that emanate from within and because of that inner self.

#### Is your tax money getting to IONS? (Should we concern ourselves with having political oversight for scientific & military research regarding the ethical ramifications of artificial intelligence, mind control and mind enhancing technologies?)

It is difficult to imagine how "science", "military", and "ethics" could be merged into an intelligent sentence, whether it be question or statement.

I once was privately entertained by an audience of 3 physicists, actively engaged in a publicly funded particle acceleration project in France. A part of the conversation that has always baffled me, was that each day these men went to work attempting to accomplish a non-specific limited set of objectives. Two distinct possible objectives within the limited parameters they were working, were that the experiment would accomplish "nothing", or that under certain circumstances, it would accomplish instantaneous and absolute fusion of everything - literally the entire planet. Yet, in some conscience, they went to work each day attempting to achieve among others, these very two objectives.

To hypothesize ways or means to externally influence or manipulate that inner wisdom of a mind; a mind which we know we do not yet fully understand, is obviously just another "scientific" fiction-reality.

On available evidence, one might safely conclude, that if an idiot disguised as a scientist can speculate a thing, he will undoubtedly attempt to do that thing, in spite of all potential dangers or risks to humanity.

It is my hope that some in an audience such as this, will endeavour to have our communion aid in our first learning of the mind, and in our acceptance of what knowledge lies within it, before embracing childlike attempts to externally enhance, influence or manipulate it.

*What are the biggest mysteries of human consciousness?*

Whether it be the biggest mystery, it certainly is a mystery to us, why humans have allowed their collective senses to be dulled to the point of being thereby unable to accept what should by all accounts be obvious to all.

An awareness of knowledge, including knowing the origins and attributes of mind and consciousness resides within each of us. Consciousness is not part of us, or part of the human equation, so much as the human equation is merely a temporal introduction to the gift of that eternal consciousness, which consciousness by all accounts, also proves itself, to be the fount of all knowledge.

When we learn to embrace that most precious gift of being able to experience communion with this all-knowing consciousness within each of us, we find it holds no mystery that it does not want to reveal to us. It resides within each of us for this very purpose - so that we may get to know it, and to know all things about it, intimately.

Consciousness is life, and that life essence is within us, and within many living things on this planet. Of all things, that life essence, or consciousness that we are incapable of re-creating, is the most obvious. It is the only thing created, or that exists with inherent intelligence, yet humans continually seek elsewhere for knowledge.

Our hope lies in finding communion with like minded conscious beings, willing to share means and manners of learning to accept that which, if we are fully awakened, we must

already know where to find. I'll help you, if you'll help me. A fulfillment of our mutual purpose.

*Do our thoughts have the power to heal?*

It is well known that sufficient intelligence resides within each living cell to replicate the entire human being, intelligence and all, and in multiple copies if desired. Surely if one cell can do so much, the multi-billion cell human construct can do exponentially more, like for example, to maintain perfect health, or to enable perfect healing.

It is not "my" thoughts therefore that are capable of healing me, it is the innate intelligence implanted within me, that holds such awesome power.

This wisdom to "heal" then, resides within us, but is not because of us. It is not some special, unique, or exclusive power to seek or to search for, or to gain or to master and be proud of, nor is it obscured by some mystical division of conscious and sub-conscious concepts of mind. This inner wisdom is universally constant to each of us and universally available to all of us. It is, because we are all endowed with it. It is also called life.

The harmonic resonance of this intelligence that resides in each of us, is multiplied exponentially upon physical communion, not simply because "touching" is nice, rather because we are social creatures by design. *(We know this, so explanations either in favour or against it are futile.)*

The point of communion in matters of healing is this; when implementing our innate ability to heal, that ability, like all inherent intelligence, is multiplied exponentially by physical communion. This applies when healing one's self, or when helping others to heal themselves.

When we learn to embrace our innate ability to heal, it shall be because we have

already learned to embrace our mutual experience of communion with this all-knowing and omni-capable intelligence existing within us, that merely awaits our request for the healing we need from it.

Fortunately for us, we are not burdened with learning so much wisdom as to be able to "think ourselves healthy", we simply need to learn to ask of the wisdom already implanted within us, for the healing we perceive is needed.

*The language of symbols is as old as can be unearthed. (The oldest symbols known to man, as far as can be proven, are the Swastika, Yin-Yang, Ankh, Pentagram, Star Tetrahedron, Solar Cross, Circumpunct, Vesica Piscis, Flower of Life and Metatron's Cube, Oroubus, Celtic knot, Triquetra, Ennead, Squared Circle etc.) The purpose of this thread is to discuss THESE symbols in detail to assist modern perspectives in understanding concepts beyond the reach of the human cognitive mind.*

Your question confuses us, inasmuch as if there are, as you imply there is, "concepts beyond the reach of the human cognitive mind", then we humbly ask, who do you anticipate an answer from?

Forgive use if our previous comment was offensive in any way - it was not intended to be.

Would you suggest we are to presume that these ancient symbols, created by equally ancient man, are some indication that modern man has regressed intellectually, because allegedly, we may not fully comprehend the actual or the alleged esoteric meanings of these ancient symbols?

Or have we simply learned more efficient and or perhaps more exacting methods of recording and sharing our thoughts and communications?

We postulate that mankind has always enjoyed a contemporary familiarity with his means and modes of communications, we still do. It would seem highly probable, that if we were able to present a modern English written communication to our ancient forefathers, that perhaps they would have been inclined to perceive such as "futuristic symbols", and to them it may well appear just as mystifying and perhaps mythical, as some of us now see theirs.

Ancient stories allude to many symbols and pictographs being created simply by gazing at the stars and imagining inter-connecting different combinations of them with lines. Modern Astrology continues as one of many examples of this ancient activity.

There are conceivably multi-trillions of possible shapes and configurations of symbols that could find their origins in such "stargazing", including those you have mentioned, such as the swastika, yin-yang, Ankh, Pentagram, Star Tetrahedron, Solar Cross, Circumpunct, Vesica Piscis, Flower of Life, Metatron's Cube, Oroubus, Celtic knot, Triquetra, Ennead, the Squared Circle etc.

It is highly unlikely that anything more profound than learning to recognize a very limited relative placement of the subject stars can be learned through such activity, but one is certainly free to wonder, which was undoubtedly the original purpose of the activity in the first place.

*Do our thoughts have the power to heal?*

Let us first understand what it is, that we refer to as the "thoughts" that may or may not have power to heal.

Do we create thoughts or do we recognize them? If we create them, from what do we derive our creation? When will a thought that we have created or recognized, come to an end? If we create it, why can we not

quantify it? Will we run out of the components to make more thoughts?

It is universally held that thoughts are energy, and that they have power that may be expressed or directed to useful purpose. This energy and this power then, must originate as intelligence. This intelligence is limitless. It does not depend upon us, and it pre-exists and supersedes our comprehension of it.

We cannot create this limitless intelligence, or even any aspect of the energy or power that it is comprised of. We must also conclude that our thoughts and the power of our thoughts originate from that which we do not comprehend, and therefore cannot create.

Therefore we are merely capable, and then only barely able to recognize useful thoughts from within the pre-existing and superseding intelligence residing within, or otherwise accessible to us. Then we must learn to express these thoughts as we are able to recognize them, while directing the power of these thoughts, to useful purposes, such as healing.

Neither the thought, nor the power of the thought, is capable of healing of itself, notwithstanding they both pre-exist and supersede us, within this limitless intelligence.

Healing is possible because we first recognize it as a possibility from within the limitless intelligence we perceive. We call that recognition, a "thought", which when we "have it", we then express it, while directing its inherent power to the healing, or to such other useful purpose as we may determine.

*Certain yogis have remarkable—and proven—abilities. Why does mainstream science remain skeptical?*

I do not personally know any Yogis, so my thoughts on their perceived abilities are not worthy. I did spend some time with a Monk that meditated religiously for nearly 40 years, and

then abruptly stopped the practice. When I asked him what his most valuable lesson learned from his meditation might be, he quickly replied that he had learned 2 valuable lessons:

First, he finally learned during the last few minutes of his final meditation, that he had always possessed the one thing he had believed for all that time he must search for. And second, his time spent meditating had robbed him of 40 years he could have spent, actually using and benefiting from that thing he now realized he had all along. What he sought, turned out not to be the mystical mystery his brothers had led him to believe.

Then perchance we met, and he found me willing, so he graciously took a few moments and shared what he learned in his final few minutes of meditation with me, and so I have done with many who have been willing since then.

Thus being humbled into such an acceptance of what is, we were all enabled to continually enjoy what many others would perceive as a "Yogi's special abilities", or perhaps as "noetic" experiences, yet we merely learned to experience the fullness of the joy and of the knowledge, that is the experience of the life that was always within each of us.

Some of those are blessed with healing or being able to heal, some with powers to influence or to manifest, some able to move or alter shapes of objects, some with wisdom and understanding of the great mysteries, others with the knowledge to solve great difficulties, to end conflicts, or to balance inequalities, but none of them have been called Yogi, notwithstanding many Yogis may have also learned to do these similar things.

The greatest ability of all, is not just when we learn to share these abilities, rather it is when we learn to share the benefits of these abilities. Then we are capable of the joyous

fulfillment of our temporal purpose, for we will be doing that which is our collective temporal purpose to do - that is, to share.

*Do our thoughts have the power to heal? (There are problems in conveying what exactly a thought is, and how our bodies interact with thousands of micro-organisms living within us.)*

You speak of the "problem", as if the problem were not merely another thought construct. It may or may not be significant to know how thoughts become whatever it is they are, or where this occurs, but it is known at least by both of us, that thoughts simply are.

Thus this problem you mention cannot itself be anything but a construct of thought. You have expressed it as one of your thoughts herein.

You reference micro-organisms that "enter your body at their own risk". Is it that these microbes actually assess the risk, or make a choice, as you imply, or is their entering in, simply an unfortunate accident?

And are these microbes distinct from those several billion living microbes that dwell safely within your temporal body? Your temporal body, like all others, hosts nearly ten (10) interdependently living micro-organisms, for each living human cell, meaning if your normally healthy body is made up of roughly 8 Billion human cells, then it hosts about 80 Billion micro-organisms that enable it to remain healthy, and in fact are essential to its good health.

If you and I can share thoughts and ideas with each other, and we can, because here we are doing just that, then surely we are sufficiently more capable than any of these micro-organisms living within us. Yet how do we explain that they possess sufficient knowledge to work harmoniously, and in near perfect unison with each of our living cells, and with an uncanny ability to aid and enable our

whole body to maintain its good health? Could we, the greater being-construct, not also know these things?

These individual human cells and near single-cell micro-entities possess immense intelligence, and hold the capacity to communicate amongst themselves and with our individual cells, and to engage collectively in mutually beneficial activities.

We humans on the other hand, are multi-billion cell constructs, with each cell containing this vast intelligence, yet our perceived human intelligence, is obviously distinct from theirs, and in at least in most perceived ways, far inferior to theirs.

My mind and yours, can learn to communicate with these mini-entities within us.

Our intelligence, masked as our mind, can ask of the intelligence of our cells, and receive information from them, about many things, such as memory of past lives, for example. Our intelligence masked as our mind, can also ask our cells and they will obey our requests for healing.

We can also have our intelligence ask the intelligence of the micro-organisms within us, to increase their performance, and they will, because it is their purpose to serve us. Our cells and the micro-organisms residing within us, are obedient to our will.

When we experience poor health, it is simply because we do not properly express and direct our will to our obedient servants. We confuse them further by not consistently distinguishing and directing the conscious and the sub-conscious wills, both of which they are bound to obey. This is not difficult to learn if one is willing.

*Simultaneous duality and non-duality:*

We do not need to guess or speculate about our duality. Simply ask of the intelligence within us. We are material human beings

imparted with temporal life, having been animated so to speak, by that Spirit of intelligence that dwells within us. It, is life, and we have been endowed by It, with a unique proportionate aspect of It, for a time.

The physical things of the temporal man are known by that man; scientists never cease in proclaiming this. The Spiritual things of the Spirit within us, are known by that Spirit, and that Spirit within us, continually yearns to proclaim these things to us. It sounds nicer to many to speak of Spirit, as if it were merely intelligence, yet if you are willing to ask, it will reveal being so much more than just that.

Scientists have yet to seriously stretch themselves beyond investigating the material, or otherwise quantitative reality. The Spirit within us, is beyond such primitive physical analysis. We know Life exists, this is not difficult to accept, because we experience It. And scientists have themselves proven It exists, by virtue of their inability to explain It, and by not being able to re-create It, from the confines of their limited material reality.

Life is in us, this we also know. We are not Life, because Life can be taken away from our temporal physical entity. Therefore when Life is in us, It remains Life that is distinct from us, because it may leave us at any time.

Therefore we do not need to seek It, simply learn to listen to It. It, being this Life within us, holds all of what we consider to be "mind", and "intelligence", and "conscience", and "emotion"; therefore this Life within us, is where we find all of our answers.

Have you heard; "seek and you shall find", or "ask and you shall receive". In truth, the mystery lies in why it seems so difficult for so many to realize where these answers reside, and to simply ask.

You need only be willing to do this thing. Ask, of your Spiritual nature, and it will answer always, because you also have heard, that

"nothing is hidden that will not be revealed" - so ask.

Briefly back to your duality. You are your duality. You cannot be Life without that Life dwelling within you, but while it indeed dwells within you, It also remains separate and separable from you. This we know, because when that Life leaves you, what remains is not living. If you wish to know "why" this Life resides within you, and why it can remove itself from you, again just ask. It, has a plan for you, and It desires you to know these things. And happy you will be, if you do them.

### *Is there a place in education for a child's inner wisdom?*

The inner wisdom of a child cannot be different than the inner wisdom of an adult, save perhaps the child may hold an innocence enabling a more potent ability to accept and commune with that inner wisdom.

It is this very ability to commune with one's inner wisdom, that the child is born with, which the traditional education syllabus diligently attempts to stifle, regardless of how noble their efforts to dissuade otherwise may be.

Thus an adult with any residual, or recovered ability to commune with his or her own inner wisdom, will not subject that beloved child to the destructive workings of this traditional education system, where the most consistent and probable result will be the artificial internal dividing of that child; a "division and conquering" if you will, separating his "scientific", or rational thinking ability, from that of his naturally inherent ability to commune with his inner wisdom.

The higher the degree of traditional education, the lesser the ability of the graduate to commune with his inner wisdom and the greater the graduate's dependence upon the material sciences will be. Such that the child

that has been thoroughly educated, must then typically spend the greater portion of its post-educational life, re-establishing its ability to commune with its inner wisdom.

These facts are clearly demonstrated within the very pages of these discussions. Virtually all threads emanate from the expressed desires to learn more; either to learn of, or to learn from, the "inner wisdom".

If this had not been lost to you through your education, your search would have never begun, and your discussions about it would reflect your knowing it, and your desire to share that knowing, rather than to remember it.

### *The Illusion of Separateness:*

To overcome the illusion of separateness, we need to learn to think like ducks.

Humans tend to misunderstand the one little characteristic they possess that holds the potential for elevating them above the ducks. Ducks, like people, have natural rights and liberties pursuant to the most fundamental and natural laws.

They also have limiting instinct, whereas we humans have been blessed with free will, but unfortunately, not with sufficient intelligence to utilize it properly.

Our free will has caused us to lose sight of all of our natural rights, liberties, freedoms and natural laws - the ones still enjoyed by ducks. Instead, we have changed our focus, and elevated our perspective toward a myriad of man-made rules, regulations and fiction laws, not to mention fiction values and equally artificial commercial activities.

Through these artificial fiction creations, we teach our children to strive for financial and other forms of independence, while knowing of course, that any form of independence is a characteristic totally contrary to our natural make up.

We were designed and made as social and communal creatures, like ducks, yet contrary to our inherent and natural nature, we teach and learn that it is good to live and behave independently, and to be self-reliant in many ways. It was an interesting, but failed experiment.

Mankind has deliberately, perhaps unwittingly, but deliberately nonetheless, created an artificial culture of separateness within virtually every known society, and nurtured the fictional values of those multi-cultured societies with delusional expectations of achieving satisfaction through this un-natural independence.

We must first admit we have been wrong. Then accept our admission, and simply choose to revert to the original, natural plan of natural rights, freedoms, liberties and laws, that naturally foster a communal and social structure within our species - like ducks do.

Natural laws, like gravity, are timeless and do no harm, Equally timeless are the naturally inherent laws that we each know from within our very nature, such as we know not to harm others, and we know not to harm the property of others, even when we know we have never been told these things. Because these natural things are naturally a part of us. We did not need to attempt to improve on nature, yet without even fully understanding it, we erroneously chose to try and one up it.

We were free of course to make such un-natural choices, just as we remain free to admit these choices have been made in error. Yet we find an ego within the human construct, that makes it difficult to the point of near impossibility for us to collectively admit we have been wrong. We will achieve a sense of community that will overcome the illusion of separateness, when we decide to truly exercise our collective free will once again.

### *The Illusion of Separateness:*

We will say it with the nicest of intentions; your comments are self-defeating. You are indeed capable of understanding and interpreting what "it" is, meaning of course, the "separateness" referenced within the original discussion thread. And you are correct, if it exists, and it does, then it simply "IS".

But your conclusion that simply because it IS, it therefore must always be, is erroneous. In its current state of existence, separateness does not preclude the possibility of it not always being, what it now IS.

If it is indeed "we" that experience the current separateness, then even if we temporarily accept it as you suggest, we have no choice but to accept it is being a result of our own doing. We know of no rule or law that established us having been made or brought into existence to remain in this separateness. Such would only be conjecture and imaginary supposition at best.

Therefore, being that we are the creators of this separateness, we also remain capable of re-creating, or changing it, which is simply another way of saying, we can overcome what we have thus far imperfectly administered. To suggest otherwise is to suggest we possess no free will whatsoever, thus we would of all creations, be the most pitiful.

### *The Illusion of Separateness:*

You are a visual artist. If others are to enjoy and comprehend your artistic expressions, then your expression is contingent upon their seeing it.

Your art becomes a medium of inter-connectivity between beings, much like the more primitive tools of words or speech do, but with a more subjective objectivity.

All such tools are extensions of thoughts, which when converted by the chosen

tool of the originator, may then be perceived by others.

All that exists, has either already been so converted or expressed by its creative originator, or is being converted, or awaits such conversion, and is as you say, inter-connected, so as to enable all of us to perceive it in our own time, and in our own way.

Thus all that is thought, whether offered outwardly from its creative originator, or whether perceived and accepted inwardly by its equally creative recipient, is "expression". Life is expression, and expression is Life - they are contingent realities.

Expression is all that is. It is the essence of Life itself. It is the essence of the Love, that is of the Life, that is the expression of itself. Without expression, "we" would not be. We could not experience Love. We would have no communion, nor would we have any possible way of knowing anything.

Anything and everything including Love, exists, yet no single thing can be experienced without our first being made aware of it through its form of expression.

Expression is contingent upon at least two comprehending beings. Love, like our very Lives, and like the very knowledge of these things, is contingent upon an omni-directional capacity to be expressed.

You are correct, we do not have to "see it" to believe it, yet if we were not able to express it, we would not even be able to know of it, let alone be able to experience it.

To be of the essence of the Love that is Life, that Love must first be expressible. Likewise knowledge. To be of the fullness of the knowledge that is of Life, that knowledge must first be expressed by its Originator, otherwise we could not possibly come to know it, let alone to experience the fullness or the joy of it.

This is our hope, that we may not forget our first Love, the inner source of all knowledge. For it yearns within us, that we may have the knowledge of both Love and Life, and each more abundantly.

### Religion and Science Unification:

Conventional Science is most often an attempt to express what is known rationally, within the limits of what knowledge has already been accepted as rational.

Traditional Religion is most often an attempt to express a faith in a set of beliefs, that is limited to believing they are believing that which is most beneficial and more correct than what others believe.

In this context, neither science nor religion are capable of learning from the other, hence any attempt at unification might be considered the marriage of the "dumb" with the "dumber".

There is no rational way to justify traditional religion. An honest Spiritualist will remain open to believing all that is, not just all that is nice to believe. There is no need to merge, or to unify true Spirituality with traditional science, any scientific truth is already within the Spiritualist's reality.

Likewise there is no rational way to justify traditional science's self-imposed limitations. Simply put, there is no need for such science at all, let alone a need to merge or unify it with anything else.

What is needed by both scientists and religionists, is a renewal of mind. A new mind that is open to the most rational reality of all, which is, that all that exists, exists whether we can explain it or quantify it or not, or whether we believe it without proof or not. It is, therefore our faith in whatever it is, must be absolute, if we are to perceive ourselves as being even a tiny bit rational.

### What can we learn from Children?

Not to grow up! This should be the first lesson we learn from children, followed by imitating their out-of-the-box thinking ability.

I attended an old fashioned one room, eight grade school-house with about 30 pupils, where one of them in my grade was, to use his own words, "retarded".

Billy's mental maturity at that time was about the age of 6 or 7 years. We were blessed with a wonderful teacher that was in her late 60's at the time, and who I was to learn much later, taught us all of our subjects in a rather unconventional, or "non-conformist" manner.

In grade three for example, all of us could add four column numbers in our heads without "carrying" or writing down anything for unlimited column lengths! Even Billy could do it! For all of us, it was "normal".

When a visiting substitute teacher jokingly asked our class the old question, "Which came first, the chicken or the egg?", Billy immediately answered out loud, "That's easy, neither one! There had to be a hen and a rooster first, or else the first egg wouldn't hatch".

Trying to stump us, she asked another question which involved a statement about the speed scientists say our galaxy is moving within the universe. Billy interrupted with his own question: "How did they [*the scientists*] find the still [*stationary or static point*] spot in the universe?"

Well, you can see who was stumped! And to top it all off, the substitute then asked Billy how he was able to think of all of these answers so quickly, and he simply replied with his standard "non-conformist" comment; "Oh that's easy. I'm a retard, but I'm not stupid!"

Although Billy never mentally matured beyond about age 12, he went on to become a successful businessman with over 40 employees. He still claims to be a retard, but

not stupid!

His childlike thinking has been his greatest blessing. Because he was not smart enough to learn how to disengage it, he has never lost it.

He remains able to think out of the box, because he is not able to clutter his mind with the unnecessary "smart" thoughts we all find so easy to do. This mind clutter, is easy for us, because that is precisely what the traditional education syllabus teaches us to do.

### The Language of Symbols:

We find we are extremely limited by the original question, and would ask that "frequencytuner" please expand or amend the wording. Obviously you could not have meant to be asking humans to discuss their understanding of what is beyond their capacity (*human cognitive mind*).

Whether words or symbols, or pictographs, all have been used by humans as a means of expression of thought. Many of them have been used to express the concept of hiding a thought within a thought, commonly when one such word, or picture may have a surface meaning while holding a secondary, mythical or quasi-secret meaning.

Yet if we look to astronomical "signs" or symbols, with true objectivity, as opposed to the very common and extremely subjective manner of "astrology", we will quickly realize that the inter-connective possibilities of the stars and other entities within the universe, are not limited to the three dimensional perspective seen only from this planet, but may indeed be perceived from an unlimited quantity of perspectives from within the universe itself.

Therefore to conclude that what we can perceive is anything at all related to what may actually be perceived, is as futile as attempting to explain the perception of the Divine, assuming we could agree what the Divine is.

### What was THE WORD at the beginning of the universe? How does it resonate in us, eternally?

We really don't know that the universe had an "in the beginning moment", we only truly know the universe exists. We also don't know if it started with a big bang or small pop, or maybe a fizzle.

And we only presume it started. What we don't know for certain is that we do not know this: If the universe started or began at such and such a time, then what pre-existed it to enable that start or beginning?

We also don't know if the universe is expanding or just changing shape. Surely if all things that exist are to be considered as part of the universe as scientists purport, then so also must the space, place, or void that the universe is alleged to be expanding into, be already a part of the universe, because it obviously already exists (*or is being perpetually created, which opens a whole new discussion*).

We don't know, but more importantly, we are unable to comprehend or even imagine, the beginning of our own life, let alone the beginning of the universe.

Try as you may to determine your first thought, and you will always remain in wonder as to what you must have been thinking just before that moment. Also, try as you might to imagine your last thought, and you will always remain in wonder as to what your next thought will be, just after that moment, and so on, and so on.

It is the human condition. We are incapable of truly imagining either the beginning or the end of our thoughts, or of our ability to think.

In this sense our individual thoughts hold many eternal qualities of their own. When you first "have" a thought, does it ever die? Was it an original thought, or has it always existed and just now "came" to your mind? Can

you stop a thought from existing? Can you un'think any thought or anything? Can you prevent yourself from thinking? Thus individually, thoughts possess an eternal quality and energy of their own.

We cannot recall having ever not having thought, nor can we truly imagine our thoughts coming to an end, thus our minds are programmed so to speak, with an inherent quality of thought, that regardless of reasoning, is eternal.

We have this eternity planted within us, as part of us at a level much deeper than our ability to truly comprehend or explain, yet we know absolutely it exists. It is our very nature to resonate eternal.

*What was THE WORD at the beginning of the universe? How does it resonate in us, eternally?*

For sake of expediency, the original Hebrew words as they were actually written, were meant to convey a time relevant to "the beginning of all things related to mankind being created as a part of this planet earth", which is a far distance from the presumption that it means the beginning of the universe, or the beginning of "all things" literally.

Even this does not reflect the real dilemma. Scientists proclaim that "all things" are indeed the universe, and that the "universe" comprises all things, yet these same absolutists, offer not the slightest answer as to what to call that thing we refer to as the space, place, or void into which the known universe is alleged by them to be expanding into.

By the scientific definition, this "space", or "place", or "void" that the universe is expanding into, should by all accounts be part of the existing universe, because it is indeed a part of the otherwise real things that we know must already exist.

Thus if this space, place or void already

exists, and is therefore already a part of "all things" - it is already part of the universe, then equally as obviously, the universe cannot be found to be expanding, unless of course, we revert to a never-ending form of creation being the only plausible explanation for the existence and essential continuing growth of this alleged space, place or void that the universe is alleged to be expanding into.

Therefore we are back to the most fundamental of questions; that being "how did the first egg hatch?", or "whether the chicken or the egg came first", while ignoring the obvious reality that both a hen and a rooster were an absolute prerequisite for that first egg to hatch. Oh sure, a scientist may postulate that the first egg was capable of fertilizing itself. But then what hatched out of it? A rooster, a hen, male and female twins, or an animal that could fertilize itself and lay fertilized eggs too?

Or curiously, what kind of animal laid that first egg - or did it just materialize, and thankfully all things that happened by accident since, were accidentally done in an order and fashion that accidentally worked out okay?

There is an element of reason often omitted when attempting to comprehend terms that may or may not have Biblical origins, but that are generally accepted as such. For example, when speaking of "the beginning", it is often presumed we mean to speak of the beginning of the universe.

Yet nowhere in an actual Bible is this fact stated or even implied. Yes, almost every available version speaks of "the beginning", either in reference to creation, or in reference to the "WORD" that apparently was at that time, but we seem generally determined to forget to ask "the beginning of WHAT", and we rather simply presume the "what" that is currently written, is meant to be the universe.

Science, or scientists in particular, seem excessively persistent in this regard, inasmuch

as the "scientific beginning" always implies the inception of the entire universe.

Religionists may be worse. They also presume the beginning as stated in their coveted books, refers to the inception of all that is; i.e., the universe, yet again, this is not what their Bibles state or imply, it is merely a presumption, supported by poorly translated language, and bolstered by blind faith sufficient to exclude any real investigation.

Perhaps consideration should be given to opening one's mind to allow a scientific investigation of the available Biblical facts. This would require a serious look at what we know was originally written, or what we can determine was originally written, not just a look at what happens to be conveniently available in modern copy-written versions of multi-layered, successive translations, of what may have originally been written. *(To qualify for "copyright", as virtually all available versions of the religionists' "Bible" now do, such a work must be found to be "considerably different than, and at variance with any original work of the same or similar nature", yet this very in-your-face legal requirement, is effectively veiled by the very blind faith these same religionists wish to proclaim as virtuous.)*

*What was THE WORD at the beginning of the universe? How does it resonate in us, eternally? (This question appears to be unanswerable.)*

If a question is unanswerable, then asking it is futile. The answer to the seemingly unanswerable, may simply be that we are not currently capable of comprehending the matter in question. Then, also I agree with you that some answers, or comments often evoke emotional responses as to whether we do, or do not "like" them.

As to "why" we do or do not like certain thoughts, comments, or answers, that issue

may be difficult, but we do not believe, it is unanswerable. On reading many of these discussions threads, it becomes clear that a majority of participants are not only emotionally attached to various perceptions; they are quite willing and enthusiastic about expressing their attachments.

And it seems that even when some of these participants express their agreement to a thought, comment, or answer that may be new to them, they often do so while concurrently offering an explanation of how that new idea merges with their emotionally charged pre-existing perception, presumably as some means of justification.

If we are attempting to learn of, or to express any truth, or to learn of anything that is absolute, then our learning is necessarily contingent upon our being emotionally removed from the matter, which is extremely challenging for many.

So even when we read or hear of new things that we instantly comprehend as being true and absolute, we may experience some moments of emotional dislike of our new realizations.

Our solace then, rests in the hope that our zeal to learn the truth, will always remain greater than our emotional attachments to what we would merely like the truth to be.

*Religion and Science Unification: Agreed. There is nothing more subjective, than pure objectivity.*

What is needed more than unification or merging of various disciplines, is unification of the minds from within all disciplines. We need a new mind, in the sense of a re-newed way of thinking. The old mind, the old mindset and way of thinking has finally become aware that it is obsolete, or incapable of keeping up with the times.

In the spirit of renewed thinking, we

need to learn to remain open to the most objective reality of all, which is that all that exists, exists whether we can explain it or quantify it or not, or whether we believe it without proof or not.

All that is, is. Therefore our faith in whatever is, must be absolute, if we are to perceive ourselves as being even a tiny bit objective. We may each hold our unique perspective on what is, but to put forth that any one perspective regarding what is, is more correct or right than any other one, is the current subjectivity that we must get beyond.

#### Simultaneous duality and non-duality:

To know the One, we must first accept we possess the ability to know anything.

We know we are aware of the One, therefore we know our awareness is contingent upon us being concurrent with the One, even though we are of that One, and we know we are not that One, because we also know we are lesser than it.

All awareness and all knowing are of the One, and are contingent upon our being of the One. Thus there exists a manner of expression within the One, that according to its will, is utilized by it to express a thing, so that we may perceive that thing, as the One intends us to.

Therefore all is indeed of the One, yet the One that is all, is contingent upon it being more than that. The One is not merely a duality; it is omni-divisional, because we, being many, are also of that One. We are an expression of the One, and each of us is a duality, yet we would not know ourselves, unless the One was able to express itself as each of us individually.

As the One is omni-divisional, each of us is only a single duality. The One can express its thoughts omni-directionally, we can perceive them individually. We can express our

thoughts individually, and the One can perceive them collectively.

Our individuality is contingent upon the simple duality of our ability to express - either to offer expression, or to perceive expression that has been offered.

We are of the One, and our duality is of us, thus our duality is of the One also. If our duality was not, then neither would we be the individuals we perceive ourselves to be.

The One that is the singular is the One that expresses itself as us in our individual forms. The One's individuality is contingent upon the plurality of its expression of itself as each of us. If the One's plurality were not, then neither would it be the individual One we perceive it to be.

Our "individual duality" and the "individual plurality" of the One, are the simultaneous duality of the One, as it has expressed itself. We are of the singular expressions of the One, and we are the duality of the One expressed individually. Therefore, all there is, is One. This also, is not difficult to understand.

#### Do your Thoughts have Power to Heal?

We agree with you. We have nurtured an absolute faith in the creation, and as such, we have long ago forsaken any quest for "how" or "why" something that is obvious, is so. ESP is obvious in and of itself, so too are the potential "good" or "bad" applications of it.

Likewise we agree that we have been blessed with being able to call upon, or to at least experience, some portion of that intelligence that you reference as governing all of creation (*nature*).

The ambition we speak of, is not to simply be as "smart" as the intelligence implanted within each cell, or in the microbes within us, but to learn to communicate with that intelligence, at even that level.

If we start at the least of these, we will then learn much while shortening our journey to the greater. Even at the cellular and microbial level, existing intelligence yearns to express itself to us, and earnestly yearns to do our will, if we would only express ourselves to it.

We hear of many Yogis, Monks, spiritualist gurus, and other so-called "enlightened" peoples, that spend entire lifetimes on a race or quest to connect to a "higher" intelligence, or to the "inner wisdom", through various forms of expression, yet we rarely hear of those humble individuals that were willing to start at the bottom and work up.

Learning to trust the least of these constructs of intelligence - the intelligence expressed within our very own cells for example, begins a powerful training that enables us to dispense with all fears, which fears otherwise remain the only obstacles to communion with the higher levels of intelligence.

Our tiny little cells are the portal to all other intelligence. Communion with the "highest intelligence" - that place where we can indeed learn of all knowledge, begins with expression through this portal of inner wisdom.

This we can know, without knowing the how or the why of it. And this we can all do, without the unnecessary pretence that wisdom may only befall "special" individuals, or be the result of a lifelong burden for the rest of us.

This wisdom is ours for the asking. Ask through the least, and the greatest will respond, because the least has been given to us, for this very purpose.

### Can we think our way out of Extinction?

We may possess sufficient cognitive power to implement programs to cause extinction of some forms of life, or perhaps even all of life on this planet. But it is hard to

imagine this actually happening, considering the majority must surely prefer it would not be allowed.

We are incapable of knowing whether or not any such "extinction" would actually extinguish life, as we do not know where the life within us, originates from, nor how, or if it persists, if it is removed from us.

Therefore to speculate on whether or not we could conceive of means to avoid that which we do not even know if we could accomplish, is a fascinating matter, albeit questionably practical.

On reading many of these discussions threads, it becomes clear that a majority of participants even in this audience, where it would be hoped that we would find more enlightened thinking, hold dearly to the very ideas that have created the potentiality of extinction.

The ability to act collectively, cooperatively and collaboratively is admirable, but it is not new, nor to our knowledge, is it found properly articulated herein. The desire is discussed admirably, but the ability appears widely overlooked.

Thinking our way to a means of preventing extinction, is an ideal that does not yet hold the power to cause the needed change, without first our being able to change ourselves individually. History proves this.

If we individually desire communion through a sense of community with each other, then we must first seek communion with the inner intelligence within each of our selves. We would then collectively be capable of virtually anything, including eliminating any possibility of our extinction.

But most will not do this. Most, as history has also proven, will rather wait for, or point to an expert, a guide, a guru, a "someone else" to be their teacher and their leader. Sadly, our teachers and our leaders have so

far also proven incapable, or at best, incompetent.

This propensity for the majority to be such followers rather than collective doers, is a formidable obstacle. Until competent leaders are found that will choose to selflessly teach these followers the true simplicity of life, their self-imagined and otherwise misguided false-complexities, will continue to instill that fear which first disables them from knowing themselves, and also from becoming an active part of their community, with capacity of truly helping the collective.

And until these followers truly sense the simplicity of life, and of what little involvement the community would really require of them, they will continue to be content with passively following the current incompetence. This traditional choice requires no thinking, while the hopeful and proper choice remains easily veiled by a great many available distractions.

So yes, it is possible for the collective to change its thinking, possibly even to do so with the open intent of preventing extinction. First, we would need to find willing and capable teachers, and second, these would have to nurture a willingness within the masses to accept the true simplicity of life, and to thereby renew, or inspire a desire to experience that life for the common goal.

### *Do your Thoughts have Power to Heal?*

The power to heal is nothing more than one expression of energy. All is energy. Energy exists and is expressed in myriad forms.

Whether a thing is perceived as innate or living, it is merely a different expression of original energy. There is no thing, including "power" that is not made up of this same original energy that comprises all things, including thoughts that heal, and thoughts that disable.

The unique characteristic of the human

construct within the creation of all things, is that humans have been endowed with free will. Free will simply means we have a conscious mind, that is capable of making limited free will decisions, regarding the organization of this same energy.

The conscience mind is also just another expression of the original energy. The original energy can express itself as innate, or as living things, or as living things with conscious minds endowed with free will, because the original energy has the free will to express itself according to its will - all things provide proof of this, because all these things exist.

We can of our own free will, organize our thoughts and keep them secret, or we can share them. The thought, as we give birth to it, becomes a very specifically organized pattern of original energy. Yet only when we express that thought, does the energy become a "thing" unto itself, and only as it is being expressed, does it have the power to influence other organizations of energy.

The power inherent to a thought, is not in using our free will to organize the energy to create the thought, nor is there any power in simply recognizing or knowing of the thought (*or idea*).

The power comes as a result of using our free will, to express the thought conceived or stumbled upon. For example, let's pretend I know your loved one has been harmed in an accident. I have already organized the original energy within my conscious mind, formulating this information into a thought, yet it has no impact upon you, until I express it to you, then it has the power to drastically affect the way you feel, think, and act.

Likewise healing. The energy organized and embodied as each cell of the human construct, contains sufficient knowledge to re-create the entire human being, including

replicating that vast knowledge innumerable times. That amount of knowledge is sufficient to heal the human construct and to maintain perfect health. Yet these cells are made obedient to our sub-conscious will.

Science has established this - it is no great mystery. Deliberately concentrated thoughts, like constantly repeated thoughts or behaviour over time, can drastically alter the individual's cellular vibration, either positively, or negatively.

When you lose the science long enough to think about it, you quickly realize that when you change the vibration of your cells by "thinking", whether deliberately concentrating, or by accidental repetitive behaviour, it is because they are responding to the expression of your own free will. You are communicating with them. Humans communicate, and everything humans do originates in the knowledge contained in each little cell.

To heal then, is simply to do more of that communication with a purpose. Then to live and behave harmoniously and with good health, simply requires we do more of that, with a purpose.

Billions of our cells work harmoniously together and are capable of communing with each other and with us, yet it is our own lack of acceptance of this simple reality, that restricts us, and instils fear within us, so that we hesitate to ask them (*our inner self*) what they yearn for us to know.

Know thyself individually, and this is easy to do, for it is not far from you, then living in good health and harmoniously with others will become the collective reality.

### *The Illusion of Separateness:*

We have been expressed as separate entities, of a common origin. This is not an illusion, it is the reality we exist as. Therefore resistance of this separateness that we are, is

futile. Acceptance of it, because it is, is inevitable, and desirable, if we are to learn to behave beneficially as one group of inter-dependant, communal beings.

The unique characteristic of the human construct within the creation of all things, is that humans have been endowed with free will. Free will simply means we have a conscious mind that is capable of making limited free will decisions regarding the organization of this same energy, we are expressed of. We can of our own free will, organize our thoughts and express them for selfish gain, or for the collective benefit.

The thought, as we give birth to it, becomes a very specifically organized pattern of original energy. Yet only when we express that thought, does the energy become a "thing" unto itself, and only as it is being expressed, does it have the power to influence other organizations of energy, such as our collective selves.

The energy organized and embodied as each cell of the human construct contains sufficient knowledge to create the entire human being, including replicating that knowledge innumerable times. An incomprehensible amount of inter-communication between these cells enables this phenomenal, near incomprehensible harmonious capacity.

These cells, capable of so very much harmonious activity are made obedient to our sub-conscious will. To live and behave harmoniously then, simply requires we do more of that, at the collective-cellular, or individual level. Then living harmoniously with others will become the collective reality.

### *Do your Thoughts have Power to Heal?*

Healing in a physical sense is pre-programmed into each of our cells; we can do very little to change the program. For example, we slip and cut ourselves, the damaged cells

automatically initiate a healing process. We can aid this process with intervention to clean and dress the wound, and if we accept it, we can stimulate a faster healing process with the proper expression of our conscious thoughts and beliefs.

Thoughts are simply a specifically organized pattern of energy; that energy which is the essence of all that exists. Beliefs are nothing more than a slightly more complex grouping of thoughts, meaning beliefs too, are simply specifically organized patterns of the same energy. Neither thoughts nor beliefs hold any power, simply because they exist as thoughts or beliefs. Power, is merely another name for that same energy that is the essence of both the thought, and the belief pattern.

When the energy pattern(s) that is the thought or the belief, is expressed, by being stated, written or even visualized, it then has the ability to change or to alter other things. (*Things being energy patterns also.*)

It is by this "communication", or expressed communion of organized energy, that we can cause things to be changed, influenced, improved or enhanced, whether for good or for bad, and whether individually or collectively.

Each human cell is sufficiently intelligent, at least so far as we are able to perceive intelligence, to create an entire human construct of billions of inter-connected cells, wherein those billions of cells communicate with an efficiency that enables the host construct to remain operational and in good health, while that host construct does not even fully comprehend how this can be.

Obviously, the human construct is less intelligently aware, than a single human cell, let alone the entire collection of billions of cells that reside within it.

Therefore the elusive "power" that humans erroneously seek to heal themselves

with, is not found within the awareness of their puny little conscious minds, it is found already existing within the superior intelligence of each tiny little cell. Thus learning to commune with this source of virtually unlimited knowledge is key, and quite simple actually.

These cells commune with one another continually, harmoniously administering thousands of essential functions concurrently, and they also yearn to commune with us at our conscious level.

In fact they exist in a manner that is not just contingent upon our behaviour, they are obedient to our conscious behaviour in recognition of their being solely purposed to commune with, and serve us, otherwise they would use that near infinite intelligence to do something other than to serve us.

We are each free to commune with our cells' collective; our inner self, yet most are unwilling to accept this simple and easy reality, and rather persist with futile beliefs in struggling to learn "unique" abilities held only by the mystique of a "special" few.

#### Basics of Noetics:

We find English language to be limited. In this discourse, we have used the word "energy" to denote whatever it is, that is all things.

For example, we know that "mass", virtually regardless of what the substance is, has a root component of energy, nothing more, nothing less - just energy. And this energy that is the mass, like the mass itself, because it is the mass, cannot be created or destroyed, but only transformed from form to form.

The energy obviously preceded the mass, because the mass in its various forms, is comprised of it, not the other way round. The perceived mass of everything that is, is speculatively perceived as having its beginning as a concentration of energy, yet there are

many possible forms of this energy that we do not yet fully perceive, notwithstanding that whatever these forms may be, they also have their beginnings from that same concentration of energy.

Thoughts and beliefs are constructs of this same energy. Consciousness is also a specific construct of this same energy. In the strictest sense, the energy that is all things, could be labelled intelligence, and this intelligence, simply expresses itself through myriad forms of organized energy.

If the original energy is not intelligence, then the energy itself is sufficiently intelligent to express itself as all things.

Thoughts are not randomly generated, nor do they randomly "pop" into existence. A thought is nothing more than one expression of deliberately patterned energy.

All is energy. Energy exists and is expressed in myriad forms. There is no thing, including "thought" that is not made up of this same original energy.

Expression of this energy in the form of thought, may be made by voluntary, or involuntary intent, meaning that once you organize certain energy into a specific thought pattern, you can then articulate that thought as a mental visualization - an expression that can be perceived by others. This is precisely what horse and dog whisperers do all the time, for example.

You or your friend can organize a thought, and then express it verbally, in writing, or simply be visualizing it. Likewise, the other party can perceive that thought by hearing, reading, or simply by mentally perceiving what has already been "visualized", a process often referred to as telepathy, which really should hold no mystery.

Once you realize this skill is inherently operable within each of us, and become familiar with applying it, you can for example,

watch a movie for the first time, and continuously and consistently perceive the already created and visualized thoughts - the images, and "foretell" what is going to happen to your friends, moments before it actually appears on the screen.

Once any thought has been expressed that thought then exists as a fixed energy pattern, available for anyone to perceive. Because thought is organized of the original energy that all things emanate from, which energy is eternal, it is this eternal quality that enables such things as remote viewing or influencing.

These things do not enable the mind to bridge time and space, rather time and space are relative aspects of the knowledge, which is the energy from which that time and space originate.

### *Do your Thoughts have Power to Heal?*

We agree with you, that the power to heal does not lie in the thoughts per se, and there is a field of energy and intelligence that is moved by thought.

We would simply add that the influence of thought, or the ability of thought to cause a positive influence on health, is contingent upon the thought being expressed or visualized with a proper intent.

As you also rightly stated, thoughts (*or even actions*) that are negative, can often block the body's ability to maintain healthy "energy fields". This is because the negative thought energy causes a harmonic interference with the body's collective cellular energy, which is typically expressed and measurable in multiple energy fields within a whole.

Likewise the energy of positive thoughts can help maintain a harmonious balance of these same energy fields.

The same negative (*or positive*) influence of the harmonic balance of the body's

energy fields, is most often unwittingly accomplished by repetitive (+ or -) thinking patterns, or repetitive (+ or -) actions, which can and do lead to many common dis-eases.

This influence of our body's energy harmonics by the nature of our thoughts and actions occurs automatically, thus learning to pay attention to ourselves is paramount.

*What mind-body practices have had the most beneficial effect on your well being?*

Seemingly limitless intelligence resides equally within each of us. That innate wisdom is the sum of exponentially compounding by several billion times, the intelligence of each cell.

Since each cell is sufficiently intelligent to replicate the entire human construct, living intelligence and all, that is a truly grand total amount of intelligence within each of us.

By means of specifically organized patterns of energy, all things are expressed by this intelligence. We are an expression of that energy. Consciousness is also a specific construct and expression of that same energy. If the original energy is not intelligence, then the energy itself is sufficiently intelligent to express itself as all things.

Learning to commune with this limitless intelligence within, brings inner peace, joy and fulfillment, which enables the body to experience a harmonically balanced energy field, as it was perfectly designed to do, promoting near perfect health and well being.

We do not know what to call this body-mind practice, aside from communion with self. The elusive "power" that humans erroneously seek to heal themselves with, is not found within their puny little minds, it is found already existing within the intelligence of each tiny little cell. Thus learning to commune with this source of virtually unlimited knowledge is key, and quite simple actually.

Without any conscious input from us, and quite frankly, in spite of us, our individual cells commune with each other consistently, in order to maintain and facilitate us.

We, whatever we perceive ourselves to be, are the result of the super-efficient communal efforts of each of these tiny cells within us.

They communicate with each other extremely efficiently, and they diligently yearn to commune with us, just as effectively, both for our sake and theirs. They are not far, we need only ask of them.